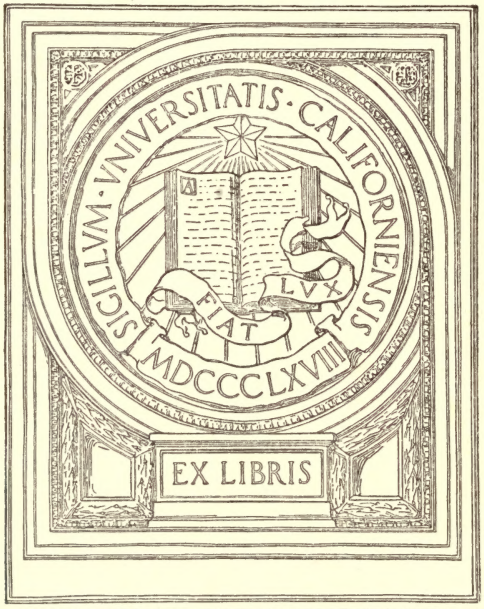
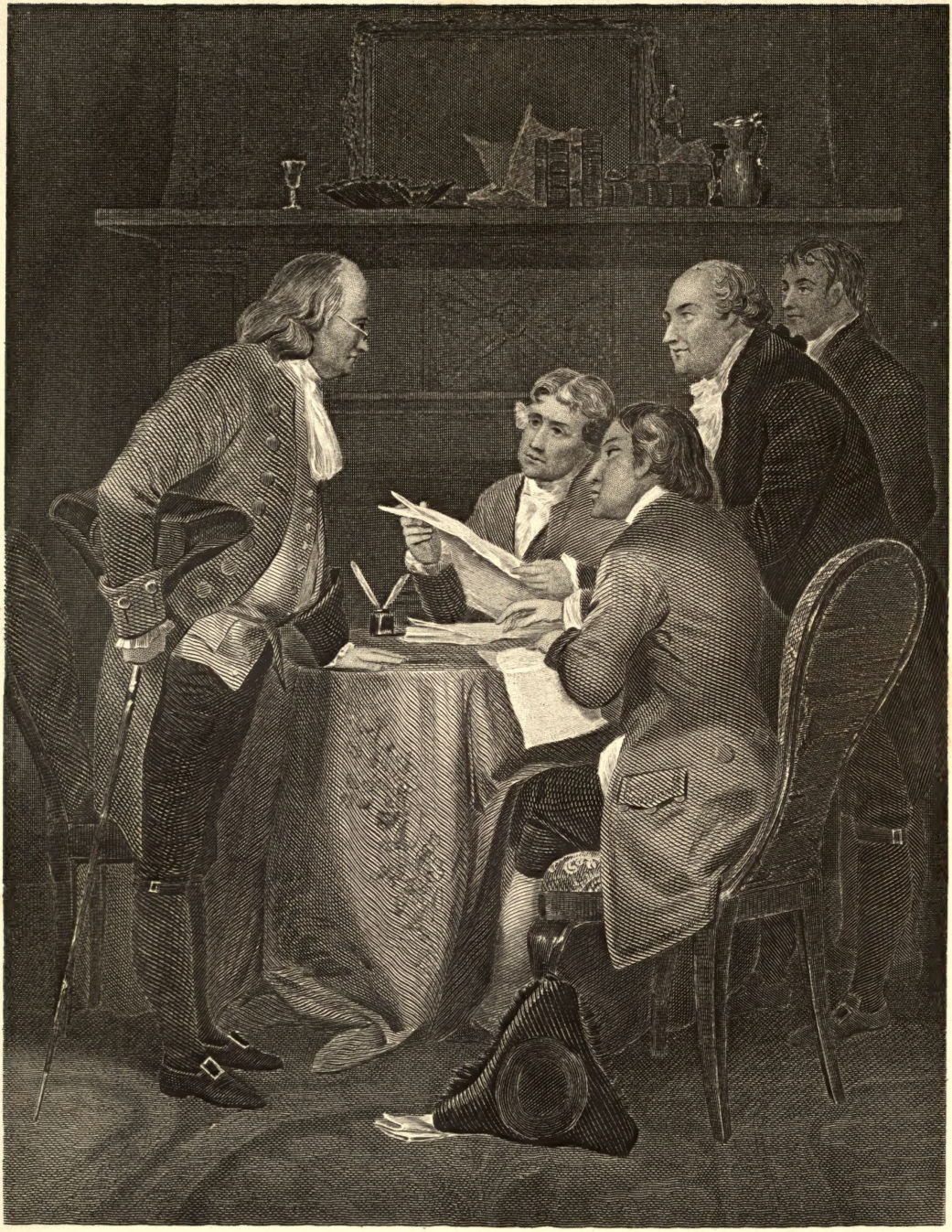
YE 07072

PRIVATE LIBRARY
OF
JAMES H. BURKE.
No. 70

GIFT OF
Mr. James S. Porter





DRAFTING THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.

THE COMMITTEE.—FRANKLIN, JEFFERSON, ADAMS, LIVINGSTON & SHERMAN

THE STORY

OF

A GREAT NATION.

OR,

OUR COUNTRY'S ACHIEVEMENTS,

MILITARY, NAVAL, POLITICAL, AND CIVIL,

BY

BY JOHN GILMARY SHEA, LL.D.,

TO WHICH IS ADDED A

Biographical Portrait Gallery of Her Great Leaders,

INCLUDING

STATESMEN, ORATORS, DIPLOMATS, JURISTS, SOLDIERS, SAILORS, EXPLORERS FINANCIERS, INVENTORS, PHILANTHROPISTS, REFORMERS, ENGINEERS SCIENTISTS, ARTISTS, AUTHORS, ETC., ETC.

ALSO

OUR PRESIDENTS, THEIR PORTRAITS AND AUTOGRAPHS,

WITH

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES AND A CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE, SHOWING THE GREAT EVENTS IN UNIVERSAL HISTORY, CONTEMPORARY WITH EACH ADMINISTRATION, WITH A DESCRIPTION OF OUR NATIONAL GOVERNMENT, AND HOW IT IS ADMINISTERED IN ITS VARIOUS DEPARTMENTS.

ILLUSTRATED WITH SEVERAL HUNDRED ENGRAVINGS, INCLUDING OVER 350 PORTRAITS.

NEW YORK:
GAY BROTHERS & COMPANY,
14 BARCLAY STREET.

COPYRIGHT, 1886, BY
GAY BROTHERS & CO.

E178
S531
1886
MAIN

PREFACE.

To present the great facts of our country's history in an attractive and readable form has been the object of this work. That the History of the United States is not more generally read arises from the fact that the works which ordinary readers find are overloaded with details and interrupted by tedious disquisitions. Others seem written from a sectional, political, or other stand-point, and the writer's prejudices are thrust before the reader at every page.

The author has aimed to give the narrative clearness and simplicity, to be impartial, giving each part of the country an equal importance, and equal justice; and in the treatment of events, giving importance only to such as deserve it, in view of their bearing on the whole country.

A History of the United States for the general public should be one to be read with equal interest in every State, by persons of every age. It should be as clear as the crystal waters of our purest streams, as solid and impartial as the great mountains that receive serenely the sunshine and the storm, and look calmly down on the quiet plain and the thunderous cataract.

This volume may not fulfil all that is aimed at or desired, but it can claim to have made a step in the proper direction towards affording a History of our country, readable, impartial, and accurate.

J. G. S.

NEW YORK, *August* 1, 1886.

M297221

CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION.

The Spirit of Discovery awakened in Europe—The great advantage of the Crusades to Trade—Missionaries and Merchants—What was known of the Atlantic Ocean—The wonderful Island of St. Brendan—Iceland and Greenland—Discoveries on the Coast of Africa—The Madeira Islands—Italy the School of Geography..... 101

PART I.

CHAPTER I.

The early Life of Christopher Columbus—His first Voyages—Terrible Naval Engagement near Lisbon—His wonderful Escape—His scheme of crossing the Atlantic—Genoa, Venice, and Portugal refuse to aid him—Home in Genoa—At Palos—Father Marchena and the Convent of Santa Maria de la Rabida—He starts for the Court of Ferdinand and Isabella..... 111

CHAPTER II.

Position of the Spanish Kingdoms—Columbus at Court—His Plan rejected—Employed by Queen Isabella—Returns to Palos in order to go to France—Padre Marchena again—Queen Isabella resolves to send him out—The little Fleet fitted out at Palos—The Portuguese endeavor to defeat his Voyage—The open Sea—Alarm of Sailors—Land!—He takes Possession in the Name of Isabella—Voyage Home—The Portuguese again—Enters Lisbon—Received by the King—At Palos—Pinzon and Columbus—The Discoverer proceeds to Court to announce his success 117

CHAPTER III.

Columbus is solemnly received by Ferdinand and Isabella at Barcelona—His second Voyage—Other Nations enter the Field of Discovery—Voyages of Cabot and Vesputius—The Name of the latter gives a Title to the New World—Columbus sails on his third Voyage—His Enemies—Bobadilla—Columbus arrested and sent to Spain in irons—His fourth Voyage—He beholds the Destruction of his Enemies by the Hand of Providence—Reaches the Coast of North America—Returns to Spain—Dies at Valladolid—Strange Migrations of his Body—His Tomb at Havana..... 125

CHAPTER IV.

Attempts to conquer and colonize—The French—The Spaniards—Ponce de Leon and the Fountain of Youth—Vasquez de Ayllon and King Datha—Verrazano and the stories about him—Gomez—The Expedition of Pamphilo de Narvaez—Wonderful escape of Cabeza de Vaca—De Soto and the disastrous end of his splendid Expedition—The French, under Cartier and Roberval, attempt to settle Canada—Story of Margaret Roberval..... 141

CHAPTER V.

FRANCE, SPAIN, AND ENGLAND ATTEMPT TO SETTLE OUR SHORES.

Coligny resolves to establish a Huguenot colony in Florida—Ribaut establishes Charlesfort on Port Royal—Captain Albert de la Pierria—Mutiny—The Survivors saved by the English—Laudonniere builds Fort Caroline on the St. John's, Florida—A Revolt—Some turn Pirates—Relieved in Distress by Hawkins—Ribaut arrives—The Spaniards resolve to crush the Colony—Melendez sent out—The Fleets meet at Caroline—Melendez retires and builds St. Augustine—Ribaut pursuing him wrecked—Melendez takes Caroline—His Cruelty—Inhuman Treatment of the Wrecked—The Massacre of the French avenged by Dominic de Gourgues—Subsequent History of Florida—Raleigh and his Efforts—Tobacco and Potatoes—A Settlement finally made at Jamestown..... 156

CHAPTER VI.

Permanent Settlements of England and France—Virginia settled at Jamestown—Early Visits of the Spaniards to the Chesapeake—Powhatan's Tribe—Captain John Smith—Argall—Pocahontas, her Marriage and Death—First Legislature in America—What Jamestown resembled—Opechancanough's War and Massacre—The Company suppressed—Virginia a Royal Colony—The People—Spain settles New Mexico—The French in Acadia—Jesuits in Maine—Romance of La Tour—Madame La Tour—Wars with New England—Acadia conquered, becomes Nova Scotia—Quebec founded by Champlain—His Adventurous Career—Character of the Colony—Wars with the Iroquois—Pieskaret—Montreal—Lambert Closse, the Indian Fighter—The French at Onondaga..... 168

CHAPTER VII.

New Netherland—Hudson's Discovery—Christiaensen—Valentine and Orson—Block builds the "Onrust," the first New York vessel—New York and Albany Settled—Treaty of Tawasentha—Dutch West India Company—Purchase of New York Island—The New Netherland—Indian Troubles—Captain Underhill and the Battle of Strickland's Plain—The Swedes on the Delaware—They are reduced by Stuyvesant—Troubles with New England—New Netherland taken by the English..... 195

CHAPTER VIII.

The Settlement of New England—The Pilgrim Fathers—Landing at Plymouth Rock—Miles Standish—Massachusetts Bay—New Hampshire—Roger Williams and Mrs. Hutchinson—Providence Plantations and Rhode Island Founded—Settlement of Hartford and New Haven—The United Colonies—The Pequod War—John Eliot, the Apostle of the Indians—Persecution of the Quakers—Settlement of Maryland—Toleration—Indian Relations—Civil War..... 205

CHAPTER IX.

The Indian Tribes—Their Divisions—Their Complexion—Habits—Dress—Houses and Mode of Life—Their Wars—Religion—No Domestic Animals—Their Care of the Dead—Hieroglyphics—The Mound Builders..... 228

PART II.

THE COLONIES FROM THE REIGN OF CHARLES II. TO THE REIGN OF GEORGE III.

CHAPTER I.

The English Kings and Parliament begin to take part in American Affairs—General View of the Country—Reign of Charles II.—Connecticut and Rhode Island receive Charters—Philip's Indian War—New York—Penn founds Pennsylvania—Carolina founded—Virginia and Maryland..... 236

CHAPTER II.

Reign of James II.—James projects a Union of the Colonies—New York invaded—Connecticut and the Charter Oak—Indian Troubles in Maine—Fall of James—Reign of William III.—Andros seized—Old Governments resumed in New England—William neglects America—Sad Condition of New York—Leisler—Indian Wars—Waldron—Lachine—Schenectady—Salmon Falls—Casco—Phips fails to take Quebec—William sends a Governor to New York—Leisler refuses to submit—Taken—Hanged—New Charter for Massachusetts—The Witch Trials—Captain Kidd..... 266

CHAPTER III.

Reign of Queen Anne—She involves the American Colonies in the War of the Spanish Succession..... 295

CHAPTER IV.

Reign of George I.—His Neglect of America—The Yamassee War in South Carolina—War with the Abenakis in Maine—Death of Father Rale—Lovewell's Fight. 309

CHAPTER V.

Reign of George II.—The English Government prevents American Manufactures and Commerce—Good Effect produced—Oglethorpe and the Settlement of Georgia—Tomochichi—The Cherokee's Answer—Position of the English Colonies—The French—Law's Projects—The Natchez—Massacre of the French—Escape of Doutreleau—The Choctaws attack the Natchez—Louboi's Operations—The War with Spain—Oglethorpe's Campaign against St. Augustine—Monteano invades Georgia—The War with France—The New England Troops take Louisburg—It is restored to France—The French on the Ohio—George Washington——He is sent to occupy the Ohio—Defeats Jumonville—Capitulates at Fort Necessity—The War begins..... 314

CHAPTER VI.

Reign of George II. (Continued)—Commencement of the Reign of George III.—War with France renewed—General Braddock sent over with English Regulars—His Plans—He attempts to take Fort Du Quesne—Defeated and killed—The unfortunate Acadians—Baron Dieskau sent out by France—Defeated and taken on Lake George—Montcalm takes Oswego—Louisburg taken by Boscawen and Amherst—Abercrombie defeated by Montcalm at Ticonderoga—Bradstreet takes Fort Frontenac—William Pitt—Forbes advances on Fort Du Quesne—Sustains a Defeat—French evacuate Pittsburg—Johnson defeats d'Aubry and takes Niagara—Amherst drives the French from Lake Champlain—Wolfe at Quebec—Battle of the Heights of Abraham—Wolfe and Montcalm—De Levi defeats Murray and besieges Quebec—Canada surrenders—Close of the War..... 343

CHAPTER VII.

Reign of George III.—The Cherokee War—The Treaty of Peace with France—Florida taken in exchange for Havana—Pontiac's Conspiracy—England resolved to tax America—Stamp Act Riots in America—Battle of Golden Hill—Boston Massacre—The Tax on Tea—Resistance of America—The Boston Tea Party—North Carolina Regulators—New Indian War..... 373

CHAPTER VIII.

State of the Colonies after the Conquest of Canada—England's Exertions in America—Jealousy of the Colonies—She resolves to tax them, and maintain a large Army among them—The Stamp Act proposed—American Opposition—Its final Passage. 387

PART III.

THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

CHAPTER I.

George III. loses America—The Continental Congress—The Boston Port Bill—The Quebec Act—The Continental Congress meets—Provincial Congress—Battle of Lexington and Concord—Siege of Boston—Capture of Ticonderoga and Crown Point—Congress organizes an Army—George Washington Commander-in-Chief—Battle of Bunker Hill—The Invasion of Canada—Failure to take Quebec—Death of Montgomery 408

CHAPTER II.

Campaign of 1777—The Operations in New Jersey—Cornwallis Confronts Washington at Trenton—Washington's masterly Movement on Princeton—The Battle of Princeton—Death of General Mercer—British Attacks on Peekskill and Danbury—Death of General Wooster—Meigs at Sag Harbor—Washington in Winter-quarters at Morristown—The glorious Stars and Stripes—Movements of the Armies in New Jersey—The British evacuate the State—Lafayette comes to America—Howe lands his Army at the Head of Chesapeake Bay—Washington meets him at Brandywine—A hard-fought Battle—Congress leaves Philadelphia—Howe takes Possession of the City—Washington attacks the British at Germantown—A Victory almost gained—Operations on the Delaware—The Battle of the Kegs—Washington in Winter-quarters at Valley Forge—Burgoyne, from Canada, invades New York—Ticonderoga lost—Schuyler and his Policy—Burgoyne begins to suffer from Want of Provisions—Defeat of Baume and his Hessians at Bennington—General Stark—St. Leger sent to attack Fort Schuyler—Battle of Oriskany—Death of General Herkimer—Arnold relieves the Fort—Sad Fate of Jane McCrea—Burgoyne defeated at Stillwater—Another Battle—Burgoyne attempts to retreat—His Surrender—Clinton ascends the Hudson 454

CHAPTER III.

Campaign of 1778—Alliance with France—North's Bills of Conciliation—Their Rejection—British Cruelty—Battle of Monmouth—Conduct of General Lee—Arrival of Admiral d'Estaing's Fleet—Operations in Rhode Island—D'Estaing engages the British and sails off—Retreat of Sullivan—Savage Cruelty of the English—Massacre at Wyoming—Massacre at Paoli—At Little Egg Harbor—The English capture Savannah—Clarke reduces Illinois 481

CHAPTER IV.

Campaign of 1779—Operations in the South – Georgia—Invasion of South Carolina —Battle of Stono Ferry—The British invade Connecticut—Storming of Stony Point—Sullivan's Expedition against the Six Nations—Penobscot—Paulus Hook —Commodore Paul Jones—The great Fight between the Bon Homme Richard and the Serapis—Siege of Savannah by d'Estaing and Lincoln—Spain joins France—Continental Money 502

CHAPTER V.

Campaign of 1780—Sir Henry Clinton sails south, besieges and takes Charleston— Tarleton begins his career of cruelty—Lord Cornwallis in the South—Sumter and Marion—Gates sent South by Congress—His rashness—Defeated at Camden— DeKalb—General Greene – King's Mountain—Patriotic women—Lord Sterling on Staten Island—Battle of Springfield 520

PART IV.

THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION.

CHAPTER I.

Effective aid from France on Sea and Land—Zealous and successful Efforts of Lafayette in Favor of America—A Fleet under Admiral de Ternay brings over a French army under the Count de Rochambeau—It lands at Newport –Hopes of America—Washington calls earnestly for Troops to enable him to strike a Decisive Blow—A Traitor—General Arnold in Treaty with the Enemy to deliver up West Point—The Arrest of Major André reveals and Defeats the Treachery— Arnold escapes to the English—André tried and executed 536

CHAPTER II.

Campaign of 1781—Aspect of Affairs—Arnold leads an Expedition to Virginia, and is joined by Phillips—Lafayette sent against him – The Campaign in Carolina— General Morgan's brilliant Victory at Cowpens—Greene's famous Retreat—Battle of Guilford Court House—Cornwallis, pursued by Greene, enters Virginia— Lord Rawdon in the Carolinas—Battle of Hobkirk's Hill—Siege of Ninety-Six— Death of Hayne—Lafayette and Cornwallis in Virginia—Cornwallis at Yorktown —Washington and De Grasse concert a Movement against him—Successful Co-operation—Cornwallis invested—Surrenders—Arnold ravages Connecticut..... 545

PART V.

THE REPUBLIC UNDER THE ARTICLES OF CONFEDERATION AND UNDER THE CONSTITUTION.

CHAPTER I.

The Return to Peace—Articles of Confederation—Treaties with Foreign Countries—Indian Nations—Northwest Territory organized—A desire for a better Union—A Convention called—The new Constitution—It is accepted by eleven States—Close of the Continental Congress..... 571

CHAPTER II.

George Washington President 1789-1797—His Cabinet—Peace made with the Creeks and Cherokees—North Carolina and Rhode Island yield when treated as Foreign Countries—The National Debt—War with the Miamies and Western Tribes—Defeat of General Harmar—Bank of North America—Vermont and Kentucky Admitted—St. Clair defeated by the Western Indians—Washington's Reelection—The French and their Ambassador, Genet—The Algerine Corsairs—Wayne overthrows the Indians and concludes a Peace—The Whisky Insurrection—Indian Boundaries—Treaty with Spain—Tennessee admitted—Washington's Farewell Address—He returns to Mount Vernon..... 578

CHAPTER III.

JOHN ADAMS, SECOND PRESIDENT—1797-1801.

Affairs with France—Mississippi Territory organized—War with France on the Ocean—The Alien and Sedition Acts—Death of General Washington—Seat of Government removed to Washington—Indiana Territory organized—Close of the War with France—Adams defeated in the next election..... 600

CHAPTER IV.

THOMAS JEFFERSON, THIRD PRESIDENT—1801-1809.

War against Tripoli—Purchase of Louisiana—Lewis and Clarke's Expedition to Oregon—Troubles with Florida—Burr's Conspiracy—English Outrages—Attack on the Chesapeake—New States and Territories..... 611

CHAPTER V.

JAMES MADISON, FOURTH PRESIDENT—1809-1817.

Trouble in Pennsylvania—The President and Little Belt—Indian Troubles in the West—War with England—Hull's Surrender—Operations on the New York Frontiers—Queenstown, La Colle—Victories at Sea—Proctor's Victories in the West—Repulsed at Fort Meigs—Toronto—The Niagara—Perry's Victory—Battle of the Thames—Tecumseh slain—The Creek War—General Jackson—Battle of the Chippewa—Invasion of Maryland—Capture of Washington—English repulsed at Baltimore—Macomb and McDonough at Plattsburg—Jackson in Florida—Battle of New Orleans—Peace proclaimed—Final battles at Sea..... 618

CHAPTER VI.

JAMES MONROE, FIFTH PRESIDENT—1817-1825.

Indian Troubles—The Seminoles—Seizure of Spanish Forts—Florida Ceded to the United States—The Treaty of Ghent—Alabama—Arkansas, Maine—The Missouri Compromise—Lafayette Revisits the United States—The Monroe Doctrine—West India Pirates Broken up..... 653

CHAPTER VII.

JOHN QUINCY ADAMS, SIXTH PRESIDENT—1825-1829.

Internal Improvements—Death of Adams and Jefferson—Indian Troubles—Masonic Excitement..... 660

CHAPTER VIII.

ANDREW JACKSON, SEVENTH PRESIDENT—1829-1837.

Striking Inauguration—A Bad Policy—Cherokee Difficulties—The United States Bank—Black Hawk War—Nullification in South Carolina—Seminole War—Texas becomes an Independent Republic—Arkansas and Michigan Admitted—The Specie Circular..... 662

CHAPTER IX.

MARTIN VAN BUREN, EIGHTH PRESIDENT—1837-1841.

Bankruptcy caused by Speculation—The Independent Treasury—The Seminole War—Death of Osceola—Troubles in Canada—Wilkes' Exploring Expedition—The Maine Boundary..... 669

CHAPTER X.

WILLIAM HENRY HARRISON, NINTH PRESIDENT—1841.
JOHN TYLER, TENTH PRESIDENT—1841-1845.

Mr. Tyler vetoes the United States Bank—The Maine Boundary—Rhode Island Troubles—Patroon Troubles—Native American Party—The Mormons—Annexation of Texas..... 674

CHAPTER XI.

JAMES K. POLK, ELEVENTH PRESIDENT—1845-1849.

The Mexican War—Battles of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma—Battle of Monterey—Conquest of California and New Mexico—Santa Anna—Scott at Vera Cruz—Battle of Buena Vista—Capture of Vera Cruz—Battle of Cerro Gordo—Puebla taken—Contreras and Churubusco—Battle of Chapultepec—Mexico taken—Last Struggles of the Mexicans—Peace of Guadalupe Hidalgo—Close of Polk's Administration..... 681

CHAPTER XII.

ZACHARY TAYLOR, TWELFTH PRESIDENT—1849-1850.
MILLARD FILLMORE, THIRTEENTH PRESIDENT—1850-1853.

Brief Administration of General Taylor—Admission of California—Fillmore as President—Lopez and the Cuban Affairs—Sioux Indians—Kossuth—Sir John Franklin and the Grinnell Expedition—Fishery Question—Death of Clay and Webster—The Telegraph..... 705

CHAPTER XIII.

FRANKLIN PIERCE, FOURTEENTH PRESIDENT—1853-1857.

The Mesilla Valley Difficulty—Growth of the Country—Walker and Nicaragua—The Ostend Manifesto—Kansas and Nebraska—The Dangerous Excitement as to the Growth of Slavery..... 712

CHAPTER XIV.

JAMES BUCHANAN, FIFTEENTH PRESIDENT—1857-1861.

Kansas—Its Civil War and final Admission as a Free State—Admission of other New States—Territories Organized—Party Violence—John Brown and Harper's Ferry—Four Presidential Tickets—Election of Abraham Lincoln—Secession of South Carolina and six other States—They form the Confederate States of America—Seizure of Forts—Anderson and Fort Sumter—The Ineffectual Attempt to Relieve it..... 716

PART VI.

THE GREAT CIVIL WAR—ABRAHAM LINCOLN, SIXTEENTH PRESIDENT—1861-5—1865.

CHAPTER I.

Affairs during the Spring and Summer of 1861—Lincoln's Cabinet—Reorganization of the Government, Army and Navy—Attempt to relieve Sumter—Its Bombardment—The first call for Troops—Replies of the States—Blockade of the Southern ports—East Tennessee and West Virginia for the Union—Missouri saved by Lyon's energy—First movement of United States Troops—Ellsworth—McClellan in Western Virginia—Battles of Philippi, Rich Mountain, and Carrick's Ford—Big Bethel—Bull Run—General Lyon and the Battles of Carthage, Dug Spring, Wilson's Creek, and Lexington—First operations against the Coast of the Confederate States.... 726

CHAPTER II.

The War in the West—Minor Operations—Battle of Belmont—Grant's First Action—Polk Crosses to Relieve his Men—Desperate Fighting—Grant Succeeds in Reaching his Gunboats—The Port Royal Expedition—A Foothold in South Carolina—Operations with no Great Result—The Slidell-Mason Affair—Commodore Wilkes—Attitude of the British Government—Slidell and Mason Given up—Pope's Missouri Campaign—The Confederate Line in the West—Preparations to Break it..... 750

PART VI.

THE CIVIL WAR CONTINUED—ABRAHAM LINCOLN, SIXTEENTH PRESIDENT—1861-5—1865.

CHAPTER III.

Buell's Campaign—Battle of Mill Spring—Zollicoffer Defeated by Thomas and Killed—The Confederate Line Broken—Grant and Porter Move—Fort Henry Bombarded by the Fleet, and Reduced before Grant Arrives—The Army and Fleet Move upon Fort Donelson—The Fleet Repulsed with Loss—Grant's Attack—Battle of Fort Donelson—Desperate Fighting—The Confederate Commanders—The Surrender of the Fort—The new Confederate Line—Island No. 10 Occupied by Them—It is Reduced—The War in Arkansas—Battle of Pea Ridge—Operations on the Coast—The Burnside Expedition—Capture of Fort Pulaski—Butler's Expedition to Louisiana..... 760

CHAPTER IV.

The Invasion of New Mexico by Sibley—Canby's Defence—The Fleet on the Mississippi—The Ram Fleet under Colonel Ellet—Memphis Yields—Butler's Louisiana Campaign—Farragut's Naval Battle—Fort Jackson and Fort St. Philip—New Orleans Taken—The Fleet Ascends the River—First Operations against Vicksburg—The Chesapeake Naval Battle between the Merrimac and Monitor—The Confederate Government—Stanton—Shields defeats Jackson—McClellan's Peninsula Campaign—The Battle of Pittsburg Landing..... 769

CHAPTER V.

McClellan's Campaign against Richmond—Operations in the Shenandoah Valley—The Seven Days' Battles—Mechanicsville—Fair Oaks—Gaines' Mill—White-Oak Swamp—Malvern Hill—McClellan Retires to Harrison's Landing—Halleck made General-in-Chief—McClellan Embarks for the Potomac—Pope's Vainglorious Promises—Banks Worsted at Cedar Mountain—Jackson in Pope's Rear—Second Battle of Bull Run—Pope not Supported by McClellan—He Retreats to Washington and Resigns—Colonel Cantwell—Lee Enters Maryland—Outgenerals McClellan and takes Harper's Ferry—Battles of South Mountain and Antietam—Lee Retreats—McClellan Pursues—He is Relieved..... 786

CHAPTER VI.

The Operations in Tennessee, Kentucky, and Mississippi—Advance of General Bragg—Battles of Richmond and Munfordsville—A Confederate Governor of Kentucky Inaugurated—Buell in the Field—Bragg Beaten at Perryville—Retreats through Cumberland Gap—Rosecrans Defeats Price at Iuka, and Van Dorn at Corinth—Rosecrans' Winter Campaign—Morgan's Raid—Bragg Defeated at Stone River—Minor Operations..... 800

CHAPTER VII.

Operations against Vicksburg—Grant's First Attempt Defeated by Van Dorn's Capture of Holly Springs—General Sherman Aided by Porter's Gunboats—Attempts to Storm it, but is Repulsed with Heavy Loss—Grant's Various Attempts—He goes down the River—Battles of Port Gibson, Raymond, Jackson, Champion Hills, Big Black—Vicksburg Invested—Pemberton Surrenders—Grant drives Johnston from Jackson—Fight at Milliken's Bend—Operations in Louisiana and Texas under General Banks—His Repulse at Port Hudson—Second Attack—Gardiner Surrenders—Minor Operations..... 809

CHAPTER VIII.

The Army of the Potomac under General Burnside—He Crosses the Rappahannock and Attacks Lee's Position at Marye's Heights—He is Repulsed with heavy Loss, and Recrosses the River—Removed when about to Renew the Attack—General Hooker takes Command—He Crosses the Rappahannock—Battle of Chancellorsville—His Right Wing turned by Jackson, who is Killed—Desperate Fighting—Hooker Stunned by a Cannon-ball at Chancellorsville—Sedgwick, Operating below, Attacked by Lee's whole Force and Driven across the River—Hooker Recrosses—Longstreet—Lee Flanks Hooker's Right—Milroy Surprised at Winchester—Lee Crosses the Potomac—Hooker, unable to Obtain the Garrison of Harper's Ferry, Resigns—Meade placed in Command—Movements of the Armies They come in Collision at Gettysburg—The Battle—General Reynolds Killed and his Corps Driven through the Town—The Halt on Cemetery Hill—Sickles takes a wrong Position—Hancock—Meade Arrives—Sickles Driven back—The Terrible Charge of Lee's whole Line—Its Repulse—Lee Retreats—Manassas Gap—Warren and Hill—The Armies Resume their old Positions—Mine Run—Droop Mountain..... 818

CHAPTER IX.

Morgan's Raid through Indiana and Ohio—The War in Tennessee—Rosecrans flanks Bragg and drives him to Lafayette—Bragg Faces—Battle of Chickamauga—Rosecrans Defeated—Grant succeeds him—Bragg sends Longstreet against Burnside—Campbell's Station—Longstreet Repulsed—Cavalry Raids—Grant's Campaign—Hooker Crosses the Tennessee—Wauhatchie—Lookout Mountain—Mission Ridge—Sherman—Cleburne checks Hooker at White-Oak Ridge—Knoxville Relieved—The War in Missouri, Arkansas, and Indian Territory—Marmaduke at Springfield, Hartsville, Batesville, and Cape Girardeau—Coffey's Operations—Quantrell's Cruelties—Indian Operations—The Sioux War..... 834

CHAPTER X.

Operations from North Carolina to Florida in 1862-3—Capture of Fort Pulaski—Jacksonville taken and abandoned—Hunter repulsed at Secessionville—The Nashville—Dupont Repulsed—Ironclad Raid from Charleston—Attack on Fort Sumter—The Swamp Angel—Wagner taken—Hill at Newberne—Vallandigham's case—The Draft-Riots in New York—Negro Soldiers 854

CHAPTER XI.

An Offer of Amnesty—Gilmore's Operations in Florida—Seymour defeated at Olustee—A Convention at Jacksonville in favor of the United States—Unsuccessful Operations in South Carolina—A Stirring Campaign in North Carolina on Land and Water—Banks' Red River Expedition—He retires—The Fleet carried over the Rapids by Engineering Skill—Operations in Texas and Arkansas—Rosecrans in Missouri—Price's last Attempt to carry the State—Battles at Pilot Knob, Little and Big Blue, Little Osage and Newtonia..... 867

CHAPTER XII.

General Grant in Virginia—He takes Command of the Armies—The Army of the Potomac reorganized—Kilpatrick sent against Richmond—Death of Dahlgren—Grant fights the Battle of the Wilderness—Spottsylvania—Hancock storms the Lines—His Captures—Sheridan and J. E. B. Stuart—Butler operating south of the James—Action at Port Walthall Junction—Beauregard attacks Butler—Gunboats blown up—Grant at the North Anne—A sharp Action—Burnside defeated—Repulse at Cold Harbor—Butler's Operations against Petersburg—Meade at the Weldon Railroad—Defeat of Hancock and Gregg—Close of the Campaign of 1864—Jones and Avery in the Shenandoah Valley—Early threatens Washington—Sheridan sent against him—Battles of Opequan and Fisher's Hill—Early surprises Crook at Cedar Creek—Sheridan's Ride—A Defeat turned into a Victory by a single Man..... 882

CHAPTER XIII.

Sufferings of Prisoners—Andersonville—Forrest's Raids—He takes Fort Pillow—Fearful Atrocities—He routs Sturgis—Is beaten by A. J. Smith—Various Actions—Morgan's last Raid—Pursued and killed—Sherman's Campaign against Johnston—His three Armies—Hooker takes Resaca—Davis takes Rone—Fight at Pumpkinvine Creek—New Hopes—Dallas—Allatoona—Sherman repulsed at Kenesaw—Again flanks Johnston—Hood supersedes Johnston—He twice attacks Sherman and is repulsed—Stoneman's Failure—Hardee defeated—Hood abandons Atlanta—Sherman occupies it, and expels its Inhabitants—Hood endeavors to draw Sherman out of Georgia—French defeated by Corse at Allatoona—Thomas sent to defend Tennessee—Sherman prepares to march to the Sea..... 903

CHAPTER XIV.

The Confederates on the Sea—The Oreto, Alabama, Florida—Capture of the Revenue Cutter Chesapeake—Aid given by England and her Provinces—Capture of the Florida and Japan—Engagement between the Alabama and the Kearsarge—The Alabama sunk—Farragut in Mobile Harbor destroys the Confederate Fleet. 917

CHAPTER XV.

The Presidential Election—Movements for Peace—The Negotiations at Hampton Roads—Forrest's last Raid—Hood advances, and Thomas falls back to Nashville—Bloody Battle at Franklin—The Battle at Nashville—Thomas attacks Hood on the right and left, and carries his first Line—He storms Overton's Hill—Hood routed and driven across the Tennessee—Breckinridge driven into North Carolina—Saltville taken..... 922

CHAPTER XVI.

Sherman's March to the Sea—Mode of Proceeding—Fights on the way—Before Savannah—Hazen storms Fort McAllister—Sherman meets Foster and Dahlgren—Savannah evacuated—Sherman's Christmas-present to President Lincoln—Operations to co-operate with him—He crosses the Edisto—Actions at Branchville, Orangeburg, and on the Congaree—Columbia surrendered—The Conflagration—Hardee evacuates Charleston—The Stars and Stripes raised at Sumter—Sherman enters North Carolina—Fayetteville—Actions at Averysborough and Bentonville—Goldsborough—The Expeditions against Fort Fisher—It is carried at last—Fall of Wilmington—Hoke's Repulse—Wilson's brilliant Cavalry Campaign in Alabama—Canby reduces Mobile..... 927

CHAPTER XVII.

The Close of the War—Grant begins operations—The Confederate Rams in the James—Sheridan in the Valley again—He crushes Early—Wheels around Lee's Lines and reports to Grant—Lee's bold Dash—He takes Fort Steedman—Grant's Advance on the Confederate Lines—Sheridan at Five-Forks—General Assault by Grant—Forts Gregg and Alexander carried—Lee defeated, and A. P. Hill killed—He telegraphs to Davis that Richmond must be evacuated—The Confederate Capital in Confusion and Flames—Weitzel enters it—Lee's Retreat—Sheridan heads him off—Grant proposes a Surrender—Lee hesitates—Appomattox Court House—Surrender of Lee's Army of Virginia..... 936

CHAPTER XVIII.

Abraham Lincoln's Second Term—His Inauguration—He receives the News of the Fall of Richmond—He visits that City—His last Proclamations—He is assassinated in Ford's Theatre, Washington, by John Wilkes Booth—Simultaneous Attempts to assassinate Mr. Seward, the Secretary of State—Death of Mr. Lincoln—Effect throughout the Country—Its terribly disastrous Consequences to the South. 942

CHAPTER XIX.

ANDREW JOHNSON, SEVENTEENTH PRESIDENT—1865-1869.

Sketch of President Johnson—His Inauguration—Investigation into Lincoln's Assassination—Pursuit of Booth, his Capture and Death—The Attempt to Assassinate Mr. Seward—A Conspiracy—Arrest of several—The bloody Court-martial—Hanging—The Conclusion of the War—The Surrender of Johnston—Other Confederate Bodies—Jefferson Davis attempts to escape—Pursued and Captured—Imprisoned, but never tried—The Confederate Flag on the Ocean—The last of the British-built Ships—President Johnson and Congress—Their different Views as to the Treatment of the South—A Series of Collisions—Bitter Feeling of the Republican Party against the Man whom they had raised to Office—President Johnson's Vetoes—Congress disregards them—Assumes to be the Government—One House of Congress impeaches the President, whom they had treated with every Dishonor—The other tries him—The great Impeachment Trial—Acquittal of the President—The South ruined by oppressive Reconstruction Acts—Fenian Affairs—Attempts to invade Canada—Prompt Action of Government—The Atlantic Cable—Close of Johnson's Administration..... 946

CHAPTER XX.

ULYSSES S. GRANT, EIGHTEENTH PRESIDENT—1869-1877.

President Grant—His Cabinet—Reconstruction of Virginia—Mississippi and Texas—The Fifteenth Amendment—Proposed Annexation of St. Domingo—The great Conflagration at Chicago—Settlement of the Alabama Claims—The Presidential Election—Death of Mr. Greeley—The Modoc War—Trouble with Spain in regard to the Seizure of the Virginius and Murder of her Crew and Passengers at Santiago de Cuba—The Louisiana Troubles—Centennial Exhibition at Philadelphia—Colorado admitted as a State—Trial of Belknap, Secretary of War—Nez Percés and Sioux War—Presidential Election—Disputed States—Electoral Commission. 965

CHAPTER XXI.

RUTHERFORD B. HAYES, NINETEENTH PRESIDENT—1877-1881.

His Cabinet—Conciliatory Policy toward the South—Financial Troubles—Strikes and Riots—The House of Representatives resists the use of Military Power at Elections—The Ute War—The Yellow Fever—The Chinese Question—Decrease of the Debt—Presidential Election..... 979

CHAPTER XXII.

JAMES A. GARFIELD, TWENTIETH PRESIDENT—1881. CHESTER A. ARTHUR, TWENTY-FIRST PRESIDENT—1881-1885.

Garfield's Cabinet—Difficulty as to New York Appointments—He is Shot by Guiteau—His Sufferings and Death—Foreign Sympathy—Arthur's Policy—Trial of Guiteau—Apportionment of Representatives—The Suppression of Polygamy in Utah—Arctic Explorations—The Brooklyn Bridge—Election of Cleveland..... 983

CHAPTER XXIII.

GROVER CLEVELAND, TWENTY-SECOND PRESIDENT—1885.

His Cabinet—Gen. Grant put on the Retired List—His Death at Mt. McGregor—Massacre of Chinese in Wyoming—Recognition of the International Association of the Congo—The Rights of American Fishermen questioned by Canada—American Fishing Vessels seized—Death of Vice-President Hendricks..... 988

BIOGRAPHICAL PORTRAIT GALLERY

—OF—

PROMINENT CHARACTERS

—IN—

AMERICAN HISTORY,

INCLUDING

OUR PRESIDENTS;

Their Portraits and Autographs,

WITH BRIEF BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES,

TOGETHER WITH

CONCISE CHRONOLOGICAL TABLES OF THE PRINCIPAL EVENTS IN UNIVERSAL HISTORY, CONTEMPORARY WITH THE ADMINISTRATION OF EACH.

ALSO

Fac-Simile of the Declaration of Independence,

IN THE HANDWRITING OF ITS AUTHOR, AND THE AUTOGRAPHS OF THE SIGNERS,

WITH A DESCRIPTION OF THE CONSTRUCTION OF OUR NATIONAL GOVERNMENT, AND HOW IT IS ADMINISTERED IN ITS VARIOUS DEPARTMENTS.

NEW YORK:
GAY BROTHERS & CO.

CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE OF EVENTS

IN THE UNITED STATES AND IN THE PRINCIPAL COUNTRIES OF EUROPE CONTEMPORARY WITH EACH PRESIDENTIAL ADMINISTRATION.

Washington's Administration [1789-1797].

THE UNITED STATES.

1789. Washington inaugurated President of the United States. **1790.** District of Columbia ceded to the United States. **1791.** Bank of the United States established; Vermont admitted into the Union. **1792.** Kentucky admitted into the Union. **1793.** Washington inaugurated a second time. **1794.** Whiskey insurrection in Pennsylvania. **1795.** Jay's treaty with Great Britain ratified. **1796.** Tennessee admitted into the Union; Washington issues his Farewell Address; John Adams elected President of the United States.

GREAT BRITAIN

1789. George III. had reigned twenty-nine years; the British constitution extended to Canada. **1790.** The peace of British India disturbed by hostile Tippoo Sultan. **1791.** The people of the kingdom divided in opinion concerning the French Revolution. **1792.** Parliament takes measures for the abolition of the slave-trade. **1793.** War against France declared. **1794.** Seditious persons and societies prosecuted. **1795.** Coalition with other powers against France. **1796.** Great bread-riot in London.

FRANCE.

1789. Louis XVI. king; the French Revolution breaks out; the States-General assemble. **1790.** The king unsuccessfully attempts to fly from France. **1792.** The more conservative Girondists in power. **1793.** Monarchy abolished and the king and queen beheaded; Europe arms against France. **1794.** The Reign of Terror. **1795.** Revolution of Ninth Thermidor. **1796.** Rapid military advancement of Napoleon Bonaparte; he marries Josephine.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1789. Charles IV. king of Spain; Maria queen of Portugal. *Spain*—**1792.** Joins the coalition against France; Manuel Godoy becomes the real ruler of Spain. **1795.** By the treaty of Ildefonso Spain cedes Santo Domingo to France. **1796.** Godoy concludes an offensive and defensive league with France, and declares war against England. *Portugal*—**1792.** Queen Maria becomes insane, and her son rules in her name. **1793.** Portugal declares war against the French Republic.

RUSSIA.

1789. Catharine II. empress of Russia. **1792.** Peace with the Turks concluded. **1793.** The second dismemberment of Poland effected. **1794.** A formidable rebellion in Poland against Russia, led by Kosciuszko. **1795.** The final destruction of the kingdom of Poland and Russia receives as her share of the plunder about two-thirds of the domain. **1796.** The Empress Catharine II. dies.

GERMANY, AUSTRIA, PRUSSIA, AND HUNGARY.

1790. The tottering fabric of the German empire of petty states falls. *Austria*—**1790.** Joseph II. dies, and his brother Leopold becomes emperor. **1792.** Austria joins the coalition against France; Leopold's son Francis succeeds him; Austria engages warmly in the wars against France. *Prussia*—**1789.** Frederick William II. king. **1792.** Prussia joins the coalition against France. **1795.** In the partition of Poland takes 40,000 sq. m. of her territory. *Hungary*—**1791.** Her constitutional rights and the rights of Protestants sanctioned by Austria. **1795.** Measures taken to suppress democracy in Hungary

ITALY.

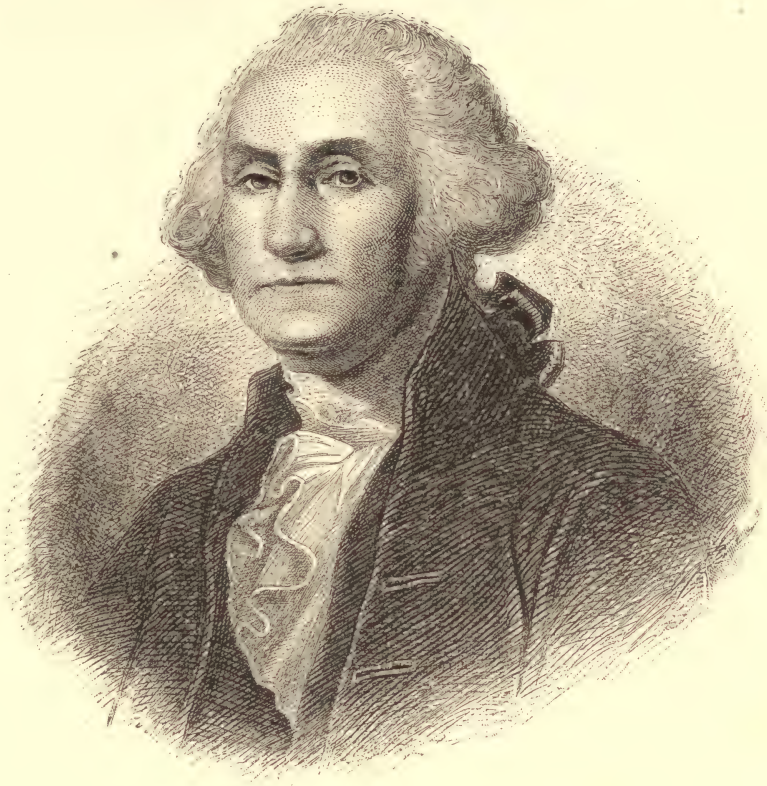
1789. Italy was divided between the Papal States, the principalities of Savoy, Parma, and Modena, the republics of Venice and Genoa, and kingdom of Naples. **1792.** French troops penetrate Savoy. **1793.** The French National Convention declares war against Naples. **1795.** The French expelled from Italy. **1796.** Bonaparte in chief command of French troops in Italy; annexes Italian territory to France.

THE NETHERLANDS AND SWITZERLAND.

1790. *Netherlands*—William IV., Prince of Orange, ruler. **1792.** A French army invades and conquers Belgium. **1794.** Holland invaded and conquered by the French. **1795.** The Batavian republic proclaimed. *Switzerland*—**1789.** A republic of confederated cantons or states. **1792.** Induced to engage in war with revolutionary France. **1793-94** The French deprive the Swiss of their constitution, and in **1798** establish the Helvetian republic.

DENMARK, SWEDEN, AND NORWAY.

1789. *Denmark*—Christian VII. king. **1792.** Refuses to join the coalition against France, and remains neutral during the French Revolution. *Sweden*—**1789.** Gustavus III. king; the Senate abolished and the prerogatives of the crown extended. **1792.** The king assassinated at a masked ball by Count Ankerström; the assassin was scourged three successive days with whips of iron, had his right hand cut off, then his head, and his body impaled. *Norway* was scarcely more than a province of Denmark until the beginning of the present century.



G. Washington

FIRST PRESIDENT.

Born in Westmoreland county, Va., Feb. 22, 1732. *Began surveying the Virginia Valley,* 1748. *Appointed major in the army,* 1751. *Promoted to colonel,* 1754. *Married Mrs. Martha Custis,* 1759. *Member House of Burgesses of Virginia,* 1759. *Delegate to the first Continental Congress,* 1774. *Elected Commander-in-Chief, by the Congress, June* 15, 1775. *Salary fixed at* $6,000 *per year, but he declined to receive any compensation. War ended by surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown, Va., Oct.* 19, 1781. *Treaty of Peace signed in Paris, Sept.* 3, 1783. *Resigned his commission, Dec.* 23, 1783. *Presided over the Convention which framed the Constitution, Philadelphia,* 1787. *Inaugurated first President of the United States, New York, April,* 30, 1789. *Elected for a second term,* 1793. *Declined a third term. Issued his "Farewell Address," Sept.* 19, 1796. *Believing a French invasion contemplated, he was again summoned to take the field, May,* 1798. *Died Dec.* 14, 1799. *Vice-President, John Adams.*

John Adams's Administration [1797-1801].

THE UNITED STATES.

1797. John Adams inaugurated President of the United States. **1798.** Preparations made for an expected war with France; Washington appointed commander-in-chief of a provisional army; Alien and Sedition Laws passed. **1799.** Death of Washington; war with France on the ocean ceases. **1800.** Seat of government removed to Washington City; the provisional army disbanded; Thomas Jefferson elected President of the United States.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1797. England was the only power at war with France; the English gain a brilliant naval victory off Cape St. Vincent; mutinies in the British navy suppressed. **1798.** England prepares for an invasion by the French; rebellion in Ireland suppressed; Nelson gains a victory at the battle of the Nile; war in India with Tippoo Sahib. **1799.** The Duke of York attempts to drive the French from Holland. **1800.** The king shot at twice the same day. **1801.** Legislative union between Great Britain and Ireland effected.

FRANCE.

1797. Bonaparte makes conquests in Italy and concludes the treaties of Leoben and Campo Formio. **1798.** Bonaparte sent to conquer Egypt. **1799.** Bonaparte invades Syria and on his return usurps the civil power of France. **1800.** Bonaparte made First Consul of France; invades Italy; gains a great victory at Marengo; also at other points, and concludes a treaty with Austria in its own name and that of the German Empire.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1797. The Spanish fleet defeated in battle off Cape St. Vincent by an English fleet. **1798.** All the ports of Spain blockaded by the English. *Portugal*—**1799.** The queen, Maria, pronounced hopelessly insane; her son, Prince of Brazil, is made regent of the kingdom with full regal powers. **1800.** In alliance with England and Russia, Portugal renews war with France; Bonaparte compels Spain to declare war against Portugal.

GERMANY, AUSTRIA, PRUSSIA, AND HUNGARY.

1797. *Austria*—By the peace of Campo Formio Austria lost Lombardy and the Netherlands, but obtained a large portion of Venetia. **1799.** In alliance with Russia Austria declares war against the French Republic the second time. **1801.** Bonaparte compels Austria to accept the peace of Lunéville. *Prussia*—**1797.** Frederick William III. king. After **1795** Prussia maintained its neutrality. *Hungary* furnished Austria with money and men to make war on the French.

RUSSIA.

1797. Engages actively in war against France, forming an alliance with England, Austria, Naples, and Turkey. **1799.** Sends armies to Italy, Switzerland, and Holland against the French Republic. **1799.** Concludes a convention of armed neutrality with Denmark and Sweden. **1800.** Makes friendly advances toward France. **1801.** The Emperor Paul assassinated by conspirators among the Russian nobility

ITALY.

1797. Bonaparte forms the Cisalpine Republic, composed of Mantua, Milan, the portion of Parma north of the Po, and Modena; France makes war on the pope. **1798.** The French overthrow the Papal States and erect a Roman Republic; the Ligurian Republic established at Genoa; Naples concludes a treaty of alliance with Great Britain and Russia; the French establish the Parthenopean Republic in Naples. **1800.** The Austrians defeated by the French at Marengo.

SWITZERLAND.

1798. Two French armies invade Switzerland without a pretext, capture the city of Berne, plunder its army and treasury, and proclaim the Helvetian Republic of eighteen cantons, with Aarau as its capital; Geneva, Berne, and several other portions of Swiss territory incorporated with the French Republic. **1800.** Aloys Reding leads an insurrection to overthrow the French-created republic, but fails; a new constitution imposed on the Swiss.

DENMARK AND SWEDEN.

1801. By an alliance with Russia, Prussia, and Sweden, Denmark involved herself in war with England; she suffered much in a naval battle off Copenhagen, and lost her colonies in the East and West Indies; these were restored by treaty. *Sweden*—**1798.** Gustavus IV., on his accession to the throne as full monarch at the age of eighteen, became involved in hostilities with France and Russia. **1800.** Sir John Moore sent with an English army to Sweden, but soon returned.



John Adams.

SECOND PRESIDENT.

Born in Quincy, Mass., Oct. 19, 1735. *Graduate at Harvard College.* 1755. *Admitted to the bar,* 1758. *Commissioner to France,* 1778. *Author of Constitution of Massachusetts,* 1779. *Minister to negotiate peace with Great Britain,* 1779; *sent to Holland,* 1780; *summoned to Paris to consult on the general peace, which was signed,* 1783. *Appointed Minister Plenipotentiary to Great Britain,* 1785. *Resigned,* 1788, *and was elected Vice-President. Elected President of the United States,* 1796, *defeating Thomas Jefferson. Died July* 4, 1826. *Vice-President, Thomas Jefferson.*

Jefferson's Administration [1801-1809].

THE UNITED STATES.

1801. Thomas Jefferson inaugurated President of the United States; Tripoli declares war against the United States. **1802.** Ohio admitted into the Union. **1803.** War with the Barbary States begins; Louisiana purchased from France. **1804.** An exploring expedition from the Mississippi to the Pacific begins. **1805.** Peace with the Barbary States effected; Aaron Burr's mysterious expedition in the Mississippi Valley. **1806.** Partial non-intercourse with Great Britain adopted. **1807.** Attack on the frigate *Chesapeake;* successful navigation by steam accomplished. **1808.** The slave-trade abolished. **1809.** Embargo Act repealed.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1801. Nelson's victory at Copenhagen; British national debt $2,600,000,000; the French expelled from Egypt. **1802.** Peace of Amiens. **1803.** War against Bonaparte renewed. **1804.** England threatened with invasion by Napoleon I. **1805.** Nelson's victory and death at Trafalgar. **1806.** Death of Pitt (the premier) and Charles J. Fox. **1807.** Orders in council against the Berlin decree; abolition of the slave-trade. **1808.** Small English armies sent to the Spanish Peninsula. **1809.** Death of Sir John Moore.

FRANCE.

1801. Bonaparte First Consul. **1802.** Legion of Honor instituted; Bonaparte made Consul for life. **1803.** France sells Louisiana to the United States; the Bank of France established; declaration of war against England. **1804.** Conspiracy of Moreau and Pichegru; Bonaparte proclaimed emperor as "Napoleon I." **1805.** Napoleon crowned king of Italy; defeats the Allies at Austerlitz. **1806.** Battle of Jena; the Berlin decree; the beginning of the "Continental system." **1808.** New nobility of France created.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1801. *Spain* begins war against Portugal. **1802.** Cedes Trinidad to England. **1804.** Spanish treasure-ships valued at $3,000,000 seized by the English; declares war against England. **1806.** Godoy, "Prince of Peace," the real ruler. **1807.** Conspiracy of the Prince of Asturias. **1808.** The French take Madrid; Godoy dismissed; abdication of Charles IV.; Joseph Bonaparte king of Spain. *Portugal*—**1801.** At war with Spain. **1807.** On the invasion of the French the regent and royal family fly to Brazil; Marshal Junot enters Lisbon. **1808.** The defeated French army allowed to evacuate Portugal in British ships.

GERMANY AND AUSTRIA.

1801. Francis II., Emperor of Germany, ruler. **1804.** Francis, whose title is an empty one, assumes the hereditary title of emperor of Austria as Francis I., and unites all his domains under the name of the "Austrian Empire." **1805.** Joins the new coalition against France; defeated at Austerlitz; surrender of General Mack. **1806.** Loses Venice and the Tyrol; the German Empire dissolved and the end of the "Holy Roman Empire" established by Charlemagne, accomplished; Francis lays down the imperial crown of Germany.

RUSSIA.

1801. Alexander I. emperor. **1802.** Promotes the treaties which lead to the gradual dissolution of the German Empire. **1803.** The provinces of Georgia, in Asia, incorporated with Russia. **1805.** The emperor present at the battle of Austerlitz. **1807.** Russians defeated at the battle of Friedland; successful war with the Turks; Alexander and Napoleon conclude the treaty of Tilsit on a raft in the river Niemen; the Ionian Islands ceded to France.

ITALY.

1801. Possession of Venice confirmed to Austria. **1802.** The Italian Republic established with Bonaparte as president; the king of Naples concludes a peace at Florence. **1805.** Napoleon crowned king of Italy; a new constitution formed; Eugene Beauharnais made viceroy. **1806.** Austria loses its Italian provinces. **1808.** Etruria united with France; Napoleon makes the Prince Borghese ruler at Turin and gives the crown of Naples to Murat.

SWITZERLAND.

1802. Civil war in Switzerland; the Helvetic government retires to Lausanne. **1803.** Bonaparte assumes the title and functions of "Mediator of Switzerland"; the Federal government restored and a Landermann appointed by France; three cantons separate from the Republic; a new constitution given to Switzerland, under which it enjoyed peace for ten years.

DENMARK AND SWEDEN.

1801. Admirals Nelson and Parker bombard Copenhagen, destroying eighteen Danish war-ships and killing eighteen hundred of their crews in battle. **1807.** Admiral Gambier and Lord Cathcart bombard Copenhagen, and capture eighteen Danish ships of the line, fifteen frigates, and thirty-seven brigs. *Sweden*—**1809.** The Swedes, after suffering from the rule of their half-insane king, Gustavus IV., depose him and seat his uncle, the regent, Duke of Sudermania, on the throne as Charles XIII.

HOLLAND.

1806. The Batavian Republic, administered by a director (Schimmelpenninck), terminates, and Napoleon erects Holland into a kingdom, placing his brother Louis on the throne; on the abdication of Louis, in **1810**, Holland was incorporated as an integral part of the French Empire.



Th. Jefferson

THIRD PRESIDENT.

Born in Shadwell, Va., April 2, 1743. *Received a classical education in William and Mary College. Admitted to the bar,* 1767. *Member House of Burgesses, Va.,* 1769. *Elected to the Colonial Congress,* 1775. *Chosen to prepare the Declaration of Independence, adopted July* 4, 1776. *Elected Governor of Va.,* 1779. *Member of Congress,* 1783. *Appointed Minister to France, to succeed Benjamin Franklin,* 1784. *Appointed Secretary of State by President Washington,* 1789. *Elected Vice-President,* 1796. *Elected President of the U. S.,* 1801, *and re-elected for second term. Founder of the University of Virginia. Died July* 4, 1826. *Vice-President, Aaron Burr.*

Madison's Administration [1809-1817].

THE UNITED STATES.

1809. James Madison inaugurated President of the United States; Embargo Act repealed. **1811** War with Indian tribes; battle of Tippecanoe; engagement between the *President* and *Little Belt*. **1812.** Embargo laid for three months; war declared against Great Britain; surrender of Detroit; capture of the *Guerriere;* action between the *Wasp* and *Frolic*, the *United States* and *Macedonian;* Louisiana admitted into the Union. **1813.** Action between the *Chesapeake* and *Shannon;* Perry's victory on Lake Erie; Buffalo burnt. **1814.** Great cruise of the *Essex* in the Pacific; battles on Niagara frontier; Washington City captured and the Capitol burnt; battles at Plattsburg; treaty of peace signed at Ghent. **1815.** Battle of New Orleans; treaty of peace ratified; war with Algiers. **1816.** James Monroe elected President of the United States; United States Bank rechartered.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1809 Troops under Wellington sent to Portugal to drive out the French; Arthur Wellesley, the commander, made "Viscount Wellington"; an expedition of 40,000 land troops and a large fleet, sent to capture the Dutch island of Walcheren, was unfortunate. **1810.** King George becomes hopelessly insane; arrest of Sir Francis Burdett, and a great riot **1811.** The Prince of Wales made regent of the kingdom; frequent riots in the manufacturing districts. **1812.** War with the United States begun; the prime minister, Perceval, assassinated; England allied against Napoleon. **1813.** End of the war on the Peninsula. **1814.** Attempt to invade Louisiana; peace with the United States. **1815.** Wellington gains the battle of Waterloo; Great Britain a party to the Congress at Vienna. **1816.** Great riot in London.

FRANCE.

1809. Divorce of Napoleon and Josephine. **1810.** Holland united to France; Napoleon marries an Austrian princess. **1811.** Coolness between France and Russia. **1812.** War with Russia declared; disastrous expedition to Moscow. **1813.** A triple alliance against France, which the British enter. **1814.** Paris surrenders to the Allies; Napoleon abdicates and retires to Elba; Bourbon dynasty restored. **1815.** Napoleon returns from Elba; flight of the Bourbon court; the slave-trade abolished; Napoleon defeated at Waterloo, and again abdicates; the Bourbon dynasty again restored; Napoleon a prisoner for life on St. Helena. **1816.** By law the Napoleon family is excluded from France for ever.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1809. The French make many conquests in Spain. **1810.** The Spanish Cortes meet and nominate a regent. **1811.** Wellington defeats the French under both Massena and Soult. **1812.** Constitution adopted by the Cortes; Wellington occupies Madrid. **1813.** Wellington drives the French over the Pyrenees and enters France. **1814.** Ferdinand VII. restored. **1815.** The Inquisition revived and the Jesuits restored; from 1814 to 1819 there were twenty-five changes in the Spanish ministry. *Portugal*—**1814.** Cedes Guiana to France. **1815.** Union of Portugal with Brazil.

GERMANY, AUSTRIA, AND PRUSSIA.

1815. A confederation of German states which had maintained their sovereignty (formerly about 300, then 40) was formed. *Austria*—**1809.** The peace of Vienna deprived Austria of 42,000 sq. m. of territory and 3,500,000 of population. **1810.** The Archduchess Maria Louisa marries Napoleon. **1812.** Austria is in alliance with Napoleon against Russia. **1814.** A congress of sovereigns assembles at Vienna. **1815** "Holy Alliance" formed, Italian provinces restored, and the Lombardo-Venetian kingdom established. *Prussia*—Engages in war against Napoleon. **1813.** A great popular uprising to expel the French from Prussia; the "landwehr," or militia, established. **1814.** The king visits England.

RUSSIA.

1809. Turks defeated near Silistria. **1812.** War with France; Moscow burnt by the Russians. **1813.** The emperor forms a coalition with other powers against Napoleon; the emperor at the battle of Leipsic. **1814.** The emperor enters Paris; visits England; a member of the congress of sovereigns at Vienna; an agreement that Poland should be annexed to Russia. **1815.** The emperor chief in the formation of the "Holy Alliance."

ITALY.

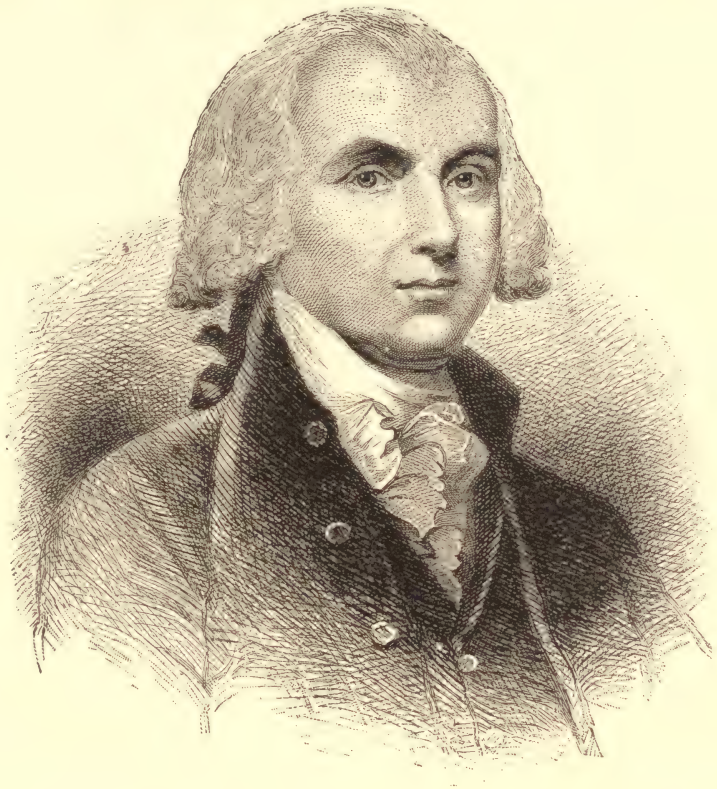
1809. Napoleon gives Tuscany to his sister Eliza with the title of Grand Duchess; Italy continued to bear heavy burdens on account of the wars of Napoleon; the wife of Napoleon obtains three Italian duchies, with reversion to her son. **1814.** The French troops evacuate Italy, and the provinces are restored to their legitimate rulers. **1815.** The Lombardo-Venetian kingdom established for Austria; Murat takes up arms for the independence of Italy, but is defeated: affairs of Italy arranged by the congress at Vienna. **1816.** Insurrections prevail.

DENMARK, SWEDEN, AND NORWAY.

1814. Denmark compelled to cede Norway to Sweden in exchange for Pomerania. **1815.** Denmark makes over Pomerania to Prussia in exchange for money and for other territory. *Sweden*—**1809.** Finland ceded to Russia. **1810.** On the sudden death of a prince Marshal Bernadotte is chosen crown prince. **1812.** Swedish Pomerania seized by Napoleon. **1814.** By the treaty of Kiel Norway is ceded to Sweden. *Norway*—**1814.** The Danish crown prince accepts the crown from the Norwegians as an independent sovereign; the Swedish crown prince, with an army, and the help of a British fleet, takes possession of the country.

HOLLAND.

1810. Incorporated as a part of the French empire. **1815.** Prince of Orange is declared king (William I.) by an Assembly of Notables, and a constitution is adopted; ancient southern provinces are annexed to Holland by the congress at Vienna.



James Madison

FOURTH PRESIDENT.

Born in King George, Orange county, Va., March 16, 1751. *Graduate at Princeton College, N. J.,* 1771. *Elected to the General Assembly of Virginia,* 1776; *to the Executive Council of the State,* 1778, *and to the Congress,* 1779, *holding his seat until* 1783. *Member of the Virginia Legislature,* 1784, '85, '86, *and of the Convention which framed the Constitution,* 1787. *Elected a Member of the first Congress,* 1789, *continuing as such until* 1797. *Appointed Secretary of State by President Jefferson,* 1801. *Elected President of the United States,* 1808, *and re-elected for a second term. Died June* 28, 1836. *Vice-President, first term, George Clinton; second term, Elbridge Gerry.*

Monroe's Administration [*1817-1825*].

THE UNITED STATES.

1817. James Monroe inaugurated President of the United States; Mississippi admitted into the Union. **1818.** Illinois admitted into the Union; United States troops invade Florida; Pension Act passed. **1819.** Alabama admitted into the Union; warm debate on the question of slavery. **1820.** Maine admitted into the Union. **1821.** Debate on the admission of Missouri; the "Missouri Compromise"; Missouri admitted; Florida annexed. **1822.** Independence of Spanish-American governments acknowledged. **1823.** The "Monroe Doctrine" announced. **1824.** Convention with Great Britain for the suppression of the slave-trade; convention with Russia in relation to the northwest boundary; Lafayette visits the United States; John Quincy Adams elected President of the United States.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1817. The privilege of the writ of habeas corpus suspended. **1818.** The public debt $4,300,000,000; specie payments resumed. **1819.** Queen Charlotte dies; Queen Victoria born; great reform meeting in Manchester broken up by military force. **1820.** The "Cato Street Conspiracy" discovered; George III. dies; accession of George IV.; trial of Queen Caroline. **1821.** Coronation of George IV.; Queen Caroline dies. **1822.** Canning becomes Minister of Foreign Affairs; favors Catholic emancipation. **1823.** Independence of Spanish-American Republics acknowledged; free-trade policy recommended.

FRANCE.

1817. Louis XVIII. king of France. **1818.** The congress at Aix-la-Chapelle reinstates France in dignity and power; a royal charter given. **1820.** Assassination of the Duke of Berri. **1821.** Napoleon dies at St. Helena; the "Holy Alliance" active and influential at court. **1823.** At their request the king sends one hundred thousand French soldiers into Spain to support Ferdinand, the Bourbon king; Cadiz, with the Cortes, captured by the French. **1824.** Fraudulent elections; despotic laws enacted; the king dies and Count d'Artois ascends the throne as Charles X.

GERMAN CONFEDERATION.

1815. Takes the place of the Confederation of the Rhine; it included Austria, Prussia, and all the petty kingdoms and principalities which had preserved their sovereignty. **1817.** The Prussians established a Ministry of Education. **1818.** The Prussian Zollverein, or Commercial Union, soon united the German states on the basis of material interests. **1819.** Assassination of Kotzebue produces an anti-liberal reaction; congress at Carlsbad. **1820-23.** Austria tries to suppress popular indications of liberal ideas everywhere; Prussia always liberal; Austria otherwise. **1824.** Austria favored the Turks in their war against the Greek patriots.

RUSSIA.

1817. A partial abolition of serfdom in the German-Baltic provinces begun, but emigration of the peasants from one province to another not allowed. **1818.** The emperor presides at the Congress of Aix-la-Chapelle, where Russia abandoned liberal reforms, the Austrian minister, Metternich, controlling the emperor and czar. **1820-22.** At three congresses the emperor urges the policy of suppressing political and religious freedom; the Jesuits expelled from Russia. **1824.** Russia favors the Turks in their war upon Greek patriots.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

Spain—**1817.** The slave-trade abolished for compensation. **1819.** Insurrection in Valencia repressed. **1820.** The Spanish revolution begins; the king (Ferdinand) swears to support the constitution framed by the Cortes. **1823.** The king removed by the Cortes, first to Seville and thence to Cadiz; the French enter Spain and invest Cadiz, but soon evacuate it; despotism resumed; the Cortes dissolved and execution of many liberals. *Portugal*—**1820.** Revolution in Portugal; Constitutional Junta. **1821.** A liberal constitution adopted; return of the court from Brazil. **1822.** Prince-regent becomes king. **1823.** The constitution modified. **1824.** Disturbances in Lisbon.

ITALY.

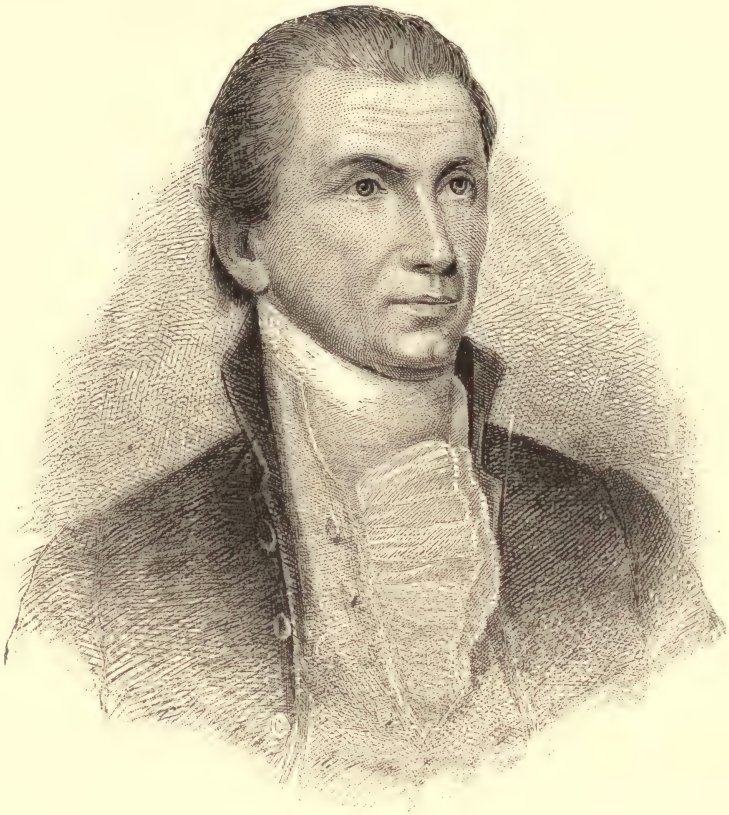
1817. The Congress of Vienna had divided Italy in the interest of despotism, without regard to the aspirations of the people for national unity. **1818.** Ante-revolutionary institutions having been restored, the dissatisfied people in some places rise in insurrection. **1820-21.** Revolutionary outbreaks occur in Naples and Sardinia. **1821.** The congress at Laybach orders Austrian troops to put down popular movements in Italy. **1822-23.** Austrian troops complete the subjugation of the liberal party. **1823-24.** Vindictive persecution of the liberals; the Papal States enjoy immunity from insurrections by the force of Austrian bayonets.

DENMARK, SWEDEN, AND NORWAY.

1817. Frederick VI. king of Denmark. **1820.** A national bank established at Copenhagen. **1824.** Denmark makes a commercial treaty with Great Britain. *Sweden*—**1818.** Bernadotte, the regent, ascends the throne as King of Sweden and Norway with the title of Charles John XIV.; Bernadotte, after trying in vain to have the constitution of Norway modified, accepts it. *Norway*—The legislature of Norway vote to abolish titles of nobility, and that the people shall be called *citizens* instead of *subjects*; the king vetoes the measure.

SWITZERLAND.

1817. Switzerland, on the invitation of the czar, joins the "Holy Alliance" and is governed by that body. **1823.** Concedes at the urgent request of the great Powers to place restrictions on the liberty of the press and to deny the right of asylum to political refugees. **1820-24.** Closely watched by the "Holy Alliance," for the people, dissatisfied with the political situation, were restive and were moved by an anxious desire for reform.



James Monroe

FIFTH PRESIDENT.

Born in Westmoreland county, Va., April 28, 1758. *Graduate at William and Mary College,* 1776. *Served that year in the Continental Army with Washington, and was Aide to Lord Sterling at Brandywine. Studied Law with Thomas Jefferson Elected to the State Legislature,* 1782; *to Congress,* 1783, *and the Legislature,* 1786. *Elected United States Senator,* 1790. *Envoy Extraordinary to the Court of Versailles, where he bought the Louisiana tract from Napoleon for* $15,000,000, 1794. *Served a short time as Minister to England. Elected Governor of Virginia,* 1810, *and held the office until appointed Secretary of State by President Madison. Elected President of the United States,* 1817; *re-elected,* 1821. *Died July* 4, 1831. *Vice-President, D. D. Tompkins.*

J. Q. Adams's Administration [*1825-1829*].

THE UNITED STATES.

1825. John Quincy Adams inaugurated President of the United States; the great Erie Canal in the State of New York completed; controversy between the National Government and the State of Georgia concerning the lands of the Creek Indians. **1826.** John Adams and Thomas Jefferson, both signers of the Declaration of Independence and both ex-Presidents of the United States, die on July 4 at the same hour; commissioners appointed to attend a congress of representatives of the Spanish-American Republics at Panama. **1827.** Tariff convention at Harrisburg, Pa., at which the foundation of the *American system* for encouraging home manufactures was laid. **1828.** The *American system* adopted by Congress and denounced by Southern politicians; Andrew Jackson elected President of the United States.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1825–26. Great commercial panic in England; a Roman Catholic Emancipation Bill passes the House of Commons, but rejected in the Lords. **1826.** British troops sent to defend Portugal from Spanish intervention. **1827.** Duke of York dies; George Canning becomes prime minister in April and dies in August; an English fleet destroys an Egyptian fleet in the bay of Navarino. **1828.** The Duke of Wellington forms a purely Tory ministry; agitation in Ireland by the "Catholic Association"; threatens revolution; Wellington introduces a Catholic Emancipation Bill, which becomes law in 1829.

FRANCE.

1825. Coronation of Charles X. at Rheims. **1826.** France co-operates with others in defending Portugal from Spanish intervention. **1827.** The National Guard of forty-five thousand men disbanded; war with Algiers; riots in Paris, with a cry of "Down with the ministry! down with the Jesuits!"; creation of seventy-six new peers; France, Great Britain, and Russia form a treaty for putting a stop to hostilities between the Turks and the Greeks. **1828.** French troops occupy the Morea; Béranger imprisoned and fined because of his satirical songs; educational establishments of the Jesuits suppressed.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1825–26. Several insurrections of the Carlists occur; independence of the revolted Spanish-American colonies generally acknowledged. **1826.** Spain abandons its last foothold on the American mainland. **1827.** Spanish subjects permitted to trade with the Spanish-American Republics. **1828.** The French evacuate Cadiz and it is made a free city. *Portugal*—**1826.** Death of John VI. and accession of Dom Pedro, who relinquishes the throne in favor of his daughter, Donna Maria. **1827.** Dom Miguel regent. **1828.** The British armies leave Portugal; Dom Miguel assumes the title of king.

RUSSIA.

1825. Death of Alexander I.; Grand Duke Constantine renounces his right to the throne. **1826.** Emperor Nicholas crowned at Moscow; war declared against Persia; the shah forced to sue for peace. **1827.** Nicholas visits England and is invested with the Order of the Garter. **1828.** War declared against the Ottoman Porte; the Caucasus conquered; Russia joins France and England in explaining why they helped the Greeks; the Turks cede to Russia the mouths of the Danube and several fortresses.

GERMAN CONFEDERATION.

1825–29. The German states enjoyed almost uninterrupted repose for many years after about 1824; it was the repose caused by reactionary measures supported by the strong arm of military power; the Emperor of Austria, Francis I., lived until 1835, having reigned thirty-one years; the King of Prussia, Frederick William III., lived until 1840, having reigned forty-three years; Hungary, a dependency of Austria, chafed under the repressive rule of Prince Metternich, the embodiment of reactionary principles, but kept quiet until the general European outbreak in 1848.

ITALY.

1825–29. Italy, too, at this period felt the deadening influence of the reactionary policy in Europe. Though Austrian bayonets suppressed tendencies to insurrection, the love of freedom and the desire for Italian nationality were as fervent as ever in the bosoms of the Italians. The quiet of Italy during the pontificates of Pope Leo XII. and Pius VII. (**1823–31**), and far into that of Pius IX., was only the calm before the tempest, which burst in 1848.

DENMARK SWEDEN, AND NORWAY.

1825–29. These kingdoms at this period, enjoying the unusual blessings of peace, were all prosperous. Of *Denmark* Frederick VI. was still king; under Bernadotte (Charles XIV.) John *Sweden* and *Norway* were prosperous. Commerce and the arts and manufactures flourished, and methods and facilities for promoting internal intercourse were multiplied.

HOLLAND.

1825–29. Holland was ruled at this period by William Frederick, who had assumed the title of King of the Netherlands. He had married a sister of Alexander I., Emperor of Russia. There was now much dissatisfaction among the inhabitants of southern Netherlands (now Belgium), who were largely Roman Catholics in religion, and, closely allied by family ties with the French, felt inclined to break off and join France. This feeling culminated in revolution, and Belgium became an independent kingdom in 1830.



J. Q. Adams

SIXTH PRESIDENT.

Born in Quincy, Mass., July 11, 1767. *Son of the second President. Entered Harvard College,* 1786, *and on graduating studied law. Appointed Minister to the Hague,* 1794; *transferred to Berlin,* 1797; *recalled,* 1801. *Elected State Senator,* 1802. *Appointed United States Senator,* 1803, *and resigned,* 1808. *Appointed Minister to Russia,* 1809. *Assisted in negotiating the Treaty of Ghent,* 1815. *Appointed Minister to Great Britain same year. Secretary of State under President Monroe,* 1817, *both terms. Chosen President of the United States by the Congress; there being no choice by the people,* 1824. *Elected Member of Congress,* 1830; *held the position to his death, which occured Feb.* 23, 1848, *two days after being stricken with paralysis while arising to address the House. Vice-President, John C. Calhoun.*

Jackson's Administration [1829-1837].

THE UNITED STATES.

1829. Andrew Jackson inaugurated President of the United States; the Legislature of Virginia deny the right of Congress to pass a tariff bill. **1831.** Death of ex-President Monroe. **1832.** First appearance of the Asiatic cholera in the United States; the Black Hawk War; "State Rights" convention in South Carolina; nullification movements begin in South Carolina; the President's proclamation against the Nullifiers. **1833.** Henry Clay's compromise measure tends to avert civil war; the government funds removed from the custody of the United States Bank by the President. **1834-35.** Seminole War breaks out. **1835.** Great fire in New York. **1836.** Arkansas admitted into the Union · the General Post-Office and Patent-Office burnt.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1829. Roman Catholic Relief Bill passed. **1830.** Accession of William IV. to the throne; Liverpool and Manchester railway opened. **1831.** First appearance of the cholera in England; Reform Bill rejected by the House of Lords; great riot at Bristol. **1832.** Reform Act passed; Sir Walter Scott dies; the East India Company's charter renewed; slavery ceases in all the British colonies; the first Reform Parliament opens; Houses of Parliament destroyed by fire; Corporation Reform Act passed. **1836.** Stamp duty on newspapers reduced; modification of the tithing system.

FRANCE.

1829. The Polignac administration formed. **1830.** Chamber of Deputies dissolved; Algiers taken; revolution in Paris begins with barricades; conflicts in Paris; a constitutional charter published; Charles X. abdicates and retires to England; Duke of Orleans accepts the crown as Louis Philippe V. **1831.** Abolition of the hereditary peerage decreed. **1832.** Insurrection in Paris. **1833.** An attempt to assassinate the new king. **1834.** Lafayette dies. **1835.** Another attempt to kill the king. **1836.** The king again fired upon; death of Charles X.; Louis Napoleon's attempt at insurrection at Strassburg; the king fired on while on his way to the Chamber.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1830. Salic law abolished in *Spain*. **1832.** The queen appointed regent during the king's inability to reign. **1833.** Don Carlos declares himself the legitimate successor to the king; death of Ferdinand VII.; the queen assumes the title of queen-regent until her infant daughter shall attain to her majority; Royalist volunteers disarmed; Queen Christina marries Ferdinand Muñoz, afterwards Duke of Rianzares; quadruple treaty establishes the regal rights of Isabella. **1834.** Don Carlos appears suddenly in Spain. **1835.** A British legion raised for the queen of Spain. **1836.** Carlists defeated at San Sebastian. *Portugal*—**1829.** The throne restored to Donna Maria II., then fifteen years of age, who assumes royal power.

RUSSIA.

1829. War against the Turks; peace concluded. **1830.** War for the independence of Poland begun; revolution at Warsaw. **1831.** The throne of Poland declared vacant; Russia loses seven thousand men in the battle of Grochow; Grand Duke Constantine dies; Warsaw taken and the insurrection suppressed; the Emperor Nicholas issues a proclamation decreeing that the kingdom of Poland shall henceforth form an integral part of the Russian Empire. The Russian government now turns its attention to the improvement of its internal affairs; reforms are introduced, commerce and the useful arts are fostered, and more attention is given to the subject of education.

THE GERMAN CONFEDERATION.

1829-37. *Austria* and *Prussia* were still the principal states of the German Confederation. *Prussia* was steadily growing in resources and power, both intellectual and physical, under the benign influences of peace. Its school system was a model for other states. Neither in Prussia nor Austria did any startling events occur at this period. Probably the wisest act done in the German Empire during a period of peace was the establishment of the Zollverein, or Customs Union, under the lead of Prussia, between the years **1829** and **1834.** The peculiar position of Austria prevented its participating in this Union. Berlin was the centre of artistic productions.

ITALY.

1829-37. At this period Italy presented no events of great importance. Pope Pius VIII. died in 1831 and was succeeded by Pope Gregory XVI.

DENMARK, SWEDEN, AND NORWAY.

1829-37. These states now presented a uniform aspect of comparative dulness in their history. There was a peaceful calm in public affairs. There were aspirations for independence in Norway, but no insurrections. In 1831 King Frederick gave a new charter to Denmark.

HOLLAND AND BELGIUM.

1829-37. The people of southern Holland, especially in the districts bordering on France, were closely allied with the French in religion, language, and consanguinity, and were restive under the rule of Frederick William of the Netherlands. They were ripe for insurrection, and in **1830** began a revolution at Brussels. A provisional government declares Belgium independent, and European powers acknowledge that independence; Antwerp taken by the Belgians. **1831.** The crown of Belgium offered to a French prince and declined; a regent appointed; Leopold, Prince of Coburg, elected king; the sovereign of the Netherlands begins war; five great powers attempt pacification. **1832.** The king of France sends fifty thousand troops to aid Belgium; Antwerp taken by the French. **1834.** Treaty between Holland and Belgium signed at London; the Belgian kingdom established.



Andrew Jackson

SEVENTH PRESIDENT.

Born in Mecklenburg county, N. C., March 15, 1767. *Enlisted in the Revolutionary Army,* 1781, *and was a prisoner of war. Admitted to the bar,* 1786; *began practice, Nashville, Tenn.,* 1788. *Elected as first Representative from Tennessee in Congress,* 1796. *U. S. Senator,* 1797. *General of the Army,* 1812. *Made the memorable defence of New Orleans,* 1815. *Expelled the Seminoles from Florida. Appointed Governor of Florida,* 1821. *U. S. Senator,* 1823. *Elected President of the United States,* 1828; *re-elected* 1832. *Died at the "Hermitage," June* 8, 1845. *Vice-President, first term, John C. Calhoun; second term, Martin Van Buren.*

Van Buren's Administration [1837-1841].

THE UNITED STATES.

1837. Martin Van Buren inaugurated President of the United States; Michigan admitted into the Union; credit system explodes; independent treasury system adopted; financial troubles and an extraordinary session of Congress; revolutionary movements in Canada. **1838.** The South Sea exploring expedition sails under Captain Wilkes; Canadian insurrection begins; Americans sympathize with the Canadians. **1840.** Northeastern-boundary question agitated; South Sea exploring expedition discovered an Antarctic continent; Major-General Harrison elected President of the United States.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1837. Victoria ascends the throne as queen-regnant **1838.** Coronation of Queen Victoria; efforts made to crush the Canadian rebellion; Poor Laws extended to Ireland; Afghan War begins. **1839.** The British army enters Cabul; war with China begins. **1840.** Penny postage established in the United Kingdom; Queen Victoria marries her cousin, Prince Albert of Saxe-Coburg, in February; gives birth to a princess in November; attempt to assassinate the queen; revolutionary movements of the Chartists and the Corn-Law League; Dost Mohammed, in India, conquered.

FRANCE.

1837. Amnesty granted to political offenders; Prince Louis Napoleon goes to America. **1838.** Talleyrand dies; birth of the Count of Paris, a claimant to the throne; Marshal Soult attends the coronation of Queen Victoria; coalition between Thiers and Guizot against the ministerial party. **1839.** The coalition destroys that party. **1840.** Thiers becomes Minister of Foreign Affairs; four great Powers sign a treaty with Turkey without consulting France; the Chamber of Deputies decree the bringing of Napoleon's remains from St. Helena to Paris; Prince Louis Napoleon attempts insurrection again and is sentenced to imprisonment for life; provision made for fortifying Paris.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1837. British troops capture Irun, in Spain. **1839.** Don Carlos seeks refuge in France. **1840.** Morello surrenders; Cabrera, the Carlist general, defeated, enters France; revolutionary movement at Madrid suppressed; the ministry dismissed and the Cortes dissolved; Espartero makes a triumphal entry into Madrid; the queen abdicates, leaves the kingdom, and goes to France; Espartero expels the papal nuncio. *Portugal*—**1837.** The Duke of Terceira attempts to restore Dom Pedro's charter; fails and goes to England. **1838.** Oporto Wine Company re-established.

THE GERMAN CONFEDERATION.

1837–41. During this period the German states, enjoying peace, made great progress, especially in all material affairs. Their cities grew rapidly; they were not dependent for wealth and splendor upon the accident of their being royal residences, but industrial pursuits created wealth and luxury. Agriculture flourished, and the merchant navy of Germany had again arisen and become the third in extent and importance in the world. This material prosperity made Germany a unity, and a dissolution seemed impossible. Literature and the arts also flourished. **1840.** King Frederick William III. of Prussia died and was succeeded by his son, Frederick William IV., brother of William I., the present emperor of united Germany.

RUSSIA.

1837–41. Nicholas was ambitious to extend his dominions southward and eastward, and so came in contact with the interests of England and Turkey. He coveted the control of the Black Sea. The Turkish Empire stood in his way, and he endeavored to weaken it by diplomacy and war. **1840.** The Russians fail in an expedition against Khiva; Nicholas signs a treaty, with other great Powers, confirming Syria to the sultan; he supported the cause of Don Carlos in Spain at this period.

ITALY.

1837–41. The papal power was predominant in Italy at this period under the sway of the energetic Pope Gregory XVI. The reactionary spirit, aided by Austrian bayonets and the thunders of the Vatican, kept the restless people in subjection, and there was very little progress in the arts, manufactures, and commerce in Italy, while the deadening influence of ecclesiastical dominion prevailed. The free spirit of the people was not crushed, only held in temporary subjection. Italy was a slumbering volcano, soon to burst into fearful activity.

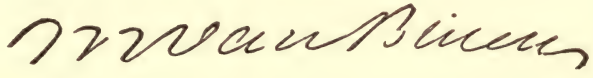
DENMARK, SWEDEN, AND NORWAY.

1837–41. These three countries continued to pursue "the even tenor of their way" in peace and prosperity. Christian VIII. was yet king of Denmark, and Bernadotte of Sweden and Norway. Christian was anxious to have his claim to the duchies of Holstein and Schleswig confirmed, and trouble was anticipated for the kingdom from his ambition. It was postponed only a short time.

HOLLAND AND BELGIUM.

1839. Treaty between Holland and Belgium signed in London. It grew out of a conference held in London on the Belgian question, by the decision of which the treaty of 1831 was maintained, and the pecuniary compensation of sixty million francs offered by Belgium for the territories adjudged to Holland was declared inadmissible. **1840.** King William I. abdicates and is succeeded by his son William.





EIGHTH PRESIDENT.

Born in Kinderhook, N. Y., Dec. 5, 1782. *Admitted to the bar,* 1803. *Appointed Surrogate of Columbia co.,* 1808. *Elected State Senator,* 1812; *continuing such until* 1820, *and acting as Attorney-General a part of the period. Elected U. S. Senator,* 1821; *re-elected,* 1827. *Elected Governor of New York, as a Democrat,* 1828, *but resigned shortly after inauguration to become Secretary of State in President Jackson's Cabinet. Resigned,* 1831, *and was appointed Minister to England, but the Senate refused to confirm him. Elected Vice-President,* 1832. *Elected President of the United States,* 1836. *Nominated for President and defeated,* 1840, (*Gen. Harrison*), 1844, (*James K. Polk*), 1848, (*Gen. Taylor*). *Made a tour of Europe,* 1853, '55. *Died July* 24, 1862. *Vice-President,* (*elected by Senate*) *R. M. Johnson.*

Harrison and Tyler's Administration [1841-1845].

THE UNITED STATES.

1841. William Henry Harrison inaugurated President of the United States March 4; dies just a month afterwards and is succeeded by the Vice-President, John Tyler; Tyler inaugurated; extraordinary session of Congress; Sub-Treasury Bill repealed; dissolution of the cabinet. **1842.** Seminole War ended; return of the South Sea exploring expedition after a voyage of about ninety thousand miles; great political excitement in Rhode Island and civil war threatened. **1843.** Bunker Hill monument completed. **1844.** James K. Polk elected President of the United States; Morse's electro-magnetic telegraph established; agitation concerning the annexation of Texas; treaty for admission signed. **1845.** March 4, Tyler signs the bill for the admission of Texas and Florida as States of the Union.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1841. Prince of Wales born. **1842.** King of Prussia visits England; the queen twice fired at; Income-Tax Bill passed; the queen first visits Scotland; treaty of peace with China; massacre of twenty-six thousand men, women, and children in British India. **1843.** Great Repeal meeting in Ireland; the queen visits the Orleans family in France; the Scinde War; annexation of Scinde to the British Empire. **1844.** The Emperor of Russia visits England; O'Connell tried for conspiracy; rank of Roman Catholic bishops defined.

FRANCE.

1841. France at this period was enjoying great prosperity. The policy of Louis Philippe was peaceful as a rule; civil affairs chiefly engaged the attention of the legislators; the duration of copyright to thirty years after the author's death was fixed; a bronze statue of Napoleon was placed on the column of the Grande Armée at Boulogne; an attempt was made to assassinate the king's son on his return from Africa. **1842.** The Duke of Orleans, heir to the throne, killed by an accident. **1843.** The Queen of England visits the royal family at the Château d'Eu; occupation of the Society Islands by the French threatens a rupture with England.

THE GERMAN CONFEDERATION.

1841-45. In Austria Ferdinand, son of Ferdinand I., was on the throne and Frederick William IV. on that of Prussia. The Confederation pressed forward in prosperity with few stirring events to mark their progress. Prussia and Austria were generally antagonistic in views—the former being *liberal*, the latter *narrow*. Austria was jealous of Prussia because of the growing influence of the latter (by pursuing a wise policy) in the affairs of the Confederation. There was a restless liberal feeling in all the states, but wise measures prevented outbreaks. In **1844** there was an attempt to assassinate the King of Prussia.

SPAIN.

1841. Insurrections in favor of Queen Christina led by Generals O'Donnell and Concha; the palace at Madrid attacked; General O'Donnell takes refuge on French territory; Espartero decrees the suspension of Queen Christina's pension. **1842.** An insurrection breaks out in Barcelona and the national guard join the insurgents; Barcelona surrenders to the regent Espartero. **1843.** The revolutionary Junta re-established at Barcelona; the revolution successful, and Espartero flies to Cadiz and thence to London; Isabella, thirteen years old, declared to be of age and proclaimed queen. **1844.** The queen-mother returns to Spain.

RUSSIA.

1841-45. The Russian Empire at this time, with the Emperor Nicholas at its head, presents the tame history of a people enjoying the blessings of peace. Nicholas was ambitious; he was also wise. His covetous gaze was continually on the Turk and on domains in Asia. He had long before asserted the belief that the destruction of the Turkish Empire and driving the Ottomans from Europe were measures necessary for the permanent security of the Christian Powers in Europe. He was in the habit of speaking of Turkey as "the sick man."

ITALY.

1841-45. Italy still continued submissive under the sway of various masters, yet not any of the patriotic zeal of the people for national freedom was abated. Pope Gregory XVI. ruled the Papal States.

DENMARK, SWEDEN, AND NORWAY.

1844. King Bernadotte dies and is succeeded by his son Oscar as king of Sweden and Norway. Christian VIII. still ruled Denmark.

HOLLAND AND BELGIUM.

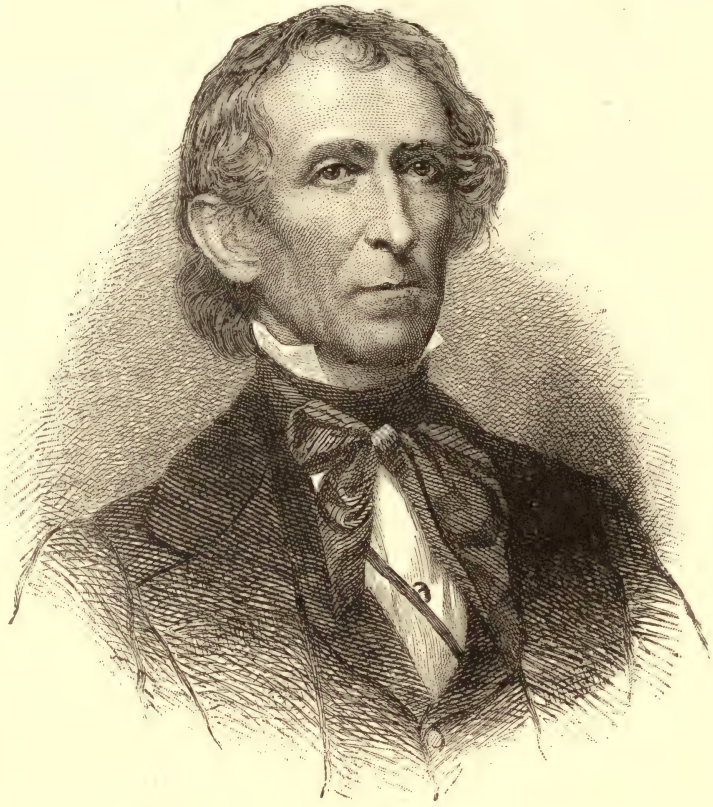
1844. The ex-King William of Holland dies; his son, William II., is sovereign of Holland. The new kingdom of Belgium soon settled into a peaceful calm after the revolution which created it, and under a peaceful policy it has made great progress in every department of human industry. It lies between Holland and France and occupies 11,370 square miles. It is divided into nine provinces. Its soil is generally productive and its coal-fields are very extensive. Next to England Belgium produces more fuel than any other country in Europe. It comprises the domain of old Flanders, and of its 5,000,000 or 6,000,000 inhabitants fully 2,500,000 speak the Flemish language.



W. H. Harrison

NINTH PRESIDENT.

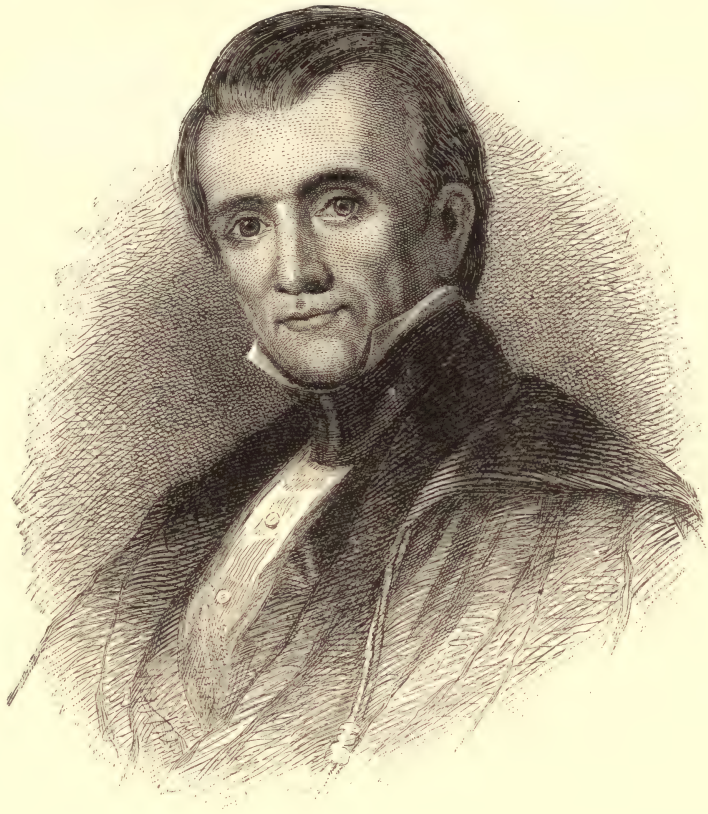
Born in Berkeley, Charles City co., Va., Feb. 9, 1773. *Educated at Hampton Sidney College and studied medicine. Joined the Northwestern Army,* 1792, *serving against the Indians. Secretary of the Northwestern Territory,* 1797, *and Delegate to Congress,* 1799. *First Territorial Governor of Indiana,* 1800, *serving twelve years, and concluding eighteen Indian treaties. Gained the celebrated battle of Tippecanoe over the Indians, Nov.* 7, 1811. *Commander of the Northwestern Army during war of* 1812. *Elected to Congress from Ohio,* 1816. *Minister to the Republic of Columbia, S. A.,* 1828. *Elected President of the United States,* 1840. *Died April* 4, 1841, *one month after inauguration. Vice-President John Tyler.*



John Tyler

TENTH PRESIDENT.

Born in Charles City co., Va., March 29, 1790. *Graduate at William and Mary College,* 1807. *Admitted to the bar when* 19, *and elected to the Legislature when* 21. *Elected to Congress,* 1816. *Elected Governor of Virginia,* 1826, *and sent to the U. S. Senate the following year, resigning in* 1836. *Elected Vice-President,* 1840. *Became President of the United States by the death of President Harrison, April* 4, 1841. *Presiding officer of the Peace Congress, Washington, D. C., Feb.,* 1861. *Member of Virginia Convention which decided to secede, April,* 1861. *Elected member of Confederate Senate. Died Jan.* 17, 1862. *President of the Senate, William R. King.*





ELEVENTH PRESIDENT.

Born in Mecklenberg co., N. C., Nov. 2, 1795. *Graduate at the University of North Carolina,* 1815. *Admitted to the bar,* 1820. *Elected Representative to the Tennessee Legislature,* 1823. *Elected to Congress,* 1825, *and held his seat until* 1839, *being Speaker* 1835-'37. *Elected Governor of Tennessee,* 1839. *Elected President of the United States,* 1844. *The Mexican War occurred during his administration. Retired from the Presidency, March* 1849. *Died June* 15, 1849. *Vice-President, George M. Dallas.*

Polk's Administration [1845-1849].

THE UNITED STATES.

1845. James K. Polk inaugurated President of the United States; Florida and Texas admitted into the Union; death of Andrew Jackson. **1846.** War with Mexico begun; battles of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma; Iowa admitted into the Union; proclamation of war with Mexico; Scott's successful campaign in Mexico from Vera Cruz to the City of Mexico. **1847.** General Kearney takes possession of Santa Fé, New Mexico; United States troops everywhere victorious; battle of Buena Vista; California declared a part of the United States. **1848.** Peace with Mexico concluded and proclaimed; Wisconsin admitted into the Union; gold discovered in California; General Taylor elected President of the United States.

GREAT BRITAIN

1845. Anti-Corn-Law agitation; permission given to remove Napoleon's remains from St. Helena; Danish possessions in the East Indies purchased by the English; Irish National Education Society incorporated; failure of the potato crop in Ireland; Sikh War in India. **1846.** Citadel at Lahore, India, occupied by the English and the Sikh War ended; British officers in India raised to the peerage. **1847.** O'Connell's last speech in Parliament; $50,000,000 given for the relief of the famishing Irish. **1848.** State trials in Ireland; Irish agitators sentenced to transportation.

FRANCE.

1845. Attempt to assassinate the king. **1846.** Louis Napoleon escapes from Ham; seventh attempt on the life of the king; marriage of the Duke of Montpensier to the Infanta of Spain. **1847.** Jerome Bonaparte returns to France after an exile of thirty-two years; death of the ex-Empress Maria Louisa. **1848.** A proposed grand reform banquet at Paris and violent revolutionary tumult in consequence; Louis Philippe abdicates in favor of his infant grandson, the Count of Paris; a republic proclaimed and a provisional government formed; perpetual banishment of the king and his family decreed; Red Republicans; Paris in a state of siege; Louis Napoleon elected President of the French.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1845. Don Carlos relinquishes his right to the crown in favor of his son; marriage of the Queen of Spain to her cousin. **1847.** Two shots fired at the queen; Espartero restored to favor. **1848.** Sir Henry Bulwer, the British envoy, ordered to leave Spain in forty-eight hours. *Portugal*—**1846.** A British squadron enters the Tagus. **1847.** The insurgents enter Oporto; the Portuguese Junta surrender to a Spanish force.

THE GERMAN CONFEDERATION.

1848. Insurrections throughout Germany; the King of Prussia takes the lead as an agitator to reconsolidate the German Empire by a proclamation; German National Assembly meets at Frankfort. *Austria*—Insurrection at Vienna and flight of Metternich; the emperor flies to Inspruck; Archduke John appointed vicar-general of the empire; a Constitutional Assembly meet at Vienna; the emperor abdicates in favor of his nephew, Francis Joseph. *Hungary*—A formidable rebellion breaks out; the insurgents defeated by the Austrians; all who acknowledge the emperor as King of Hungary denounced as traitors.

RUSSIA.

1846. The Grand Duke Constantine arrives in England. **1848.** The European revolutions appear to have had little effect on the Russian Empire. Russian armies were sent to assist Austria against the Hungarians. The czar's own dominions safe from political disturbances, he was ready to assist other despotisms in suppressing popular liberty. The Russian forces prevented the accomplishment of the independence of Hungary in 1849.

ITALY.

1846. Pius IX. pope. **1847.** The King of Sardinia espouses the cause of the Italian people against Austria. **1848.** Insurrection in Lombardy and Venice supported by the King of Sardinia and the pope; Sardinian army defeated by Radetzky, the Austrian general; the Italians capitulate; armistice between them and Austria.

SWITZERLAND.

1846. An attempt to have the education of the people controlled by Protestants fails; Roman Catholics now form a league (Sonderbund) to support education by the Jesuits; insurrection at Geneva against Jesuit teaching. **1847.** The diet declares the Sonderbund illegal. **1848.** The Jesuits expelled and monastic property secularized.

DENMARK.

1846. The crown of Denmark declares its right to the duchies of Schleswig and Holstein. **1848.** Frederick II. ascends the throne; insurrections in the duchies; the North Sea blockaded by the Danes; Russian troops attack and defeat the Danes.

HOLLAND AND BELGIUM.

1846. Louis Bonaparte, ex-King of Holland, dies. **1848.** The King of Holland agrees to political reforms and grants a new constitution. The only effect upon *Belgium* of the revolutionary agitations in **1848** was the establishment of an electoral reform and the abolition of the newspaper duty.



Zachary Taylor

TWELFTH PRESIDENT.

Born in Orange co., Va., Sept. 24, 1784. *Commissioned as Lieut. in the Seventh Infantry,* 1808. *Brevetted Major for heroic defense of Fort Harrison against Indians, June* 19, 1812. *From this period until* 1840 *he was engaged in almost constant warfare with the Indians in the West. Was in command of Army of the Rio Grande, at opening of Mexican War. Won the great battles of Palo Alto, Resaca de la Palma, Monterey and Buena Vista. Elected President of the United States,* 1848. *Died July* 9, 1850. *Vice-President, Millard Fillmore.*

Taylor and Fillmore's Administration [1849-1859].

THE UNITED STATES.

1849. Zachary Taylor inaugurated President of the United States; New Mexico erected into a Territory; inter-State convention in favor of a railway to the Pacific. **1850.** Movement in Canada in favor of annexation to the United States; Arctic expedition to search for Sir John Franklin sails; Southern convention to consider the slavery question; President Taylor dies; Vice-President Fillmore inaugurated President; California admitted into the Union; passage of the Fugitive-Slave Act. **1851.** Lopez's expedition against Cuba sails; Kossuth visits the United States. **1852**. Kossuth publicly received by Congress; Commodore Perry sent to Japan to make a treaty.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1849. Adelaide, Queen-dowager of England, dies; Queen Victoria visits Ireland and holds her court at Dublin; Irish Tenant League meets; the Sikh army surrenders unconditionally. **1850.** The queen visits Belgium; Bengal native infantry disbanded. **1851**. Burmese War; Pegu annexed to British India; great exhibition of the world's industry opens in London; gold arrives from Australia; Duke of Wellington dies.

FRANCE.

1849. An anticipated insurrection provided against. **1850**. Louis Philippe dies at Claremont, England, in exile. **1851**. Electric telegraph connection between England and France established; Louis Napoleon's *coup-d'état;* one hundred and eighty members of the Legislative Assembly arrested; Paris in a state of siege, and bloody conflicts in the city; Consultative Commission founded; Louis Napoleon elected president for ten years. **1852.** Members of the Assembly banished; "liberty trees" cut down and burnt; National Guard disbanded; Louis Napoleon elected emperor of the French as "Napoleon III."; marries Eugénie, a Spanish maiden.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1850. Isabella II. queen; diplomatic relations between Spain and England interrupted; the infante, Don Henrique, permitted to return to Spain; the queen pardons the filibusteros who invaded Cuba from the United States; a princess born; attempted assassination of the queen; the renowned General Castaños dies at the age of ninety-six. *Portugal*—Maria II. queen; an American squadron enforces claims against the government. **1851**. A military insurrection led by the Duke of Soldanha; he enters Oporto in triumph; marriage of Don Miguel; revision of the constitution by the Cortes sanctioned by the queen.

GERMANY.

1849. The German National Assembly elects the king of Prussia emperor of Germany; he declines the honor and recalls the Prussian members of the Assembly; the Frankfort Assembly transfers its sittings to Stuttgardt; treaty of Vienna between Austria and Prussia for the formation of a new central government; the alliance of Prussia against some of the smaller German states protested against by Russia; treaty of some of the states for a revision of the Union. *Hungary* declares itself a free state; Kossuth supreme governor; the Russians assist the Austrians; several battles between the Hungarians and Austrians and Russians; utter defeat of the Hungarian army by Haynau; Kossuth flees to Turkey; patriots shot; amnesty granted; many executions.

RUSSIA.

1849. Russia demands the expulsion of Hungarian refugees from Turkey. **1850**. They are sent to Konieh, in Asia Minor; conspiracy against the life and policy of the emperor detected; harbor of Sebastopol completed; an extensive conscription for the army put in force in western Russia by order of the czar; the czar visits Vienna.

ITALY.

1849. A division of the Sardinians partially defeated by the Austrians; their complete defeat afterwards; King Charles Albert abdicates in favor of his son, Victor Emmanuel; Charles Albert dies at Oporto July 28; treaty of Milan between Sardinia and Austria signed. **1850.** Ecclesiastical jurisdictions abolished. **1851**. Count Cavour made Minister of Foreign Affairs. *Papal States*—**1849**. A Constitutional Assembly meets at Rome; the people divested of all political power; the French occupy Civita Vecchia; French repulsed from Rome; the pope appeals to the great Roman Catholic powers; a French officer presents the keys of the gates of Rome to the pope at Gaeta; re-establishment of the pope's authority proclaimed; the pope establishes a Roman Catholic hierarchy in England.

DENMARK.

1849. War between Denmark and the duchies renewed; victory of the Danish troops over those of the allied Germans and of the duchies; armistice signed at Malmö. **1850.** Denmark makes a separate peace with Prussia; the integrity of Denmark guaranteed by England, France, Russia, and Sweden; the Danes gain victories over the troops of Holstein; protocol signed in London by the ministers of all the great powers. **1851.** Holstein places its rights under the protection of the Germanic Confederation. **1852**. Austrians evacuate Holstein; the succession of the Danish crown settled.

HOLLAND AND BELGIUM.

1849–52. William III. king of Holland; Leopold I. king of Belgium.



Millard Fillmore

THIRTEENTH PRESIDENT.

Born at Summer Hill, N. Y., Jan. 7, 1800. *Learned the clothier's trade; bought his time when* 19, *and began a course of legal study under Judge Wood, who defrayed all his expenses. Admitted to the bar at Aurora,* 1823, *as an attorney,* 1827, *and as a councilor in the Supreme Court,* 1829. *Elected to the Legislature,* 1829. *Elected to Congress,* 1832, '36. *Defeated in the Gubernatorial election,* 1844. *Elected Comptroller of the State,* 1847. *Elected Vice-President,* 1848. *Became President of the United States by the death of President Taylor, July* 9, 1850. *Died March* 8, 1874.

Pierce's Administration [1853-1857].

THE UNITED STATES.

1853 Franklin Pierce inaugurated President of the United States; disputes with Mexico concerning boundaries; expedition to explore the northeast coast of Asia sails, also one for the Arctic Seas under Dr. Kane; four expeditions begin explorations for a route for a railway to the Pacific; Perry's expedition arrives at Japan; Crystal Palace Exhibition opened in New York. **1854.** Treaty with Japan concluded; the "Ostend Circular" issued; Kansas-Nebraska Bill passed; steamer *Arctic* lost. **1855.** The Panama railway opened; American filibusters under Walker in Nicaragua defeated; political troubles in Kansas begin; Kane's expedition returns to New York. **1856.** A Free-State Legislature assembles at Topeka, Kansas; official intercourse with the British minister suspended; civil war in Kansas; the famous Charter Oak at Hartford blown down.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1853. England and other great powers take measures to establish peace between Russia and Turkey; first railway in India opened from Bombay; Oude annexed to the British Empire in India; the queen visits Ireland; National Association for the Vindication of Scottish Rights formed. **1854.** Treaty of alliance between England, France, and Turkey signed; beginning of the Crimean War. **1855.** Emperor and empress of the French visit England; the queen and her husband visit the French sovereigns; peace with Russia proclaimed. **1856.** War with China and Persia begins.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1854. Birth and death of a princess; General O'Donnell and others banished; military insurrection near Madrid; Madrid and Barcelona "pronounce" against the government; peace restored and Espartero in favor; the queen-mother impeached and leaves Spain. **1855.** New constitution of the Cortes proposed; the Cortes vote that "all power proceeds from the people"; Don Carlos dies. **1856.** Radical changes in administration. *Portugal*—**1853.** Death of Queen Maria; the king-consort becomes regent; Dom Pedro V., aged sixteen, king; he visits England slaves in the royal domains freed. **1855.** First railway in Portugal opened.

THE GERMAN CONFEDERATION.

1853—*Prussia.* A revolutionary plot discovered at Berlin; Prussia signs a protocol for preserving the integrity of Turkey. **1854.** Continues neutral during the Crimean War. **1855.** Excluded from the conference at Vienna. *Austria*—**1853.** Attempted assassination of the emperor; commercial treaty with Prussia. **1854.** Alliance with England; alliance with England and France relative to the Eastern question. **1855.** Concordat with the pope. *Hungary*—**1853.** Crown of St. Stephen and royal insignia discovered and sent to Vienna. **1856.** Amnesty for political offenders of 1848–49.

RUSSIA.

1853. War with Turkey; the czar concentrates his forces on the frontiers of Turkey; conference between the emperors of Russia and Austria at Olmütz; also of the czar and the king of Prussia at Warsaw. **1854.** Friends (called Quakers) intercede with the czar for peace; ten northern provinces put in a state of siege; war with England, France, and Turkey—the Crimean War. **1855.** The czar says he will fight only for the faith and Christianity; Nicholas dies; Alexander II. ascends the throne; visits his army at Sebastopol. **1856.** Crowned at Moscow; proclamation of peace in the Crimea.

ITALY.

1855. In Sardinia a bill for the suppression of convents passed; conventions with England and France to employ fifteen thousand troops for the war in the Crimea signed. **1856.** A rupture with Austria and subsequent war; an important concordat between the pope and Austria completed by which much of the liberty of the Austrian Church was given up to the Papacy; great dissatisfaction prevails throughout the Austrian Empire; English and French ambassadors withdrawn from Naples; attempted assassination of the king.

DENMARK.

1852. The succession of the crown of Denmark was settled by a treaty signed at London. It was awarded to Prince Christian, of the Sonderburg-Glücksburg line, and his male heirs. This arrangement gave great dissatisfaction both to Denmark and to the duchies of Schleswig and Holstein, as on the event of the extinction of this family Russia reserved the ancient right of succeeding to a portion of the duchies. This treaty was rejected by the legislature in 1852 and 1853; but the king, feeling himself pledged to the foreign powers, dissolved the Assembly in 1853, and the treaty was accepted by a new legislature in 1854. That year the king presented a new constitution.

HOLLAND AND BELGIUM.

1853. The re-establishment of a Roman Catholic ministry in Holland announced; increase of the army of Belgium to one hundred thousand men voted; the king (Leopold) proclaims Belgium neutral in the Italian War.



Franklin Pierce

FOURTEENTH PRESIDENT.

Son of General Benjamin Pierce, of the Revolutionary Army. Born at Hillsboro, N. H., Nov. 23, 1804. *Graduate at Bowdoin College, Me.,* 1824. *Admitted to the bar,* 1827. *Elected to State Legislature,* 1829, *remaining four years, and being Speaker two. Elected to Congress,* 1833; *to the U. S. Senate,* 1837; *and re-elected* 1841. *Resigned* 1842 *and resumed pratice of law at Concord, N. H. Decined appointment as Attorney-General by President Polk. Enrolled himself for the Mexican War as a private, but received a Brig.-General's commission from the President before his departure, March,* 1847. *Resigned his commission after the war, resuming his law practice. Elected President of the United States,* 1852. *Resumed his profession at close of term. Died Oct.* 8, 1869. *Vice-President, William R. King. Died before taking seat.*

Buchanan's Administration [1857–1861].

THE UNITED STATES.

1857. James Buchanan inaugurated President of the United States; Chief-Justice Taney gives the famous decision in the Dred Scott case; the Atlantic cables break in August; United States troops forbidden to enter the Mormon territory. **1858.** Minnesota admitted into the Union; first permanent telegraphic communication between Europe and America established; rebellion of the Mormons put down. **1859.** John Brown's raid at Harper's Ferry. **1860.** First embassy from Japan arrives; stormy Democratic National Convention at Charleston; threats of disunion in all parts of the Southern States; Abraham Lincoln elected President of the United States; South Carolinians pass an ordinance of secession; civil war begins in Charleston harbor.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1857. Mutiny of the Sepoys and others in India; wars in British India from 1857 to 1860; great commercial panic. **1858.** Marriage of the princess royal to the crown prince of Prussia; Jewish Disability Bill passed; the government of the East India Company ceases. **1859.** Proclamation of the neutrality of England concerning the Italian war; organization of volunteer rifle corps authorized; commercial treaty with France approved by Parliament. **1860.** The queen reviews eighteen thousand volunteers in Hyde Park; great emigration to America from Ireland; the queen and her husband visit their daughter in Prussia; peace with China signed; Prince of Wales visits the United States.

FRANCE.

1857. Conspiracy to assassinate the emperor discovered in July; the emperor and empress visit England; Napoleon III. meets Alexander II. at Stuttgardt. **1858.** An attempt to assassinate the emperor in January; Public Safety Bill passed; republican outbreak at Châlons suppressed; conference at Paris respecting the Danubian principalities. **1859.** War against Austria declared; victory of the French and Sardinians at Solferino; peace concluded in July. **1860.** Treaty for the annexation of Savoy and Nice signed; the emperor meets the German sovereign at Baden; passports for Englishmen discontinued.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1857. Isabella queen of Spain; insurrection in Andalusia speedily suppressed; cruel military executions; O'Donnell again chief minister. **1858.** Siege of Barcelona ceases; joint French and Spanish expedition against Cochin-China arrived. **1859.** War with Morocco begins. **1860.** O'Donnell commands the army in Africa; Moors defeated and peace agreed to on hard terms for the Africans; Napoleon's proposal to admit Spain as a first-class power opposed by England and given up. *Portugal* – **1858.** French ships of war accompany the ultimatum of the French government to the Tagus. **1860.** Death of King Pedro V.

THE GERMAN CONFEDERATION.

1857. Excitement throughout Germany at the successes of the French troops in Lombardy; diplomatic intercourse between Austria and Sardinia broken off; alarming illness of the King of Prussia, and his son appointed regent. **1858.** Prussia declares its neutrality in the Italian war, but arms to protect Germany. **1859.** Conference at Eisenach concerning German unity, and Prussia asked (but declines) to take the initiative. **1860.** The regent of Prussia and Napoleon meet at Baden; death of Frederick William IV. of Prussia; Hungary demands a restoration of the old constitution.

RUSSIA.

1857. The czar meets Napoleon at Stuttgardt and the Emperor of Austria at Weimar. **1858.** Partial emancipation of the serfs on the imperial domains; the establishment of a Russian naval station on the Mediterranean at Villa Franca produces some excitement in Europe. **1859.** Russia disapproves the warlike movements of the German Confederation during the Italian war; the czar protests against the recognition of the sovereignty of the people.

ITALY.

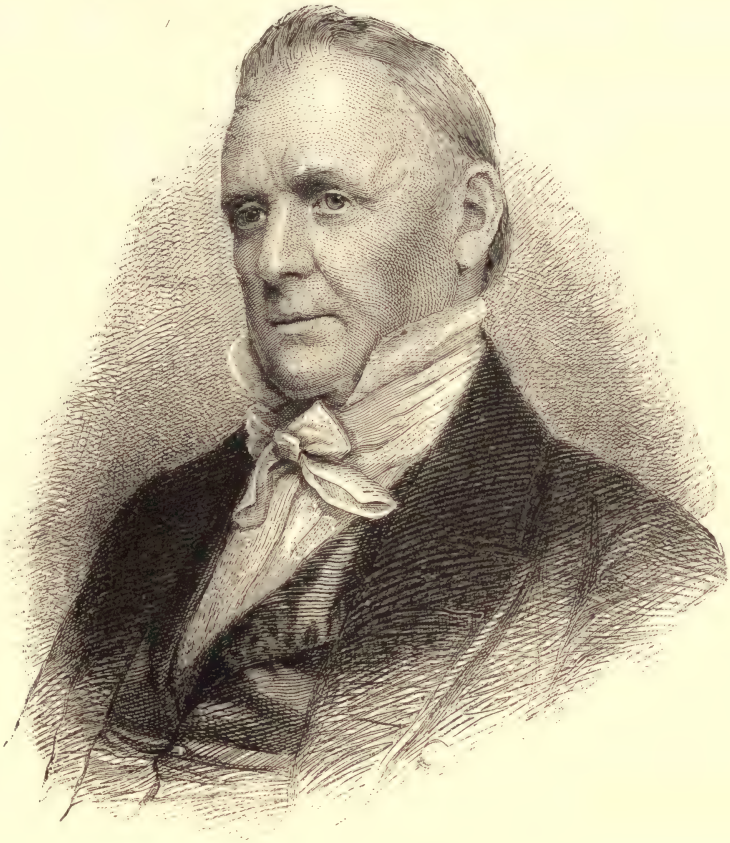
1859. War between Austria and Italy begins; peaceful revolutions in Florence and a provisional government established; insurrection in the Papal States; the pope appeals to Europe against the King of Sardinia; Garibaldi exhorts the Italians to arm; Tuscany, Modena, Parma, and the Romagna form a defensive alliance; Tuscany chooses Prince Eugene as regent of Central Italy; Garibaldi retires from the Sardinian service; Sardinian constitution proclaimed. **1860.** Savoy and Nice ceded to France; French troops leave Italy; insurrection in the Papal States; Victor Emmanuel enters Naples as king.

DENMARK.

1857. The Sound duties abolished for a compensation. **1858.** Fortification of Copenhagen decreed; discussion between the government and the duchies carried on with zeal. **1860.** The Assembly of Schleswig complains that the promise of equality of national rights has not been kept, and protests against annexation to Denmark; Prussia declares it will aid the duchies; Denmark threatens war if troops of the German Confederation enter the duchies.

HOLLAND AND BELGIUM.

1857–61. During this period Holland and Belgium were undisturbed by any serious political agitation. There was a persistent conflict between the two great parties in Belgium known as "Catholic" and "Liberal," the special topic of dispute being the influence of the clergy in public instruction. The Liberals gained the upper hand in 1858, and ruled the country till 1870.



James Buchanan.

FIFTEENTH PRESIDENT.

Born in Franklin county, Pa., April 23, 1791. *Graduate at Dickinson College,* 1809. *Admitted to the bar,* 1812. *Elected to the State Legislature,* 1814; *re-elected,* 1816. *Elected to Congress,* 1820; *resigned March,* 1831. *Appointed Minister to Russia, May,* 1831. *Returned* 1834, *and elected to U. S. Senate for an unexpired term; re-elected for full terms,* 1836, 1842. *Secretary of State during President Polk's administration. Appointed Minister to England,* 1853. *Returned* 1856. *Elected President of the United States,* 1856. *The Civil War broke out in the closing months of his administration. Died June* 1, 1868. *Vice-President, John C. Breckenridge.*

Lincoln and Johnson's Administration [1861-1869].

THE UNITED STATES.

1861. Conventions in Southern States pass ordinances of secession; the great civil war begun; inauguration of Abraham Lincoln; Fort Sumter attacked; the President calls for troops to put down rising rebellion; Congress makes provision of men and money for a war; the English government favors the insurgents. **1862.** The government and the banks suspend specie payments; war with England threatened; futile efforts to capture Richmond, the capital of the Confederacy. **1863.** The emancipation of the slaves proclaimed; the civil war rages in eleven States of the Union; decisive battle at Gettysburg; the fall of Vicksburg opens the Mississippi to free navigation; Lincoln re-elected President; Southern ports "repossessed." **1865.** Surrender of the Confederate armies and close of the civil war; assassination of Lincoln; Vice-President Johnson becomes President; reorganization of the States begin. **1866.** Successful laying of the Atlantic cable; the President in open opposition to Congress. **1868.** The President impeached; U. S. Grant elected President.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1861. Great excitement about the capture of Mason and Slidell; the queen and Prince of Wales visit Ireland; death of Prince Albert. **1862.** Great distress among the manufacturing classes; Prince of Wales marries a Danish princess; distress in Ireland and numerous agrarian murders; great increase in the cultivation of cotton in British India. **1863.** England, France, and Austria remonstrate with Russia on cruelties in Poland. **1864.** Enthusiastic reception of Garibaldi in England; the Ionian Islands made over to Greece. **1865.** Important commercial treaty with Austria signed. **1866.** New Parliament opened. **1867-68.** Reform Bill passed; a British army conquers Abyssinia; Mr. Gladstone becomes prime minister and moves the disestablishment of the Irish Church.

FRANCE.

1861. Prince Napoleon speaks in favor of Italian unity, the English alliance, and against the temporal power of the pope; a circular forbidding the priests to meddle with politics issued; official recognition of the kingdom of Italy; convention between Great Britain, France, and Spain respecting intervention in Mexico. **1862.** French victories in Cochin-China; the French declare war against the Mexican government. **1863.** Napoleon makes Archduke Maximilian emperor of Mexico; invites a congress of European sovereigns. **1865.** An international exhibition of industry decreed. **1866.** Prussia refuses compliance with Napoleon's demands. **1867.** Great exhibition opened in Paris. **1868.** An impending crisis warded off.

SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

1861. Santo Domingo annexed to Spain; intervention in Mexico. **1862.** Church property sold. **1863.** Don John de Bourbon renounces his right to the throne; Emperor of France visits the Queen of Spain. **1864.** Rupture with Peru; Queen Christina returns to Spain. **1866.** Peace with Peru; crown lands sold; Santo Domingo given up; military insurrections. **1868.** Flight of the queen to France.

THE GERMAN CONFEDERATION.

1861. A German National Association decide to build a German fleet. **1862.** They recommend the formation of a federal government under the leadership of Prussia; meeting of plenipotentiaries from the German states respecting federal reform. **1863.** Congress of deputies of German states to consider national reform; the Emperor of Austria invites a German congress at Vienna; Prussia declines. **1864.** Prussia retains the duchies. **1865.** The Gastein convention signed. **1866.** Prussian troops march into Holstein. **1867.** New German constitution adopted.

RUSSIA.

1861. Decree for the total emancipation of 23,000,000 serfs issued; a political constitution asked for. **1862.** Increased privileges granted the Jews. **1863** Insurrection in Poland; termination of serfdom in Russia March 3. **1864.** Representative government asked for. **1865.** Province of Turkistan, in Central Asia, established. **1867.** Sells Alaska to the United States.

ITALY.

1861. The French fleet retires from Gaeta; assembling of Italian Parliament, which declares Victor Emmanuel King of Italy; the kingdom recognized by other powers; a Spanish revolutionist attempts to cause an uprising of the people in Sicily and is shot. **1862.** Triumphant progress of Garibaldi through Italy establishing rifle clubs; calls on the Hungarians to rise and England to join in the general cause of liberty; Mazzini issues an inflammatory manifesto. **1863.** The king visits Naples; review of the National Guard. **1864.** Jews permitted to dwell at Rome; decree for the transfer of the capital. **1865.** New Parliament meets at Florence. **1866.** Proposed alliance with Prussia. **1867.** Garibaldi and his volunteers active. **1868.** Frequent risings of the people induced by Mazzini's teaching and Garibaldi's activity.

DENMARK.

1861. German troops enter the duchies; decimal coinage adopted. **1862.** Union of Denmark and Sweden proposed. **1863.** Schleswig annexed to Denmark; crown of Greece accepted for Prince George; the German Diet demands of Denmark the uniting the duchies with equal rights; the Danish army strengthened; King Frederick VII. dies and accession of Christian IX.; great excitement among the northern Powers. **1864.** War for the duchies; treaty of peace signed at Vienna. **1865.** A new constitution for Denmark.

BELGIUM.

1865. King Leopold I. dies; ascension of Leopold II.



Your friend & ever
A. Lincoln

SIXTEENTH PRESIDENT.

Born in Hardin county, Ky., Feb. 12, 1809. *Removed to Illinois,* 1830, *and worked at rail-splitting, flat-boating and clerking. Was Captain in the Black Hawk War,* 1832. *Studied law; began practice,* 1836; *settled in Springfield,* 1837. *Elected to State Legislature,* 1836, 1838; *to Congress,* 1846. *Republican candidate for U. S. Senator, in opposition to Stephen A. Douglas, with whom he canvassed the State,* 1858. *Elected President of the United States,* 1860; *re-elected,* 1864. *A war measure, his Emancipation Proclamation, taking effect Jan.* 1, 1863, *put an end to slavery forever in the United States. Shot by John Wilkes Booth, April* 14, 1865, *at Washington, D. C., and died the following day. Vice-President, first term, Hannibal Hamlin; second term, Andrew Johnson.*



Andrew Johnson

SEVENTEENTH PRESIDENT.

Born at Raleigh, N. C., Dec. 29, 1808. *Never attended School. Instructed principally by his wife. Emigrated to Greenville, Tennessee,* 1826, *and began business as a tailor. Alderman of the town,* 1828. *Mayor,* 1830-'34. *Elected to State Legislature,* 1835; *re-elected* 1839. *Elected to State Senate,* 1841. *Member of Congress,* 1843-'53. *Elected Governor of Tennessee,* 1853, *and U. S. Senator,* 1857. *Strong Union man at opening of Civil War. Appointed Military Governor of Tennessee,* 1862-'64. *Elected Vice-President,* 1864. *Became President of the United States on the assassination of President Lincoln, April* 15, 1865. *The hostility between the President and the party that elected him began in* 1866, *and resulted in his being impeached, Feb.,* 1868. *On his trial before the High Court of Impeachment, the votes of the Court were taken in May on three of the eleven articles, which resulted in* 35 *for conviction to* 19 *against. He was, therefore, acquitted on these, a two-thirds vote being necessary to convict, and the vote on the remainder was indefinately postponed. Elected U. S. Senator,* 1874. *Died July* 31, 1875. *President of the Senate, L. S. Foster.*



U. S. Grant

EIGHTEENTH PRESIDENT.

Born at Point Pleasant, Ohio, April 27, 1822. *Graduate at U. S. Military Academy,* 1843. *Served in the Mexican War. Ordered to Oregon,* 1852. *Captain,* 1853. *Resigned commission,* 1854. *Removed to Galena where he engaged in the tanning business. Colonel* 21*st Ill. Vols. and Brig.-Gen., July,* 1861. *Appointed Lieut.-General, March,* 1864. *Received surrender of Confederate General Lee, April* 9, 1865. *Commissioned General, a grade created for him by Congress, July* 25, 1866. *Elected President of the United States,* 1868, 1872. *Started on a tour of the world from Philadelphia, May* 17, 1877, *returning via. San Francisco, Sept.* 20, 1879. *Died, July,* 23, 1885. *Vice-President, first term, Schuyler Colfax; second term, Henry Wilson.*

Grant's Administration [*1869–1877*].

THE UNITED STATES.

1869. Ulysses S. Grant inaugurated President of the United States; measures for the restoration of the Union adopted; the XVth Constitutional Amendment adopted—the last for securing liberty and equality to every citizen; railway to the Pacific completed. **1870.** A Joint High Commission for the settlement of disputes between America and Great Britain sits in Washington; weather-signalling introduced; Fenians invade Canada. **1871.** Treaty concerning the depredations of the *Alabama*; tribunal of arbitration appointed. **1872.** Award of the tribunal paid; the Union perfectly restored. **1874.** A new apportionment of representation made. **1875.** Preparation for the resumption of specie payment. **1876.** Great Centennial Exhibition in Philadelphia; war with the Sioux; Colorado admitted into the Union. **1877.** Decision of the Electoral Commission.

GREAT BRITAIN

1869. Bill for the disestablishment of the Irish Church becomes a law; treaty for settling the *Alabama* difficulty with the United States rejected by the latter. **1870.** A General Education Act passed. **1871.** Religious tests in the universities as to lay students abolished; the system of purchasing commissions in the army abolished. **1872.** The tribunal of arbitration decide that Great Britain should pay the United States $15,500,000 because of the depredations of the *Alabama*; the award passed. **1873.** Gladstone ministry resign and Disraeli forms a new ministry. **1874.** Dissolution of Parliament; Ashantee War. **1876.** War in Afghanistan continues.

FRANCE.

1869. Discovery of waste and extravagance in the use of the public money; much dissatisfaction and opposition to the emperor manifested. **1870.** Extensive discontentment among the laboring classes everywhere appears; Napoleon seeks a quarrel with Prussia; war declared against Prussia July 19; beginning of the Franco-German war; Germany united against France; the emperor takes his son to the front; is defeated and made prisoner at Sedan September 2; destruction of the empire and end of the Napoleonic dynasty; Napoleon and family find a refuge in England, where he dies. **1871.** The French Republic established; M. Thiers the first President; brief reign of the Commune. **1872.** Sixteen factions in the Legislative Assembly. **1873.** The German troops leave France; Marshal MacMahon President. **1874.** Son of Napoleon III. saluted by the Bonapartists as Napoleon IV.

SPAIN.

1869. Various insurrections in Spain suppressed with much bloodshed; the Cortes vote against a republic. **1870.** Prince Leopold of Hohenzollern-Sigmaringen elected king; the opposition of France to this choice causes the Franco-German war; Leopold declines, and Amadeus, son of Victor Emmanuel, chosen king. **1872.** A Carlist insurrection breaks out. **1873.** Amadeus, persistently opposed as a "foreigner," abdicates; slavery abolished in Porto Rico, West Indies; a republic established in Spain. **1874–75.** Carlist power rapidly wanes. **1876.** Reply of the Spanish government to the Vatican and insists upon maintaining religious toleration; end of the Carlist rebellion.

GERMANY.

1869. Napoleon's schemes to prevent German unity (the North and South Confederations) hasten that result; Prussia's war with Austria and other German states placed the former at the head of the German Confederacy and marked it as one of the first military powers of Europe; Schleswig and Holstein and other territory annexed to Prussia. **1871.** King William crowned Emperor of united Germany in January, and on March 21 the first Parliament of united Germany assembled at Vienna; since then Germany has been a unit. **1872.** Jesuit religious houses suppressed. **1873.** Roman Catholics make fierce opposition to the government. **1876.** The "Old Catholics" abrogate the celibacy of the clergy.

RUSSIA.

1869. For several years Russia had been making efforts to secure domain, commerce, and dominion in western Asia. Expeditions compelled the submission of several khanates, or small principalities. **1872.** An expedition sent against Khiva. **1873.** Khiva, Bokhara, and Khokan in the power of the Russians; a canal, seven hundred and fifty miles long, to connect the Caspian Sea with the Sea of Azov, at a cost of $62,000,000, begun by Russia. **1876.** Russian influence in Afghanistan adverse to that of British; the emperor desires political reforms in the empire, but is opposed by the nobles; Russia represented in the Centennial Exhibition at Philadelphia.

ITALY.

1870. The King of Italy notifies the Roman Pontiff that Rome must be occupied as the capital of the kingdom; Napoleon withdraws French troops from Rome; end of the temporal power of the pope, which had been exercised for eleven hundred years. *December* The Italian Parliament declares Rome the capital of Italy. **1871** Bill of "Papal Guarantees," which permits the pope to enjoy the title of a sovereign and to receive an annuity of $625,000, passed; its privileges refused by the pope, who occupies Rome as a spiritual sovereign; Italian unity completed.

DENMARK.

1869. The war with the Germans dreadfully exhausted the kingdom, but it now gradually recuperated; the Danish crown prince marries the only daughter of the King of Sweden; hope revived of the reunion of the three Scandinavian kingdoms. **1874.** The king visits Iceland on the one thousandth anniversary of its settlement by Scandinavians, and is received with enthusiasm.



Sincerely
R. B. Hayes

NINETEENTH PRESIDENT.

Born in Delaware, Ohio, Oct. 4, 1822. *Graduate of Kenyon College. Began practice of law in Cincinnati,* 1856. *Elected City Solicitor,* 1858. *Appointed Major 23d Ohio Inf., at opening of Civil War. Brevetted Major-General for bravery at Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek. Elected to Congress, Oct.,* 1865; *re-elected* 1866. *Elected Governor of Ohio,* 1867, 1869, 1875. *Republican candidate for President,* 1876. *The adherents of Governor S. J. Tilden, the Democratic candidate, claimed the election for him. Owing to the extraordinary complications in several States, an Electoral Commission was authorized by Congress, consisting of five members of the Senate, five of the House and five Associated Justices of the Supreme Court. By a vote of* 8 *to* 7 *the Commission counted* 185 *votes of States for Hayes and Wheeler to* 184 *for Tilden and Hendricks. Messrs. Hayes and Wheeler were accordingly inaugurated, March* 4, 1877. *According to the official returns, Governor Tilden had a popular majority over all others, of* 157,397 *votes. Vice-President, William A. Wheeler.*

Hayes' and Garfield's Administrations [1877-1881].

THE UNITED STATES.

1877. Rutherford B. Hayes inaugurated President of the United States; a conciliatory policy towards the Southern States adopted; good effects of the policy soon manifested. **1878.** Congress failing to make appropriations for the maintenance of the military establishment, an extraordinary session was held in October; the opposition in Congress seemed disposed to block the wheels of government; an Anti-Chinese Bill vetoed. **1879.** Congress refuses to vote appropriations for the support of the government service; an extraordinary session of Congress begins in March; resumption of specie payment after eighteen years' suspension; remarkable exodus of colored people from Southern States. **1880.** A joint resolution to amend the Constitution so as to give women a right to vote introduced in both Houses of Congress; the President calls the attention of Congress to the subject of an inter-oceanic ship canal; James A. Garfield elected President of the United States. **1881.** Inaugurated March 4, begins a prosperous administration; shot by an assassin July 2; dies September 19.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1877. The queen proclaimed Empress of India; Parliament invites action in favor of sustaining Turkey against Russia; convention with Egypt for the suppression of the slave-trade. **1878.** The army reserve called out; preparations for war with Russia; the foreign policy of the government sustained; Lord Lorne made governor of Canada; Cyprus ceded to England. **1879.** Definitive treaty between Great Britain and Turkey; war prosecuted in southern Africa (the Transvaal and Zululand). **1880** Irish Relief Bill passed; Land League formed; agitations prevail in Ireland; Lord Beaconsfield resigns; Gladstone becomes prime minister; Irish Tenant Compensation Bill rejected by the Lords. **1881.** Irish members expelled from the Commons; the queen orders the court to go into mourning for a week for the death of President Garfield; Lord Beaconsfield dies; Irish Land Bill passed.

FRANCE.

1877. Defeat of the Amnesty Bill and reorganization of the ministry; repeal of the Press Law; triumph of the Ultramontane party; end of the ministerial crisis. **1878.** Holding of another great international exhibition of industry. **1879.** Resignation of President McMahon; Jules Grévy elected President of the French Republic; amnesty granted to Communists; restoration of the seat of government to Paris; Legislature meets there for the first time since 1870; International Ship-Canal Congress meets in Paris; Prince Louis Napoleon Bonaparte killed in Africa; more than three thousand Communists pardoned. **1881.** France engages in war with Tunis.

SPAIN.

1877. Insurrections in Cuba; constitutional guarantees denied the Basque provinces; universal suffrage established. **1878.** Attempt to assassinate King Alfonso; marriage of the young king and an archduchess of Austria. **1880.** The Cortes pass a bill (which becomes law) to abolish slavery in Cuba; the sons of King Alfonso declared the direct heirs to the Spanish throne with the title of "Princes of Asturias"; this was done by royal decree, which abrogated the decree of 1850. **1881.** The king orders the court to go into mourning for a week for the death of President Garfield.

GERMANY.

1877. The Reichstag, or Parliament, opened (February 22) by the emperor; Bismarck, the Chancellor of the Empire, has leave of absence from official duties; Von Moltke, viewing the French budget, doubts a permanent peace with France; Austrian and Hungarian delegations vote for credits asked by the Austrian Minister of War. **1878.** Attempted assassination of the emperor; signing of the treaty of Berlin; Austrian occupation of Bosnia and Herzegovina; Socialist Bill adopted; convention between Austria and Turkey; Bismarck's Parliamentary Discipline Bill rejected; all exiled clergy who ask permission allowed to return to Germany. **1880.** International conference at Berlin to define the boundaries of Greece. **1881.** Anti-Jewish movements in Germany.

RUSSIA.

1877. Russia determines to invade Turkey; Turkey defies protocols signed at London; Russian troops cross the Pruth; Russia declares war against Turkey (April 24); Russian troops occupy Bucharest and enter Roumania. **1878.** Preliminary treaty of peace between Russia and Turkey signed. **1879.** Definitive treaty of peace between Russia and Turkey signed; two attempts to assassinate the czar. **1880.** Attempt to destroy the royal family by blowing up the Winter Palace with dynamite; Russians defeated by the Turkomans. **1881.** Assassination of the emperor by the Nihilists; accession of his son, Alexander III.

ITALY.

1877. Cardinal Joachim Pecci elected pope and receives the title of Leo XIII. as the successor of Pius IX., deceased. **1878.** Victor Emmanuel dies; King Humbert, son and successor of Victor Emmanuel, reigns wisely and maintains peace and prosperity in his dominions; attempt to assassinate the king. **1880.** Abolition of the grist tax.

HOLLAND AND SWEDEN.

1877. The grand ship-canal connecting Amsterdam with the sea opened. **1879.** Marriage of the King of Holland to the Princess Emma of Waldeck; Professor Nordenskjöld, an accomplished Swedish explorer, navigates the Polar Sea around the north of Europe from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean.

BELGIUM.

1880. Belgium suspends diplomatic relations with the Vatican; the king orders the court to go into mourning a week for the death of President Garfield.



J. A. Garfield

TWENTIETH PRESIDENT.

Born in the town of Orange, Ohio, Nov. 19, 1831. *Graduate at Williams College,* 1856. *Became Professor of Latin and Greek in Hiram College, O. Elected State Senator,* 1859. *Appointed Colonel,* 42*d Ohio Vols.,* 1861. *Nominated for Congress while in the field,* 1862, *but continued in service until* 1863. *Member of* 38*th*, 39*th*, 40*th*, 41*st*, 42*d*, 43*d*, 44*th*, 45*th and* 46*th Congresses. Elected U. S. Senator, Jan.* 1880. *Elected President of the United States, Nov.,* 1880. *Shot by Charles J. Guiteau, Washington, D. C., July* 2, 1881. *Died at Elberon, N. J., Sept.* 19, 1881. *Vice-President, Chester A. Arthur.*

Arthur's Administration [1881-1885].

THE UNITED STATES.

1881. Chester A. Arthur succeeded James A. Garfield as President of the United States. **1882.** The Edmunds' Anti-Polygamy Bill passed; Anti-Chinese Law, to continue ten years, passed; Utah refused admission as a State; a Bill to give the suffrage to women favorably reported to Congress; Commissioners to negotiate a treaty with Mexico appointed. **1883.** Civil Service Reform Bill passed; destruction of life and property in the Ohio Valley by floods; the East River Bridge (New York and Brooklyn) opened; Northern Pacific Railroad finished; disbanding of the Continental Army, and the Evacuation of New York by the British in 1783, celebrated. **1884.** Commercial treaty with Mexico ratified; survivors of the Greely Arctic Expedition rescued; Grover Cleveland elected President of the United States—ten million votes cast; great Exhibition at New Orleans opened; a treaty of commercial reciprocity with Cuba negotiated, but not ratified. **1885** Washington Monument dedicated; General Grant placed on the retired list with full pay.

GREAT BRITAIN.

1881. Parnell, the Irish agitator, arrested in Dublin. **1882.** Bill to exclude atheists from Parliament introduced; Queen Victoria shot at while passing the Windsor railway station; over five hundred agrarian outrages in Ireland in one month reported; the Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland and the Under Secretary murdered in Phœnix Park, Dublin; British forces bombard and burn Alexandria, in Egypt, and seize the Suez Canal; Repression Bill passed. **1883.** Attempt to blow up government offices at Westminster with dynamite; a bill to reduce the British public debt $865,000,000 in twenty years passed; Lord Lansdowne inaugurated Governor-General of the Dominion of Canada; British forces in Egypt; General Gordon in peril. **1884.** Franchise and redistribution bills, which put the government into the hands of the people, passed. **1885.** Attempt to blow up the Tower and Houses of Parliament with dynamite; treaty with Italy signed.

FRANCE

1882. Primary Education Bill passed; French troops enter Tunis; Expedition to southeastern Asia; Franco-Spanish treaty ratified; a bill providing for the protection of the Suez Canal defeated and the ministry resign. **1883.** The Assembly vote twenty-five million francs for the Tunisian expedition; Prince Napoleon arrested for issuing a political manifesto—his arrest creates a ministerial crisis; a law to restrain the actions of French princes passed; expeditions against Tonquin and Madagascar; French troops gain a foothold in China. **1884.** The campaign in China ended by a treaty of peace; violation of the treaty by the Chinese renews the war; Bartholdi's Statue of Liberty presented to the United States; cholera rages in Marseilles and Toulon; Senatorial Reform Bill passed.

GERMANY.

1881. Bismarck's policy assailed in the German Parliament by Liberals. **1882.** The Emperor recommends Prussia to abolish the four lower grades of class taxes for the benefit of poorer tax payers. **1883.** The government issues a decree prohibiting the importation of American pork in its products; seizure of Swartow disavowed; note sent to the Vatican requiring notification of ecclesiastical appointments. **1884.** The Germania Monument at Niederwald to commemorate the victories of 1870–71 unveiled; the Lasker resolutions of the United States Congress returned with explanations by Bismarck; the Chancellor three times defeated in the German Parliament by the opposing votes of the Liberals. **1885.** Amicable relations exist between the Emperor and the Pope.

RUSSIA.

1881. Commissioners appointed to examine and reorganize the system of provincial government, looking to local self-government. **1882.** Accession of Alexander III.; Prince Gortchakoff, the premier of the empire, retires from office on account of old age and ill-health: treaty with Persia ratified: the decree banishing Jewish apothecaries pronounced illegal: coronation of the Czar deferred one year because of apprehended dangers to his life. **1883.** Commissioners appointed to examine and amend the laws relating to the Jews; two thousand persons arrested in Moscow for plotting to kill the Czar; Nihilists convicted and punished; Alexander III. crowned at Moscow with great pomp; anti-Jewish riots at different places. **1884.** Peace reigns throughout the empire; the Czar and his family win the good will of the people. **1885.** Russia looks with covetous eyes upon British India and threatens.

SPAIN.

1882. A bill introduced into the Spanish Chamber of Deputies for the immediate abolition of slavery in Cuba and granting civil rights to the freedmen; commercial treaty with France approved. **1883.** The Chamber of Deputies refuse to abolish the parliamentary oath; a bill substituting affirmation for the oath, when desired, passed; ministers decide to treat as freemen forty thousand slaves in Cuba who were not liberated in 1870; a riot in favor of a republic among troops at Badajos and at other places; reformation of the army effected. **1884.** King Alphonso hooted and hissed at in Paris by a crowd; the French embassy at Madrid threatened; reciprocity treaty with the United States negotiated. **1885.** Districts in Spain dreadfully scourged by earthquakes and cholera.

ITALY.

1881. An attempt to murder the premier in the Chamber of Deputies. **1882.** Universal suffrage established for all who can read and write; the Pope sends a circular letter to Irish bishops concerning collections of funds for political purposes; the first election in Italy after the adoption of Universal Suffrage was on October 29, 1882; since that period the country has enjoyed continual peace and repose.



TWENTY-FIRST PRESIDENT.

Born in Franklin co., Vt., Oct. 5, 1830. *Graduate at Union College,* 1849. *Went to New York City, studied law and was admitted to the bar. Appointed Engineer-in-Chief by Governor Morgan, Jan,* 1861, *and Quartermaster-General on his Staff, Jan.,* 1862. *The rapid despatch of New York troops to the seat of war was due almost exclusively to his tact and energy. Appointed Collector of the Port of New York, Nov.* 20, 1871; *re-appointed Dec.,* 1875. *Removed by President Hayes, July* 21, 1878. *Elected Vice-President,* 1880. *Became President of the United States by the death of President Garfield, Sept.* 19, 1881.



Grover Cleveland

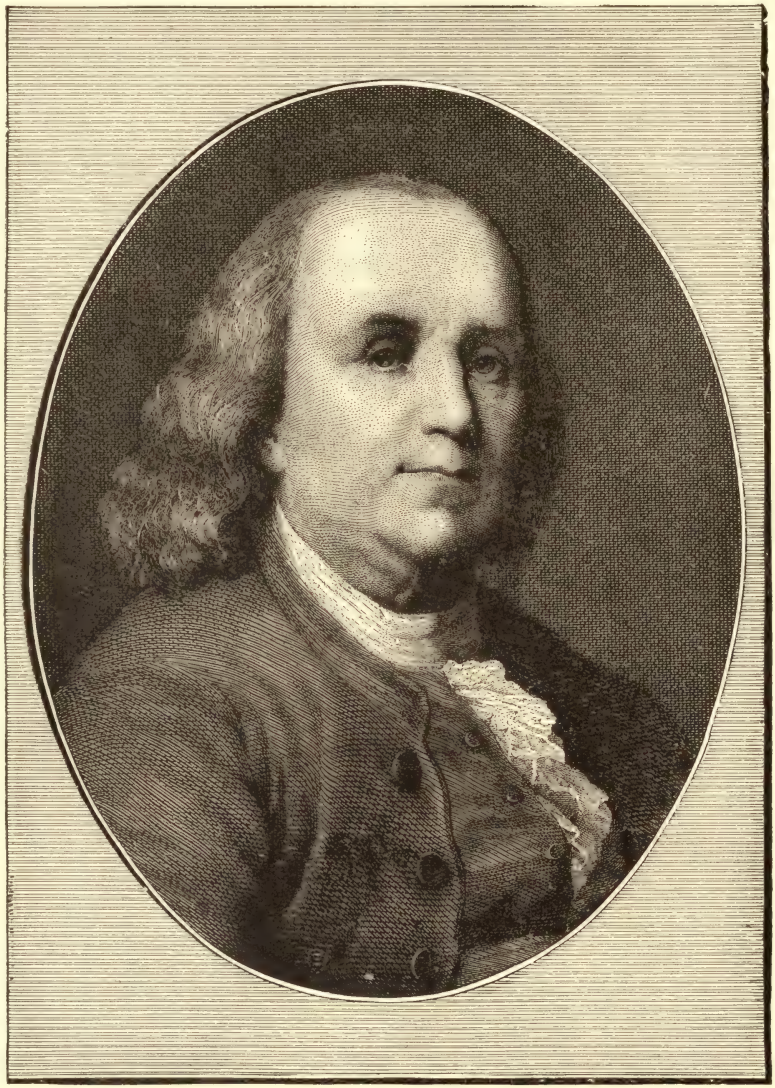
TWENTY-SECOND PRESIDENT.

Born in Caldwell, N. J., March 18, 1837. *Educated at Clinton, N. Y., until* 16. *Went to New York and taught for a while in the Asylum for the Blind. Went to Buffalo, studied law, and was admitted to the bar,* 1859. *Appointed Assistant District-Attorney of Erie co.,* 1863. *Drafted into the army while so employed, and furnished a substitute. Elected Sheriff of Erie co.,* 1870. *Elected Mayor of Buffalo,* 1881. *Elected Governor of New York by a majority of nearly* 200,000, 1882. *Elected President of the United States, as a Democrat,* 1884. *Vice-President, Thomas A. Hendricks, died Nov.* 25, 1885.



WILLIAM PITT, EARL OF CHATHAM.

Born at Bocounoc, Cornwall, Eng., Nov. 15, 1708. Educated at Eaton and Trinity College, Oxford. Entered Parliament, 1735. First took prominent part in debates, 1741. Returned to the next Parliament. Appointed one of the joint Vice-Treasurers for Ireland, Feb. 22, 1746; Paymaster-General, May 6, and Secretary of State, Dec., 1756. Resigned in following April, but recalled by the King, June 11, and became Premier. Resigned Oct. 1761, receiving a pension for the lives of himself, wife and son. Attempts were made in 1763, 1765, 1766, to bring him into the cabinet again, and in Aug. 1766, he consented to form a new Ministry. His memory is precious to Americans, because of his declaration in 1766, that the Kingdom had no right to levy a tax upon the Colonies, and his steadfast opposition to all measures repressive to the Colonists. Died May 11, 1778.



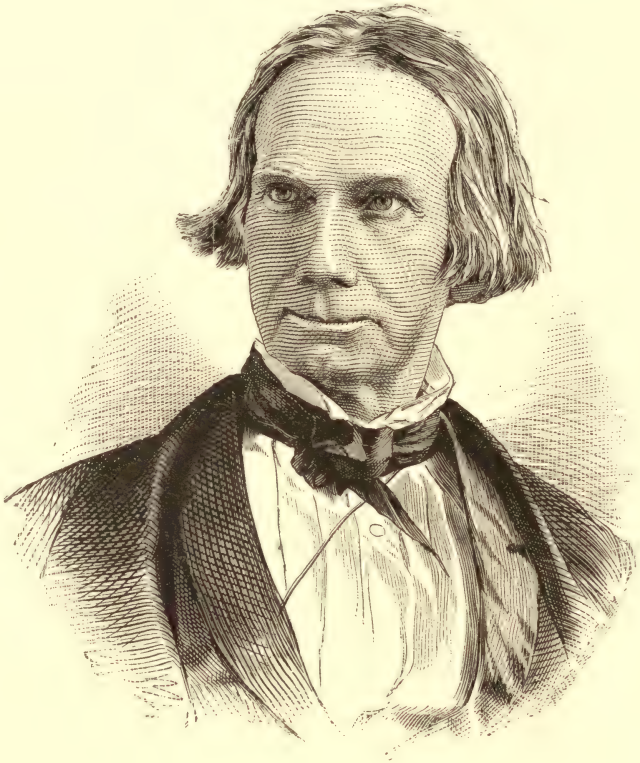
BENJAMIN FRANKLIN.

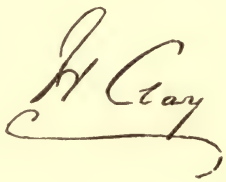
Born in Boston, Mass., Jan. 17, 1706. Attended Grammar School two years. Apprenticed to his brother, a printer, 1718. Settled in Philadelphia, 1726. Founder of the Public Library. Clerk General Assembly of Pennsylvania, 1736. Postmaster, 1737. Elected to Assembly, 1747, and the ten succeeding years. "Brought down electricity from the clouds," 1752. Discoverer of the utility of lightning rods. Deputy Postmaster-General of the British Colonies in America, 1753. Founder of the Academy of Sciences, same year. From 1757 spent several years in England as agent of several colonies. Sent by Congress as Commissioner to France, 1776. Was a commissioner to arrange treaty of peace. Appointed Minister to France. Participated in the framing of the Federal Constitution, 1787. Died April 17, 1790.



ANTHONY WAYNE.

Born in Easttown, Pa., Jan. 1, 1745. Studied and practiced surveying. Member Pennsylvania Assembly, 1773. Appointed Colonel in Continental Army, 1775. Served in Canada, 1776, becoming a Brig.-Gen. Was at Brandywine, Germantown, and Monmouth, and stormed the strong fortress at Stony Point, 1779. Received thanks of Congress and a gold medal. Served in Virginia and Georgia to close of War. Appointed to command of troops in the Ohio country, 1792, and gained his great victory over the Indians, 1794. Died Dec., 1796.





Born in Hanover co., Va., April 12, 1777. Admitted to the bar, 1797, at Lexington, Ky. Member of Legislature, 1803. Appointed U. S. Senator for an unexpired term, 1806. Speaker of Legislature, 1807. Elected U. S. Senator, 1809. Representative in Congress, 1811, and Speaker six terms. A commissioner to negotiate peace with Great Britain, 1814. Re-elected to Congress, and became one of the most active Protectionists. Member of Congress and Speaker, 1823. Secretary of State, 1825. Elected U S. Senator, 1831, beginning his tariff labors. Nominated for President, 1831, 1844. Resigned from Senate, 1842; re-elected 1849. Died June 29, 1852.



IRWIN McDOWELL.

Born in Franklin co., Ohio, Oct. 15, 1818. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1838. Took an active part in the Mexican War, being "mentioned" for gallant conduct at Buena Vista, Feb. 23, 1847. Brig.-Gen., May, 1861. First commander of the Army of the Potomac. Maj.-Gen. of Vols., March 14, 1862, and commander Department of Rappahannock, April 14. Relieved of command, Sept. 5, 1862. In command of Department of the Pacific, July, 1864 to June, 1865. Brevet Maj.-Gen., U. S. A., 1866. Succeeded the late Gen. Meade, as Maj.-Gen., U. S. A., Nov. 25, 1872, and placed in command of the Military Division of the Pacific. Died May 5, 1885.



CHARLES WILKES.

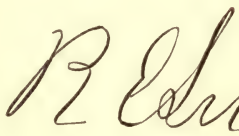
Born in New York City, 1801. Entered the navy as midshipman, 1818. Commanded several exploring expeditions, the most important being in the years 1838, '42, of which he published an accouut in five volumes, gaining the gold medal of the Geographical Society of London. Captain, 1855. Nearly involved the U. S. and Great Britain in war by taking the Confederate commissioners, Messrs. Mason and Slidell from the British steamer *Trent*, Nov., 1861. Commodore, 1862. Rear-Admiral, 1866. Soon after placed on retired list. Author of many scientific papers. Died Feb. 8, 1877.



THOMAS FRANCIS MEAGHER.

Born in Waterford, Ireland, Aug. 3, 1823. Favorite orator with the Young Ireland party of 1846 '48. Sentenced to death for sedition, but the sentence was commuted to transportation for life. Escaped from Tasmania, 1852, went to New York, and became editor of the *Irish News*, 1856. Major 69th N. Y. Vols., 1861. Brig.-Gen., 1862-'63. Secretary of Montana Territory, 1865. Drowned July 1, 1867.





Born in Stratford, Va., Jan. 19, 1807. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1829. When Gen. Scott invaded Mexico he appointed Captain Lee Chief Engineer of the army under Gen. Wood. Received three promotions for services in the campaign. Superintendent U. S. Military Academy, 1852. In command of troops that captured John Brown, 1859. Resigned his commission as Colonel, U. S. A., April 20, 1861, and was appointed Maj.-Gen. by the State of Virginia immediately afterward. Gen. in-Chief, C. S. A., Jan. 31, 1865. Surrendered to Gen. Grant, Appomattox Court House, Va., April 6, 1865. With the exceptions of the unsuccessful invasions of Maryland and Pennsylvania, his military operations were confined to his native State. After the war, was elected President of Washington College, Va. Died Oct. 12, 1870.



BENJAMIN CHURCH.

Born in Plymouth, Mass., 1639. When the Indian King Philip started on the war-path, Capt. Church took the lead of the whites. In the spring of 1676 he broke the power of the New England tribes. Continued hostilities against the Indians until 1704. Died Jan. 17, 1718.



BENEDICT ARNOLD.

Born in Norwich, Conn., Jan. 3, 1740. He fought in the Revolutionary war until 1778, when he was court-martialed. He then bargained for the surrender of West Point to the British. The capture of Major André prevented the betrayal. Died in London, June 14, 1801.



NATHANIEL GREENE.

Born in Warwick, R. I., 1740. Was an anchor-smith when the Revolution broke out. He hastened to Boston after the Lexington engagement, and was one of the most useful officers in the army to the close of the war, receiving the rank of Major-General from Congress. Died June, 1786.



ROBERT MORRIS.

Born in Lancashire, Eng., Jan., 1733. Came to America, 1744. Became heavy importer in Phila. Member Continental Congress, 1775. Signer of the Declaration of Independence. Established the first National Bank, 1781. Declined Secretaryship of the Treasury under Washington. Died May 8, 1806.



RUFUS PUTNAM.

Born in Sutton, Mass., April 9, 1738. Entered the provincial army, 1757. Continued in service during remainder of French and Indian war. Entered the Revolutionary army, 1775, and became a Brig.-Gen. Commissioned Supreme Judge, Northwest Territory, 1780 and Surveyor-General U. S., 1796. Died May 1, 1824.



JOHN CARROLL.

Born in Upper Marlborough, Md., Jan. 8, 1735. Educated at St. Omer College, French Flanders, and the Jesuits' College, Liege. Ordained a priest, 1769; consecrated a bishop, 1790, and made archbishop, 1808. At request of Congress, delivered an eulogy on Washington, Feb. 22, 1800. Died Dec. 3, 1815.



JOHN JAY.

Born in New York City, Dec. 12, 1745. Graduate at King's College, 1764. Admitted to the bar, 1768. Member of the first Continental Congress. Chief Justice of New York, 1777. President of Congress, 1778–'79. Special Minister to Spain, 1779. Commissioner to negotiate peace with Great Britain, 1782. First Chief Justice of the U. S. Died May 17, 1829.



RUFUS KING.

Born in Scarborough, Me., 1755. Entered Harvard College, 1773, remaining until the students were dispersed by military movements. Returned to college 1777, and graduated with distinction as a classical scholar and orator. Was one of the first U. S. Senators from New York. Minister to Great Britain, 1796, and again in 1825. Died April 29, 1827.



JAMES JACKSON.

Born in Devonshire, Eng., Sept. 21, 1757. Came to America, 1772. Was an efficient officer throughout the Revolution. Elected Governor of Georgia, 1788, but declined on account of his youth; accepted in 1798. Was twice U. S. Senator. Died March 19, 1806.



WILLIAM PENN.

Born in London, Oct., 1644. Educated at Oxford. Became a Quaker while a student and was driven from home. Returned to Quakers and was chosen preacher. Procured grant of present Pennsylvania, 1681. Founded Philadelphia. Died July 30, 1718.



PETER STUYVESANT.

Born in Friesland, Holland, 1602. First director of the Dutch West India Company in the province of New Netherland on the Hudson. Arrived at New Amsterdam, May, 1647. Ruled until 1664, when he surrendered to the English, who named the town New York. Died Aug., 1682.



PHILIP SCHUYLER.

Born in Albany, N. Y., Nov. 22, 1733. Entered the army, 1755, serving three years. Was in expedition against Ticonderoga and Crown Point, as Colonel. Member of second Continental Congress. One of the four Maj.-Gens. appointed to command the army, 1775. Twice U. S. Senator. Died July, 1804.



COTTON MATHER.

Born in Boston, Feb. 12, 1663. Educated at Harvard College. Ordained a clergyman, 1684. Was a firm believer in witchcraft and chief promoter of the Salem Witchcraft excitement of 16 2. A voluminous writer, and prodigy of learning. Died Feb. 13, 1728.



POCAHONTAS.

Favorite daughter of Powhatan. Saved the life of Captain Smith after his condemnation to death. Her marriage, April, 1613, to John Rolfe, an Englishman, insured peace in Virginia, and made her powerful father a warm friend of the English.



ABRAHAM WHIPPLE.

Born in Providence, R. I., 1733. Led a sea-faring life from boyhood. Burned the British armed-schooner *Gaspé* in Narragansett Bay, June 17, 1772. Fired first gun in naval service of the Revolution, driving the British frigate *Rose* from the blockade of Narragansett Bay, 1775. Commander, 1776, and in active service until May, 1780. Died May 29, 1819.



GEORGE ROGERS CLARKE.

Born in Albemarle County, Va., Nov. 19, 1752. Went to the Ohio region, 1772. Captain in army operating against Indians, 1774. Reclaimed the great Northwest Territory from the English, French, and Indians. Gained rank of Brig.-Gen. while serving under Steuben in Virginia, 1781. Known as the "American Hannibal." Died in Kentucky, Feb., 1818.



DAVID RAMSAY.

Born in Lancaster County, Pa., April 2, 1749. Settled in Charleston, S. C., as a physician. Elected to Congress, 1782, '85, and President *pro tem.*, '86. Was the author of many valuable historical works, and the "father" of American copyrights. Died May 8, 1815.



CHARLES THOMSON.

Born in Ireland, 1730. Came to America, 1741. Adopted as a son by Delaware Indians, 1756. Elected Secretary first Continental Congress, 1774, and served until 1789. Wrote, but destroyed, a most valuable history of those days. Died Aug. 16, 1824.



PATRICK HENRY.

Born in Hanover County, Va., May 29, 1736. First attracted attention by his eloquence when 27. Admitted to the bar, 1769. First Republican Governor of Virginia, 1776–'84. Great advocate of State Rights. Opposed to Federal Constitution, but acquiesced when it became law. Died June 6, 1799.



FRANCIS HOPKINSON.

Born in Philadelphia, Pa., Sept. 3, 1738. First scholar and first graduate of the College of Philadelphia. Settled in Bordentown, N. J., 1768. Member of Continental Congress, Signer of Declaration of Independence, Judge of Admiralty for Pa., and Judge U. S. Court, 1790. Died May 9, 1791.



BENJAMIN WEST.

Born in Springfield, Pa., Oct. 10, 1738. Was a clever portrait painter at 15. Studied and painted in Italy and England. Won the friendship of George III., and with the aid of Reynolds the two founded the Royal Academy of Fine Arts. Died March 11, 1820.



SAMUEL KIRKLAND.

Born at Norwich, Conn., Dec., 1741. Educated for missionary work, and labored for forty years among the tribes of the Six Nations, chiefly the Oneidas. Successful treaty-maker, having confidence of Indians. Died Feb., 1808.



PAUL JONES.

Born in Arbigland, Scotland, July 6, 1747. Settled in Virginia, 1773. Volunteered services and was commissioned Lieutenant in the Navy, 1775. Made several successful cruises to British waters. Fought the memorable battle in his *Bonhomme Richard* with the *Serapis* and *Countess of Scarborough*, Sept. 23, 1779. After the war became a Rear-Admiral in Russia, and fought the Turks in the Black Sea. Died July 18, 1792.



DANIEL BOONE.

Born in Berks County, Pa., 1734. Family emigrated to North Carolina. Became a noted hunter and explorer. Penetrated the unknown valley of the Mississippi, and made a settlement on the "Kain-tuck-ee" river, 1775. Captured by Indians and adopted, 1778. Escaped, helped make Kentucky an independent State, lost his title to the land he subdued, and started on an exploration of the far West. Died Sept. 26, 1820.



JOHN WINTHROP.

Born in Boston, 1715. Graduate at Harvard College, 1732. Called at the time "most learned man in America." Took famous observations of transits of Venus, 1761, '69. Hollis Professor in Harvard. Received degree of LL.D., Edinburgh University. Died May 3, 1779.



ROGER WILLIAMS.

Born in Wales, 1599. Educated at Oxford. Driven to America by religious persecution, 1631. Formed a congregation, Salem, Mass., 1634. Banished, 1635. Founded the colony of Rhode Island. Father of American Baptists. Died April, 1683.



JOHN DICKENSON.

Born in Maryland. Nov. 13, 1732. Studied law in the Temple, London. Member Pennsylvania Assembly, 1764, of Stamp-Act Congress, 1765, and of first Continental Congress, 1774. Wrote the Declaration of Congress, 1775. Governor of Pennsylvania, 1782. Died Feb. 14, 1808.



JONATHAN TRUMBULL.

Born in Lebanon, Conn., June 21, 1710. Graduate at Harvard College, 1727. Prepared for the ministry, but became a merchant. Elected Member of the Assembly, 1733, and Governor of Connecticut, 1769; re-elected Governor for fourteen consecutive terms. Died Aug. 17, 1785.



CADWALLADER COLDEN.

Born in Dunse, Scotland, Feb. 17, 1688. Educated at Edinburgh University. Came to America, as a physician, 1708. Became Surveyor-General of New York, and one of the Governor's Council. Lieut.-Governor and acting magistrate, 1760, serving through Stamp-Act excitement. Died Sept. 28, 1776.



DAVID RITTENHOUSE.

Born in Roxborough, Pa., April 8, 1732. Became one of the most eminent mechanicians and mathematicians of his time. Inventor of "fluxions" in algebraical analysis. Constructed a machine to show motions of solar system. First Director Philadelphia Mint. Died June 6, 1796.



BENJAMIN RUSH.

Born in Byberry, Pa., Dec. 24, 1745. Educated at Princeton and Edinburgh, as physician and scientist. Member Continental Congress, 1775, and signer of Declaration of Independence. Prof. of Chemistry, Medical College of Phila. Served heroically through yellow fever scourge, 1793. Died April 19, 1813.



FRANCIS MARION.

Born in Winyaw, S. C., 1732. Fought in the war with the Cherokee Indians, 1761. Entered Revolutionary Army as Captain. Was with Moultrie at Charleston. Organized the famous brigade that bore his name, with which he cleared the Carolinas and Georgia of the enemy. Died Feb. 29, 1795.



ROBERT R. LIVINGSTON.

Born in New York City, 1747. Graduated at King's College, 1764. Studied law under Chief Justice Smith. Was Secretary of State from organization of the Federal Government until 1783, when he became Chancellor of the State of New York. Administered the oath to President Washington. Minister to France, 1801. Died Feb. 26, 1813.



TENCH COXE.

Born in Philadelphia, Pa., May 22, 1755. Was one of the earliest advocates of cotton-growing. In 1785 announced his belief in the future greatness of the cotton district south of Maryland. Was identified with every important industrial movement from 1787 until his death. Died July 17, 1824.



JOHN HANCOCK.

Born in Braintree, Mass., 1737. Graduate at Harvard College, 1754. Became counting-room clerk for his uncle. Entered public life, 1766. An abettor of the tea-riot, 1773. President Provincial Congress of Mass. President of the Continental Congress when the Declaration of Independence was signed. Governor of Mass. several years. Died Oct. 8, 1793.



SAMUEL SLATER.

Born near Belper, Eng., June 9, 1768. Apprenticed to a cotton-spinner. Came to America with models of Arkwright's machines, Nov., 1789. Began making cotton-spinning machinery, Providence, R. I., Jan. 18, 1790. Eleven months afterward the successful manufacture of cotton in the United States was begun. Died April 21, 1831.



JOHN MARSHALL.

Born in Germantown, Va., Sept. 24, 1755. Was in military service 1775–1780, when he studied law. Secretary of War, 1800. Appointed Chief Justice of the United States, Jan., 1801. Author of a "Life of Washington." Died July 6, 1835.



FISHER AMES.

Born in Dedham, Mass., April 9, 1756. Graduate at Harvard College, 1774. Admitted to the bar, 1781. Member of the State Legislature, and elected to Congress, 1789. Declined election to Presidency of Harvard College, 1805. Died July 4, 1808.



JOHN RANDOLPH.

Born near Petersburg, Va., June 2, 1773, the seventh in descent from Pocahontas (*q. v.*). Educated in Columbia (N. Y.) and William and Mary (Va.) Colleges. Elected to Congress, 1799, he served for 24 years, and in the Senate 2. Appointed Minister to St. Petersburg, 1830. Ill health forced him to resign. Died May, 1833.



BENJAMIN THOMPSON.

Born in Mass., March 1753. Became a schoolmaster, but marrying a rich widow, gave his mind to scientific research. Refused to take part in political affairs when the Revolution opened. Sought British protection in Boston. Was bearer of despatches from Lord Howe to England. After the war went to Bavaria, where he was created Count Rumford. Died Aug., 1814.



AARON BURR.

Born in Newark, N. J., Feb. 5, 1756. Graduate at Princeton College, 1772. Commissioned Lieut.-Col. 1777, and served two years, when his health compelled him to resign. Appointed Attorney-General of New York, 1789, and elected U. S. Senator, 1791. Candidate for President, 1800, when Congress decided the tie vote in favor of Jefferson, and gave Burr the Vice-Presidency. Fatally shot Alexander Hamilton in a duel, 1804. Died Sept. 14, 1836.



DANIEL WEBSTER.

Born in Salisbury, N. H., Jan. 18, 1782. Graduate at Dartmouth College. Admitted to the bar, 1805. Elected to Congress from New Hampshire, 1813; re-elected, 1814. Removed to Boston to practice law, 1816, resigning from Congress. Elected U. S. Senator, 1826. Secretary of State for President Harrison; retained by President Tyler. Negotiated the Ashburton Treaty, 1842. Re-elected U. S. Senator, 1845. Secretary of State for President Fillmore. Died Oct 24, 1852.



JOHN C. CALHOUN.

Born in Abbeville district, S. C., March 18, 1782. Graduate at Yale College, 1804. Took a seat in Congress, 1811, serving six years. Secretary of War for President Monroe, 1817. Elected Vice-President of the U. S., 1825; re-elected with President Jackson, 1828. Secretary of State for President Tyler, 1843. Re-elected U. S. Senator, 1845, serving until his death. Died March 31, 1850.



ROBERT FULTON.

Born in Little Britain, Pa., 1765. At the age of 21 he began studying with West, the painter, but gradually developed a genius for mechanics, and became a civil engineer. He made a voyage from New York to Albany in the *Clermont*, his first experimental steamboat, in 36 hours, 1807. Successfully constructed submarine batteries, and built the first steam man-of-war for the Government. Died Feb. 24, 1815.



MARTHA WASHINGTON.

Born (Martha Dandridge) in New Kent County, Va., May, 1732. Married Daniel Parke Custis, 1749. Became a widow when about 25. Married Col. George Washington, Jan. 6, 1759, and settled on the Mount Vernon estate. Presided over the executive mansions in New York and Philadelphia. She survived her husband less than three years.



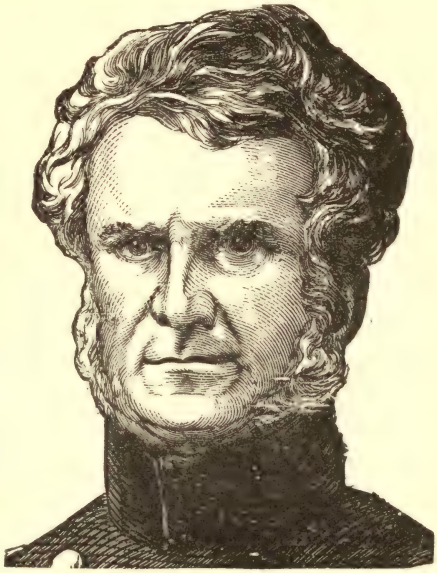
WILLIAM E. CHANNING.

Born in Newport, R. I., April 7, 1780. Graduate at Harvard College, 1798. Regent of Harvard, 1801; licensed to preach, 1802; ordained pastor of the Federal Street Unitarian Society, Boston, 1803. Preached without aid until 1824, when an assistant was employed. Received degree of D.D. from Harvard. Was connected with the society nearly 40 years. Died Oct. 2, 1842.



T. MACDONOUGH.

Born in Newcastle County, Del., Dec. 23, 1783. Was a midshipman in the navy, 1798; a lieutenant, 1807; a master-commandant, 1813. Was in command of four ships and ten galleys at the battle of Plattsburgh, Lake Champlain, Sept. 11, 1814. For his victory he was handsomely rewarded by Congress, the States of New York and Vermont, and the cities of New York and Albany. Died Nov. 10, 1825.



WILLIAM J. WORTH.

Born in Columbia County, N. Y., 1794. Was a distinguished officer in the war of 1812-'15, and rendered grand services in the Mexican War. Commanded the first division of the army that moved on Monterey, and brevetted Maj.-Gen. for gallantry during that engagement. Also received a sword from Congress. A handsome monument is erected to his memory in New York City. Died May, 1849.



WILLIAM BAINBRIDGE.

Born in Princeton, N. J., May 7, 1774. Entered the naval service, 1798. Received thanks of Napoleon Bonaparte for saving French residents in Algiers from enslavement by the Dey. Was active in War of 1812, and honored by Congress with a gold medal. Was President of the Board of Navy Commissioners three years. Died July 27, 1833.



OLIVER ELLSWORTH.

Born in Windsor, Conn., April 29, 1745. Educated at Yale and Princeton Colleges. Admitted to the bar in Hartford, 1770. Member Continental Congress, 1777. Appointed Judge of the Superior Court of Conn., 1784. First U. S. Senator from his State. Appointed Chief Justice of the United States, 1796. Ambassador to France, 1799-1801. Died Nov. 26, 1807.



S. VAN RENSSELAER.

Born near Albany, N. Y., Nov. 1, 1764. Graduate at Harvard College, 1782. Elected Lieut.-Governor of New York, 1795. On declaration of war against Great Britain, 1812, he was commissioned a Maj.-Gen. and placed in command of the N. Y. militia. After the war was elected to Congress. His last years were spent in princely benefactions. Died Jan. 26, 1840.



WASHINGTON IRVING.

Born in New York City, April 3, 1783. Studied law when sixteen, but abandoned it for the charms of literature. Went to the south of Europe for his health. 1804. Returned to New York, 1806. Was Secretary of Legation at London, 1829-1832. Received degree of LL.D. from the University of Oxford, 1831. Minister to Spain, 1842. Died Nov. 28, 1859.



WILLIAM PINKNEY.

Born in Annapolis, Md., March 17, 1764. Admitted to the bar, 1786. Appointed Attorney-General of the U. S., 1811; U. S. Minister to Russia, 1816. On his return, 1820, was elected U. S. Senator. Was a profound statesman and brilliant orator. Died Feb. 25, 1822.



ALEXANDER HAMILTON.

Born on the island of Nevis, British West Indies, Jan. 11, 1757. Came to the U. S., 1773. Was active with pen and sword during Revolution. Was Washington's *aide* and chief secretary, 1777-'82. Admitted to the bar in New York, 1782. Secretary of the Treasury, 1789. Died July 4, 1804.



ROBERT Y. HAYNE.

Born near Charleston, S. C., Nov. 10, 1791. Studied law and was admitted to the bar. Volunteered for the army early in 1812. Became Maj.-Gen. of the State militia. Began practice of law at Charleston. Speaker of State Assembly, 1818. Attorney-General same year. U. S. Senator ten years. Chairman of Committee of the South Carolina Convention which reported the nullification ordinance, 1832. Soon after was elected Governor. Issued a counter manifesto to President Jackson's proclamation. Died Sept. 24, 1841.



EDWARD LIVINGSTON.

Born in Clermont, N. Y., 1764. Graduate at Princeton College, 1781. Admitted to the bar, 1785. Elected to Congress, 1794, serving until 1801, when he resumed his profession, from which he was called to the office of U. S. District-Attorney. Took the yellow fever during the epidemic of 1803, while visiting the sick. He was in service under Jackson in Louisiana, 1814. Chief of a commission to codify the laws of the State, and author of the penal code, adopted 1824. U. S. Senator, 1829. Minister to France, 1833. Died May 23, 1837.



C. C. PINCKNEY.

Born in Charleston, S. C., Feb. 25, 1746. Educated in England. Began practice of law in Charleston, 1769. Entered the army, and was captured at the fall of Charleston. Appointed Minister to the French Republic, 1796, and second Maj.-Gen. in the army, 1797. Author of "Millions for defence, but not one cent for tribute." Died Aug. 16, 1825.



DE WITT CLINTON.

Born in Little Britain, March 2, 1769 Graduate at Columbia College, 1786. Appointed U. S. Senator, 1801. Elected Mayor of New York City annually from 1803 to 1815, except in 1807, '10. Unsuccessful candidate for President, 1812. Chiefly instrumental in procuring the law for constructing the Erie Canal. Elected Governor of New York, 1817, 1820, 1826. Died Feb. 11, 1828.



JAMES KENT.

Born in what is now Putnam County, N. Y., July 31, 1763. Graduate at Yale College, 1781. Admitted to the bar, 1785, and settled in Poughkeepsie, N. Y. Removed to New York City, 1793, and became Professor of Law in Columbia College. Elected Recorder of the City, 1797. Received degree of LL.D. from Columbia, Harvard, and Dartmouth Colleges. Appointed Associate Justice of the New York Supreme Court, 1797. With Judge Radcliffe he revised the legal code of the State. Chief Justice of New York, 1804-'14, and Chancellor, 1814-'23. Died Dec. 12, 1847.



EDWARD EVERETT.

Born in Dorchester, Mass., April 11, 1794. Graduate at Harvard College, 1811. Entered Unitarian ministry, Boston, 1813. Appointed to the Eliot chair of Greek literature just created in Harvard, 1814. Elected to Congress, 1824, holding his seat ten years. Elected Governor of Massachusetts, 1834, and re-elected three times. Appointed Minister to Great Britain, 1840. Commissioner to China, 1845. Secretary of State of the United States, succeeding Daniel Webster, 1852. U. S. Senator, 1853. Candidate for Vice-President, 1860. Died Jan. 15, 1865.



W. C. C. CLAIBORNE.

Born in Va., 1775. Educated at William and Mary College. Studied law, went to Tennessee, and was elected a member of the Constitutional Convention when 21. Appointed a Judge of the Supreme Court when 22. Appointed Governor of the Mississippi Territory, 1801, and of the Louisiana Territory, 1804. Governor of the State, 1812, and greatly seconded Gen. Jackson in the defense of New Orleans, in 1815. Died Nov. 23, 1817.



O. H. PERRY.

Born in South Kingston, R. I., Aug. 23, 1785. Early in 1812 he was in command of a flotilla of gunboats in New York harbor. Volunteering to reinforce Com. Chauncey on Lake Ontario, he was sent by that officer to Lake Erie to superintend the building of a squadron to oppose the British. On Sept. 10, 1813, he fought the memorable battle in the *Lawrence*, achieving a most brilliant victory. Died, a Commodore, Aug. 23, 1819.



JOHN C. FRÉMONT.

Born in Savannah, Ga., Jan. 21, 1813. Projected a survey of the region between the Missouri river and the Pacific ocean, 1842. His first expedition lasted four months, and the second, full of hardships, from May, 1843, until July, 1844. Elected Governor of Northern California, July 4, 1846. In Oct., 1848, started on a fourth expedition, and in 1853 on a fifth. First candidate of Republican party for President, 1856. Maj.-Gen. during part of the Civil War, and Governor of Arizona after its close.



ISAAC SHELBY.

Born near Hagerstown, Md., Dec. 11, 1750. Entered military life, 1774. In command of a company of minute men in Va., 1776. Appointed State Commissary of Supplies, 1777, and attached to the Continental Commissary Department, 1778. First Governor of State of Kentucky, 1792. Served a second term, 1812. Led 4,000 Kentucky Volunteers across the Canadian frontier, 1813; and for his fight upon the Thames received a gold medal from Congress. Died July 18, 1826.



ANDREW G. CURTIN.

Born in Centre co., Pa., April 22, 1817. Studied law in Dickinson College. Canvassed the State for Henry Clay, 1844. Appointed Secretary of the Commonwealth, 1854. Elected Governor of Pennsylvania, 1860; re-elected, 1863. As one of the War Governors, he did much to strengthen the Union cause, and facilitate the raising of the vast armies. Appointed Minister to Russia, 1869. Member of the 47th, 48th, 49th Congresses.



SAMUEL COOPER.

Born in New York, 1798. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1815. First Lieutenant and aide de camp to Gen. Macomb, 1828-'30. Captain, 1836. Brevetted Col. of the Staff, for meritorious conduct in the Mexican war, 1848. Adjutant-Gen. U. S. Army, 1852. Resigned commission, Mar. 7, 1861. Appointed Adj.-Gen. of the Confederate armies, Mar. 16, 1861, and served in addition as Inspector-General.



ROBERT ANDERSON.

Born near Louisville, Ky., June 14, 1805. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy. Was a Col. of Ill. Vols., in the Black Hawk War. Served in Seminole War, winning a captaincy by his gallantry. Aide de camp to Gen. Scott, 1838. Appointed an Asst. Adj.-Gen. on the re-organization of the army staff. Was with Gen. Scott through the Mexican War. Selected to command troops in Charleston Harbor. With 80 officers and men he defended Fort Sumter against a fierce bombardment for 38 hours, and was compelled to surrender, April 14, 1861. Maj.-Gen., U. S. A., Feb., 1865. In the same year he raised his old flag over the ruins of Sumter. Died Oct. 26, 1871.



SAMUEL HOUSTON.

Born near Lexington, Va., March 2, 1793. Ran away from home and lived with the Indians three years, being adopted as his son by a chief. Entered the army as private, 1813. Served with distinction in Indian campaigns. Resigned in 1818, and began studying law in Nashville, Tenn. Admitted to the bar the same year. Maj.-Gen. of Militia, 1821; Member of Congress, 1823-'27; Governor of Tennessee, 1827. In April, 1829, resigned and went to live with the Indians again. He wrested Texas from Mexico by the battle of San Jacinto, April, 1836, and became President of the Republic of Texas the the same year; re-elected 1841. First U. S. Senator from the State of Texas. Died July 25, 1863.



CALEB CUSHING.

Born in Salisbury, Mass., Jan., 1800. Graduate at Harvard College, 1817. Admitted to the bar, 1825. Elected to Congress, 1835. Went from the Whig to the Democratic party, 1841. Appointed Commissioner to China, concluding the first American treaty, 1843. Entered Mexican War at head of regiment equipped at his own expense. Judge of Mass. Supreme Court, 1852. Att'y-Gen. U. S., 1853. President of the National Democratic Convention, 1860. Commissioner to codify laws of Congress, 1866. Active in the purchase of Alaska from Russia, 1869. A counsel for settlement of the "Alabama" claims, 1872. Died Jan. 2, 1879.



HENRY A. WISE.

Born in Drummondtown, Va., Dec. 3, 1806. Graduate at Washington College, Pa., 1825. Elected to Congress, 1833, and twice re-elected. Senate rejected his nomination for Minister to France, 1842. Appointed Minister to Brazil, 1844. Elected Governor of Virginia, 1855. John Brown's seizure of Harper's Ferry, his capture, trial and execution, occurred under Gov. Wise's administration, 1859. Member of State Convention, 1861, and labored to effect a compromise with the seceded States. Upon the secession of Virginia he entered the Confederate military service as a Brig.-Gen. Died Sept. 12, 1876.



JOHN B. FLOYD.

Born in Smithfield, Va., June 1, 1806. Graduate at Columbia College, S. C., 1829. Began practice of law in native county, but soon moved to Arkansas. Returned to Virginia, 1839. Member of Legislature, 1847-'49. Governor of Virginia, 1850-'53. Delegate to National Democratic Convention, 1856. Appointed Secretary of War by President Buchanan, 1857. By his order, the army was dispersed in remote parts of the country and immense quantities of arms were transferred from Northern to Southern arsenals, 1860. He resigned in December, 1860, because a Brig.-Gen. in the Confederate army threw the act of surrendering Fort Donelson to Gen. Grant, 1862, upon Gen. Pillow, and escaped into southern Tennessee. Died Aug. 26, 1863.



JEREMIAH S. BLACK.

Born in the "Glades," Somerset county, Pa., Jan. 10, 1810. Admitted to the bar, 1831. Became a local Judge, 1842, and served for nine years, when he was elected a Supreme Court Judge, short term. Elected for full term (15 years), 1854. Attorney-General of the U. S. under President Buchanan. Opposed the position of the President at the secession crisis, holding that the Government had a right to suppress insurrection anywhere and under any pretense. In Dec., 1860, he was appointed Secretary of State in place of Gen. Cass, resigned, and served to close of administration. He was engaged in many celebrated cases, and contributed his views on current public topics to the magazines and newspapers. Died Aug. 19, 1883.



LUTHER C. LADD.

On the 19th of April, 1861, while a body of Massachusetts troops were *en route* to the field of action, they were fired upon on the streets of Baltimore, Md., by secessionists. Luther C. Ladd, a little over 17 years of age, Addison O. Whitney, 21 years of age, both of Lowell, and Charles A. Taylor, of Boston, were killed outright; and Sumner H. Needham, of Lawrence, was mortally wounded. The bodies of the first soldiers killed in the war were given a public funeral in Lowell, and a grand "Martyrs' Monument" was erected June 17, 1865.



MARSHALL LEFFERTS.

Born in Brooklyn, N. Y., 1820. Entered military life as a staff officer to Gen. Hall, of the New York militia. Became Col. of the famous Seventh Regiment, of New York City, Aug. 15, 1859. Made a grand parade in honor of the Prince of Wales, 1860. Took his regiment to the field, April 19, 1861, May 26, 1862, and June 17, 1863. During their first term the regiment opened communication between the National Capital and the North, by relaying the rails of the railroad from Annapolis to Washington. Died suddenly, July 3, 1876.



E. O. C. ORD.

Born in Maryland, 1818. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1839. Served against the Seminole Indians, 1839–'42. On duty in California during the Mexican War, putting an end to the reign of terror there. Accompanied the expedition against John Brown, 1859. Brig.-Gen. of Vols., Sept. 1861, and placed in command of a brigade, Army of the Potomac. Participated in Gen. Grant's operations in Mississippi. Commanded the 13th Corps at the siege and capture of Vicksburg. As commander of the 18th Corps he took part in the operations before Petersburg and Richmond. Brig.-Gen. U. S. A., 1866. Retired 1881. Died July 22, 1883.



MICHAEL CORCORAN.

Born in Carrowkell, Ireland, Sept. 21, 1827. Appointed to the Irish Constabulary force when 19. He resigned in 1849, came to America, settling in New York City. Elected Col. of the 69th Regiment, N. G. S. N. Y., 1859. Court-martialed for refusing to parade his regiment at the Prince of Wales's reception, 1860. Took his regiment to the seat of war, and participated in the first "Bull Run" battle, where he was taken prisoner. He was held nearly a year. On his release was made a Brig-Gen. Organized the famous Corcoran Legion, Army of the Potomac, 1863. Fell from his horse, and died Dec. 22, 1863.



NATHANIEL LYON.

Born in Ashford, Conn., July 14, 1819. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1841. Served at the bombardment of Vera Cruz, and the battles of Cerro Gordo, Contreras, and Churubusco. Early in 1861 he was placed in command of the U. S. Arsenal at St. Louis. His energy in capturing the State Guards, in breaking up the Confederate force at Potose, and in taking civil control when Gov. Jackson fled from the capital, saved the State to the Union. He encountered the Confederate forces under Sterling Price at Wilson's Creek, Mo., Aug. 10, 1861, and was killed, after being twice wounded, while leading a charge.



GIDEON J. PILLOW.

Born in Williamson Co., Tenn., June 8, 1806. Graduate at Nashville University, 1827. Began the practice of law in Columbia. Delegate to the National Democratic Convention, 1844. Entered the Mexican War as a Brig.-Gen. of Vols., and served under Gens. Taylor and Scott, attaining the rank of Maj.-Gen. After the war, was acquitted on charges of insubordination. Joined the Confederate army, 1861; commanded at Belmont, Mo., Nov. 7, 1861, and was second in command under Gen Floyd at Fort Donelson, Feb. 1862. Was removed from command for leaving his post. Died Oct., 1878.



FRANCIS H. PIERPONT.

A very significant civil and political movement was inaugurated in Northwestern Virginia, in the early part of May, 1861. The Union feeling was very strong, and, accordingly, there was much opposition to Governor Letcher and the Confederates in control of the eastern counties. A convention was held at Wheeling in the middle of June. A new State Government was organized, with Mr. Pierpont as Provisional Governor, a Union Legislature was elected, and steps were taken for the erection of a new State, which culminated in the formation of the free State of West Virginia, admitted into the Union June 2, 1863.



STEPHEN A. DOUGLAS.

Born in Brandon, Vt., April 23, 1813. Studied law a short time in Canandaigua, N. Y., leaving in 1831 for the West, and settling in Jacksonville, Ill. Taught school and studied law, and was admitted to the bar, 1834. Was Attorney-General of the State before he was 22. Secretary of State, 1840. Judge of the Supreme Court, 1841. Elected to Congress, 1843, '44, '46, and U. S. Senate, 1847. Canvassed the State in opposition to Abraham Lincoln for U. S. Senator, 1858, and was re-elected. Conservative Democratic candidate for President, 1860. After Mr. Lincoln's inauguration he supported the Union cause. Died June 3, 1861.



ROBERT PATTERSON.

Born in Cappagh, Co. Tyrone, Ireland, Jan. 12, 1792. His father fled to America, having been engaged in organizing the Irish rebellion of 1798. Robert served through the war of 1812-'14, retiring a Captain, and returning to the counting-house business in Philadelphia. Became Maj.-Gen. of State militia, and quelled the "Red Row" riots in 1838, and the "Native American" riots in 1844. Appointed Maj.-Gen. of Volunteers for the Mexican War, he rendered conspicuous services throughout the campaign. In April, 1861, he was selected to command the Pennsylvania troops, and Gen. Scott placed him over the Department of Washington, and gave him unlimited powers. Returned to his business at the close of his term. Died Aug. 7, 1881.



WINFIELD SCOTT.

Born in Petersburg, Va., June 13, 1786. Studied law and was admitted to the bar, 1806. When Congress enlarged the army he obtained a captain's commission. Appointed Lieut.-Col. on declaration of war of 1812; promoted to Brig.-Gen., March, 1814. Became Commander-in-Chief of the Army, 1841. His career in the Mexican War displayed master-pieces of military execution, and placed him among the great military heroes of modern times. Defeated for President of the United States, 1852. Brevetted Lieut.-Gen. (an office created for him by Congress), Feb. 1855, taking rank from March 29, 1847, in honor of his services in Mexico. Resigned his commission on account of age, Oct. 31, 1861. Died May 29, 1866.



WILLIAM S. HARNEY.

Born in Louisiana, 1798. Appointed to U. S. Army, Feb. 1818. Paymaster, 1833. Lieut.-Col. 2d Dragoons, 1836. Fought in the Seminole War in Florida. Brevet Col., 1840, for gallant conduct. Served with distinction in the Mexican War. Brevet Brig.-Gen., 1858. While in command on the Pacific coast, he took possession of the neutral territory of San Juan Island, Puget Sound. Was in command of Union troops in Missouri in the early part of the Civil War. Retired 1863.



WILLIAM A. BUCKINGHAM.

Born in Lebanon, Conn., May 28, 1804. Educated in the public schools, and went into mercantile business when 21, settling in Norwich. Elected Mayor, 1849, 1850, 1856, 1857. Elected Governor of Connecticut, 1858; re-elected seven times, declining a ninth consecutive nomination, in 1866. After two years' rest from the fatigue of his great war services he was elected to the U. S. Senate 1868, for the term ending March 3, 1875. Died Feb. 3, 1875.



ADAM J. SLEMMER.

Born in Montgomery co., Pa., about 1828. Graduate at the U. S. Military Academy, 1850. Served against Seminole Indians and on the California frontier, four years. Appointed Assistant Professor U. S. Military Academy, 1855. Transferred to Fort Pickens, Jan. 10, 1861, which he held against all assaults until May 9, 1861. Major, May, 1861; Brig.-Gen., Nov., 1862; brevet Lieut.-Col., U. S. A., Dec., 1862; brevet Colonel and Brig.-Gen., March, 1865. Severely wounded at Stone River. On garrison duty after the war, and in command at Fort Laramie, D. T. Died Oct. 7, 1868.



JOHN J. CRITTENDEN.

Born in Woodford county, Ky., about 1785. Served in War of 1812. Began practice of law in Frankfort, Ky. U. S. Senator, 1817. Devoted himself to his profession until 1835, when he again became U. S. Senator. Appointed Attorney-General of the U. S., 1841, serving but a few weeks. Elected U. S. Senator, 1842; Governor of Kentucky, 1848. Appointed Attorney-General of the U. S., 1850. Re-elected U. S. Senator, 1855, for term ending March 4, 1861. Author of the "Crittenden Compromise," proposed to adjust the secession difficulties, but rejected by Congress. Died July 26, 1863.



WM. G. BROWNLOW.

Born in Wythe county, Va., Aug. 29, 1805. Entered the traveling ministry of the Methodist Church, 1826. Removed to Tennessee, 1828. Edited the Knoxville *Whig* from 1839 until November, 1861, when it was suppressed by the secessionists, and he was imprisoned. Defended slavery, but opposed secession. After a year he was allowed to pass through the Northern lines. When the Union army captured Knoxville he started another newspaper, and vigorously supported the prosecution of the war. Elected Governor of Tenn., 1865-'67. Elected to U. S. Senate, taking his seat March 4, 1869. Died April 29, 1877.



LEWIS CASS.

Born in Exeter, N. H., Oct. 9, 1782. Settled in Marietta, O., 1799. Studied law and was admitted to the bar 1802. Entered the War of 1812 as Col. of the 3d Ohio Vols. Urged the invasion of Canada; crossed the line and won the battle of Toronto. Prisoner of war on surrender of Detroit. Became Maj.-Gen. Ohio Vols., and Brig.-Gen., U. S. A. Military Governor of Michigan, 1813-'31. Secretary of War under President Jackson. Appointed Minister to France, 1836, resigning 1842. Elected U. S. Senator, 1845. Nominated for President, 1848. Secretary of State, 1857-'60. Died June 17, 1866.



J. B. MAGRUDER.

Born in Port Royal, Va., 1808. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1830. In the Mexican War he won the brevet of Lieut.-Col. by his skillful handling of light artillery. Visited Europe under a commission from the War Department, to report upon the artillery service in the great armies. On his return he resigned his commission and entered the Confederate army as a Brig.-Gen. He served in front of Richmond until after the battle of Malvern Hills, when he was transferred to the Trans-Mississippi army. Died Feb. 24, 1871.



ALEXANDER RAMSEY.

Born near Harrisburg, Pa., Sept. 8, 1815. Clerk in Register's office, 1828. Secretary State Electoral College, 1840. Clerk State House of Representatives, 1841. Member 28th, 29th Congresses. Appointed Territorial Governor of Minnesota, 1849–'53. Mayor of St. Paul, Minn., 1855. Elected Governor of Minnesota, 1859; re-elected 1861. Elected U. S. Senator, 1862, '69. Appointed Secretary of War by President Hayes, to succeed Secretary McCrary, Dec. 10, 1879. Chairman of the Utah Commission, 1882.



JOSEPH E. JOHNSTON.

Born in Longwood, Va., Feb., 1807. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1829. *Aide-de-camp* to Gen. Scott in the Seminole War. Attained rank of Colonel in the Mexican War. Quartermaster-Gen. and Brig.-Gen., 1860. Resigned, April 22, 1861, and entered the Confederate army. In command of all the forces on the Peninsula and at Richmond, 1862. In command of the Department of Tennessee, 1862-'63. In Nov., 1863, he was transferred to the army in the South and West, and was driven by Sherman until he took up a position at Atlanta, Ga., when he was relieved July 17, 1864. In Feb., 1865, when Sherman had penetrated South Carolina, he was ordered to the command of all forces available to check the advance. Surrendered a few days after the surrender of Gen. Lee. Settled in Richmond. Member of the 46th Congress.



JOHN E. WOOL.

Born in Newburgh, N. Y., 1789. Received a captain's commission in the army at outbreak of the War of 1812. At the storming of Queenstown Heights he was shot through both thighs. Brevetted Lieut.-Col. for bravery at Plattsburg. At close of the war he was appointed Inspector-Gen. of the Northern Division; in 1821 Inspector-Gen. of the whole army; and in 1826 Brevet Brig.-Gen. for 10 years' faithful service. In the Mexican War he selected the ground on which the battle of Buena Vista was fought; was in command at Saltillo; and succeeded Gen. Taylor in command of the army of occupation. Maj.-Gen. U. S. A. 1848. Received thanks of Congress and a sword, 1854. During the Civil War his superior skill as an organizer of troops was used effectually in New York, Baltimore, and Fortress Monroe. Died Nov. 20, 1869.



JOHN A. ANDREW.

Born in Windham, Me., May 31, 1818. Graduate at Bowdoin College, Me., 1837. Admitted to the bar in Boston, Mass., 1840. Attracted public attention by his connection with the Burns and Sims cases under the Fugitive Slave law of 1850. Closely identified with the anti-slavery party from 1848. Delegate to the National Republican Convention, 1860. Elected Governor of Massachusetts same year, and was re-elected four times, being one of the most efficient of the "War Governors." Prepared the address of the Northern Governors to the people of the North, 1862. President of the first National Unitarian Convention, 1865. Died Oct. 30, 1867.



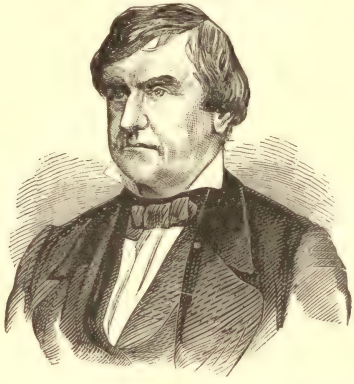
AMBROSE E. BURNS DE.

Born in Liberty, Ind., May 23, 1824. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1847. Served in the Mexican and Indian wars. Entered Union Army, April, 1861. Commanded a brigade at the first battle of Bull Run. Promoted to Brig.-Gen. and Maj.-Gen. Commanded a successful expedition to North Carolina, 1862; the left wing of the Union army at Antietam; the Army of the Potomac, and the Ninth Army Corps. Elected Governor of Rhode Island, 1866, '67, '68. Admitted within German and French lines at Paris during Franco-German War, 1870-'71. Elected U. S. Senator, 1874; re-elected, 1880. Died Sept. 13, 1881.



EDWIN D. MORGAN.

Born in Washington, Mass., Feb. 8, 1811. Received a public school education. Engaged in mercantile pursuits, New York city. Alderman of N. Y. city, 1849. State Senator, 1850, '51, '52, '53. State Commissioner of Emigration, 1855-'58. Chairman National Republican Committee, 1856-'64. Governor of the State of New York, 1859, '60, '61, '62. Maj.-Gen. of Vols. Sept. 28, 1861-Jan. 1, 1863, serving without pay. While Governor he raised, equipped and hastened to the field 220,000 volunteer soldiers. Elected U. S. Senator, 1863. Died Feb. 14, 1883.



JOSEPH HOLT.

Born in Breckinridge co., Ky., 1807. Chose the legal profession. Appointed Commissioner of Patents, 1857; Postmaster-General, 1859; Secretary of War, 1860; Judge Advocate-General of the Army, 1862. In the last capacity he was engaged in many celebrated trials growing out of the Civil War, most notably that of the conspirators who planned the assassination of President Lincoln, 1865. On the retirement of Judge Bates, he was offered but declined the post of Attorney-General of the United States. Brevet Maj.-Gen., March 13, 1865, and retired Dec. 1, 1875.



RICHARD YATES.

Born in Warsaw, Ky., Jan. 18, 1818. Graduate at Illinois College. Studied and practiced law. Representative in the State Legislature, 1842, '43, '44, '45, '46, '48, '49. Member of the 32d and 33d Congresses from two different districts. Governor of Illinois from 1861 to 1865. Elected to the U. S. Senate as a Union Republican to succeed W. A. Richardson, and took his seat March 4, 1865, for the term ending March, 3, 1871. Died Nov. 27, 1873.



JACOB THOMPSON.

Born in Caswell county, N. C., May 15, 1810. Graduate at the University of North Carolina, 1831. Admitted to the bar, 1834. Member of Congress, 1839-'51. Secretary of the Interior from March, 1857, to Jan. 7, 1861. Was one of the most active secessionists before and after the breaking out of the Civil War. Governor of Mississippi, 1862-'64. Became aide de camp to Gen. Beauregard. Died 1885.



AUSTIN BLAIR.

Born in Caroline, Tompkins co., N. Y., Feb. 8, 1818. Graduate at Union College, N. Y., 1839. Studied law and on removing to Michigan began its practice. Was county clerk of Eaton county, and prosecuting attorney of Jackson county. Member of the State Legislature. Governor of Michigan from 1861 to 1865. Elected to the 40th, 41st and 42d Congresses.



WILLIAM SPRAGUE.

Born in Cranston, R. I., Sept. 12, 1830. Received an academic education. Became largely interested in manufacturing pursuits. Elected Governor of Rhode Island, 1860, by the Democrats and Conservative Republicans. Raised several regiments for the Union army, and accompanied them to the field. Declined appointment as Brig.-Gen. of Vols. U. S. Senator, 1863-'75.



JOHN C. BRECKENRIDGE.

Born near Lexington, Ky., Jan. 21, 1821. Educated at Centre College, Danville, and studied law. Served in the Mexican war, and was counsel to Gen. Pillow. Elected to Congress, 1851; re-elected, 1853. Elected Vice-President on ticket with James Buchanan, 1856. Elected U. S. Senator, 1860. Defended the Confederacy in the Senate and volunteered for its army. Expelled by vote from Senate, Dec., 1861. Appointed a Maj.-Gen. in the following summer. Served continuously in the field until Feb., 1865, when Jefferson Davis appointed him Secretary of War. After Johnston's surrender he went to Europe, returning in 1868, and withdrew from public life. Died May 17, 1875.



LOUIS M. GOLDSBOROUGH.

Born in Washington, D. C., Feb. 10, 1805. Appointed midshipman, June 18, 1812. Recaptured an English brig from Greek pirates, 1827. Executive officer of the frigate *Ohio*, at the siege of Vera Cruz, Mexico, March, 1847. Was flag officer of naval forces that co-operated with the army in the waters of North Carolina, 1862. A fleet under his command silenced the Confederate batteries at Sewell's Point, May, 10, 1862, and moved up to Norfolk, which was found evacuated. Commissioned Rear-Admiral, July 16, 1862. After close of Civil War he was in command of European Squadron. Commandant Navy Yard, Mare Island, Cal., 1868, and subsequently that at Washington, D. C. Died Feb. 20, 1877.



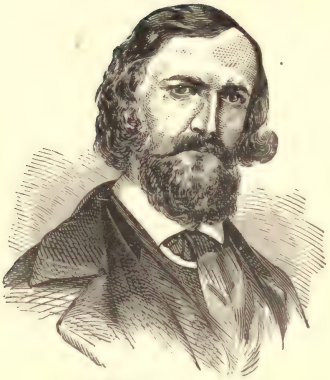
JOHN A. DIX.

Born in Boscawen, N. H., July 24, 1798. Entered the army, 1812, and was aide-de-camp to Gen. Brown, when Commander-in-Chief, U. S. A. Resigned his commission 1828, adopted the legal profession, and united with the Democratic party. Adj.-Gen., State of New York, 1830. U. S. Senator, 1845. Assistant Treasurer, New York, 1853. Postmaster, 1859. Secretary of the Treasury, Dec. 1860-March, 1861. Maj.-Gen. of Vols., May, 1861, and soon after, Maj.-Gen., U. S. A. Military commandant in New York during the "Draft" riots, 1863. Commanded Department of the East, 1864-'65. Minister to France, 1866-'68. Elected Governor of New York, 1872, and defeated by S. J. Tilden, 1874. Died April 21, 1879.



WM. L. YANCEY.

Born at Ogeechee Shoals, Ga., Aug. 10, 1814. Admitted to the bar, 1837, and removed to Montgomery, Ala. Elected to Congress, 1844, and re-elected for a second term. Delegate to the National Democratic Convention, 1848. Took an active part to make Kansas a slave State, 1854-'56. Delegate to the National Democratic Convention, 1860, at Charleston, but his Southern policy was opposed, whereupon he joined the convention at Baltimore. Reported the ordinance of secession adopted by the Montgomery convention. Appointed Commissioner to Europe by the Confederacy, 1861. Unsuccessful in gaining recognition, he returned and served in Confederate Congress. Died July, 1863.



CLEMENT C. CLAY.

Born in Madison Co., Ala., 1819. Graduate at University of Alabama, 1835. Private Secretary to his father when Governor. Began the practice of law in Huntsville. Member of the Legislature, 1842, '44, '45. Elected Judge of the County Court, 1846, resigning 1848 to resume his practice. Elected U. S. Senator 1853; re-elected 1857. Resigned on breaking out of the Civil War. Became a member of the Confederate Congress, and was also engaged in secret diplomatic work for the Confederacy. He surrendered himself to a Union officer, 1865. Was released 1866. Died Jan. 3, 1882.



GABRIEL J. RAINS.

Born in Craven Co., N. C., 1804. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1827. He served in the Seminole Indian War, and won his Majority in the Mexican War. In 1854 he was ordered to the Pacific coast, where he became a noted Indian fighter. Just as he had been promoted to Lieut.-Col. (1860), he resigned his commission to enter the Confederate army, and was appointed a Brig.-Gen. His most noted services were in connection with the torpedo bureau of the Confederacy, of which he was the organizer and chief. Died Aug. 6, 1881.



HIRAM PAULDING.

Born in New York, Dec. 11, 1797. Appointed Midshipman, Sept. 1, 1811. Saw first service at the battle of Lake Champlain. Commander, Feb. 9, 1837. Captain, Feb. 29, 1844. Commandant Washington Navy Yard, 1853–'55. Commanding Home Squadron, 1856–'58. Rear-Admiral, July 16, 1862, and ordered to command of the New York Navy Yard. No small portion of the efficiency of the blockading fleets was due to his personal attention in fitting and equipping the vessels. Relieved from duty, 1865. Governor of the Naval Asylum, Philadelphia, 1867–'69. Port Admiral, Boston, 1869–'71. Died Oct. 20, 1878.



SIMON CAMERON.

Born in Lancaster Co., Pa., March 8, 1799. Learned the printer's trade, and became a newspaper editor in Doylestown, 1820. Removed to Harrisburg 1822, and took charge of the leading Democratic paper of the State. Elected U. S. Senator, 1845. He favored the Mexican War and the extension of the Missouri Compromise Line to the Pacific. Re-elected U. S. Senator, 1857. Immediately after his inauguration, President Lincoln appointed him Secretary of War, which office he held until Jan. 11, 1862, when he was appointed Minister to Russia. Re-elected U. S. Senator, 1866, '73. Resigned 1877. Succeeded by his son.



JOHN SLIDELL.

Born in New York City, about 1793. Graduate at Columbia College, N. Y., 1810. Studied law, but was engaged in mercantile business, 1817-'20. Being admitted to the bar, he became U. S. District Attorney in New Orleans, 1829, and held office until 1833. Elected to Congress, 1843. Appointed Minister to Mexico, 1845. Elected U. S. Senator, 1853, and was re-elected. In 1861 with James M. Mason (*quid vide*), he was appointed a Confederate Commissioner to Europe; they were taken from the British steamer *Trent*, by Captain Wilkes, U. S. N., and imprisoned in Fort Warren, from which they were released upon the demand of Great Britain, and allowed to resume their journey. Died in London, Eng., July 29, 1871.



WILLIAM H. SEWARD.

Born in Florida, N. Y., May 16, 1801. Entered Union College, 1818. Admitted to the bar, 1822. Elected a State Senator, 1830. Defeated for Governor, 1834. Elected Governor, 1838; re-elected 1840, declining a third term, 1842. Canvassed the State for Henry Clay 1844, but devoted the most of the period 1843-'49 to his extensive legal practice. Elected U. S. Senator, 1849; re-elected 1855. Appointed Secretary of State by President Lincoln, immediately after his first inauguration. He retained the important post throughout the war. At the time of Mr. Lincoln's assassination, Mr. Seward was brutally assaulted. Retired from Cabinet service March, 1869. Made a tour around the world 1870-'71. Died Oct. 10, 1872.



PHILIP KEARNY.

Born in New York City, June 2, 1815. Was appointed to the army, 1837, and sent to Europe to study French cavalry tactics. Entered the military school at Saumur, and then joined the army in Africa as a volunteer. Appointed *aide-de-camp* to Gen. Macomb, 1840, and to the same office under Gen. Scott, 1841. Equipped a company of dragoons at his own expense, and escorted Gen. Scott into Vera Cruz. Lost his left arm at the City of Mexico while charging a battery. Resigned commission, 1851. Served during the Italian campaign, 1859. He hurried from Europe when the Civil War broke out. His services were gladly accepted, and he was placed in command of the New Jersey troops. Maj-Gen. U. S. A., July 4, 1862. Killed at Chantilly, Va., Sept. 1, 1862.



EDWIN M. STANTON.

Born in Steubenville, O., Dec. 19, 1814. Graduate at Kenyon College, 1833. Admitted to the bar, 1836. In 1847 he removed his family to Pittsburg, Pa., though retaining an office in Steubenville. His business before the U. S. Supreme Court became so large, that he was compelled to remove to Washington, D. C., in 1857. Appointed Attorney-General of the U. S. Dec. 1860, retiring March 4, 1861. Appointed Secretary of War Jan. 11, 1862. He was retained in the Cabinet of President Johnson until Aug. 1867, when he was suspended, after peremptorily refusing to resign. This action led to the impeachment proceedings of 1868. He resigned after the acquittal of the President. Appointed Associate Justice U. S. Supreme Court by President Grant, a few days before his death, Dec. 24, 1869.



BENJ. F. CHEATHAM.

Born in Davidson Co., Tenn., 1819. Went into the Mexican War twice, as Captain of a company and Colonel of a regiment. Commanded a brigade in battles around Mexico City. Commissioned a Brig.-Gen., Confederate army, May, 1861, and Maj.-Gen., March, 1862. His services were confined to the Western armies, the record of his command extending through all the operations of the Army of Tennessee, sharing in Hood's final campaign.



STEPHEN B. MALLORY.

Born in Nassau, N. P., 1810. Educated in New York. Moved to Key West, Fla., studied law, and was admitted to the bar, 1833. Became County Judge, Judge of Probate, and Inspector of Customs. Elected U. S. Senator, 1851; re-elected 1857. Expelled on the secession of his State, Jan. 1861. During the Civil War he held the position of Secretary of the Confederate Navy. At the close of the war he was arrested. Released on parole, March, 1866. Died Nov. 16, 1873.



OLIVER P. MORTON.

Born in Wayne Co., Ind., Aug. 4, 1823. Educated in Wayne County Seminary and Miami University, O. Admitted to the bar at Centreville, Ind., 1847. Elected Circuit Judge, 1852. Left the Democratic for the Republican party, 1854. Defeated for Governor, 1856. Elected Lieut.-Governor, 1860. Two days after inauguration he became Governor by the election of Governor Lane to the U. S. Senate. Elected Governor, 1864. Elected to the U. S. Senate, 1867; re-elected for following term. Member of the Electoral Commission. Died Nov. 1, 1877.



JOHN T. GREBLE.

Born in Philadelphia, Pa., Jan. 19, 1834. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy 1854, and assigned to the artillery branch. He was detailed for active duty at Fortress Monroe, Oct., 1860. Assisted in preventing the seizure of that important post by Confederates. Sent to Newport News as Master of Ordnance, May 26, 1861, he superintended the fortification of that place, and trained the volunteers to artillery practice. He accompanied the expedition to Great Bethel, and was the first regular army officer who perished on the field. Killed June 10, 1861.



ALEX. W. RANDALL.

Born in Montgomery co., N. Y., Oct., 1819. Studied law and settled in Waukesha, Wis., 1840. Appointed Judge of the Second District, 1856. Governor of Wisconsin, 1857-1861, Minister to Italy, 1861-'65. Postmaster-General, 1866-'69. Resumed the practice of law at Elmira, N. Y. Died July 25, 1872.



HENRY W. HALLECK.

Born in Waterville, N. Y., Jan. 16, 1815. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1839. Assistant Prof. of Engineering at the Academy, 1840. Served through Mexican war. Appointed Maj.-Gen. U. S. A., Aug. 19, 1861. Became Gen.-in-Chief of the Army and Chief of Staff under Lieut.-Gen. Grant. Died Jan. 9, 1872.



WILLIAM DENNISON.

Born in Cincinnati, Ohio, Nov. 23, 1815. Graduate at Miami University, 1835. He became a lawyer, a railroad and a bank president. Was Governor of Ohio, 1860-'62, and evinced sterling qualities as the "War" Governor. He refused to surrender alleged fugutive slaves, denied the right of secession, and affirmed the loyalty of his State. Appointed Postmaster-General, 1864, serving two years.



ISRAEL WASHBURNE.

Born in Livermore, Me., June 6, 1813. Educated in the public schools. Member of State Legislature, 1842-'50. In the latter year was elected to Congress and served continuously from Dec. 1, 1852, to Jan. 1, 1861, when he resigned to enter upon his duties as Governor of Maine, (elected 1860). He was re-elected, 1861, and declined a third nomination. Was appointed Collector of Customs at Portland, Me. Died May 12, 1883.



JOHN S. MOSBY.

The noted Confederate "Guerilla." Was a graduate of the University of Virginia, and a lawyer of local reputation. He was for a long time Gen. Lee's most trusty scout, and a terror to non-combatants within the Union lines. In March, 1863, he dashed into the village of Fairfax Court-house, took from his bed and carried away the Federal commanding officer. U. S. Consul at Hong-Kong, China, 1881.



WILLIAM NELSON.

Born in Maysville, Ky., 1825. Entered the U. S. Navy, 1840. Participated in the siege of Vera Cruz, 1847. Became Lieut.-Commander, 1861. Exchanged the naval for the military service, and made Brig.-Gen., Sept. 16, 1861. Commanded the 2d division of Buell's army at Shiloh. Placed in command of Louisville, Ky., when threatened by Bragg. Maj.-Gen. of Vols., July 17, 1862. Shot dead at St. Louis, Sept. 29, 1862.



JOHN B. HOOD.

Born in Owingsville, Ky., June 29, 1831. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1853. Engaged on frontier duty until 1861, when he entered the Confederate Army, serving in every position from first lieutenant to that of Commander-in-Chief of an army, with the rank of Lieut. Gen. He lost a leg at Chickamauga. Succeeded Gen. Johnston in command of the army resisting Gen. Sherman's invasion of Georgia, 1864. Led "a forlorn hope of the Confederacy," at Franklin, Nov. 30, and Nashville, Dec. 15, 16, 1864, and was relieved by Gen. Dick Taylor. He was a very gifted officer, and thoroughly understood the science of war. Died Aug. 30, 1879.



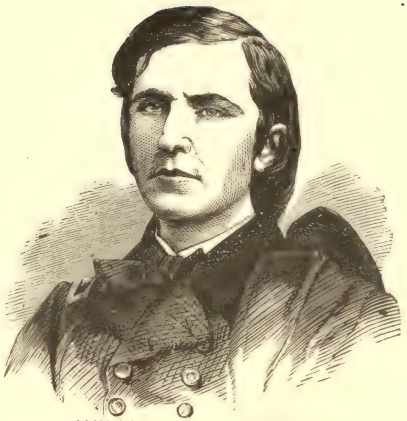
JOSEPH HOOKER.

Born in Hadley, Mass., Nov. 13, 1814. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1837. Served in the campaigns in Florida and Mexico, and resigned, 1853. Brig.-Gen. of Vols., May 17, 1861. Served around Washington until March, 1862, when he was assigned to the command of a division, Army of the Potomac. From that time until June 27, 1863, he participated in all the movements of that army, becoming its commander in Jan., 1863. In Sept., 1863, was placed in command of the Army of the Cumberland, and in 1864, he accompanied Sherman as far as Atlanta, when he asked to be relieved. Received thanks of Congress. Retired upon full rank as a Maj.-Gen., Oct., 1868. Died Oct. 31, 1879.



JOHN A. WINSLOW.

Born in N. C., Nov. 9, 1811. Midshipman, 1827; lieutenant, 1839; commander, 1855; captain, 1862; Commodore, 1864; Rear-Admiral, 1866. Served gallantly during the Mexican War, but his principal distinction arises from having fought the only sea engagement of the Civil War. On June 10, 1864, while in command of the U. S. S. *Kearsarge*, off the port of Cherburg, France, he discovered, fought, and sunk the much dreaded Confederate steamer *Alabama*. He became a Commodore for this remarkable action. Commander of Gulf Squadron, 1866, '67. Died Sept. 29, 1873.



WILLIAM B. CUSHING.

Born in Wisconsin, Nov. 24, 1844. Appointed to the U. S. Naval Academy from New York, 1857. In May, 1861, he went into service at Hampton Roads, and captured the first naval prize of the war. Captured Jacksonville, Fla., and destroyed the salt works at New Juliet, Nov., 1862. The most daring act of the whole war was the destruction by him of the Confederate ram *Albemarle*, at her wharf at Wilmington, N. C., Oct. 27, 1864. Received thanks of Congress, and was promoted to be a Lieut.-Commander. Died Dec. 17, 1874.



JAMES B. McPHERSON.

Born in Sandusky Co., O., Nov. 14, 1828. Graduate at head of class at the U. S. Military Academy, 1853. Instructor at Academy until 1854, when he was assigned to duty as engineer on the defences of New York harbor. In charge of construction of Fort Delaware, 1857, and subsequently of the defences at Alcatraz Island, Cal. Appointed *aide-de-camp* to Gen. Halleck, Aug., 1861. Brig.-Gen. U. S. Vols. and Maj.-Gen., Oct., 1862. Served with Gen. Grant from the capture of Fort Henry, 1862, to the surrender of Vicksburg, 1863, and was pronounced by him to be "one of the ablest engineers and most skillful generals." In command of the Department and Army of Tenn., 1864, and of the left grand division before Atlanta, Ga., where he was killed July 22, 1864.



P. G. T. BEAUREGARD.

Born in parish of St. Bernard, La., May, 1818. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1838. Served through Mexican War. His advice decided the manner in which the City of Mexico was attacked. Superintended construction of Custom House and Marine Hospital, New Orleans. Appointed Superintendent U. S. Military Academy, 1860. Resigned to enter Confederate service, 1861. Constructed the works at Charleston which forced Major Anderson to evacuate Forts Moultrie and Sumter, April, 1861. Was in command at the second Bull Run battle, July 21, '61; second in command, under S. A. Johnston, at Shiloh, April 6, '62; defended Charleston when besieged by Gilmore, '63; and with Gen. Jos. E. Johnston at the final surrender, April, 1865. After the war settled in New Orleans.



SAMUEL R. CURTIS.

Born in Ohio, Feb. 1807. Graduate at the U. S. Military Academy, 1831. Resigned in the following year, and was engaged in civil engineering until 1837. Became Adj.-Gen. of Ohio militia. Served through the Mexican War with Ohio troops, and after the discharge of his regiment, he was appointed civil and military governor of Camargo, Monterey, and Saltillo. Member of the 35th, 36th, 37th, 38th Congresses. Was one of the first Brig.-Generals appointed at opening of Civil War. Won a decisive victory at Pea Ridge, 1862. Had command of Departments of Missouri, Kansas, and the Territories, and the Northwest. Died Dec. 26, 1866.



BEN. McCULLOCH.

Born in Rutherford Co., Tenn., 1814. Joined the Texan army under Gen. Houston, 1836, and was assigned to the artillery. Served gallantly at San Jacinto, and afterward settled in Texas as a surveyor. At the outbreak of the Mexican War he raised a company of Texan rangers, which were accepted by Gen Taylor. With his men he won great honor at Monterey and Buena Vista. Joining Gen. Scott's army he participated in the capture of Mexico City, and was rewarded by appointment as U. S. Marshal for Texas. Brig.-Gen. in the Confederate army. While leading a corps at the battle of Pea Ridge, March 7, 1862, he was shot dead.



THOMAS J. JACKSON.

Born in Clarksburg, Va., Jan. 21, 1824. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1846. Was immediately ordered to the Mexican War, where he was brevetted Captain and Major for meritorious conduct. Resigned his commission, 1852, and became a Professor in the Virginia Military Academy. Left this position and went into the Confederate army as a Brig.-Gen. Gained the *sobriquet* of "Stonewall" at the first battle of Bull Run. Maj.-Gen., Sept. 1861, in command at Winchester. Crossed the Chickahominy, June, 1862. Fought until accidentally wounded by his own men, at Chancellorsville, May 2, 1863. Died eight days after.



DAVID E. TWIGGS.

Born in Georgia, 1790. Entered the U. S. Army as Captain, 1812. Served throughout the war, and was retained with the brevet rank of Maj. Was Col. of Dragoons in Mexican War. Commanded the right wing at Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma. Brevetted Maj.-Gen., and presented with a sword by Congress. Commanded a division under Gen. Scott, 1847, and was military governor of Vera Cruz in the following year. As commander of the Union troops in Texas, 1861, he surrendered military stores and material to the State authorities, and delivered his troops to the Confederates. Died Sept. 15, 1862.



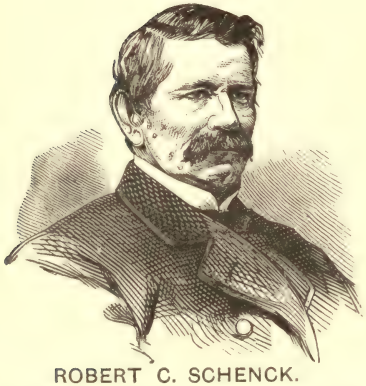
JAMES M. MASON.

Born at Analostan Island, Va., Nov. 3, 1797. Graduate at University of Pennsylvania, 1818. Admitted to the bar, 1820. Member of Congress, 1837–'39. U. S. Senator, 1846–'61. Author of the Fugitive Slave law. Entered the Confederate Congress, 1861. In the fall of that year he and John Slidell (*quid vide*) were sent to Europe as Special Commissioners by the Confederate Government. After the close of the Civil War he went to Canada, where he remained three years, returning soon after the issue of President Johnson's proclamation of 1868. Died April 28, 1871.



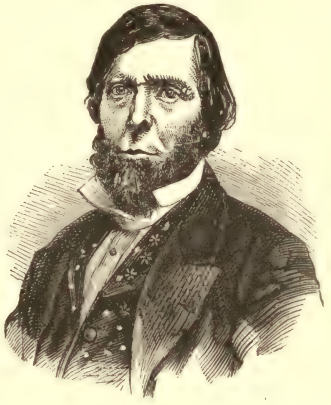
SIMON B. BUCKNER.

Born in Kentucky, 1823. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1844. In the war with Mexico, 1846–'48, wounded and twice brevetted; assistant instructor U. S. Military Academy, 1848–'50; resigned March 26, 1855. Superintendent of construction of the Chicago custom-house, 1855. Col. of Illinois Vols. for the Utah expedition. Inspector-General commanding Kentucky home guards, 1860–'61. Joined the Confederate army. Surrendered Fort Donelson to Gen. Grant. As Maj.-Gen., was assigned to the third grand division, and with Kirby Smith surrendered to Gen. Canby, May 26, 1865.



ROBERT C. SCHENCK.

Born in Franklin, O., Oct. 4, 1809. Graduate at Miami University, 1827. Studied law and was admitted to the bar. Elected to the State Legislature, 1841, and to Congress, 1843; re-elected for the four succeeding terms. Minister to Brazil, 1851–'54. When the Civil War broke out he was commissioned a Brig.-Gen. of Vols. Being wounded in battle he was appointed Military Governor of Baltimore and its vicinity. Member of Congress 1863–'71, when he was appointed Minister to Great Britain. Resigned 1876.



SAMUEL J. KIRKWOOD.

Born in Harford Co., Md., Dec. 20, 1813. Removed to Ohio, 1835. Admitted to the bar, 1843. Prosecuting Attorney four years. Removed to Iowa, 1855. Elected Governor, 1859; U. S. Senator, 1866; Governor, 1875. The day before the inauguration he was re-elected U. S. Senator, his term beginning March 4, 1877. Appointed Secretary of the Interior by President Garfield. He retired in 1882, and was succeeded by Henry M. Teller. As "War" Governor he saved his State an immense sum of money.



GUSTAVUS V. FOX.

Born in Saugus, Mass., June 13, 1821. Midshipman 1838. Appointed Assistant Secretary of the Navy, by President Lincoln, 1861. He was considered by leading naval and military officers the practical head of the navy throughout the entire war. Soon after the close of the war he was selected to present in person to the Czar of Russia the congratulations of Congress upon His Majesty's escape from assassination. Resigned on return, and entered manufacturing business.



THEODORE RUNYON.

Born in Somerville, N. J., Oct. 25, 1822. Graduate at Yale College, 1842. Admitted to the bar, 1846. City Attorney of Newark, N. J., 1853; City Counsel, 1856; Mayor, 1863, '64, '65. Maj.-Gen. State Militia, 1856. Took the first brigade of N. J. troops to the war, April 27, 1861. Saved the National Capital. Appointed Chancellor of N. J., 1873, '80, second term expiring 1887. Received degree of LL.D. from Yale and Rutgers Colleges, and Wesleyan University.



HORATIO G. WRIGHT.

Born in Clinton, Conn., March, 1820. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, in the corps of engineers, 1841. In charge of construction of Fort Jefferson, and superintended that of Fort Taylor, Fla., 1846–'56. Commanded expedition that destroyed the Norfolk Navy Yard, 1861. Planned and began work on Fort Ellsworth, covering Alexandria. Brig-Gen., Sept. 14, 1861. Organized the Port Royal expedition. Maj.-Gen., July, 1862. Succeeded to the command of the 6th Corps, May 9, 1863. Brevetted Col. U. S. A., for services at Spottsylvania; Brig.-Gen. at Clear Harbor, and Maj.-Gen. for the capture of Petersburg. Chief of Engineers, June 30, 1879.



CASSIUS M. CLAY.

Born in Madison Co., Ky., Oct. 19, 1810. Graduate at Yale College, 1832. Elected Member of Legislature, 1835, '40. Started a newspaper in Lexington, Ky., June, 1845, and for advocating the emancipation of slaves in the State, he was frequently mobbed and had his material destroyed. Volunteered for the Mexican War, 1846, and was taken prisoner, Jan., 1847. Advocated the election of Gen. Taylor to the Presidency, 1848. Ran for Governor of Kentucky on an anti-slavery platform, 1851. Advocated the election of Abraham Lincoln, 1860. Minister to Spain, 1861. Minister to Russia, 1862–'69. Advocated election of Horace Greeley, 1872.



ANDREW H. FOOTE.

Born in New Haven, Conn., May 4, 1808. Midshipman, 1822; lieutenant, 1830; commander, 1852; captain, 1861; Rear-Admiral, 1863. Appointed to the command of the Western flotilla in the fall of 1861. Took Fort Henry, Feb. 6, 1862. Eight days later he bombarded Fort Donelson, which surrendered the following day to the army. Received the surrender of Island No. 10, after a most stubborn engagement, April 7. He was compelled to resign his command by wounds received at Fort Donelson. Received the thanks of Congress, June 16, 1862. Ordered to relieve Rear-Admiral Dupont off Charleston, he died on his way thither, June 26, 1868.



EDWIN D. BAKER

Born in London, Eng., Feb. 24, 1811. Came to America when five years old, subsequently located at Springfield, Ill. Studied law and was admitted to the bar. Elected a Member of Congress, 1847. Raised a regiment for the Mexican War. When Gen. Shields was wounded at Cerro Gordo, he succeeded to the command of the brigade. Re-elected to Congress on his return. Removed to California, 1852, and to Oregon, 1860, and was elected U. S. Senator. Raised a regiment and entered the Union Army as a Brig.-Gen. While leading his brigade at the battle of Ball's Bluff, Va., he was killed, Oct. 21, 1861.



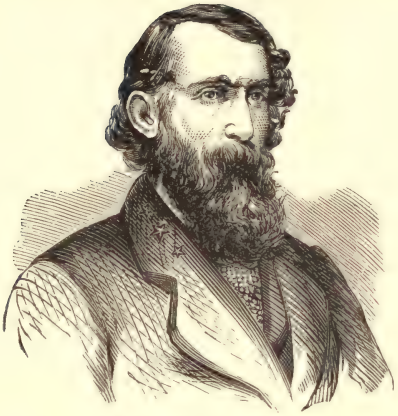
RAPHAEL SEMMES.

Born in Charles Co., Md., Sept. 27, 1809. Appointed midshipman, 1826; promoted to lieutenant, 1837, and commander, 1855. In 1834 he studied law and was admitted to the bar. Served during the Mexican War, as *Aide* to Gen. Worth. Took command of Confederate steamer *Sumter* at New Orleans, ran the blockade, and captured several merchant vessels in the Gulf, July, 1861. Placed in command of the famous *Alabama*, Aug., 1862, and continued his career of capturing and destroying merchant vessels. His vessel was sunk in the Cherburg harbor, France, by the U. S. S. *Kearsarge*, June 19, 1864. Died Aug. 30, 1877.



JOSEPH J. REYNOLDS.

Born in Kentucky, 1822. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, and entered the army, July 1, 1843. Ass't Prof. geography, history, and ethics, at Military Academy, 1846; Ass't Prof. natural and experimental philosophy, following year; principal Professor, 1849-'55. Commissioned Brig.-Gen. U. S. Vols., June, 1861. Resigned in Jan., 1863; re-appointed, Nov. 10, and promoted to Maj.-Gen., Feb. 2, 1863. In command of Department of Arkansas, 1864-'66. Appointed Col. 26th U. S. Inf., July 28, 1866; transferred to 25th Inf. Jan., 1870, and to 3d Cav., Dec. 15, 1870. Brevet Maj.-Gen. for gallantry in the war, and retired.



AMBROSE P. HILL.

Born in Culpepper Co., Va., Nov. 9, 1825. Graduate at the U. S. Military Academy, 1847. On coast survey service, 1855–'61. Resigned his commission to enter the Confederate army. Made Maj.-Gen. for services with Gen. J. E. Johnston at Bull Run. Captured Harper's Ferry, Sept. 14, 1862. Took an active part in the battles of Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, and Gettysburg, and the great battles in the Spring of 1864 around Richmond. Killed at Petersburg, April 2, 1864.



WILLIAM L. DAYTON.

Born in Baskingridge, N. J., Feb. 17, 1807. Graduate at College of N. J., 1825. Admitted to the bar, 1830. Associate Justice Supreme Court of N. J., 1838–'41. Appointed U. S. Senator to fill vacancy 1842, and elected for the full term 1845–'51. Candidate for Vice-President on the ticket with John C. Fremont 1856. Appointed Attorney-General of N. J. 1857, resigning in 1861 to accept appointment as Minister to France, which position he held until his death, Dec. 1, 1864.



SAMUEL F. DUPONT.

Born in Bergen Point, N. J., Sept. 27, 1803. Appointed midshipman, 1815. In 1845, having attained the rank of Commander, he was ordered to the Pacific in command of the frigate *Congress*, bearing the flag of Com. Stockton. For three years he was incessantly engaged against the Mexicans and Indians. Appointed to the command of the Washington Navy Yard, Jan., 1861, and of the South Atlantic Squadron in Sept., holding the latter until June 3, 1863, and rendering some of the most brilliant naval services of the war. Died, a Rear-Admiral, June 23, 1865.



HENRY WILSON.

Born in Farmington, N. H., Feb. 16, 1812. When 21 he went to Natick, Mass., to learn shoemaking. Became self-educated. Appeared as a public political speaker, 1840. Elected to the Legislature the same year, he served four years in the House and four in the Senate. Defeated as Free Soil candidate for Governor, 1853. Elected U. S. Senator, 1855; re-elected 1859, '65. Was a member of Gen. McClellan's staff a short time. Elected Vice-President of the U. S., on the ticket with Gen. Grant, 1872. Made a tour of the Southern States, 1875. Died Nov. 22, 1875.



BARBARA FRIETSCHE.

This venerable lady, whose patriotic action inspired John G. Whittier to compose one of his most charming and popular poems, lived close to a bridge that spanned the stream which runs through Frederick, Md. When "Stonewall" Jackson marched through the city in Sept., 1862, many Union flags were flying. These he ordered hauled down. Barbara kept hers flying until it was shot from its staff, when she seized and waved the tattered ensign. Jackson ordered his men to march on, forbidding another shot. She died June, 1864.



ALFRED PLEASANTON.

Born in the District of Columbia, Dec., 1823. Graduate at the U. S. Military Academy, July, 1844. Served conspicuously in the Mexican War. In the Civil War he commanded his regiment on its march from Utah to Washington, and served with it in the Peninsular campaign of 1862. In Sept., 1862, was given command of a division of cavalry in the Army of the Potomac. He was a Maj.-Gen. and chief of cavalry at Gettysburg. Drove Gen. Price from Missouri, 1864. Resigned his commission in the Regular Army, 1868.



JOHN H. MORGAN.

Born in Huntsville, Ala., June 1, 1826. Served in a cavalry regiment in the Mexican War. Settled in Lexington, Ky. Organized the Lexington Rifles, Sept., 1861, with whom he entered the Confederate service. Commanded a picked force with which he made frequent and daring raids into the Union lines. Was captured in 1863, but effected his escape. In 1864 he undertook a raid into Tennessee. He was surprised at night by Federal cavalry at Greenville, and while trying to escape was shot dead, Sept. 4.



ABNER DOUBLEDAY.

Born in Saratoga Co., N. Y., June 26, 1819. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1842. Captain, 1855. Was one of the little garrison at Fort Sumter during the bombardment, 1861, and is said to have fired the first gun for the Union in the war, April 12. Commanded a division at Antietam, 1862. Obtained the rank of Maj.-Gen., Nov., 1862. Served at Gettysburg, Pa., July 2, 3, 1863. Mustered out of Vol. service, Aug. 24, 1865. Retired from Regular Army, Dec. 11, 1873, at his own request, having served over 30 years.



B. M. PRENTISS.

Born in Bellville, Va., November 23, 1819. Settled in Quincy, Ill., where he learned the trade of rope-maker. In the war with Mexico he was Adj. of the 1st Ill. Volunteers, distinguishing himself at Buena Vista. Went into the Civil War as Col. of the 7th Ill. Volunteers. Appointed Brig.-Gen. May, 1861. Was surprised and captured at Shiloh, April, 1862. Maj.-Gen. of Volunteers, Nov. 29, 1862. Member of the court-martial that tried Fitz John Porter. Defeated Gen. Holmes, Helena, Ark., July 4, 1863.



JOHN H. REAGAN.

Born in Sevier Co., Tenn., Oct. 8, 1818. Settled in the Republic of Texas, 1839. Elected to State House of Representatives for two years, 1847; Judge of the District Court for six years, 1852; resigned and was re-elected 1856. Member of the 35th, 36th, 44th, 45th, 46th, 47th Congresses. Appointed Postmaster-General of the Confederacy, holding the position to close of the War. Was also Acting Secretary of the Treasury for a short time. Member of the State Constitutional Convention, 1875.



MANSFIELD LOVELL.

This name is intimately connected with one of the greatest events of the Civil War: the surrender of New Orleans to the Union authorities. He was born in the District of Columbia, educated at the U. S. Military Academy, and proved an efficient young officer in the Mexican War. As Maj.-Gen. C. S. A., he assumed command of the Department of Louisiana, Oct. 18, 1861. He fortified as well as possible with the limited means allowed him, but could not hold the key to the Valley of the Mississippi. His conduct at New Orleans was vindicated by several Confederate officers. Settled in New York after the war.



GIDEON WELLES.

Born at Glastonbury, Conn., Feb. 1, 1802. Studied law. Became editor of the Hartford *Times*, 1826. Member of Legislature, 1827–'35, when he was appointed Comptroller of Public Accounts. Postmaster at Hartford, 1836–'41. Appointed a bureau chief in the Navy Department, 1846, serving three years. Was a delegate to the National Republican Convention which nominated Abraham Lincoln. Appointed Secretary of the Navy, March, 1861, and served until Gen. Grant became President, when he was succeeded by Adolph E. Forie, who was followed by George M. Robeson. Died Feb. 11, 1878.



DAVID G. FARRAGUT.

Born at Campbell's Station, Tenn., July 5, 1801. At the age of 11 was appointed midshipman. Was on the frigate *Essex* when she was captured by British sloops off Valparaiso. Was Flag-Officer of the fleet organized to attack New Orleans, Jan., 1862, and directed that memorable engagement from the rigging of the *Hartford*. Rear-Admiral, 1862. Passed the batteries of Port Hudson, 1863, and materially aided Gen. Grant in the capture of Vicksburg. Compelled the surrender of the forts in Mobile Bay, Aug., 1864; Congress created the grade of Vice-Admiral for him for this work. Appointed Admiral, July 25, 1866. Died Aug. 13, 1870.



LEONIDAS POLK.

Born in Raleigh, N. C., 1806. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1827. Resigned same year and began to study for the ministry. Consecrated Missionary Bishop, Protestant Episcopal Church, 1838. Became Bishop of the Diocese of Louisiana, 1841. Accepted the commission of a Maj.-Gen. in the Confederate Army early in the war. His first engagement was at Belmont, Nov. 7, 1861. He was in command of a corps at Shiloh, and invaded Kentucky with Gen. Bragg. For disobedience of orders at Chickamauga, 1863, he was relieved and placed under arrest. While reconnoitering near Marietta, Ga., he was killed, June 14, 1864.



BRAXTON BRAGG.

Born in Warren Co., N. C., 1815. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1837. Served through the Mexican War, gaining a brevet of Lieut.-Col. for meritorious conduct. Resigned the service, 1856. At the beginning of the Civil War he was made Commander-in-Chief of the Volunteer Forces of Louisiana, and shortly afterward a Brig.-Gen. in the Confederate Army, with command at Pensacola, Fla. Maj.-Gen. Feb., 1862, in command of the 2d Corps at Shiloh. General, in April following. Defeated by Gen. Grant at Missionary Ridge, Nov., 1863. On special duty at Richmond, 1864. Died Sept. 27, 1876.



CHARLES FRANCIS ADAMS.

Born in Boston, Mass., Aug. 18, 1807. Grandson of the second and son of the sixth President of the United States. Went to Russia with his father, then U. S. Minister, when two years old, remaining six years. Graduate at Harvard College, 1825. Studied law with Daniel Webster, and was admitted to the bar. Elected Member of Congress, 1858. Minister to Great Britain, 1861-'68, when he was recalled at his own request. Appointed Arbitrator for the U. S. in the Geneva Tribunal for settlement of claims arising from the Civil War, 1871. Author of several historical works, a frequent contributor to magazine literature, and an able speaker.



BENJ. H. GRIERSON.

Born in Pittsburg, Pa., July, 1837. Removed at an early age to Ohio, and subsequently to Illinois. Served on the staff of Gen. Prentiss in the Civil War. Was Maj.; Col. of the 6th Ill. Cav.; Brig.-Gen. of Vols., 1863; and Maj.-Gen., 1865. He was one of the most conspicuous cavalry leaders, and achieved remarkable success in many important operations, expeditions, and raids. Appointed Col. 10th U. S. Cavalry, July, 1866. Brevetted Maj.-Gen. U. S. A., March 2, 1867.



SILAS H. STRINGHAM.

Born in New York, Nov. 7, 1797. Midshipman, 1810; lieutenant, 1814; commander, 1831; captain, 1841; retired, 1861. Commandant Charlestown Navy-Yard, 1864–'66. Port Admiral, New York, 1867. Served in the last war with Great Britain, in Algiers, and Mexico. In the Civil War he commanded the squadron which reduced Forts Hatteras and Clark and gave the U. S. authorities possession of the sounds of North Carolina. Died Feb. 7, 1876.



C. C. AUGUR.

Born in New York, 1821. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1843. Served in the military occupation of Texas, 1845–'46; in the war with Mexico, 1846–'48; and as commandant of cadets at the Military Academy, 1861. Appointed Maj.-Gen. U. S. Vols., Aug. 9, 1862. Severely wounded at Cedar Mountain. In Gen. Banks' expedition to New Orleans, 1862; command of the district of Baton Rouge, 1863; in expedition to Port Hudson, 1863; in command of the Department of Washington, 1863–'66; of the Platte, 1867–'71; and of Texas, 1871. Brevet Maj.-Gen. U. S. A., March 13, 1865.



DAVID HUNTER.

Born in Washington, D. C., July 21, 1802. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, and entered the army, July, 1822. Appointed Col. 6th U. S. Cav., and Brig.-Gen. of Vols., May 14, 1861. Commanded division at Bull Run, July 21. Maj.-Gen. Vols., Aug., 1861. In command of Department of the South, 1862. In May, he declared slavery abolished in the department, which order was annulled by the President. Command of Department of West Va., May, 1864. Member of the commission that tried the assassination conspirators, 1865. Retired from the service, July, 1866. Died January, 1886.



FRANZ SIGEL.

Born in Zinsheim, Grand Duchy of Baden, Nov. 18, 1824. Educated in the military school at Carlsruhe. Became Chief-Adjutant in the Baden army, 1847. As Commander-in-Chief of the Revolutionary Army of 1848 he was defeated, and fled to America, 1850. Commissioned Brig.-General in the Union Army, May 17, 1861. Made Maj.-Gen. for his services at Pea Ridge, Mar., 1862, and appointed to the command of the 11th Corps, Sept., 1862. Resigned his commission, May, 1865, and settled in New York City. Was elected Register of the City and County, 1874.



DOROTHEA L. DIX.

Born in Worcester, Mass. Went to Europe in 1834, and spent three years studying the methods of treatment of the insane, paupers, and prisoners. From 1841 to 1861, she devoted herself exclusively to ameliorating the condition of suffering humanity, particularly the insane, and visited the public institutions of nearly every State in the Union. From the beginning to the close of the Civil War she was Superintendent of Hospital Nurses, having entire control of their appointment and a signment. After the war she resumed her labors in behalf of the insane.



MONTGOMERY C. MEIGS.

Born in Georgia, and a graduate of the U. S. Military Academy. Cadet, July 1, 1832; second lieutenant, July 1, 1836; brevet second lieutenant of engineers, Aug. 1, 1837; first lieutenant, July 7, 1838; captain, March 3, 1853; Colonel 11th Infantry, May 14, 1861. He was promoted to Brig. Gen., and appointed Quartermaster-General of the army, May 15, 1861, and honorably discharged the heavy labors of his office throughout the Civil War. Brevetted Maj.-Gen. for distinguished services, July 5, 1864. Retired Feb. 6, 1882.



WASHINGTON HUNT.

Born in Windham, N. Y., Aug. 5, 1811. Admitted to the bar, 1834. Member of Congress, 1843-'49. Comptroller of State of New York, 1849. Elected Governor, 1850; defeated for same office, 1852, by Horatio Seymour. He then retired from active political life, but was drawn before the public again in 1864, when he was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention at Chicago. He was repeatedly elected a delegate to the Triennial Conventions of the Protestant Episcopal Church. Died Feb. 2, 1867.



DAVID B. BIRNEY.

Born in Huntsville, Ala., May 29, 1825. Removed to Philadelphia and began the practice of law, 1848. Entered the Union Army as Lieut.-Col. of a Philadelphia regiment which he raised. At the expiration of the term the regiment re-enlisted under him as Col., and was attached to the Army of the Potomac. Brig.-Gen., Feb. 1862. Served in all the battles of the Peninsula, as well as those before Washington. Promoted to be Maj.-Gen., May 23, 1863. Led a division at Gettysburg, and commanded his Corps after Gen. Sickles was wounded. In command of the 10th Army Corps, Army of the James, July 23, 1864. Died Oct. 18, 1864.



GEORGE G. MEADE.

Born in Cadiz, Spain, Dec. 31, 1815. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1835. Served in the Seminole War, and then resigned to enter upon the profession of civil engineer. Served with distinction in the Mexican War, and after its close was engaged in light-house construction. Brig.-Gen. of Vols., August, 1861; in command of the Pennsylvania troops which constituted a division in the Army of the Potomac, with which army he served throughout the war. Brilliant as were his services he will be best remembered as the victor of Gettysburg, July 1, 2, 3, 1863. Received thanks of Congress; made Maj.-Gen. U. S. A. Died Nov. 6, 1872.



SAMUEL JONES.

Born in Virginia, 1820. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1841. On frontier duty and in garrison, 1841-'45. Instructor at the Academy, 1845-'51; again on frontier and garrison duty, 1851-'58, when he was assigned to duty in Washington as assistant to the Judge-Advocate. Resigned April 27, 1861, and entered the Confederate service as Col. Became Maj.-Gen. in 1862, and was in command of the Confederate Department of South Carolina, Georgia and Florida, 1864. Surrendered his command, under instructions, to Gen. Johnston, May 10, 1865.



HENRY H. SIBLEY.

Born in Louisiana, July, 1816. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy. July 1, 1838. Served in Florida War and throughout the Mexican campaign, gaining the brevet of Major for gallantry. With the Utah expedition, 1857-'60, and that against the Navajoe Indians, 1860. Entered the Confederate service, 1861, and was soon a Brig.-Gen. Sought the conquest of New Mexico, 1862; fought at Valverde, Feb. 21, and occupied Albuquerque and Santa Fe in March, but was compelled to evacuate in April. At the close of the war he entered the Egyptian army.



ROBERT B. RHETT.

Born in Beaufort, S. C., Dec. 24, 1800. He went by the family name of Smith until 1837, when he assumed his ancestral one of Rhett. Became a lawyer. Entered political life, 1826, when he was elected to the State Legislature. Elected Attorney-General of the State, 1832. Was an emphatic States' Rights advocate. Member of Congress, 1836-1849. Elected U. S. Senator, 1850; resigned, 1852. Member of State Secession Convention, 1860. Chairman of the Committee of the Provisional Congress, which reported the Confederate Constitution. Delegate to the National Democratic Convention, 1868. Died Sept. 14, 1876.



R. M. T. HUNTER.

Born in Essex co., Va., April 21, 1809. Educated at the University of Virginia and the Winchester Law School. Member of Congress 1837, '41, '45, '47, and Speaker 1839-'41. U. S. Senator, 1847-'51. Was Secretary of State in the Confederacy, a Confederate Senator, and one of the Commissioners who met President Lincoln and Secretary Seward at the Hampton Roads conference, Feb., 1865. Appointed Collector of Customs for the District of Tappahannock, Va., May 21, 1885.



JOHN A. DAHLGREN.

Born in Philadelphia, Pa., 1810. Appointed midshipman, Feb. 1, 1826. On coast survey duty, 1836-'42; ordnance duty, 1847-'57, when he perfected the invention of the Dahlgren gun. On ordnance duty Washington Navy Yard, 1860-'61. Appointed commandant of the yard, commissioned captain, July, 1862, and appointed Chief of the Ordnance Bureau. Rear-Admiral, Feb. 7, 1863. In command of naval force to co-operate with Gen. Gillmore in Charleston Harbor, July, August and September, 1863. Led expedition up the St. John's River, Florida, Feb., 1864. Co-operated with Gen. Sherman at capture of Savannah, Ga., Dec. 23, 1864. Entered Charleston, Feb., 1865. Commandant South Pacific Squadron, 1866. Appointed to command of Washington Navy Yard, 1869. Died July 12, 1870.



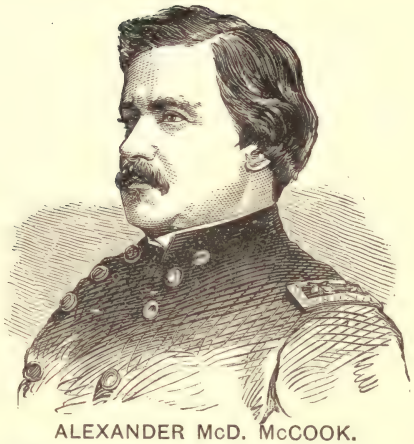
STEPHEN C. ROWAN.

Born in Ireland, Dec. 28, 1805. Appointed midshipman from Ohio, Feb. 15, 1826. Took an active part in the Mexican War. Commanded naval battalion under Com. Stockton at battle of the Niesa, Upper California. Executive officer of the *Cyane* when she bombarded Guaymas. In the *Pawnee* engaged Confederate batteries, Acquia Creek, the first naval action of the Civil War, May, 1861. Commanded naval flotilla and greatly aided the army in the capture of Roanoke Island, Feb. 1862. Captured the works and Confederate fleet in Albemarle Sound. As Commodore, commanded naval forces at fall of Newbern, N. C. Commanding Asiatic Squadron as Rear-Admiral, 1868-'69. Vice-Admiral, U. S. N., Aug. 15, 1870.



DANIEL E. SICKLES.

Born in New York, Oct. 20, 1822. Admitted to the bar, 1843. Secretary of Legation at London, 1853. State Senator, 1855. Elected to Congress, 1856, '58, '60. Raised the Excelsior Brigade, and was appointed Col., June, 1861. Brig.-Gen. Vols. Sept.. 1861. Attached to Hooker's division, 3d Corps, in the Peninsular campaign. Succeeded to the command, April, 1863, being then a Maj.-Gen. Lost a leg at Gettysburg in the second day's fight. In command of District of North and South Carolina, 1866–'67. Retired as Maj.-Gen. U. S. A., April, 1869. Minister to Spain, 1869–'74. Resumed law practice, New York City.



ALEXANDER McD. McCOOK.

Born in Columbiana Co., Ohio, April 22, 1831. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy and entered the army, 1852. Instructor at Academy, 1857–'61. Brig.-Gen. of Vols., Sept., 1861, and assigned to the Cumberland Department. Commanded a division at Shiloh and Corinth; the 1st Corps at Perryville; 20th Corps at Stone River and Chickamauga, and the troops for the defence of the National Capital at the time of Early's raid in July, 1864. Resigned his commission, Oct., 1865, and was appointed Lieut.-Col. of Inf., March, 1867. Seven of his brothers fought on the Union side, and three of them, with their father, were killed.



T. F. DRAYTON.

Was a wealthy land-owner, whose mansion stood a few yards from the beach and not more than a mile from Fort Walker, erected on the Hilton Head side of Port Royal entrance, to oppose the Federal naval expedition of Nov., 1861. As Brig.-Gen. was in command of the fort with 625 men under him. After a bombardment of four hours on the 7th he had to evacuate the fort, which was occupied by Gen. Wright's brigade the next day.



THOMAS L. CRITTENDEN.

Born in Russellville, Ky., in 1819. A son of John J. Crittenden, author of the "Crittenden Compromise." He served with honor in the Mexican War, and entered the Union army early in the Civil War. Commanded a division at the battle of Shiloh. April, 1862, and was soon after made Maj.-Gen. of Vols. At the battle of Stone River. Jan., 1863, he commanded a corps. Brevet Brig.-Gen. U. S. A., March 2, 1867; retired as Col., May 19, 1881.



HUGH JUDSON KILPATRICK.

Born near Deckertown, N. J., Jan. 14, 1836. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, and entered army, May 6, 1861. Captain 5th N. Y. Vols., May 9; wounded at Big Bethel, June 10. Col. 2d N. Y. Cav., Dec., 1862. Participated in the Rappahannock and Maryland campaigns and the second Bull Run battle. Commanded a brigade of cavalry in Stoneman's raid, and became Brig.-Gen., June, 1863. Commanded a division at Gettysburg, and the cavalry on Sherman's march to the sea. Maj.-Gen. Vols., June, 1865. Resigned in regular army, Dec., 1865, and his volunteer commission, Jan. 1, 1866. Appointed Minister to Chili, Nov., 1865; recalled, 1868; reappointed and died at his post, Dec. 4, 1881.



GEORGE SYKES.

Born in Dover, Del., Oct. 9, 1822. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1842. Gained the brevet of captain in the Mexican War, and served constantly on the frontier, in expeditions and against the Indians, 1848–'61. Commanded a battalion of regular troops at Bull Run. Brig.-Gen., 1861. In command of the regular infantry in the defence of Washington, 1861–'62, and the division of regulars in the Peninsular campaign of 1862. Succeeded Gen. Meade in command of the 5th Corps, June, 1863. Brevetted Col. for gallantry at Gaines's Mills; Brig.-Gen. for Gettysburg; and Maj.-Gen. for services during the war. Col. 20th U. S. Inf., Jan., 1868.



WILLIAM W. AVERILL.

Born in New York, 1830. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1855. Col. 3d Penn. Cav., 1861. Commanded the cavalry about Washington, and served in the Peninsular campaign. Brig.-Gen. of Vols., 1862. Participated in Stoneman's expedition toward Richmond, April–May, 1863. Engaged in, and in command of, skirmishes, raids, and actions in West Va., the Shenandoah Valley, and Tennessee. Captain 3d Cav. U. S. A., July, 1862, and brevetted Major, Lieut.-Col., Colonel, Brig.-Gen., and Maj.-Gen. U. S. A. Resigned, May, 1865, and was appointed U. S. Consul-General to Canada.



C. L. VALLANDIGHAM.

Born in New Lisbon, O., 1822. Admitted to the bar, 1842. Member of Legislature, 1845–'46. Elected to Congress, 1857, and re-elected for two succeeding terms. Opposed measures for carrying on the war by the national government. Defeated for Congress in 1863 he assailed the government with such bitterness that he was arrested by order of Gen. Burnside, tried and sentenced to close confinement during the war. President Lincoln commuted the sentence to banishment beyond the lines. He went to Canada, and afterward returned to Ohio, but was not molested. Died June 17, 1871.



F. K. ZOLLICOFFER.

Born in Maury Co., Tenn., May 19, 1812. Received academic education; became a printer and newspaper editor. State Printer, 1835; State Comptroller, 1845-'49; State Senator, 1849; Member of Congress, 1853-'59; delegate to the Peace Congress, Feb., 1861. Entered Confederate army, and was assigned to the command in Eastern Tennessee as a Brig.-Gen., Aug. 8, 1861. Defeated at Camp Wild Cat, Ky. Oct. 21, 1861, and at Mill Spring, Ky., where he was killed Jan. 19, 1862.



ROSWELL S. RIPLEY.

Born in Ohio, 1824. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, and commissioned brevet second lieutenant of Artillery, 1843. Served throughout the war with Mexico, and brevetted Captain and Major for gallantry. Resigned commission and engaged in business in Charleston, S. C., 1853. Entered the Confederate army as a Brig.-Gen. He directed the fire upon Fort Sumter, April, 1861; was wounded at Antietam, and subsequently served in South Carolina.



GEORGE E. PICKETT.

Born in Henrico Co., Va., Jan. 25, 1825. Educated at the U. S. Military Academy, and on graduation was ordered to service in Mexico under Gen. Scott. After the war he was on duty in the Territories and on the Pacific Coast. Resigned his commission, 1861, and volunteered for the Confederate Army, commissioned Col., shortly after promoted to Brig.-Gen., advanced to Maj.-Gen. after being wounded at Gaines' Mills. He was engaged in nearly every battle fought by the Army of Northern Virginia. Retired to private life after Gen. Lee's surrender with an unquestioned record as a daring and stubborn fighter. Died July 30, 1875.



DON CARLOS BUELL.

Born near Marietta, O., March 23, 1818. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1841. Served in the Infantry until 1848. Became Ass't Adj.-Gen. U. S. A., with rank of Col., July 17, 1862, and Maj.-Gen. U. S. Vols., March 21, 1862. Served in Florida, Texas, and Mexico, and received severe wounds at Churubusco. In command of Department of the Ohio, 1861-'62; of the Army of the Ohio, 1862; engaged at the battle of Shiloh, siege of Corinth, operations in Northern Alabama, and the retreat to Louisville to cut off the army of Gen. Bragg, which he drove from Kentucky. Resigned his commission, June 1, 1864.



BENJAMIN HUGER.

Born in Charleston, S. C., 1805. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1825. Served through the Mexican War as chief of ordnance in Gen. Scott's Army. With Gens. McClellan and Mordecai he was sent by the Government to observe and report upon the war in the Crimea, 1856. At the opening of the Civil War he entered the Confederate Army as a Brig.-Gen., and was soon promoted to Maj.-Gen. Participated in the battles on the Peninsula and around Richmond, in co-operation with Gens. Longstreet, A. P. Hill, and Magruder. Died Dec., 1877.



JOHN N. MAFFIT.

Was a son of the celebrated Irish Methodist minister of the same name. He had served in the U. S. Navy, but resigned to enter the Confederate Navy. He was placed in command of the English-built cruiser *Oreto*, whose name was changed to the *Florida*, after its reception at Mobile, and with it he escaped the blockade at that point. As Semmes with the *Alabama* took to the ocean, Maffit with the *Florida* hovered most of the time off the American coast. His vessel was captured in Brazilian waters by Capt. Collins of the U. S. S. *Wachusett*, in Oct., 1864.



JOHN C. PEMBERTON.

Born in Philadelphia, Pa., 1817. Graduate at the U. S. Military Academy, 1837. Served in the Seminole Indian War, and aided in suppressing the disturbances on the Canadian border at Detroit. At the breaking out of the Mexican War he was appointed *aide-de-camp* to Gen. Worth, and was present at the battles of Palo Alto, Resaca de la Palma, and Monterey, at the storming of the City of Mexico, and the siege of Vera Cruz. Served on the Kansas border, and took part in the Utah Expedition. Resigned his commission, April 26, 1861, and entering the Confederate Army, was appointed a Lieut.-Gen. in 1862. Surrendered Vicksburg to Gen. Grant, July 4, 1863. Died July 18, 1881.



E. KIRBY SMITH.

Born in St. Augustine, Fla., 1824. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1845. Was brevetted First Lieut. and Captain for gallantry in the Mexican War. Severely wounded in a fight with Comanche Indians in Texas, May 13, 1859. Resigned April 6, 1861, and entered the Confederate Army as Brig.-Gen. Made Maj.-Gen., 1862, and placed in command of the Department of East Tennessee. He led the advance in the invasion of Kentucky. Lieut.-Gen. for his victory at Richmond, Ky., Aug. 30, 1862. Made General after battle of Murfreesboro. Surrendered May 26, 1865. Professor of Mathematics in the University of the South, Tenn., Sept., 1875.



JAMES LONGSTREET.

Born in South Carolina, 1820. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1842. From the occupation of Texas he was engaged in all the principal battles of the war up to the storming of Chapultepec, where he was wounded. Resigned his commission, June, 1861, and commanded a Confederate brigade the following month. Maj.-Gen., 1862; thereafter he was one of the most noted officers in the Confederate service, becoming Lieut.-Gen. and Gen. After the war he settled in New Orleans, renewed his allegiance to the Federal government, and was appointed to several lucrative offices.



JOHN M. SCHOFIELD.

Born in Chautauqua Co., N. Y., Sept. 29, 1831. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, and assigned to the artillery, 1853. Was Prof. of Philosophy at the Academy, 1855-'60. Chief of Staff to Gen. Lyon in operations in Missouri early in 1861. Brig.-Gen. U. S. Vols., Nov., 1861. In command of Army of the Frontier, Oct., and Maj.-Gen. Vols., Nov., 1862. Commanded Department of Mo. until Jan., 1864, when appointed to command of Army of the Ohio. In command of Department of N. C., Feb. 9, 1865. Sec. of War *ad. in.*, May, 1868, to March, 1869. Supt. U. S. Military Academy, 1876.



JUBAL A. EARLY.

Born in Virginia. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1837. Was a Major in the Mexican War. Joined the Confederate Army at the outbreak of the Civil War. Was a Maj.-Gen. at the battles of Gettysburg, Pa., July 1, 2, 3, 1863. He invaded Maryland at the head of an army, in July, 1864. He was defeated by Gen. Sheridan near Winchester, and at Fisher's Hill, Va., Sept. 20. On Oct. 19 he attacked the Union Army at Cedar Creek, Va., in the absence of Gen. Sheridan, who, however, arrived in time to rally his army and gain a decisive victory. After the war he practiced law in Richmond, Va.



ALBERT SIDNEY JOHNSTON.

Born in Mason Co., Ky., 1803. Graduate U. S. Military Academy, 1826. After serving through the Black Hawk War he resigned and went to Texas, where he entered the army as a private and rose to the chief command. Secretary of War of the Texan Republic, 1838. Led an expedition and routed the Cherokee Indians, 1839. Served in the Mexican War. In command of Utah expedition and department, 1857. Resigned, May, 1861; entered the Confederate army; was commander-in-chief at Shiloh, and killed on the first day of the battle, April 6, 1862.



JOHN W. GEARY.

Born near Mt. Pleasant, Pa., Dec. 30, 1819. Became a civil engineer. Went into the Mexican War as Lieut.-Col. 2d Pa. Vols., and commanded the regiment at Contreras and Garita de Belen. Appointed first Postmaster of San Francisco, 1849. Mayor of the city, 1850. Territorial Governor of Kansas, 1856. Entered Union army, June, 1861. Brig.-Gen. April, 1862. Distinguished himself at Gettysburg, 1863. Maj.-Gen. Jan., 1865. Elected Governor of Pennsylvania, 1866, '69. Died Feb. 8, 1873.



REVERDY JOHNSON.

Born in Annapolis, Md., May 21, 1796. Admitted to the bar, 1815. Elected U. S. Senator, 1845, and was appointed Attorney-General of the U. S. four years later. Member of the Peace Congress, 1861. Re-elected U. S. Senator, 1862. Appointed Umpire for the settlement of questions which had arisen with foreign governments during the Civil War. Appointed Minister to Great Britain, June, 1868. Negotiated a treaty for the settlement of the "Alabama" claims, which was rejected by the Senate. Recalled 1869. Died Feb. 10, 1876.



STERLING PRICE

Born in Prince Edward Co., Va., Sept. 1809. Settled in Missouri as a farmer. Elected Member of Congress, 1844. Resigned at outbreak of Mexican War, and went to the field at the head of a cavalry regiment. Commissioned Brig.-Gen. and appointed Military Governor of Chihuahua for his brilliant capture of Taos. Elected Governor of Missouri, 1853; declined re-election, 1857. Appointed Maj.-Gen. of State militia, he organized the State Guards, which Gen. Lyon forced to surrender. He sustained Gen. Lyon's attack at Wilson's Creek, in which the Union Army was defeated, and captured the city of Lexington after a four days' siege. Became Maj.-Gen. C. S. A. Died Sept. 27, 1867.



E. E. ELLSWORTH.

Born in Mechanicsville, N. Y., April 23, 1837. Failing to obtain an appointment to the U. S. Military Academy, he went to Chicago, where he organized a corps of young men upon the plan of the French zouaves. On the breaking out of the Civil War he removed to New York City, where he organized his famous Zouave regiment, recruited mainly from the Fire Department, and with it hastened to Washington. His regiment was ordered to Alexandria, May 23, 1862. A Confederate flag was flying from the Marshall House. He went to the roof, hauled it down, and while descending the stairs was shot dead by the proprietor, who in turn was killed by Private Brownell.



NATHAN B. FORREST.

Born in Bedford Co., Tenn., July 13, 1821. Was engaged in business up to Civil War, which he entered as a private. Became Col. of a Tenn. regiment of cavalry, March, 1862. Wounded at Shiloh, April 8. In command of Confederate cavalry at Chattanooga; Brig.-Gen., July 21, 1863. In command at Murfreesboro', Sept.; of a brigade, Dec. 4; engaged in the action at Parker's Cross Roads, Dec. 31, 1862; and in the battle of Chickamauga, Sept. 19, 20, 1863. Maj.-Gen., Dec., 1863. In command of forces at the surrender of Fort Pillow, April, 1864. Lieut.-Gen., Feb., 1865. Surrendered at Gainesville, May 9, 1865. Became a railroad president after the war. Died Oct. 29, 1877.



JOHN SEDGWICK.

Born in Cornwall, Conn., Sept. 13, 1813. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1837. Won the brevets of Captain and Major, for bravery in Mexican War. Brig.-Gen. U. S. Vols., Aug., 1861. Commanded a division of Sumner's corps in the Peninsular campaign, 1862. Maj.-Gen. of Vols., July 4, 1862. Commanded a division and was wounded three times at Antietam. Carried Marye's Heights in the rear of Fredericksburg, May, 1863. Made a forced march of 35 miles in 20 hours with the 6th Corps to the relief of Gen. Meade at Gettysburg. Captured an entire Confederate division during the passage of the Rapidan, Nov. 7, 1863. Killed in action near Spottsylvania Court-house, May 9, 1864.



DAVID McM. GREGG.

Born in Penn., 1833. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy and entered army, 1855. Served in Mexico, and marched his command thence to California, where he was on frontier duty against the Indians up to 1861. First lieut., March; Captain 6th U. S. Cav., May; Col. 8th Penn. Cav., Jan., 1862, which he led through the battles of the Peninsular campaign. Brig.-Gen. U. S. Vols., Nov., 1862. Commanded a division of cavalry in Stoneman's raid toward Richmond. Was in Gettysburg battles and the pursuit of Gen. Lee. In command of the cavalry corps of Grant's army, Aug., 1864, to Feb., 1865, when he resigned. Brevetted Maj.-Gen. of Vols.



HUMPHREY MARSHALL.

Born in Frankfort Co., Ky., Jan. 13, 1812. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1832. Resigned from the army, 1833. Studied law and practiced until outbreak of Mexican War, when as Col. he took the 1st Kentucky cavalry to the field. After the war he settled on a farm. Elected to Congress, 1849, '51; appointed U. S. Commissioner to China, 1852; recalled, 1853; re-elected to Congress, 1855, '57. He was opposed to secession, but went into the Confederate service, Sept., 1861, as a Brig.-Gen. Resigned his commission shortly after, and was elected to the Confederate Congress. Resumed law practice, Louisville, Ky. Died March 28, 1872.



ROBERT OULD.

After a protracted correspondence between representatives of the Union and the Confederate forces on the subject of prisoners of war, a cartel for the exchange of prisoners was signed July 22, 1862, by Gen. John A. Dix and Gen D. H. Hill. City Point and Vicksburg were made the exchange points, and the former became the most prominent. Robert Ould acted as Confederate agent of exchange until the close of the war, while the Federal side was represented in turn by Col. Ludlow, Gen. S. A. Meredith, and Gen. B. F. Butler.



W. F. LYNCH.

Born in Va., 1801. Midshipman, 1819; Lieutenant, 1828. Made his famous expedition to the Dead Sea, and near Jordan, 1848. Promoted to Commander on his return: Captain, 1856. Resigned, 1861; commissioned Flag Officer, with rank of Commodore, Confederate Navy, June 10. Commanded the squadron which resisted Burnside's attack on Roanoke Island, Feb. 7, 8, 1862. Was commander at Smithville when Porter attacked Fort Fisher, and on the fall of the fort he retired to Wilmington. Died Oct. 17, 1865.



EDWARD R. S. CANBY.

Born in Kentucky, 1819. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1839. For his services in the Mexican War he received the brevets of Major and Lieut.-Col., and was promoted to full rank of Captain, 1851. Col. 19th U. S. Inf., May, 1861, in command of the Union troops in New Mexico. Brig.-Gen. of Vols., 1862. In command of U. S. troops in the city and harbor of New York during the "Draft Riots" of 1863. Maj.-Gen. of Vols., 1864. Received the surrender of Gen. Dick Taylor's army after the fall of Richmond. Full rank of Brig.-Gen. U. S. A., July 28, 1866. After the war he was placed in command of the Department of the Columbia, and was murdered by the Modoc Indians at the Lava-Beds in Northern California, April 11, 1873.



GEORGE H. THOMAS.

Born in Southampton Co., Va., July 31, 1816. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1840. Assigned to duty on the day of his graduation, he served continuously in the army for twenty years. Took a leave of absence in Aug., 1860, but reported for duty again, April 14, 1861. He served through the Shenandoah campaign with the bravery of a veteran; but it was not until his influence began to be felt in the operations in the West, that the country came to appreciate his extraordinary abilities. Success followed success, and the crowning glory of all was the annihilation of Gen. Hood's army in Dec., 1864. Honors and rewards were pressed upon the victor; Congress voted him thanks, and he was made a Maj.-Gen. Died March 28, 1870.



SCHUYLER COLFAX.

Born in New York City, March 23, 1823. Common school education. Removed to Indiana, 1836. Delegate to and Secretary of National Whig Conventions, 1848, 52. Member of Congress from 1854 to 1868, when he was elected Vice-President of the U. S., on the ticket with Gen. Grant. Speaker of the House during three Congresses. Died, Jan. 13, 1885.



MRS. U. S. GRANT.

Miss Julia Dent was born in 1826. After graduating in 1843, Lieut. Grant formed her acquaintance, and on his return from the Mexican War, he was married to her, Aug. 1848. After the Civil War she shared the honors paid her famous husband. His choice of a burial place was conditioned on a pledge that she should be buried beside him. The composition of his "Personal Memoirs" was lightened by the fact that she was to enjoy a large royalty from its sale, after his death.



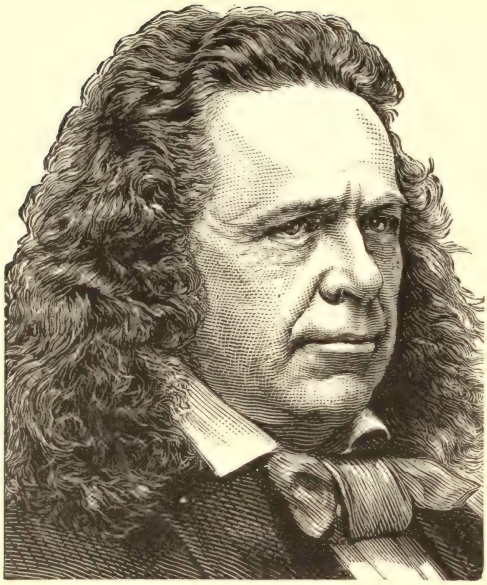
F. T. FRELINGHUYSEN.

Born in Millstone, N. J., Aug. 4, 1817. Graduate at Rutgers College, 1836. Delegate to Peace Congress, 1861. Appointed Att'y-Gen. of N. J., 1861 and 1866. In last year elected U. S. Senator, serving to March, 1869. Declined appointment as Minister to England, 1870. Elected U. S. Senator, 1871. Member of Electoral Commission. Secretary of State under President Arthur. Died, May 20, 1885.



MRS. MARY McELROY.

The "Mistress of the White House" during the administration of President Arthur, who was a widower, was his sister. She had lived in Albany, N. Y. since her marriage. While in Washington she was recognized as the "lady of the house" at the President's receptions, and dinners, and as such gave receptions every Saturday, P.M. during the official seasons.



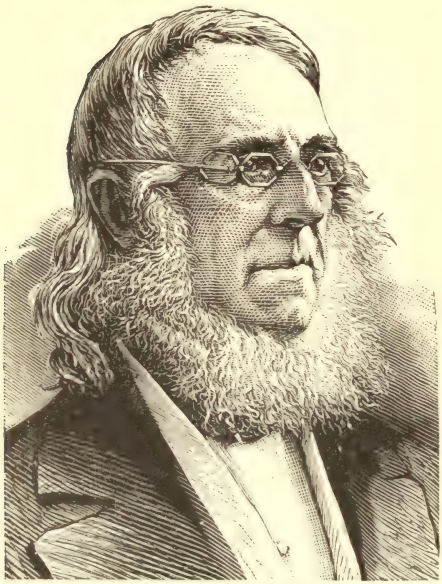
ELIAS HOWE.

Distinguished American mechanician. Born in Spencer, Mass., July 9, 1819. Completed the first sewing machine, 1845. Had long litigation in courts, but established his claims, 1854. Received Cross of Legion of Honor and many medals. Realized $2,000,000 up to expiration of his patents, Sept. 10, 1867. Died October 2, 1867.



CHARLES GOODYEAR.

Born in New Haven, Conn., Dec. 29, 1800. Perfected the idea of vulcanizing India rubber by means of sulphur, 1839, gaining over sixty patents. Received Cross of Legion of Honor, and numerous medals. Subjected to costly litigation, but realized a great fortune and founded a monopoly. Died July 1, 1860.



PETER COOPER.

Born in New York City, Feb. 12, 1791. Was the first to use anthracite coal in puddling iron. Built from original designs first locomotive engine constructed in America. Built and endowed "Cooper Institute" at cost of $800,000. Greenback candidate for President, 1880. Died Apl. 4, 1883.



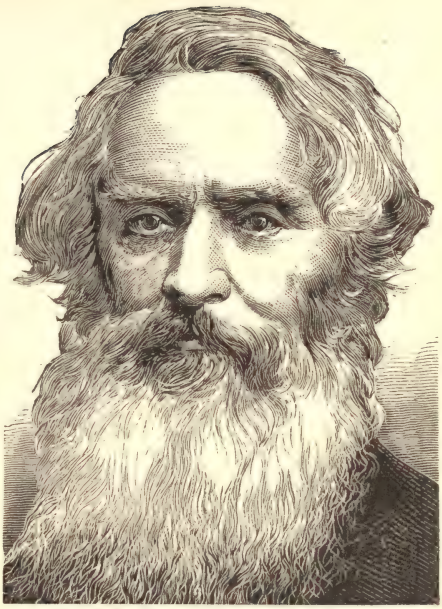
RALPH WALDO EMERSON.

Born in Boston, Mass., May 25, 1803. Graduate at Harvard College, 1821. Ordained minister Second Unitarian church, Boston. Settled in Concord, and devoted himself to study. Eminent as essayist, poet, philosopher. Received degree of LL.D., Harvard, 1866. Died April 27, 1882.



CHARLES SUMNER.

Born in Boston, Mass., Jan. 6, 1811. Graduate at Harvard College and Cambridge Law School. Admitted to the bar, 1834. Delivered his first great oration, Boston, July 4, 1845. First anti-slavery speech, 1850. Original champion of the slave in Congress. His opposition to the admission of Kansas as a slave State caused Preston Brooks to severely assault him in the hall of Congress, 1856. Chairman of U. S. Senate Committee on Foreign Relations many years. Died Mch. 11, 1874.



PROF. S. F. B. MORSE.

Born in Charlestown, Mass., Apl. 25, 1791. Graduate at Yale College, 1810, and studied for a painter. Conceived the idea of telegraphic service, 1832. Sought aid in the U. S., England and France to build an experimental line, without success, until 1843, when Congress voted him $30,000. The first message was sent over the line, Baltimore to Washington, May 27, 1844. Laid the first sub-marine cable, N. Y. Harbor, Oct., 1842. Died Apl. 2, 1872.



CHARLES F. DEEMS.

Pastor of "The Church of the Strangers," New York City. Born in Baltimore, Md., Dec. 4, 1820. Graduate at Dickinson College, Pa., 1839. Professor of Logic and Rhetoric in the University of North Carolina, 1841. President of Greensboro' Female College, N. C., 1846-51. Presiding Elder of the Wilmington and Newbern district, 1860-'65. Organized "Church of the Strangers," 1868. Received gift of Mercer Street Presbyterian Church property from Com. Vanderbilt, 1870. Founded American Institute of Christian Philosophy. Author of "The Light of the Nations."



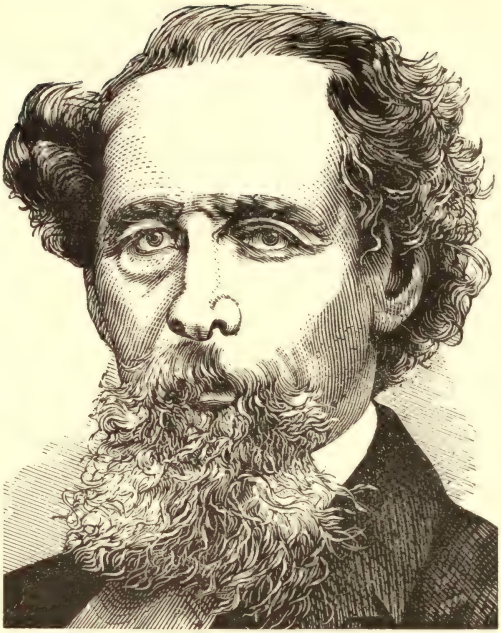
JOHN CARD. McCLOSKEY.

Fifth Bishop and second Archbishop of New York, and first Cardinal in the United States of the Holy Roman Church. Born in Brooklyn, N. Y., March 20, 1810. Graduate at Mount St. Mary's College and Seminary, Md. Ordained priest in St. Patrick's Cathedral, New York, Jan., 1834. First President of St. John's College, Fordham, N. Y., 1841. Consecrated Coadjutor to Bishop Hughes, 1844. First Bishop of Diocese of Albany, 1847. Inaugurated Archbishop, Aug. 20, 1864. Raised to the dignity of a Cardinal Priest, March 15, 1875. Died Oct. 10, 1885.



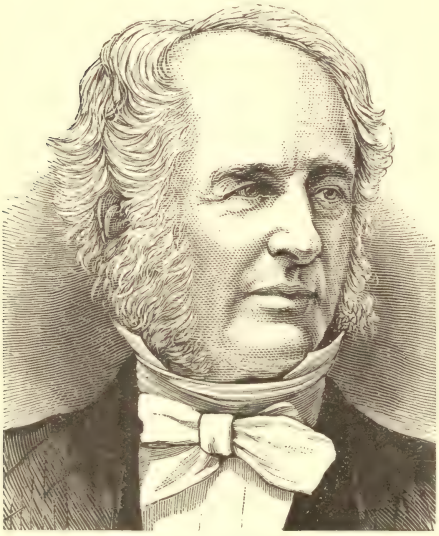
LOUIS J. R. AGASSIZ.

Born in Switzerland, May 28, 1807. Studied anatomy, zoology and botany in the chief institutions of Europe. Came to U. S., 1846. Professor of Zoology and Geology, Cambridge Scientific School. Established scientific school on Penikese Island, Buzzard's Bay, 1871. Died Dec. 14, 1873. His son, Prof. Alex, Agassiz, succeeded him as chief of the scientific school.



CHARLES DICKENS.

One of the most popular authors of the century. Born at Portsmouth, Eng., 1812. Became newspaper critic and reporter. His first book was "Sketches by Boz," 1836. Made his first trip to the U. S., 1842, when splendid attentions were paid him everywhere. Returned on a lecturing tour, November, 1867. Died at Gadshill, Eng., June 9, 1870.



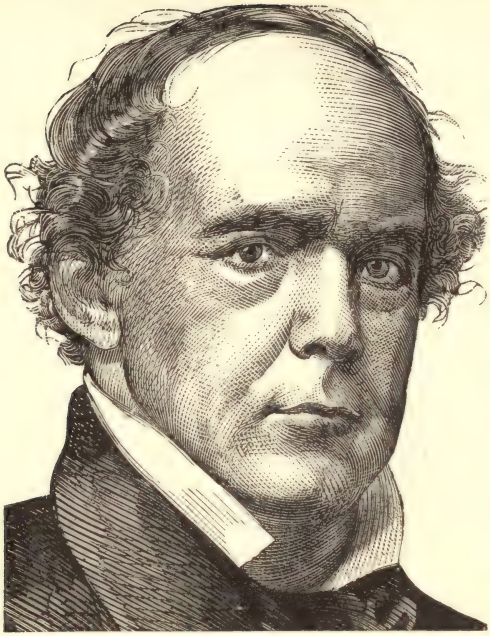
CORNELIUS VANDERBILT.

Born on Staten Island, May 27, 1794. Began life by rowing a small passenger boat from the Island to New York. Supplied the military posts about the city with provisions, 1814. Built his first vessel, 1814; first steamer, 1853. Presented the steamer *Vanderbilt* to the Government, 1862, for which he received thanks of Congress. Began his railroad operations, 1857. Built and endowed Vanderbilt University, Tenn., at a cost of $750,000. Died Jan. 4, 1877.



HORACE B. CLAFLIN.

Distinguished merhant prince. Born in Mulford, Mass., Dec. 18, 1811. Received a common school education, and after serving in his father's store, went into business for himself, 1832. Opened his importing and jobbing dry goods house in New York City, July, 1843. Suspended briefly in panic of 1860-61, but passed creditably through those of 1857, 1873. He gave largely to church and charity. Died, Nov. 14, 1885.



SALMON PORTLAND CHASE.

Born in Cornish, N. H., Jan. 18, 1808. Graduate at Dartmouth College, 1826. Admitted to the bar, 1829. Elected U. S. Senator from Ohio, 1849. Twice Governor of Ohio. Elected U. S. Senator, 1860, and appointed Secretary of the Treasury, Mch. 6, 1861. Appointed Chief Justice U. S. Supreme Court, 1864. Died May 7, 1873.



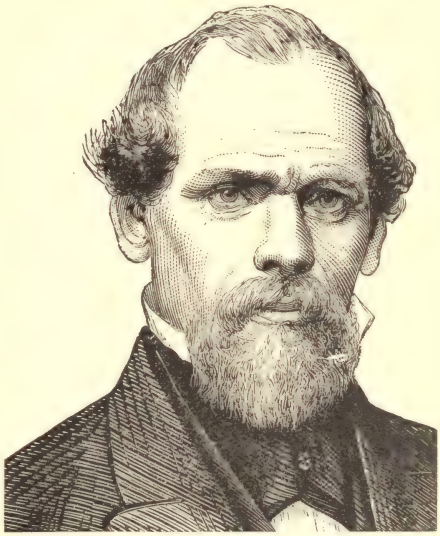
FREDERICK EDWIN CHURCH.

Born in Hartford, Conn., May 14, 1826. Became an art pupil of Thomas Cole, and attracted attention by his earliest landscape paintings. Made sketching trips to South America, 1853, '75. Completed his great "Niagara Falls," 1868, exhibited in both countries. Visited Europe and the Holy Land, 1868. Located at Hudson, N. Y., with studio in N. Y. City.



HORACE GREELEY.

Born in Amhurst, N. H., Feb. 3, 1811. Began publication of New York *Tribune*, 1841. Member of Congress, 1848. With Thurlow Weed and William H. Seward took a very active part in State and national politics. One of Jefferson Davis' bondsmen, May, 1867. Liberal Republican candidate for President, 1872. Defeated by Gen. Grant, and died Nov. 29, following. Author of "The American Conflict."



JOHN A ROEBLING.

Designer of Brooklyn Bridge, also Niagara Suspension Bridge, which he built. Born in Muhlhausen, Thuringia, Prussia, June 12, 1806. Received degree of Civil Engineer at the Royal Polytechnic School, Berlin. Settled in U. S. at Pittsburg, Pa., 1831. Manufactured the first wire rope ever made in America. Engaged as engineer of the East River Bridge, May, 1867. Died from result of an accident, July 22, 1869. His son, Washington A., completed the work, 1883.



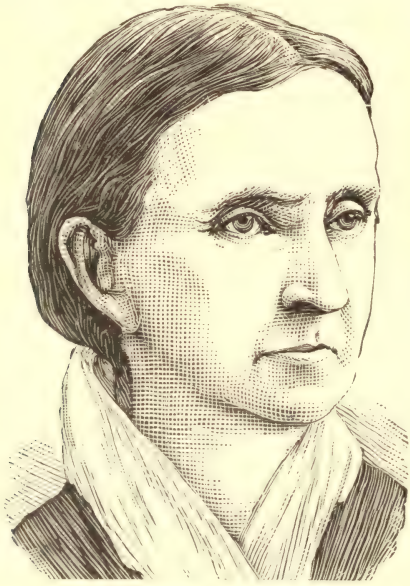
HARRIET BEECHER STOWE.

Authoress of "Uncle Tom's Cabin." Born in Litchfield, Conn., June 15, 1812. Removed to Walnut Hills, near Cincinnati, Ohio, 1832, and was married to Rev. Calvin E. Stowe, D.D., 1836. She began publishing "Uncle Rom's Cabin" as a serial in the *National Era*, in 1850. Two years later it was brought out in book form, and had an enormous sale. She traveled extensively and never allowed her gifted pen to be idle when wrongs were crying for redress.



ELIZABETH CADY STANTON.

"Champion of Woman Suffrage." Born in Johnstown, N. Y., Nov. 12, 1816. Graduate at the Johnstown Academy, 1831. Married Henry B. Stanton, a lawyer and anti-slavery agitator, 1839, and with him went to London to attend the "World's Anti-Slavery Convention," 1840. She organized the first Woman's Rights Convention in the United States, July 19-20, 1848. She became acquainted with Susan B. Anthony, in 1850, and thence forward they were associated in reformatory labor.



JANE GREY SWISSHELM.

Eminent philanthropist and journalist. Born in Wilkins urg, Pa., 1816. Removed to Louisville, Ky., 1838. Early in life she became convinced of the evils of human slavery and the injustice of existing laws to wives and mothers; and until the day of her death she wielded a most trenchant pen in behalf of these reforms. During the Civil War she devoted herself to hospital work in the armies. Died July 22, 1884.



SUSAN B. ANTHONY.

Born in South Adams, Mass., Feb. 15, 1820. Taught school in various parts of New York State for fifteen years. Entered upon her temperance labors in 1851, and in the following year identified herself with the Woman's Rights movement. Was an incessant worker in the Anti-Slavery cause, 1857-66. Frequently appeared before Congressional committees in advocacy of Woman Suffrage.



FREDERIC A. BARTHOLDI.

Designer of the colossal bronze statue "Liberty Enlightening the World," on Bedloe's Island, New York Harbor. Was born in Colmar, France. Achieved renown in his own country by notable works of art, and in the U. S. by his statue of Lafayette, in New York city, and "Peace," "The Young Vine Grower," and "Genius in the Grasp of Misery," shown at the Centennial Exhibition, to which he was a commissioner.



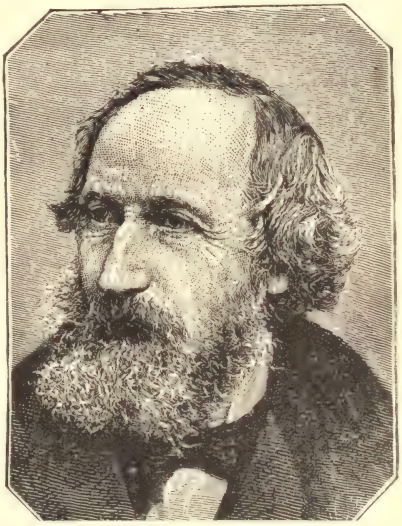
MISS ROSE E. CLEVELAND.

Born in Fayetteville, N. Y. Graduate at Houghton Seminary, and remained two years as teacher. Became principal of the Collegiate Institute, Lafayette, Ind. On the election of her brother to the Presidency, she accompanied him to the White House, becoming its mistress. Author of "George Eliot's Essays and Other Studies." 1885.



JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL.

Born in Cambridge, Mass., Feb. 22, 1819. Graduate at Harvard College, 1838. Elected Prof. of Belles Lettres in Harvard, in succession to H. W. Longfellow, 1855. Editor of the *Atlantic Monthly*, 1857-62, and of the *North American Review*, 1863-72. Received degree of LL. D. from Cambridge University, Eng., 1874. Appointed Minister to Great Britain, 1874, and succeeded by E. J. Phelps, 1885. A voluminous author and popular lecturer.



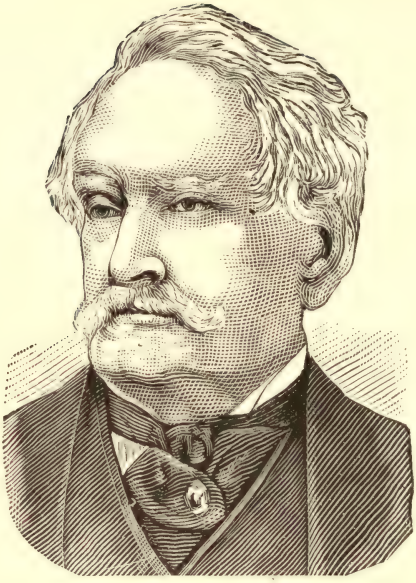
CYRUS W. FIELD.

The "Father of the Atlantic Cable." Born in Stockbridge, Mass., Nov. 30, 1819. Organized first ocean telegraph company, Mar. 10, 1854. Crossed ocean fifty times on cable business up to 1866. Displayed great pluck in spite of failures, and was honored at home and abroad on ultimate success. Active promoter of elevated railroad systems of New York city. Erected monument to Maj. André on his property at Tarrytown, N. Y., which unknown parties destroyed in 1885.



WILLIAM H. VANDERBILT.

The richest man in the world. Born at New Brunswick, N. J., May 8, 1821. Educated at Columbia College Grammar School, New York. On the death of his father, Cornelius Vanderbilt, Jan. 4, 1877, he came into possession of a fortune of $95,000,000. He died Dec. 8, 1885, and in his will bequeathed the enormous sum of $200,000,000 in cash, securities and realty.



W. W. CORCORAN.

Distinguished philanthropist and art patron. Born in Georgetown, D. C., Dec. 27, 1798. Presented the Washington Orphan Asylum its valuable grounds, erected and endowed the Corcoran Art Gallery, and the Louise Home for Women; endowed Columbian College with a princely estate, and gave largely to the College of William and Mary, the Virginia Military Institute, the University of Washington and Lee, the University of Virginia, and other institutions.



DORMAN B. EATON.

Born in Vermont. Graduate at State University, 1848, and Harvard Law School, 1850. Went to New York City 1851, and was associated with Judge Kent. Chairman U. S. Civil Service Commission, 1873, 1875. Member Civil Service Commission, authorized by act of Jan., 1883. Resigned, July 27, 1885. A voluminous writer on political reform.



JOHN HILL.

"The Father of Cheap Postage." Born in Catskill, N. Y., June 10, 1821. Member New Jersey State Assembly, 1861, '62, '66, serving last year as Speaker. Elected to the 40th, 41st, 42d and 47th Congresses, and to the State Senate for 3 years, 1874. He introduced into Congress bills to abolish the franking privilege, and to provide for a one-cent postal card and the reduction of ordinary postage to two cents. Died, July 24, 1884.



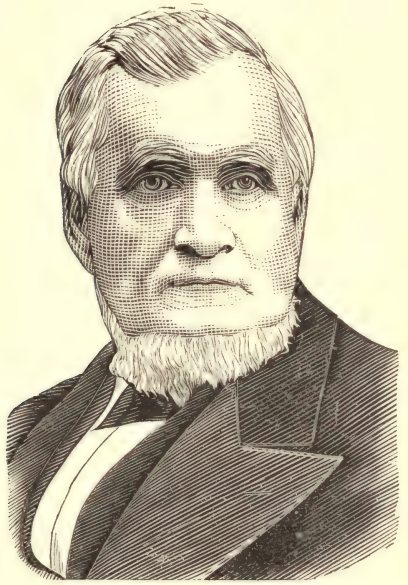
GEORGE STONEMAN.

Born in Bush, N. Y., 1824. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1842. Served with the cavalry in California and Oregon, 1847–1855. Brig.-Gen. of Vols. Aug., 1861. Maj.-Gen. Nov., 1862. Brig.-Gen., by brevet, U. S. A., Mar. 13, 1865, for services in the capture of Charlotte, N. C. Maj.-Gen., by brevet, "for gallant and meritorious services in the field during the war," same date. Col. 21st Inf. July, 1866. Retired Aug. 16, 1871. Elected Governor of California, 1882.



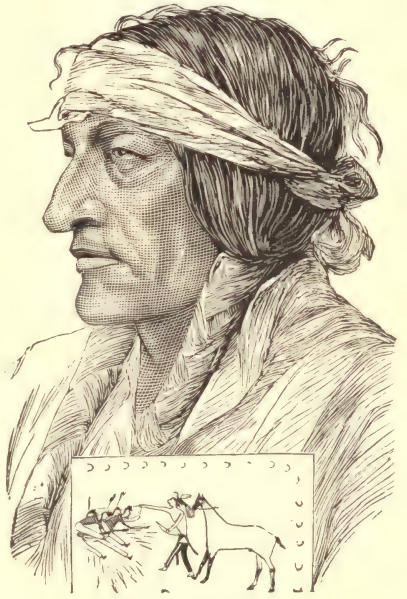
GEORGE H. CROOK.

Born in Dayton, Ohio, Sept. 8, 1828. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1852. In the Civil War became Maj.-Gen. of Vols. Appointed to command of cavalry, Army of the Potomac, 1865. Command of District of Idaho, 1866-72. Brig.-Gen., U. S. A., Oct. 29, 1873. Command of District of Arizona, 1873. Successful Indian fighter.



JOHN TAYLOR.

Born in Milthrope, England, Nov. 1, 1808. Settled in Canada, 1832, and began investigating the principles of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints. Ordained one of the Twelve Apostles in Missouri. Arrived in Salt Lake City with the fugitive Mormons, 1847. Acted as Judge, foreign missionary and historian. Succeeded Brigham Young as head of the "Church," 1877.



SITTING BULL.

(*With original drawing.*)

Born in Dakota Ter., 1837. Became a sub-chief at age of 14, and, having killed a foe, a full chief a year later. Previous to 1868, made many hostile expeditions against the whites and friendly Indians. Directed the Custer massacre, May 25, 1876, and escaped into Canada. After much negotiation he crossed the line and surrendered to the U. S. Military authorities, July 20, 1881.



JOSEPH R. HAWLEY.

Born in Stewartsville, N. C., Oct. 31, 1826. Graduate at Hamilton College, N. Y., 1847. Admitted to the bar at Hartford, Conn., 1850. Entered Union Army as Lieut., April, 1861; mustered out as Maj.-Gen., Jan., 1866. Governor of State, 1866. President National Republican Convention, 1868. President U. S. Centennial Commission from 1873 to close of Exhibition. Member 42d, 43d, 46th Congresses. Elected U. S. Senator for term ending March 3, 1877. Editor Hartford *Courant*.



FITZ-HUGH LEE.

Born at Clermont, Fairfax county, Va., Nov. 19, 1835. Nephew of Gen. Robert E. Lee. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1856. Resigned commission, 1861. Became General of cavalry in Confederacy. In 1875 the Khedive of Egypt solicited the services of himself and his "Black Horse Cavalry" for a body guard. Elected Governor of Virginia, 1885.



WESLEY MERRITT.

Born in New York City, 1836. Graduate at U. S Military Academy, 1860. On Stoneman's staff in raid on Richmond, 1863. Commanded division of cavalry in Va., 1863-64. Brevetted Maj.-Gen. Vols., for services in Shenandoah campaign. Present at the surrender, Appomattox C. H. Lieut.-Col. 9th U. S. Cavalry, 1866. Col. 5th U. S. Cavalry, 1876. Appointed Supt. of U. S. Military Academy.



WILLIAM S. ROSECRANS.

Born in Kingstone, Ohio, Sept. 6, 1819. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1842. In charge of fortifications at Newport, R. I., 1847-52. Chief-Engineer, State of Ohio, 1861. Brig-Gen., 1861. Commanded at battles of Iuka, Corinth, Murfreesboro', 1862; Chickamauga, 1863. In command of Department of Missouri, Jan., 1864. Resigned commission, 1867, and settled in San Francisco. Member 47th and 48th Congresses. Appointed Register of the Treasury, 1885.



DANIEL W. VOORHEES.

Born in Butler county, Ohio, Sept. 26, 1827. Graduate at Asbury University, 1849. Admitted to the bar, 1851. Appointed U. S. District Attorney for Indiana, 1858. Member of 37th, 38th, 41st and 42d Congresses; seat successfully contested in the 39th. Appointed successor to O. P. Morton, in U. S. Senate, 1877; elected for full terms, March, 1879, Jan., 1885. Prominent as a Democrat leader.



W. H. BARNUM.

Born in Columbia county, N. Y. Sept. 17, 1818. Received public school education. Moved to Lime Rock, Conn. Delegate to Dem. National Conventions, 1868, '72, '76, '80, '84, and Chairman Executive Committee several years. Member of 40th, 41st, 42d, 43d and 44th Congresses. Elected U. S. Senator, to fill vacancy for term ending March 3, 1879.



WILLIAM D. KELLEY.

"Champion of Protection." Born in Philadelphia, April 12, 1814. Received a thorough English education. Ten years Judge of Court of Common Pleas of Philadelphia. Delegate to National Republican Convention, 1860. Elected to the 37th, 38th, 39th, 40th, 41st 42d, 43d, 44th, 45th, 46th, 47th, 48th and 49th Congresses. Senior member of the House in continuous service.



WILLIAM E. CHANDLER.

Born in Concord, N. H., Dec. 28, 1835. Graduate at Harvard Law School, 1855. Member of Legislature, 1862, '63, '64, and Speaker last two years. Solicitor and Judge Advocate-Gen., Navy Department, 1865. Same year First Ass't Secretary of the Treasury. Delegate-at-Large to National Republican conventions, 1868, '72. One of counsel for Hayes' Electors before Florida Canvassing Board, 1876. Appointed Secretary of the Navy, April, 1882, serving to March, 1885.



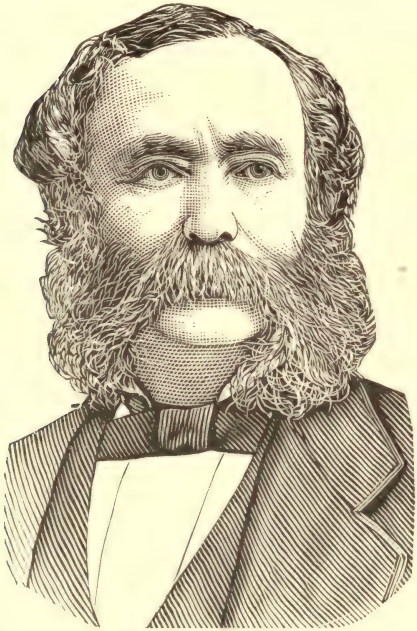
AINSWORTH R. SPOFFORD.

Born at Gilmanton, N. H., Sept. 12, 1825. Appointed First Assistant Librarian, Library of Congress, 1861. Promoted to Librarian-in-Chief, 1865. The original Library was built in 1800, and destroyed in 1814. The second building was burned in 1851. It now occupies a portion of the central Capitol building. Possessed of a phenomenal memory for names, dates and events. Husband of distinguished authoress, Harriet Prescott Spofford.



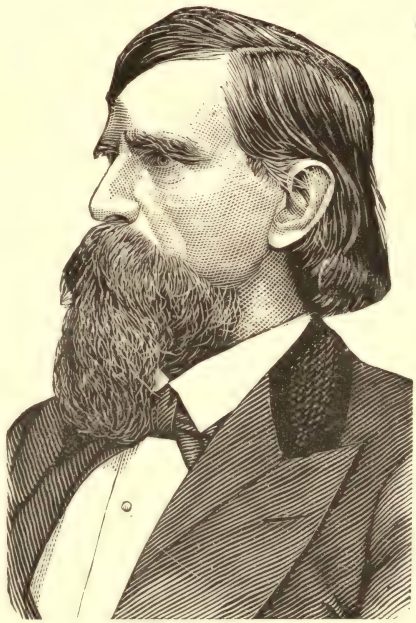
BENJAMIN H. HILL.

Born in Jasper county, Ga., Sept. 14, 1823. Graduate at University of Ga., 1844. Admitted to the bar, 1845. Presidential Elector, 1856, 1860. Advocated Union cause in State Convention, 1861. Senator in Confederate Congress. Imprisoned in Fort Lafayette, 1865. Elected to 44th, 45th Congresses, and U. S. Senate, 1876. Died, Aug. 16, 1882.



WADE HAMPTON.

Born in Charleston, S. C., March 28, 1818. Grandson of Gen. Hampton of revolutionary fame. Graduate at South Carolina College. Was a member of both branches of State Legislature, resigning from Senate, 1861. Served in Confederate Army through Civil War. Three times severely wounded. Lieut.-Gen., 1864. Elected Governor of S. C., 1876, 1878, and U. S. Senator, 1878, 1884.



LEWIS WALLACE.

Born in Brookville, Ind., April 10, 1827. Abandoned study of law to enter Mexican War. Adj.-Gen. of Indiana, 1861. Forced the Confederates to evacuate Harpers' Ferry, and led a division at capture of Fort Donelson, for which became Maj.-Gen. Member of Court which tried the Lincoln conspirators. Presided at trial of Capt. Wirz, of Andersonville. Was Governor of New Mexico and Minister to Turkey after the war.



MRS. LUCRETIA GARFIELD.

Born near Hiram, Ohio, 1837. Married James A. Garfield, then a professor in the college where she was studying, 1858. She was well suited by nature and education to be the helpmate of her husband. Through his course in the Civil War and in Congress, she was constantly assisting and encouraging him It was to her sick couch, that her husband intended to hasten on that fatal morning of July 2, 1881, and she was his tender nurse during the eighty days of suffering.



MRS. ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

Born in Lexington, Ky., in 1821. Married to Abraham Lincoln, Nov. 4, 1842. Accompanied the President to the White House, March 4, 1861. Was with him when shot by Wilkes Booth, in Ford's Theatre, April 14, 1865. Congress gave her a pension of $3,000 per year, subsequently increasing it to $5,000, and made a special gift of $15,000. Died, July 16, 1882.



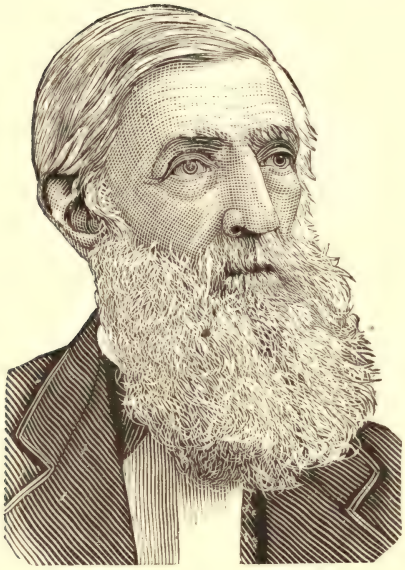
PHILIP H. SHERIDAN.

Born in Somerset, Ohio, 1831. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1853. Served on the Indian frontier, 1855-61. Brig.-Gen. of Vols., 1862, In command of cavalry corps, Army of the Potomac, April, 1864. Maj.-Gen. Regular Army, Nov. 1864. Lieut.-Gen., March 9, 1869. Succeeded Gen. Sherman, in command of the Armies of the U. S., Nov. 1, 1883.



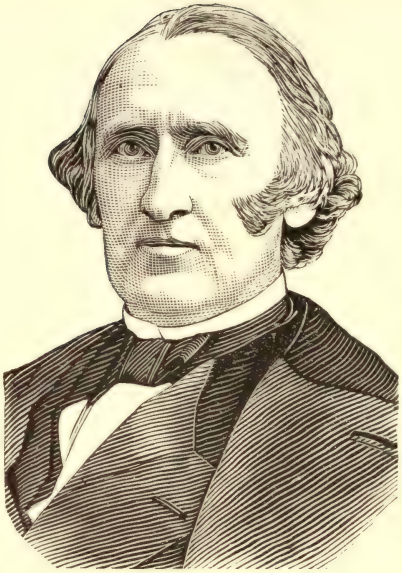
WILLIAM T. SHERMAN.

Born in Lancaster, Ohio, Feb. 8, 1820. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1840. Served in Florida and Mexico. Resigned, 1853. Re-entered army, serving in the Western campaigns. Succeeded Gen. Grant in command of Army of the Tennessee, 1863, and of Military Division of the Mississippi, 1864. Planned and led the great march to the sea from Atlanta, Ga., 1865. Lieut.-Gen. 1866. General, March, 1869. Retired, Nov. 1, 1883.



GEORGE BANCROFT.

Born in Worcester, Mass., Oct. 3, 1800. Graduate Harvard College, 1817. Collector Port of Boston, 1838. Secretary of Navy, 1845. Minister to Great Britain, 1846; to Prussia, 1867; to North German Confederation, 1868; to German Empire, 1871. Author of a very celebrated History of the United States. The last years of his life were spent in revising this work.



WENDELL PHILLIPS.

Born in Boston, Mass., Nov. 29, 1811. Graduate Harvard College, 1831; Cambridge Law School, 1833. Began agitating in behalf of Anti-Slavery, Temperance and Woman's Rights reforms, 1837. Succeeded Mr. Garrison as President of the Anti-Slavery Society. Received John Brown's slaves into his house. Distinguished lecturer. Died Feb. 2, 1884.



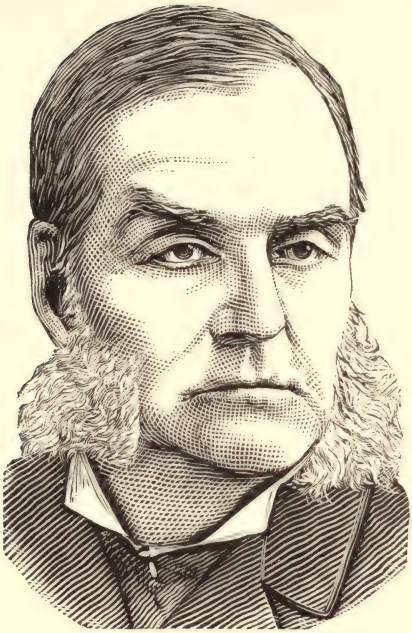
JAMES W. MARSHALL.

The first to discover gold in California. Born in Hope Township, N. J., 1812. Made the overland trip to California, June, 1845. Entered service of Gen. Sutter, Sutter's Fort. Participated in the movement that led to independence of California, 1847. While building a mill race for his lumber business at Coloma, he discovered the existence of gold, Jan. 18, 1848. Died, 1885.



FREDERICK DOUGLASS.

Born in slavery, about 1817. Self-educated. Ran away from his master, settling in New Bedford, Mass. Employed by Mass. Anti-Slavery Society to lecture, 1841. Made lecturing tour in Great Britain. Secretary Santo Domingo Commission, 1871. Presidential Elector for N. Y., 1872. Appointed U. S. Marshal for District of Columbia, by President Hayes.



CHARLES J. FOLGER.

Born on Nantucket Island, Apl. 16, 1818. Graduate at Hobart College, N. Y., 1836. Admitted to the bar 1839. Judge of Ontario county (N. Y.,) Court of Common Pleas, 1844. Elected County Judge of Ontario, 1851. Member of New York Senate 8 years from 1861, and President *pro tem*. 4. U. S. Sub-Treasurer, New York, 1870. Elected Chief Judge, Court of Appeals, 1880. Appointed Secretary of the Treasury, Oct. 1881. Defeated as Republican Candidate for Governor, 1882. Died Sept. 4, 1884.



ROBERT T. LINCOLN.

Eldest son of the "Martyred President." Born in Springfield, Ill., Aug. 1, 1843. Studied in Ill. State University, Phillip's Academy, Harvard College and Law School. Ass't Adj.-Gen. on Staff of Gen. Grant, resigning to practice law, 1867. Presidential Elector, 1876. Appointed Secretary of War by Pres't Garfield; served to close of Pres't Arthur's administration.



MARSHALL JEWELL.

Born in Winchester, N. H., Oct. 20, 1825. Engaged in leather business in Hartford, Conn. Elected Governor, 1869, '71, '72. Appointed Minister to Russia, 1873. Recalled, 1874, and appointed Postmaster-General. Elected chairman National Republican Committee, 1880. Was a man of strong personal attractiveness and high executive abilities. Died Feb. 10, 1883.



JOHN SHERMAN.

Born in Lancaster, Ohio, May 10, 1823. Member Congress, 1855. Supported Gen. Fremont, 1856. Elected to 35th, 36th Congresses. Elected U. S. Senator, 1861, '66, '72, '80. Prominent in making Treasury notes legal tenders, 1862. Proposed the Refunding Act, passed 1870. The resumption of specie payments, Jan. 1, 1879, a triumph of his financial policy. Secretary of the Treasury through Pres't Hayes's administration. Elected President of the Senate, *pro tem*, Dec. 7, 1885.



WILLIAM B. HAZEN.

Born in Vermont, 1830. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1855. Served in Union Army through Civil War, attaining volunteer rank of Maj.-Gen., and Regular Army rank of Col. Sent to observe the Franco-German War, 1870-71. Military attaché U. S. Legation at Vienna, 1877. Appointed Chief Signal Officer of the Army, Dec. 6, 1880.



SAMUEL S. COX.

Born at Zanesville, Ohio., Sept. 30, 1824. Graduate at Brown University, 1846. Secretary of Legation to Peru, 1855. Delegate to Dem. conventions, 1864-68. Member of 35th, 36th, 37th and 38th Congresses from Ohio, and the 41st, 42nd, 43d, 44th, 45th, 46th, 47th and 48th from New York, whither he removed 1865. Elected to 49th Congress, but resigned in summer of 1885, to accept appointment as Minister to Turkey. Distinguished as statesman, scholar and author.



GEORGE F. EDMUNDS.

Born in Richmond, Vt., Feb. 1, 1828. Public school education. Admitted to the bar. Member State Legislature, 1854, '55, '57, '58, '59, serving three years as Speaker. State Senator and President pro tem, 1861-62. Entered U. S. Senate, by appointment, Apl. 5, 1866, and by election, for terms ending 1869, '75, '81, '87. Member of Electoral Commission. Succeeded Judge Trumbull as Chairman of the Judiciary Committee.



ALLEN G. THURMAN.

Born in Lynchburg, Va., Nov. 13, 1813. Removed to Ohio four years later. Received academic education. Admitted to the bar, 1835. Member of the 29th Congress. Judge Supreme Court, Ohio, 1851. Chief-Justice same Court, 1854-56. Elected U. S. Senator, 1868, 1874. Frequently mentioned as a possible Democratic candidate for President.



THURLOW WEED.

Born in Cairo, N. Y., Nov. 15, 1797. Was cabin boy on a Hudson River boat. Served in war of 1812. Served two terms in State Legislature. Editor of the Albany Evening Journal, 1830-1862. Rendered historic services to William Henry Harrison, Zachary Taylor, Winfield Scott, Gen. Fremont and Mr. Lincoln, when candidates for Presidency. Sent on confidential mission to the European Courts, 1861. Died, Nov. 22, 1882.



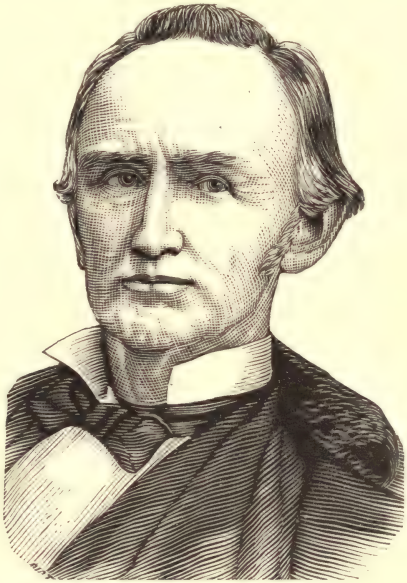
JUDAH P. BENJAMIN.

Born in St. Domingo, 1812. Family settled in Savanah, Ga., 1816. Educated in Yale college. Removed to New Orleans, La., 1831. Admitted to the bar, 1834. Declined the appointment as Att'y-Gen. of the U. S., 1849. U. S. Senator, 1852-1861. Appointed Att'y-Gen. in Provisional Government of the Southern Confederacy, 1861. Secretary of State from Feb. 1862, to close of war. Admitted to the bar in England, 1866. Became a Q. C. Died, May 8, 1885.



HANNIBAL HAMLIN.

Born in Paris, Me., Aug. 27, 1809. Member Maine Legislature, 1836-1840, and Speaker three years. Member 28th, 29th Congresses. Governor, 1857. U. S. Senator. Elected Vice-President of the U. S., 1860. Appointed Collector Port of Boston, 1865. U. S. Senator for terms ending 1875, 1881. Appointed Minister to Spain, Oct. 1881.



MONTGOMERY BLAIR.

Born in Franklin county, Ky., May 10, 1813. Graduate U. S. Military Academy, 1835. Served in Seminole War. Resigned commission and admitted to the bar, St. Louis, Mo., 1839. Became U. S. District-Attorney, and Judge of the Court of Common Pleas. Removed to Maryland, 1852, and appointed Solicitor of U. S. in the Court of Claims. Appointed Postmaster-General, Mch., 1861. Resigned, June, 1864. Died, July 27, 1883.



WINFIELD S. HANCOCK.

Born in Montgomery County, Pa., Feb. 14, 1824. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1844. Served in Mexican war. Attached to Army of Potomac as Brig.-Gen., 1862. Severely wounded at Gettysburg, 1863. Participated in every great battle in the East. Received thanks of Congress. Maj.-Gen. Regular Army, March 13, 1865. Democratic candidate for President, 1880. In charge of Gen. Grant's funeral, 1885.



DAVID D. PORTER.

Born in Philadelphia, Pa., 1805. Entered U. S. Navy as Midshipman, 1829. On coast survey service, 1836-1841. In charge of Naval rendezvous at New Orleans in Mexican war. In continuous service in civil war. Superintendent U. S. Naval Academy after close of war. Viee-Admiral, 1866; Admiral, 1870. Received thanks of Congress.



BENJAMIN F. BUTLER.

Born in Deerfield, N. H., Nov. 5, 1818. Graduate at Waterville College, Me., 1838. Began practice of law, Lowell, Mass. Brig.-Gen. Union Army, 1861. Served to close of civil war, gaining rank of Maj.-General. In charge of New Orleans after its surrender. Elected to 40th, 41st, 42d, 43d and 45th Congresses. A manager of the impeachment of President Johnson. Elected Governor, Mass. by Democratic and Greenback parties, 1882. Greenback candidate for President, 1884.



JOHN ERICSSON.

Born in Sweden, July 31, 1803. Built the locomotive "Novelty" to compete against the "Rocket" in England, 1829. Came to U. S. 1839. Began building war vessels. Designed and built the famous "Monitor," which rendered such timely service, March, 1862. Completed the torpedo boat, "The Destroyer," in 1884, utilizing the heat of the sun and atmosphere as motive power.



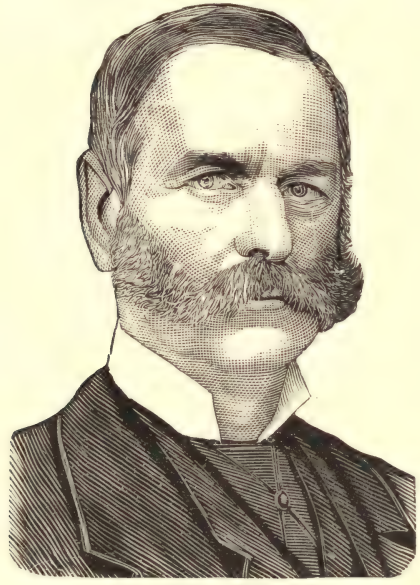
MORRISON R. WAITE.

Born in Lyme, Conn., Nov. 29, 1816; son of a former Chief-Justice of that State. Graduate Yale College, 1837. Moved to Ohio, and admitted to the bar, 1839. Counsel for the U. S. before the Geneva Tribunal, 1871-72. President of Ohio Constitutional Convention, 1873. Appointed Chief-Justice of the U. S. Supreme Court, Jan. 21, 1874, succeeding Salmon P. Chase.



WALTER Q. GRESHAM.

Born in Corydon, Ind., 1833. Served in Union Army through Civil War, reaching rank of Maj.-Gen. Vols. Severely wounded before Atlanta. Appointed U. S. Judge for the Indiana district by President Grant; Postmaster-General, April 3, 1883, on death of Mr. Howe, and Secretary of the Treasury, Sept., 1884, on death of Judge Folger. Appointed Judge of the 7th U. S. Circuit, Oct. 28, 1884.



FITZ-JOHN PORTER.

Born in Portsmouth, N. H., 1823. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1845. Participated in chief battles of Mexican War. Brig.-Gen. of Vols., 1861. Brig.-Gen. U. S. A., by brevet, June, 1862. His corps bore the brunt of the second Bull Run engagement. Found guilty of disobedience of Pope's orders, and cashiered, Jan. 21, 1863. Exculpated and restored to citizenship by Congress, 1884.



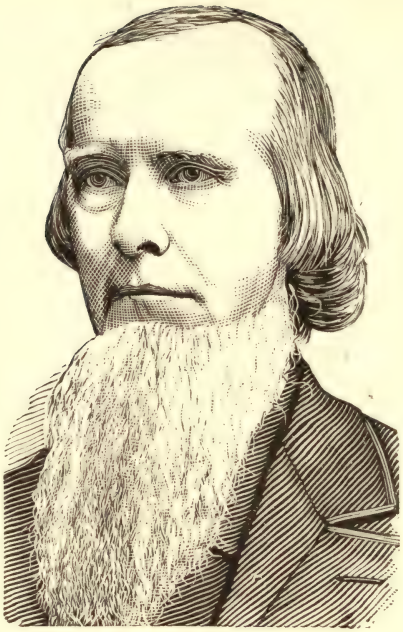
EDWARD F. BEALE.

Born in Washington, D. C., Feb. 4, 1822. Graduate at U. S. Naval Academy, 1842. Served with Com. Stockton, Mexican War. Volunteered to leave Kearny's surrounded camp to seek assistance at San Diego, for which successful mission he was presented with epaulettes and a sword, 1847. Resigned from navy at close of war. Supt. of Indian Affairs for New Mexico and Cal; Surveyor-General Cal. and Nevada. Minister to Austria, 1876.



JAMES B. BECK.

Born in Dumfriesshire, Scotland, Feb. 13, 1822. Received academic education before coming to the U. S. Graduated in law at Transylvania University, Ky., 1846, beginning practice at Lexington. Member of 40th, 41st, 42d and 43d Congresses. Declined re-election to the 44th. Elected U. S. Senator as a Democrat, taking seat, Mch. 5, 1877. Re-elected, 1882.



JOSEPH E. BROWN.

Born in Pickens county, S. C., April 15, 1821. Educated in Calhoun Academy, and graduate at Yale Law School, 1846. State Senator of Ga., 1849. Pierce Elector, 1852. Judge Superior Courts, Blue Ridge Circuit, 1855. Elected Governor of Ga., 1857, and in the four succeeding elections. Chief-Justice State Sup. Ct., 1868. Appointed U. S. Senator to fill vacancy, May 1880, and elected for unexpired term in Nov. following



ROSCOE CONKLING.

Born in Albany, N. Y., Oct. 30, 1829. Educated for the bar. Removed to Utica, 1846. District Att'y for Oneida county, 1850. Mayor of Utica, 1858. Elected to 36th, 37th, 39th and 40th Congresses, and to U. S. Senate, 1866, 1873, 1879. Resigned with his colleague, Mr. Platt, 1880, charging bad faith on President Garfield, in the matter of New York Collectorship. Established himself in law practice, in New York City, rigidly avoiding politics.



DAVID DAVIS.

Born in Cecil county, Md., Mch. 9, 1815. Educated at Kenyon College, Ohio. Settled at Bloomington, Ill., and admitted to the bar, 1836. Elected Judge of 8th Judicial Circuit of Ill., 1848, '55, '61. Associate Justice U. S. Supreme Court, 1862. Resigned and elected U. S. Senator, 1877. Nominated by Labor Reform Party for President, 1872. As Senator was independent in politics.



HENRY B. ANTHONY.

Born in Coventry, R. I., April 1, 1815. Graduate Brown Universtiy. Became editor Providence Journal. Elected Governor, 1849, 1850. Declined a third term. Elected U. S. Senator, 1859, 1864, 1870, 1876, 1882, and President pro tem. of Senate, March 23, 1869, March 10, 1871. His long experience made him very effective in committee work. Died, Sept. 2, 1884.



GEORGE B. McCLELLAN.

Born in Philadelphia, Pa., Dec. 3, 1826. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1846. Served in Mexican War. Sent by Government to study Crimean War. Maj.-Gen. of Ohio Vols., April 23, 1861. Maj.-Gen. in Regular Army following month. Gen.-in-Chief Armies of the U. S., Nov., 1861. Superseded, Nov., 1862. Democratic candidate for President, 1864. Eng.-in-Chief, Department of Docks, N. Y. City, 1870. Elected Governor of New Jersey, 1877. Died, Oct. 29, 1885.



WILLIAM R. MORRISON.

Born in Monroe county, Ill., Sept. 14, 1825. Graduate at McKendree College. Was four terms member, and one Speaker of Ill., House of Reps. Elected to the 38th, 43d, 44th, 45th, 46th, 47th, 48th and 49th Congresses. As Chairman of Committee on Ways and Means, was prominent in opposition to the tariff system, effecting a saving of many millions of dollars. Saw service in the Mexican and Civil wars.



JAMES B. STEEDMAN.

Born in Northumberland county, Pa., 1818. Served in Ohio Legislature two terms. Public Printer, Washington, D. C., 1857. Delegate to Charleston Convention Entered the Civil War as Col., 14th Ohio Vols Brig.-Gen., July, 1862. Won distinction and promotion at Chickamauga. Provisional Governor, Georgia, 1865. State Senator, 1879. Died, Oct. 18, 1883.



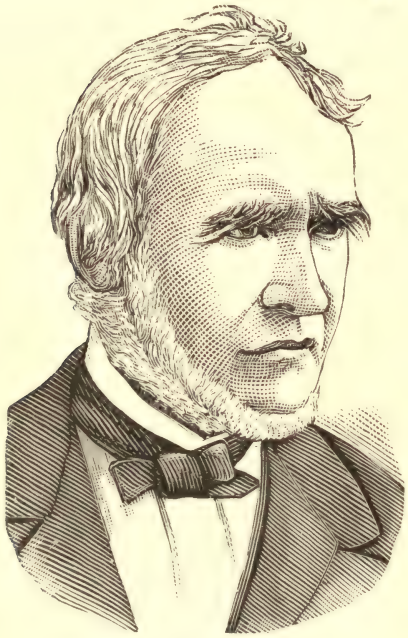
WILLIAM M. EVARTS.

Born in Boston, Mass., Feb. 6, 1818. Graduate Yale College and Harvard Law School. Admitted to the bar in New York City, 1841. Chief counsel for President Johnson at impeachment, 1868. Att'y-Gen. of the U. S., 1868-1872. Represented U. S. at Geneva, "Alabama" tribunal, 1872, and Republican party, before Electoral Commission. Secretary of State, 1876-80. Elected U. S. Senator, 1885.



TIMOTHY O. HOWE.

Born in Livermore, Me., Feb. 24, 1816. Received academic education. Elected State Legislature, 1845. Removed to Wisconsin same year. Elected Judge of Circuit and Supreme Courts, 1850. Resigned 1855. Elected to the U. S. Senate, 1861, '67, '73, as a Union Republican. Was succeeded by Matthew H. Carpenter, an eminent lawyer and Republican. Appointed Postmaster-General, Dec. 1881. Died March 25, 1883.



CHARLES O'CONOR.

Born in New York City, Jan., 1804. Member Constitutional Convention, 1840. Democrat Elector-at-Large, 1852. Nominated by Dem. National and Workingmen's Conventions for President, 1872. Was one of the ablest and most successful members of the American Bar, his services in the Forrest divorce suit, the Jumel estate litigation, and the prosecution of the Tweed Ring in 1871, being historic. Died, May 12, 1884.



GEORGE F. HOAR.

Born in Concord, Mass., Aug. 29, 1826. Graduate at Harvard College, 1846, and afterwards at the Dane Law School. Member State Legislature, 1852. State Senator, 1857. Elected to the 41st, 42d, 43d and 44th Congresses, and to the U. S. Senate, 1876, 1883. Delegate to Republican National Conventions, 1876, 1880, 1884; President of that of 1880. Member of Electoral Commission, Regent Smithsonian Institute, and President American Antiquarian Society.



JOHN T. MORGAN.

Born in Athens, Tenn., June 20, 1824. Admitted to the bar in Alabama, 1845. Presidential Elector, 1860. Delegate to State Convention which decided on Secession, 1861. Joined Confederate Army as private, May, 1861. Brig.-Gen., 1863. Presidential Elector, State-at Large, 1876. Elected U. S. Senator to fill vacancy, 1876. Re-elected, 1882.



J. PROCTOR KNOTT.

Born near Lebanon, Ky., Aug. 29, 1830. Removed to Missouri, 1850. Admitted to the bar, 1851. Appointed Att'y-Gen. of Mo., Aug, 1859, and elected to same position, Aug. 1862. Returned to Ky., 1863. Elected to the 40th, 41st, 44th, 45th 46th and 47th Congresses. Elected Governor, 1883.



HENRY W. SLOCUM.

Born in Delphi, N. Y., Sept. 24, 1827. Graduate at U. S. Military Academy, 1852. Practised law in Syracuse, N. Y., 1856-61, and was artillery instructor N. Y. Militia, 1859-61. Served in Union Army through Civil War. Maj-Gen. of Vols. 1862. Elected to the 41st, 42d and 48th Congresses as Congressman-at-Large. Democrat; lawyer; resident of Brooklyn and railroad manager.



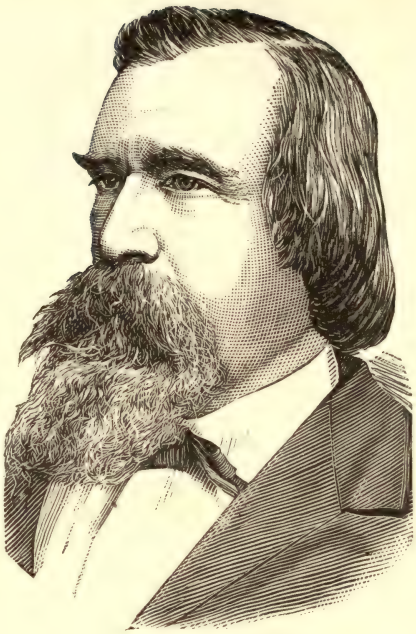
J. C. S. BLACKBURN.

Born in Woodford County, Ky., Oct. 1, 1838. Graduate at Centre College, 1857. Admitted to the bar, 1858, and practiced until 1861. Entered Confederate army 1861, serving through war. Resumed practice, 1865, and elected to the Legislature, 1871, '73. Elected to the 44th, 45th, 46th, 47th and 48th Congresses, and U. S. Senator, 1884.



JEFFERSON DAVIS.

Born in Kentucky, June 3, 1808. Graduate U. S. Military Academy, 1828. Was Colonel in Mexican War. U. S. Senator from Miss., 1847. Secretary of War under President Pierce. Withdrew from Senate on Mr. Lincoln's election. Chosen Provisional President Confederate States, Feb. 4, 1861; elected President, 1862. Captured at Irwinsville, Ga., May 10, 1865. Released on bail. 1867. Included in general amnesty, Dec. 25, 1868.



L. Q. C. LAMAR.

Born in Oxford, Ga., September 17, 1825. Graduate at Emory College, 1845. Admitted to the bar, 1847. Prof. of mathematics in Mississippi State University, 1849. Resigned from Congress when Miss. seceded, and entered Confederate army. On Confederate service in Russia, 1863. Re-elected Prof. in State University, 1866. Elected to 43d and 44th Congresses, and U. S. Senator, 1876, 1882. Appointed Secretary of Interior, March, 1885



ROBERT TOOMBS.

Born in Washington, Ga., July 2, 1810. Graduate Union College, N. Y., 1828. Admitted to the bar, 1830. Served in the Creek war; in the Georgia Legislature; in Congress from 1844 to 1853, when he was elected U. S. Senator, retiring on secession of Georgia. Secretary of State of the Confederate Government, Feb. 21, 1861, and Brig. Gen. Never accepted the general amnesty. Died December 15, 1885.



ALEXANDER H. STEPHENS.

Born in Taliaferro County, Ga., Feb. 11, 1812. Graduate Franklin College, 1832. Served in both branches State Legislature, 1836-42. Opposed the seccession of the State, but acquiesced in the act. Chosen Vice-President of the Confederate States, 1862. One of three Commissioners who conferred with President Lincoln, Feb. 1865. Arrested, confined in Fort Warren, but released, Oct, 11, 1865. Re-entered Congress, 1872. Author of two works on the Civil War. Died, March 4, 1883.



WINFIELD S. SCHLEY.

Born in Maryland, 1839. Graduate at U. S. Naval Academy, 1860. Distinguished himself throughout Civil War. Lieut.-Commander, 1866. Instructor at Naval Academy, 1867. Commander, 1874. Was the successful commandant of the Greely Relief Expedition to the Polar regions, finding the survivors of the party, June 22, 1884. Appointed chief of bureau, Navy Department, Washington, D. C., 1885.



ADOLPHUS W. GREELY.

Born at Newburyport, Mass., 1844. Entered the army as private, 1861. Mustered out volunteer service, 1867. Appointed to Regular Army, 1869. First Lieutenant, 5th Cavalry, 1873. In command of an expedition to establish meteorological stations on Lady Franklin Bay. Sailed from St. Johns, July 7, 1881. Two expeditions to rescue him failed, but a third, under Lieut.-Commander Schley, found him and six other survivors of his party, near mouth of Smith's Sound, June 22, 1884.



THOMAS ALVA EDISON.

"The Wizard of Electricity." Born in Milan, Ohio, Feb. 11, 1847. Was a newsboy in early life. Began his electrical experiments in Cincinnati, 1867. First invention was a method of sending two messages at once over a single wire. Invented the phonograph, and brought to perfection a system of electric lighting by incandescence. His patents on electrical apparatus number over 100.



GEORGE W. MELVILLE.

Born in New York City, Jan., 1841. Served as engineer in the navy in the Civil War. Engineer on Tigress in the cruise after the Polaris party. Engineer on Arctic exploring steamer Jeannette. Sailed from San Francisco, July, 1879. After the wrecking and separation of officers and crew into two parties, made successful search for Capt. DeLong's party, and found all dead, March, 1882.



OLIVER O. HOWARD.

Born in Leeds, Me., Nov. 8, 1830. Graduate at Bowdoin College, 1850, U. S. Military Academy, 1854. Col. of Maine Vols., and Brig.-Gen., 1861. Maj.-Gen. of Vols., 1862. Received thanks of Congress, 1864. Lost an arm at Fair Oaks. After the war was Commissioner of Freedmen's Bureau. Special Commissioner of Indian Affairs, and Supt. of U. S. Military Academy, 1881-2



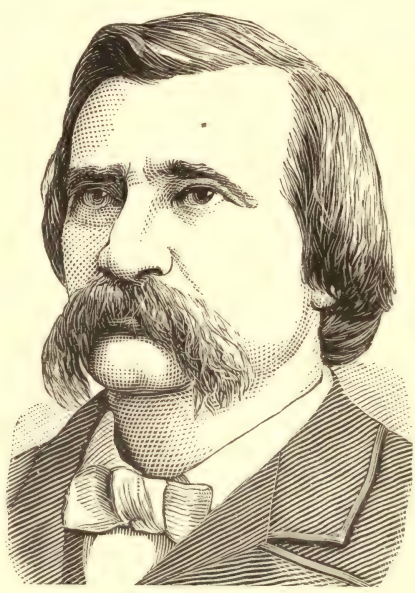
JAMES G. BLAINE.

Born in Washington County, Pa., January 3, 1830. Graduate at Washington College, Pa. Member of Maine Legislature 1859, '60, '61 and '62, serving last two years as Speaker. Member of seven Congresses and Speaker of three. Secretary of State in President Garfield's Cabinet; resigned after President Arthur's accession. Author of "Twenty Years of Congress." Republican candidate for President of U. S., 1884.



HUGH McCULLOCH.

Born in Kennebunk, Me., 1810. Admitted to the bar, 1833, and removed to Fort Wayne, Ind. Appointed Comptroller of the Currency, 1863. Was Secretary of the Treasury, March, 1865–1869. Reappointed Secretary of the Treasury, to succeed Walter Q. Gresham, after declining position on Tariff Commission, Oct. 28, 1884,



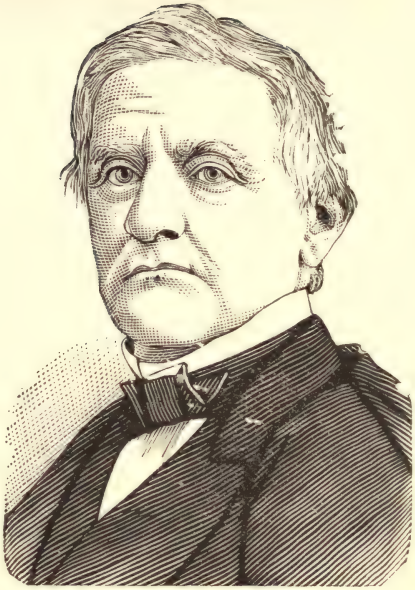
JOHN A. LOGAN.

Born in Jackson County, Ill., Feb. 9, 1824. Served through Mexican War. Graduate at Louisville Law School, Ky., 1851. Member of Legislature four years. Prosecuting Attorney, 1853-57. Presidential Elector, 1856. Resigned from 37th Congress to enter Union army. Attained rank of Maj.-Gen. Declined appointment as Minister to Mexico, 1865. Elected U. S. Senator, 1871, 1879, 1885. Republican candidate for Vice-President of U. S., 1884.



THOMAS A. HENDRICKS.

Born in Muskingum county, Ohio, Sept 7, 1819. Graduate at South Hanover College, Ind., 1840. Delegate to Ind. State Constitutional Convention, 1850. Commissioner Gen. Land Office, 1855-59. Defeated for Governor, 1860, but elected 1872. Defeated for Vice-President of the U. S., in 1876, by decision of Electoral Commission, on ticket with S. J. Tilden, and elected in 1884, on ticket with Grover Cleveland. Died suddenly, Nov. 25, 1885.



SAMUEL J. TILDEN.

Born in New Lebanon, N. Y., Feb. 9, 1814. Graduate at University of New York, 1834. Admitted to the bar in New York City. Was very active in politics until 1846, when he began to engage in great railroad litigations. Elected Governor of New York, 1874. Democratic candidate for President of the U. S., 1876. Claimed the election, but acquiesed in the decision of the Electors' Commission, which favored R. B. Hayes, Republican



AUGUSTUS H. GARLAND.

Born in Tipton county, Tenn., June 11, 1832. Removed to Arkansas in following year. Admitted to the bar, 1853. Opposed secession of Arkansas, but went with his State. Member of the Provisional Congress. Took part in drawing up Constitution of Confederate States. Elected U. S. Senator, 1866, but was refused admission, March 4, 1867. Elected Governor, 1874. Elected U. S. Senator, 1876, 1883. Appointed Attorney-General of the U. S., March, 1885.



SAMUEL J. RANDALL.

Born in Philadelphia, Pa., Oct. 10, 1828. Received academic education. Member of City Council, four years; of the State Senate, two. Member of the 38th, 39th, 40th, 41st, 42d, 43d, 44th, 45th, 46th, 47th, 48th and 49th Congresses. Speaker of last sessions of 44th, 45th and 46th Congresses. Long recognized as a Democratic leader.



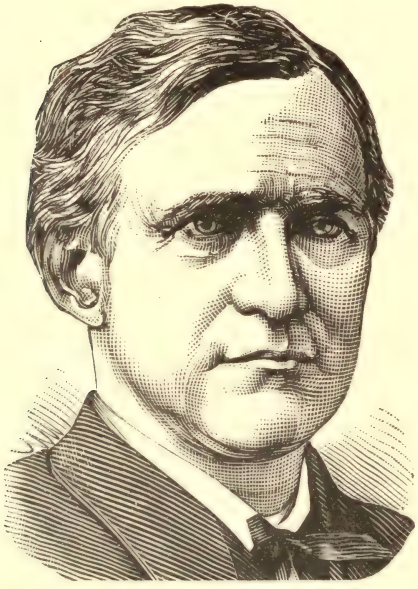
DANIEL MANNING.

Born in Albany, N. Y. Aug. 16, 1831. Connected with the Albany *Argus* from his 11th year. Delegate to Democratic National Conventions, 1876, 1884. Secretary State Committee, 1879, '80. Elected Chairman, 1881. President National Commercial Bank, Albany. Cast the vote of New York for Cleveland at National Convention, 1884. Appointed Secretary of the Treasury, March, 1885.



WILLIAM C. WHITNEY.

Born in Conway, Mass., 1839. Graduate at Williston Seminary and Harvard Law School, 1865. Admitted to the bar in New York City. Aided in the prosecution of the Tweed Ring. Seven years Corporation Counsel in New York, resigning, 1882. It was estimated that his saving to the city while its counsel, directly amounted to $2,000,000, and indirectly to much more. Appointed Secetary of the Navy, 1885.



THOMAS F. BAYARD.

Born in Wilmington, Del., Oct. 29, 1828. Called to the bar, 1851. Appointed U. S. Dist.-Att'y for Delaware, 1853. Elected to U. S. Senate to succeed his father, 1869. Re-elected 1875, '81. Member of Electoral Commission. Appointed Secretary of State, March, 1885. Was an earnest and constant advocate for true Civil Service reform, and did much to correct Custom House abuses.



WILLIAM C. ENDICOTT.

Born in Salem, Mass., 1827. Graduate at Harvard College, 1847. Admitted to the bar, 1850. Appointed Judge of Supreme Court, 1873; resigning in 1882 on account of poor health. Joined Democratic party, 1860. Appointed Secretary of War, March, 1885. He is a member of the Historical Society and of the Board of Overseers of Harvard College. Was never an active politician.

Declaration of Independence.

Fac-simile of the original document in the hand-writing of Thomas Jefferson.

[Copied by permission from the MS. in the Department of State, at Washington.]

A Declaration by the Representatives of the UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, in General Congress assembled.

When in the course of human events it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth the separate and equal station to which the laws of nature & of nature's god entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation.

We hold these truths to be self evident: that all men are created equal; that they are endowed by their creator with certain inalienable rights, that among these are life, liberty, & the pursuit of happiness; that to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed; that whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the right of the people to alter or to abolish it, & to institute new government, laying it's foundation on such principles & organising it's powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their safety & happiness. prudence indeed will dictate that governments long established should not be changed for light & transient causes: and accordingly all experience hath shewn that mankind are more disposed to suffer while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. but when a long train of abuses & usurpations, [begun at a distinguished period] & pursuing invariably the same object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such

government & to provide new guards for their future security. such has been the patient sufferance of these colonies. & such is now the necessity which constrains them to [expunge] their former systems of government. alter
the history of the present * King of Great Britain is a history of [unremitting] injuries and repeated
usurpations, [among which, appears no solitary fact to contradict the uniform tenor of the rest, but all of which have] in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over these states. to prove this, let facts be submitted to a candid world. [for the truth of which we pledge a faith yet unsullied by falsehood]

he has refused his assent to laws the most wholesome and necessary for the public good:

he has forbidden his governors to pass laws of immediate & pressing importance, unless suspended in their operation till his assent should be obtained, and when so suspended, he has utterly neglected to attend to them.

he has refused to pass other laws for the accomodation of large districts of people unless those people would relinquish the right of representation in the legislature, a right inestimable to them & formidable to tyrants only:

he has called together legislative bodies at places unusual, uncomfortable, & distant from the depository of their public records, for the sole purpose of fatiguing them into compliance with his measures:

he has dissolved Representative houses repeatedly [& continually] for opposing with manly firmness his invasions on the rights of the people:

he has refused for a long time after such dissolutions* to cause others to be elected, whereby the legislative powers, incapable of annihilation, have returned to the people at large for their exercise, the state remaining in the mean time exposed to all the dangers of invasion from without & convulsions within:

he has endeavored to prevent the population of these states; for that purpose obstructing the laws for naturalization of foreigners; refusing to pass others to encourage their migrations hither; & raising the conditions of new appropriations of lands:

he has [obstructed / suffered] the administration of justice [totally] to cease in some of these ~~colonies~~ [states] refusing his assent to laws for establishing judiciary powers:

he has made [our] judges dependant on his will alone, for the tenure of their offices, and amount [the & payment] of their salaries:

he has erected a multitude of new offices [by a self-assumed power,] & sent hither swarms of officers to harrass our people & eat out their substance:

he has kept among us in times of peace, ~~colonies~~ standing armies [& ships of war] [without the consent of our legislatures]

he has affected to render the military independent of & superior to the civil power:

he has combined with others to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our constitutions and unacknoleged by our laws; giving his assent to their [acts of] pretended ~~acts~~ of legislation, for quartering large bodies of armed troops among us;

for protecting them by a mock-trial from punishment for any murders which they should commit on the inhabitants of these states;

for cutting off our trade with all parts of the world;

for imposing taxes on us without our consent;

for depriving us [in many cases] of the benefits of trial by jury;

for transporting us beyond seas to be tried for pretended offences:

for abolishing the free system of English laws in a neighbouring province, establishing therein an arbitrary government and enlarging its boundaries so as to render it at once an example & fit instrument for introducing the same absolute rule into these ~~colonies~~ [states]

[abolishing our most ~~important~~ valuable Laws]

for taking away our Charters, [altering fundamentally] the forms of our governments,

for suspending our own legislatures & declaring themselves invested with power to legislate for us in all cases whatsoever.

he has abdicated government here, [withdrawing his governors, & declaring us out of his allegiance & protection:] [by declaring us out of his protection & waging war against us.]

he has plundered our seas, ravaged our coasts, burnt our towns & destroyed the lives of our people:

he is at this time transporting large armies [Scotch and other] foreign mercenaries to compleat the works of death, desolation & tyranny, already begun with circumstances ~~of~~ [scarcely] ~~in~~ the most barbarous ages, and totally

of cruelty & perfidy unworthy the head of a civilized nation.
He has excited domestic insurrections amongst us and has
He has endeavored to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers the merciless Indian
savages, whose known rule of warfare is an undistinguished destruction of
all ages, sexes, & conditions [of existence.]
[He has incited treasonable insurrections of our fellow-citizens with the
allurements of forfeiture & confiscation of our property
He has waged cruel war against human nature itself, violating it's most sa-
cred rights of life & liberty in the persons of a distant people who never of-
fended him, captivating & carrying them into slavery in another hemis-
phere, or to incur miserable death in their transportation thither. This
piratical warfare the opprobrium of infidel powers, is the warfare of the
Christian king of Great Britain [determined to keep open a market
where MEN should be bought & sold He has prostituted his negative
for suppressing every legislative attempt to prohibit or to restrain this
determining to keep open a market where MEN should be bought & sold:
execrable commerce: and that this assemblage of horrors might want no fact
of distinguished die, he is now exciting those very people to rise in arms
among us, and to purchase that liberty of which he has deprived them
by murdering the people upon whom he also obtruded them: thus paying
off former crimes committed against the liberties of one people, with crimes
which he urges them to commit against the lives of another]
In every stage of these oppressions we have petitioned for redress in the most humble
terms: our repeated petitions have been answered only by repeated injuries. a prince
whose character is thus marked by every act which may define a tyrant, is unfit
to be the ruler of a free people [who mean to be free] future ages will scarce believe
that the hardiness of one man, adventured within the short compass of twelve years
only, to lay a foundation so broad & unshaken for tyranny over a people fostered & fixed in principles
of freedom.]

Nor have we been wanting in attentions to our British brethren: we have
warned them from time to time of attempts by their legislature to extend an unwarrantable jurisdiction

-diction over [these our states] we have renounced. Them of the circumstances of our emigration & settlement here, [no one of which could warrant so strange a pretension: that these were effected at the expence of our own blood & treasure, unassisted by the wealth or the strength of Great Britain: that in constituting indeed our several forms of government, we had adopted one common king, thereby laying a foundation for perpetual league & amity with them: but that submission to their parliament was no part of our constitution, nor ever in idea if history may be credited: and] we have appealed to their native justice & magnanimity [as well as to] the ties of our common kindred to disavow these usurpations which [would inevitably interrupt our connection & correspondence. They too have been deaf to the voice of justice & of consanguinity, [& when occasions must therefore have been given them, by the regular course of their laws, of removing from their councils the disturbers of our harmony, they have by their free election re-established them in power. at this very time too they are permitting their chief magistrate to send over not only soldiers of our common blood, but Scotch & foreign mercenaries to invade & destroy us. these facts have given the last stab to agonizing affection, and manly spirit bids us to renounce for ever these unfeeling brethren. we must endeavor to forget our former love for them, and to hold them as we hold the rest of mankind, enemies in war, in peace friends. we might have been a free & a great people together; but a communication of grandeur & of freedom it seems is below their dignity. be it so since they will have it: the road to glory & happiness is open to us too; we will tread it apart from them, and] we must therefore acquiesce in the necessity which denounces our [eternal] separation!

We therefore the representatives of the United States of America in General Congress assembled, appealing to the supreme judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do in the name & by authority of the good people of these colonies [reject and renounce all allegiance & subjection to the kings of Great Britain & all others who may hereafter claim by, through, or under them; we utterly dissolve all political connection which may have heretofore subsisted between us & the people or parliament of Great Britain; and finally we do assert and declare these colonies to be free and independant states,

and that as free & independant States they ~~shall have~~ have full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, & to do all other acts and things which independant States may of right do. And for the support of this declaration, we mutually pledge to each other our lives, our fortunes, & our sacred honour.

John Hancock

Rob^t Morris
Benjamin Rush
Ben^j. Franklin
John Morton
Geo Clymer
Jam^s Smith
Geo Taylor
James Wilson
Geo Ross
Geo Read
Tho^s M:Kean
Gov^r Morris
Lewis Morris
Richd Stockton
Jno Witherspoon
Fras Hopkinson
John Hart
Abra Clark
Josiah Bartlett
Wm Whipple
Saml Adams
John Adams
Robt Treat Paine
Elbridge Gerry
Step Hopkins
William Ellery
Roger Sherman
Sam^l Huntington
Wm Williams
Oliver Wolcott
Matthew Thornton
Wm Hooper
Joseph Hewes
John Penn
Edward Rutledge
Thos Heyward Junr
Thos Lynch Junr
Arthur Middleton
Button Gwinnett
Lyman Hall
Geo Walton
Wm Paca
Thos Stone
Chas Carroll of Carrollton
Geo Wythe
Richard Henry Lee
Th^s Jefferson
Benj^a Harrison
Th^s Nelson Jr.
Francis Lightfoot Lee
Carter Braxton
Robert Morris
Benjamin Rush
Benj^a Franklin
John Morton
Geo Clymer
Jam^s Smith
Geo Taylor
James Wilson
Geo Ross
Caesar Rodney
Geo Read
Tho M:Kean
Step Hopkins
William Ellery
Roger Sherman
Sam^l Huntington
Wm Williams
Oliver Wolcott
Matthew Thornton
Josiah Bartlett
Wm Whipple
Saml Adams
John Adams
Robt Treat Paine
Elbridge Gerry
Francis Lightfoot Lee
Carter Braxton

Francis Lightfoot Lee
Carter Braxton Benj. Harrison
Caesar Rodney Tho. Nelson jr.
Geo. Read Matthew Thornton
Tho. M. Kean Step. Hopkins
Edward Rutledge William Ellery
Roger Sherman
Thos. Heyward Junr.
Thomas Lynch Junr.
Charles Carroll of Carrollton
Arthur Middleton
Geo. Clymer
Geo. Wythe Jas. Smith
Sam.l Huntington
Richard Henry Lee Wm. Williams
Josiah Bartlett Oliver Wolcott
Wm. Whipple John Adams
Sam.l Adams Robt. Treat Paine
Th. Jefferson Elbridge Gerry

OUR NATIONAL GOVERNMENT, AND HOW IT IS ADMINISTERED.

GOVERNMENT is necessary for the restraint of disorderly persons and for the security of justice. It is the manifestation of organized social power. Its primary and necessary functions are to maintain the peace and to execute justice between different members of society.

Where there is no transgression there is no necessity for law. Every citizen has a natural right to defend his life and property from injury. The collective body of citizens have the right to organize power for the general good—in other words, to create a Government, which, therefore, justly derives its powers from the will and consent of the governed—THE PEOPLE.

According to this fundamental principle the people of the United States, in representative convention assembled, established a National Government in republican form, having its functions prescribed by a written declaration adopted by the people and known as the *Constitution of the United States.*

THE GOVERNMENT.

The National Government is composed of three co-ordinate departments—namely:

1. THE LEGISLATIVE, or that which makes the laws.
2. THE EXECUTIVE, or that which enforces the laws.
3. THE JUDICIAL, or that which interprets the laws and administers justice.

These powers are lodged in different hands. The body which makes the laws has nothing to do with the enforcement of them, while the judicial department is independent of the legislative and executive departments.

LEGISLATIVE DEPARTMENT.

The legislative power is vested in a Congress of representatives of the people. It consists of a *Senate* and *House of Representatives.* The members of the former are chosen by the several State Legislatures, and those of the latter are chosen directly by the people by secret ballots.

REPRESENTATIVES.—A representative, when chosen, must be twenty-five years of age, a citizen of the United States six years, and an inhabitant of the State in which he is chosen.

The number of representatives of each State is determined by the population of the State. In order to keep the number of the members of the House of Representatives about the same the ratio of representatives is changed from time to time. For example, in 1792 the apportionment was 33,000 inhabitants to every representative; in 1870 the number was 138,000 inhabitants to every representative.

When a vacancy happens in the representation of a State the executive authority of such State issues writs of election to fill such vacancy.

The representatives choose their own presiding officer (the "Speaker") and others, and have the sole power of impeachment.

SENATE.—A Senator, when chosen, must be thirty years of age, nine years a citizen of the United States, and an inhabitant of the State for which he is chosen.

Each State is entitled to two Senators, without regard to its population. They are chosen for a term of six years. Each Senator has one vote.

The Vice-President of the United States is President of the Senate, but has no vote unless they be equally divided.

The Senate has the sole power to try all impeachments. When sitting as such high court it is the duty of the Chief Justice of the United States to preside, and no person may be convicted without the concurrence of two-thirds of the members of the Senate present.

BOTH HOUSES.—The two Houses of Congress meet at the same time and place, in separate chambers. Each House is the judge of the elections, returns, and qualifications of its own members. A majority in each House constitutes a quorum.

Each House determines its own rules of proceeding, may punish its members, and, with the concurrence of two-thirds of the members present, may expel a member.

Neither House during the session of Congress may, without the consent of the other, adjourn for more than three days, nor to any other place than that in which the two Houses may be sitting.

Members of both Houses are privileged from arrest (except in cases of treason, felony, or breach of peace) during their attendance at the sessions of their respective Houses, or going to or returning from the same. Nor may they be questioned in any other place for any speech or words in debate in either House.

No person holding office under the United States may be a member of either House during his continuance in office.

The existence of each Congress is limited to two years.

POWERS OF CONGRESS.

Congress is vested with sovereign powers to levy and collect taxes and provide for the national defence; to borrow money; to regulate commerce with foreign nations and among the several States; to coin money; to punish counterfeiters; to establish post-routes and post-offices; to grant patents and copyrights; to declare war, carry it on on land and sea (but not to make appropriations, for the purpose, for a longer time than for two years), and conclude peace; to create and maintain a navy; to call forth the militia of the several States in certain contingencies, and to enact all laws necessary for the execution of the powers granted them. But Congress may not suspend the privilege of the writ of *habeas corpus* unless where the public safety may require it; pass a bill of attainder or *ex-post-facto* law; lay a tax or duty on inter-State exchanges of commodities; give commercial preference to any port; subject vessels bound to or from one State to enter, to clear, or pay duties in another State; cause money to be drawn from the public treasury, excepting appropriations made by law; grant any title of nobility, nor allow any person holding any office of profit or trust under the United States, without the consent of Congress, to accept any gift from any foreign power while holding such office.

MODE OF PASSING LAWS.

All bills for raising revenue must originate in the House of Representatives. Every bill must have the concurrence of both Houses, and then be presented to the President of the United States. If approved by him he signs it and it becomes law; if not approved he returns it with his written objections. This is called a *veto*. Then it may be reconsidered, and, if passed by a vote of two-thirds of each House, it becomes a law without the signature of the President.

Every order, resolution, or vote to which the concurrence of the two Houses may be necessary (excepting on a question of adjournment) is presented to the President of the United States, and may take the course of a bill.

The enumerated powers vested in Congress are denied to the several States which compose the Republic.

THE STATES.

The several States of the Republic are *independent* in a degree, but not *sovereign*. By the provisions of the National Constitution they are denied the exercise of the functions of sovereign power.

Originally there were thirteen States in the Union. Since then the process of forming a new State is by erecting a prescribed domain of the Republic into a *Territory* and organizing a Territorial government, administered by a chief magistrate and other officers appointed by the President of the United States, by and with the consent of the Senate. The Territory has a Legislature to enact laws of local application, but Congress may reject any of them. The inhabitants elect a delegate who represents them in Congress, tells that body what the Territory needs, but has no vote. The people of a Territory do not vote for President of the United States. When a Territory contains a specified number of inhabitants a convention may be called, a State Constitution formed and adopted, and application be made to Congress for the admission of the Territory into the Union as an independent State. The application may be rejected, and there is no appeal but to another Congress. If permitted to become a State it immediately assumes State powers and takes its position as an equal of the other States according to its ability.

When a new State is formed or erected within the jurisdiction of any other State, or formed by the junction of two or more States or parts of States, the consent of the Legislatures of the States concerned and of Congress must first be obtained.

Congress must guarantee to every State in the Union a republican form of government, and protect all from invasion when required by the proper authorities of a State or States so invaded.

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT.

The executive power of the Republic is vested in a President of the United States, whose term of office is limited to four years. He is eligible to re-election indefinitely. His power is co-ordinate but not coequal with that of the Legislative Department. He is the agent to execute the will of Congress expressed by laws.

The method of choosing a President and Vice-President is prescribed in the Twelfth Amendment to the National Constitution (see page xx. of the Supplement).

The President is commander-in-chief of the Army and Navy of the United States; also of the militia of the several States when called into the actual service of the Republic.

With the advice and consent of the Senate, the President makes treaties with foreign Powers and the Indians within the Republic; appoints ambassadors and other representatives of the Government in foreign lands, also judges of the Supreme Court and all other officers of the National Government whose appointment is not otherwise provided for. He has power to fill official vacancies during the recess of the Senate.

It is the duty of the President to convene Congress when extraordinary occasions may require a session; to give to Congress, when in session, from time to time, information concerning the state of the Republic, and to recommend measures for their consideration; to receive ambassadors and other public ministers, and to take care that all the laws shall be faithfully executed.

The President may be removed from office on impeachment for high crimes and misdemeanors.

JUDICIAL DEPARTMENT.

The judicial power of the United States is vested in one Supreme Court, sitting at the National Capital, together with such inferior courts as Congress may, from time to time, establish in various parts of the Union. The judges of the Supreme Court and inferior United States courts hold their offices during good behavior.

The jurisdiction of the National Judiciary extends to all cases of law and equity arising under the Constitution of the United States; the laws of the United States and treaties made under their authority; all laws affecting ambassadors, other ministers, and consuls of the United States; controversies in which the United States may be a party; controversies between two or more States, between a State and citizens of another State, and between citizens of different States, but not to any suit in law or equity commenced or prosecuted against one of the States by citizens of another State or by citizens or subjects of any foreign State.

The Supreme Court has original jurisdiction in all cases affecting ambassadors, other public ministers, and consuls, and those in which a State may be a party. In all other cases it has appellate jurisdiction both as to law and fact.

ADMINISTRATION OF THE GOVERNMENT.

The President administers the laws through the advice and assistance of seven cabinet ministers, who are each at the head of a separate executive department. Five of these ministers are denominated "Secretaries."

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENTS.

The Executive Departments are known respectively as of the *State*, of *Finance* or the *Treasury*, of *War*, of the *Navy*, of the *Interior*, of the *Post-Office*, and of *Justice*.

THE STATE DEPARTMENT is in charge of the Secretary of State. It has two branches—namely, the *Diplomatic* and the *Consular*. It has a Disbursing Agent, a Translator, Clerks of Appointment and Commissions, of the Rolls and Archives, of Territorial Business, and of Pardons and Passports; also a Superintendent of Statistics. The *Diplomatic branch* has charge of all correspondence between the

Department and other diplomatic agents of the United States abroad, and those of foreign powers accredited to the Government. The *Consular branch* has charge of all correspondence between the Department and the consuls and commercial agents of the United States.

THE FINANCE OR TREASURY DEPARTMENT is in charge of the Secretary of the Treasury, who has as assistants a First and Second Comptroller of the Treasury, a Commissioner of Customs, six Auditors, each charged with distinct functions, a Treasurer a Register, a Solicitor, and a Comptroller of the Treasury. He has under his direction a Light-House Board, a Bureau of Construction, the United States Coast Survey, the Internal Revenue, and the United States Mints. He has the general supervision of the financial transactions of the Government, and is charged with the execution of the laws concerning commerce and navigation.

THE WAR DEPARTMENT is under the control of the Secretary of War, who is charged with all business pertaining to the Army and the supervision of all fortifications, arsenals, and stores, also of the Weather Signal Service. He has under his control the offices of the Commanding General of the Army, the Adjutant-General, the Quartermaster General, the Paymaster-General, the Commissary-General, the Surgeon-General, the Engineer's Office, the Topographical Office, the Ordnance Office, and the Office of Refugees and Freedmen; also the Military Academy at West Point. These titles indicate the functions of the respective bureaus.

THE NAVY DEPARTMENT is under the control of the Secretary of the Navy, who is charged with all business pertaining to that branch of the service. That business is conducted through the aid of eight bureaus—namely, of Yards and Docks, of Navigation, of Ordnance, of Construction and Repairs, of Equipment and Recruiting, of Provisions and Clothing, of Steam-Engineering, and of Medicine and Surgery. These several titles indicate the functions of the respective bureaus. The Secretary of the Navy has control of the Marine Corps, a military organization attached to the Navy.

THE INTERIOR DEPARTMENT is in charge of the Secretary of the Interior, who has the care and management of the Public Lands, of Pensions, of the Indians, of the Patent Office, of the Department of Agriculture, and the Bureau of Education.

THE POST-OFFICE DEPARTMENT is in charge of the Postmaster-General. The business of this Department is distributed among several bureaus, as follows: the Appointment Office, in charge of the First Assistant Postmaster-General; the Contract Office, including the Inspection Division, in charge of the Second Assistant Postmaster-General; the Finance Office, in charge of the Third Assistant Postmaster-General, who has also charge of the Dead-Letter Office; and the Money Order Office, in charge of the Superintendent.

THE DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE is in charge of the Attorney-General of the United States. Its ordinary duties may be classified as follows:

1. Official opinions on the current business of the Government.
2. Examinations of the titles of land purchased for sites of public works.
3. Applications for pardons in all cases of conviction in the courts of the United States.
4. Applications for appointment in all the judicial and legal departments of the Government.
5. The conduct and argument of all suits in the Supreme Court of the United States in which the Government is concerned.
6. The supervision of all other suits arising in any of the Departments, when referred to the Attorney-General.

THE STORY

OF

A GREAT NATION.

INTRODUCTION.

The spirit of Discovery awakened in Europe—The great advantage of the Crusades to Trade—Missionaries and Merchants—What was known of the Atlantic Ocean—The wonderful Island of St. Brendan—Iceland and Greenland—Discoveries on the Coast of Africa—The Madeira Islands—Italy the School of Geography.

At the beginning of the Christian era, the Roman Empire extended over all Southern and Western Europe as far as Britain, over Northern Africa, and the Levant. There was regular intercourse through all the vast empire, and there was trade with countries lying beyond. After the Roman Empire fell, barbarians overran many parts of Europe, and the Mohammedans gained Africa and the East. When new countries were formed, there was little trade, and people had only scanty knowledge of distant parts, even in Europe. The only people who traveled far, were pilgrims who used to go to the Holy Land. The ill-treatment given to the pilgrims by the Mohammedans led to the wars known as the Crusades, in which most of the Christian kingdoms of the West united to recover Palestine from the hands of the Saracens. The expeditions sent out failed to wrest it from them, but they made the East known to the marines and merchants who began to trade with those distant countries.

One great and good result came forth from the Crusades, although they failed in their main object. People learned more of the East, of its science its fabrics, its plants, its riches of every kind. A spirit of travel was awakened. Missionaries set out to announce the gospel to distant lands; merchants hastened to open new avenues of trade. All Europe was astir. The accounts brought back by Carpini and Rubruquis, who penetrated into Tartary, opened a new world. Then Marco Polo, the greatest of early travellers, pushed on till he reached Cathay, or China, and astonished men with his accounts of the strange people of that land. Catalani next described the wonders of Asia, and Mandeville gave a book of travels in which he introduced the most extraordinary stories. Then commerce reawakened from its long sleep, and trade between the various Christian States, and between them and distant lands, was extended with remarkable rapidity. In the commercial operations which sprang up, Genoa and Venice took the lead: their ships were not confined to the Mediterranean, but sought the shores of the Atlantic The sciences of Geography and Navigation became in Italy favorite studies, and were cultivated to an extent not common in other parts of Europe, with rare exceptions.

But most of the Kings of those times were too much taken up with wars and pleasures to give any attention to such severe studies, or encourage them as they should. Italy, where there were free Republics, full of commercial activity, and then the religious centre of Christendom, had the most learned geographers and navigators, as well as the most skillful naval commanders.

Other nations, therefore, for several centuries, looked as a matter of course to Italy for the latest improvements in all that regarded navigation and the sea. Kings even hired ships from these Italian Republics to aid

them in their wars. This will explain to us why so many Italian navigators took part in the early discoveries of America—Columbus, Cabot Vespucius, Verrazzani.

But the explorers did not all go by the way of the Mediterranean. The people on the shores of the Atlantic had from the earliest times made voyages that seem incredible when we know the wretched kind of vessels in which they sailed. The earliest known vessels of the British isles were coracles, and our readers would hardly think of venturing out to sea in them now. They were simply a strong basket of wicker-work, covered with a hide drawn tightly over it while still soft.

In these flimsy boats the natives of the British Isles ventured out to sea, crossed over to the mainland of Europe, and even carried on warlike and piratical expeditions.

As the West was converted to Christianity, zealous missionaries set out in these coracles to carry the truth to parts which were yet Pagan. The most famous of all these early voyages is that of St. Brendan, Abbot of Clonfert, who died in 577, in the western part of Ireland. This brave and adventurous missionary sailed with a party of companions, born and bred like himself on that wild coast, out into the Atlantic, in vessels of wicker and ox hides, and evidently reached Iceland. His authentic narrative was soon lost sight of, but the minstrels and story-tellers made his voyage the most popular narrative of the Middle Ages. According to the story in this form, of which there are many versions in different languages, he met floating islands made of crystal, with churches, houses, and palaces, and all the furniture in them of the same sparkling material. He mistook a large sleeping fish for an island, and his party, landing on it unawares, was nearly engulfed. He finally came to an island, where there was a mountain of fire, evidently the mouth of hell,

and where devils, by hurling fiery stones at them, drove them from the shores. Interwoven with all this are meetings with hermits and wonderful personages. It is easy to see the icebergs in this, and understand how the story grew; the whale is easily recognized; and in the volcanic island we see Iceland with its Mount Hecla. The natives flocking to the shore to oppose the new comers were naturally supposed to be hurling the stones which came from the volcano.

When Iceland was subsequently discovered and colonized, and thus took its place in geography, no one thought of identifying it with St. Brendan's Island; but out of his story grew two islands, the island of Demons, which in most early maps figures on the northwest coast of America from Labrador to Greenland: and a second St. Brendan's Isle which was supposed to be off the Canaries. This island, the story grew, used to appear and then vanish, and the traditions of Spain and other countries made it the residence of some great personage in their history, whom the people believed to be living in a sort of retirement, to reappear one day in this world and save his country.

A volume would scarcely contain all that has been written about St. Brendan's voyage and his wonderful island.

But the existence of St. Brendan's island west of the Canaries was long so firmly believed, that expeditions were frequently sent out to reach it. They returned unsuccessful, or perished and were no more heard of. Articles from the shores of America driven on the Azores and Canaries were all naturally supposed to come from St. Brendan's Island, and kept up the common faith in its existence. All this made men familiar with the thought of voyages out into the unexplored waters.

Under the leadership of Ingulph they colonized Iceland in the ninth century, and that remote island became before long a centre of learning and religion in the north. Soon after, Eric the Red discovered and colonized Greenland in the 10th century. At this time these Northmen were all pagans, fierce and cruel. Leif, the son of Eric, however, returning to Norway became a Christian, and in the year 1000 brought out clergy who converted the pagan settlers in Greenland.

As we now know that land, we can scarcely conceive how a colony could have been planted and grown up on that desolate shore. But it is evident that it was then washed by the Gulf Stream, and enjoyed a comparatively mild climate.

The settlement of the Northmen in Greenland subsisted down to the middle of the fifteenth century, and there is extant a bull of Pope Nicholas as late as 1450, recommending the piety of the Bishop of Garda, who had erected a fine church at that place in Greenland : and the ruins of this church have, it is thought, been recently discovered.

But if these hardy Northmen had passed beyond St. Brendan's, they too had their strange lands further on. One was White Man's Land or Greater Ireland : the other was a country called Vinland, or land of Vines, to which some of their people actually went.

From the vague account given in one of the Icelandic sagas or poems as to Vinland, many attempts have been made to decide exactly where it was : Nearly two hundred years ago, a very learned little book called "A History of Ancient Vinland," was published at Copenhagen, and within a year or two an American scholar has been endeavoring to explain it all, but there are not many who put much faith in the matter and those who believe that the Old Mill at Newport is a Scandinavian ruin, erected by the early Northmen, are very few indeed.

The people of the North were thus actually colonizing the New World; but while the declining settlement in Greenland was struggling for existence against the Esquimaux or Skroelings, who had become very hostile, and finally destroyed it utterly, the people of Southern Europe seem not to have made any attempts in this direction. Some, however, think that the hardy Bretons of France, and the Basques, a maritime people, living in France and Spain on the shores of the Bay of Biscay, reached Newfoundland at an early day and there began to take codfish; but they were not learned navigators; they wrote no books and drew no maps.

The great mariners of southern Europe were, however, pushing discoveries in another direction. As the Crusades had failed, Asia Minor and Egypt remained in the hands of the Mohammedans, who viewed all Christians passing through their land with jealousy. If the Christian ships could sail around Africa and so reach the rich lands of India and Cathay, they might carry on a profitable trade, with which the Saracens and Turks could not interfere. The Carthaginians were said to have done it. So the minds of men began to turn in that direction.

About the middle of the fourteenth century French vessels began to trade down the coast of Africa, and actually reached Guinea. Genoese and Catalans discovered the Canaries, and the island of Madeira was next added to the list of discoveries.

As to the discovery of Madeira, so called from a Portuguese word meaning wood, the island having been found covered with beautiful trees, a very romantic story is told.

In the reign of Edward III., Anna d'Arfet, a noble young English lady, fell in love with a poor young man named Robert Macham. As her family were endeavoring to force her to a marriage with a wealthy

suitor whom she loathed, they resolved to fly to France. To facilitate their plans, a friend of Robert entered the service of Anna's guardians as a groom, and was thus able to attend her on her daily rides near the seashore, and arrange the plans of the lovers. Robert found a vessel suited for their purpose, and when it was ready, she rode down to meet the small boat in which he was to come ashore for her. Their secret had however been discovered. As she neared the shore and recognized her lover's boat approaching, she heard a clatter of hoofs and saw her pursuers approaching. She spurred her spirited steed into the surf, riding as far as he would bear her, and thus was received by Robert, completely discomfiting her pursuers. The vessel, though with but a scanty crew, at once hoisted sail. But the next day a terrible storm came on. Day came and went, with no cessation of the tempest, and the frail vessel, driven before the gale, was hurried into strange seas. No land was seen till on the thirteenth day, green hills, rich in tropical vegetation, greeted their eyes. Robert and Anna landed with a few of those on board, and were delighted with the beauties of the new-found isle ; but before they had recovered from the fatigues of their terrible voyage another storm drove their vessel off. They were on the Island of Madeira, separated from Christendom. Poor Anna, worn out by by her hardships and excitement, could not rally even in this beautiful spot—she sank rapidly, and died the third day. Robert buried her at the foot of a tree where she had spent much of her time in prayer ; but his own days were sealed. In less than a week he too breathed his last, and was laid beside her. Their comrades hastened to leave a spot fraught with such melancholy memories. They succeeded in reaching the coast of Morocco in their small boat, to find their former comrades of the vessel already in slavery there. A Spaniard, also held in bond-

age, learning their story, was able after his return to Spain to guide a Portuguese ship to the island tomb of the unfortunate lovers. Such is the romantic story of the discovery of Madeira.

The Azores, or Vulture Islands, were next discovered in 1448 by Dom Gonzalo Vello, Commander of Almouros, and on Corvo, one of the islands of this group a statue was found, with an inscription on the pedestal in strange characters that none could decipher. And this statue, so the story goes, pointed westward with its right hand, as if to show that there the great discovery was to be made.

The next year Anthony Nolli, a Genoese navigator, discovered the Cape Verde Islands.

Meanwhile in Europe students had taken up the ancient geographers Ptolemy and Strabo. Editions of Ptolemy were printed with all the later discoveries. Maps were drawn, and all who sought to advance in the sea service studied and compared what was handed down from the past with what was discovered day by day.

There was at that time in Europe a thoughtful, studious man, making marine charts and maps for sea captains, selling books of geography to students, though doubtless studying well every book before he parted with it, for many of his books still preserved are covered with his notes. He was a man of action, too ; he could command a ship and guide it skillfully in the fiercest of storms, or on the least frequented coasts. Nor was he lacking in bravery. He had met the Mohammedan corsairs and repulsed them, though he bore scars that showed how dear victory cost him. This man was to make a discovery that would throw in the shade the discoveries of all before him, change completely the current of men's thoughts, and raise up a new order of things. This man was Christopher Columbus.

PART I.

CHAPTER I.

The early Life of Christopher Columbus — His first Voyages — Terrible Naval Engagement near Lisbon—His wonderful Escape—His Scheme of crossing the Atlantic—Genoa, Venice and Portugal refuse to aid him—Home in Genoa—At Palos—Father Marchena and the Convent of Santa Maria de la Rabida—He starts for the Court of Ferdinand and Isabella.

GENOA, one of the great commercial republics of Italy, a city of long historic fame, was the birthplace of Christopher Columbus. His family were genteel—not above honest toil, but people of culture. His father Dominic possessed some small property at Genoa and places near it, and at the same time was a comber and weaver of wool. They were therefore comfortably off, and Christopher was born in a house belonging to his father outside the city walls where the road winds off to the little town of Bassagno. Tradition, which recent proof sustains, shows that the future glory of Genoa was baptized on the hillside church of Santo Stefano di Arco by the Benedictines who presided there.

He was the eldest son, and the hope of the house. His father sought to give him an opportunity to acquire knowledge greater than his own home afforded him. The commencement of an education had been laid in Genoa, and before he reached his tenth year Christopher was sent to Pavia. Here some one attached to the University for three years in-

structed the boy, who evidently showed aptness for learning, and diligence. At his early age he could not have followed the course of the University, but he acquired the rudiments, a knowledge of Latin, and some insight into mathematics. But he was naturally a student and a lover of books.

Back again to the narrow street of Genoa, where his father's place of business was, came the boy, his imagination fired by the glimpse into learning, the open sea beckoning him to its life of adventure and freedom. Obedient to his father, whom he ever honored through life, he took his place in the workshop and sought to mould himself to the quiet life of commerce. But he yearned for action in the career where his grand-uncle was already famous.

At fourteen he was already on shipboard. Docile, prompt, eager to learn, eager to advance, he was one to win his way with his commander and with all. His voyages carried him over most of the Mediterranean, from the Straits of Gibraltar to the Archipelago. That sea was at that time swept by corsairs which sailed under the Crescent, and made war on all Christian flags. Every merchant-ship went armed, and a sea-fight was often the incident of a voyage. Young Christopher in one of these engagements received a deep wound, which, though healed at the time, broke out in his later years and endangered his life.

In 1459 Christopher had become an officer under his grand-uncle, who commanded a fleet for King René, of Anjou, then seeking to win his kingdom of Naples. It is evident that young Christopher did his duty well, for René sent him in command of a vessel to cut out a galley from Tunis, which had become notorious for its ravages on Christian commerce.

A few years after this we find him on the Atlantic, commanding a

vessel in a Genoese fleet, under Colombo il Mozo. His native State was at war with the sister republic of Venice, and they were on the lookout for some rich vessels of the Queen of the Adriatic. They finally came upon them between Lisbon and Cape Saint Vincent. It was a sad spectacle to see Italians thus arrayed against each other, but,



CONVENT OF SANTA MARIA LA RABIDA AT PALOS.

as is usual in such wars, the feeling was intense on both sides. All day long the Venetians gallantly resisted the attack of the Genoese. Christopher Columbus had grappled one of the Venetians, and in the hand to hand fight on her deck had nearly forced her to yield, when she took fire. In a moment both vessels were in flames. But the ships were so

bound together by spars and cordage, as well as grappling-irons, that Columbus was unable to disengage his vessel from her burning antagonist. The combat ceased, and as the fires would soon communicate to the powder, the recent antagonists plunged into the sea, the only rivalry being to reach the shore, which a line of breakers showed them some five miles distant. Columbus struck out manfully, spent as he was with the terrible fight, but in his exhausted state he would never have reached the shore had not Providence thrown in his way a large oar, by the aid of which he at last reached land, to turn and look back on the sea, beneath which lay all that remained of the noble vessel he so lately commanded.

At Lisbon, which he had thus strangely reached, he found his brother Bartholomew making and selling charts, and dealing in books of navigation, the great Prince Henry having made Lisbon a resort of experienced naval men. The society of these men was very attractive to Christopher, who, joining his brother in business, made it lucrative enough to enable him to send remittances to his father, whose commercial affairs had not prospered. While perfecting his knowledge of geography and arriving at the final theory as to transatlantic voyages, he married Doña Philippa Perestrello, daughter of an Italian navigator who had made many voyages of exploration and died Governor of Porto Santo, one of the Madeira Islands. The papers of this navigator aided him still more, and King Alphonsus, at one of his audiences, showed Columbus some enormous reeds that had been driven across the Atlantic. As early as 1474, we know, by letters of the celebrated Italian cosmographer Toscanelli, that Columbus had already laid before him his plan of reaching Cathay by sailing westward, and that his motive was the extension of Christianity. But he was not yet ready to

submit his plan to the world. This he did in 1476. Like a true son of Genoa he first proposed it to that republic; but they shrunk from undertaking to test it. Venice viewed it with no greater favor.

Discouraged at this, Columbus, weary of the shore and study, from time to time made short voyages, with some extending to the German Ocean and to the north Atlantic, even beyond Iceland.

At last there came an opportunity to lay his favorite plan before the King of Portugal, who began to show an interest in new discoveries. The plan of Columbus was referred to a committee of learned men, one of them being a cosmographer of some note. They rejected it as unwise; but the King favored it so much, that listening to unworthy advice, he secretly sent off a vessel to test the soundness of the views of the Genoese navigator. Providence did not permit treachery to succeed. Columbus, crushed with disappointment and afflicted by the death of his faithful, loving wife, fled from Lisbon in 1484, taking by the hand his son Diego, and was soon once more in Genoa.

But he could not rest. His faith in his plan was intense, and he was no longer of an age when he could waste time in inaction. Again he endeavored to enlist the Republic of Genoa, and failing he set out with young Diego for Spain, entering it unheralded and unknown.

A little out of the petty seaport town of Palos, in Southern Spain, on a high promontory looking over the sea, nestled in the pines that clothe its summit stood a little Franciscan convent, built on the ruins of an old pagan shrine. At the door of this rambling old-time structure Columbus one day knocked, as many a wayfarer did, to ask a little refreshment for his son. The Guardian of the Convent, Friar John Perez de Marchena, entered as he was admitted, and, struck by the whole bearing of the stranger, asked him of the object of his journey. From one in his

guise, the reply was strange enough. He was from Italy on his way to Court to lay an important plan before the Kings, for so Spaniard always called Ferdinand and Isabella, each being monarch of a separate state.

If Padre Marchena was surprised to find his strange guest a man of such ability and enterprising mind, Columbus was no less delighted to find in the Guardian of the little convent of Santa Maria de la Rabida, not only a kind-hearted man, but one of great learning, scientific attainments, and an excellent cosmographer, prized especially by Queen Isabella for his wonderful acquirements and his solid piety and humility, which induced him to prefer hiding his abilities at Palos, rather than display them in the sunshine of the Court.

A friendship was at once formed, close and strong, between the two men, and the deep religious feeling of Columbus, and his studies, made their union lasting. Columbus and his son became the welcome guests of the friars, and in this haven Columbus enjoyed a repose to which he had long been a stranger. Here, guided by this learned man, he extended his studies, and spent much time in prayer. At last, with a higher, nobler courage, with his plan more firm than ever, and an array of learning to maintain it, he set out for the court, bearing a letter strongly commending his project to a man of great influence with the sovereigns. With the freedom of a Friend this good man obtained and handed him a sum of money to meet his expenses, and crowned his friendly acts by taking on himself the care of young Diego's education and support. Columbus now bent his way to Cordova, to renew proposals that had been elsewhere rejected

CHAPTER II.

Position of the Spanish Kingdoms — Columbus at Court—His Plan rejected—Employed by Queen Isabella — Returns to Palos in order to go to France — Padre Marchena again — Queen Isabella resolves to send him out—The little Fleet fitted out at Palos—The Portuguese endeavor to defeat his Voyage—The open Sea—Alarm of Sailors—Land !—He takes Possession in the Name of Isabella—Voyage Home—The Portuguese again—Enters Lisbon —Received by the King—At Palos—Pinzon and Columbus—The Discoverer proceeds to Court to announce his success.

THE condition of Spain at this period was a peculiar one, not easily understood without a knowledge of its past history.

When the Roman Empire fell, under the attack of the hordes of barbarians who overran it, and planted new kingdoms in various parts, Spain fell into the hands of the Goths, a warlike race who sprang from what is now called Sweden. These Goths became Christians and ruled over Spain for many years, till in the year 711, the Saracens or Moors, who had embraced the religion of Mohammed and conquered all the northern part of Africa, arrived at the straits between Spain and Africa, then called the Pillars of Hercules, but was now to be called Gibraltar, the mountain of Tarifa, one of their leaders.

It depended now on the Goths, whether the religion of Mohammed should enter Europe, or be checked. The Goths were brave, but their king was a wicked tyrant, and his nobles were so incensed at him that some of them actually invited in the Saracens, who reduced all Christians to slavery, giving them no choice between the Koran and the sword, death or the religion of Mohammed.

Roderic, the last of the Gothic kings, met the Saracens in battle in Xerez, and after a bloody engagement was totally defeated and slain, though many believed that he escaped and was shut up, doing penance in some cave or some lonely island, to reappear one day and recover his kingdom.

But the Gothic monarchy fell at Xerez. The Saracens swept over Spain, reducing it all to their power. Only a few brave Christians, under a prince named Pelayo, retiring to the mountains of Asturias, defied the Saracens, and after defeating them in several battles secured their independence.

Meanwhile, the Saracens established kingdoms, which ruled with great splendor and magnificence, cultivating art and science. But the little Christian kingdom of Pelayo gained strength, and other Christian kingdoms were gradually formed as they recovered part of the land from the Saracens. Of these the most important were Aragon and Castile, and on the Atlantic, that of Portugal. At last, Ferdinand, king Aragon, married Isabella, Queen of Castile in her own right, and united the two great kingdoms of Spain. But the people were jealous. Each State remained independent of the other; Ferdinand led the troops of Aragon, and Isabella those of Castile, in the war they undertook to overthrow Granada, the last of the Moorish kingdoms. They were not styled King and Queen of Spain, but the "Catholic Kings."

It was to their court at Cordova that Columbus proceeded: but the Moorish war absorbed all thoughts, and Isabella, though favorably inclined, could promise to aid him only when the war should be ended. His plans were laid before a committee of learned men, none of them however navigators or of great geographical knowledge. They decided against it. Still Columbus was kindly treated and employment given

him suited to his abilities. He married again and remained for six years in vain urging his favorite project. Then he gave it up, and returning to Palos, announced to his friend Padre Marchena his intention of going to France. The good friar wrote to Queen Isabella urging her not to lose so great an opportunity. One of her officers, Luis de Santangel, warmly espoused his cause, and when Granada fell, on the 30th of December, 1491, all seemed to promise a speedy success. But when they began to treat the matter seriously with Columbus they took alarm at the magnitude of his claims. He was to be Admiral of the Ocean, Viceroy of all new found lands, and to receive one tenth of all the gold, precious stones and other commodities exported from them. At last all fell through, and Columbus started for Cordova to take leave of his family before proceeding to France.

Then Queen Isabella decided to send him out on his voyage of exploration, if she had to pledge her jewels to obtain the money. An officer was soon galloping after Columbus. On the 30th of April a patent was issued, creating him Grand Admiral of the Ocean, Viceroy of all the islands and mainland he might discover, and making the dignities hereditary in his family. The little fleet of three vessels was to be fitted out at Palos, but it was not got ready except with great difficulty, so foolhardy did the project seem to the shipowners and seamen of that maritime place. At last, by the aid of Martin Alonzo Pinzon, who had seen at Rome a map showing land beyond the Atlantic, and had faith in the project, the vessels were equipped.

An old heavy carrack, furnished by the town of Palos, was named by Columbus the Santa Maria; it was old, but still serviceable, and became his flagship. The Pinta, and the Niña, the latter belonging to the Pinzons, completed the important squadron, which carried in

all a hundred and twenty men, royal officers, physicians, and a goldsmith to test what might seem to be precious metals. In this party there were an Englishman and an Irishman. After piously attending divine service in the chapel of La Rabida, they moved in procession to the shore and embarked. Early on the third of August, 1492, Columbus, having completed all his arrangements, and commended his undertaking to the Almighty, in his friend's little church on the shore, stepped on board his flagship, and hoisting his flag gave the order to sail. He steered at once to the Canaries. Here he made some necessary repairs on the Pinta, and altered the sails of the Niña. Here too he heard that three Portuguese vessels had been sent out to capture him and defeat his expedition. But he eluded them, and his flotilla went, boldly into the unexplored sea. That soon assumed a character new to the oldest mariners; and what perplexed Columbus sorely, the needle in the mariner's compass no longer pointed due north, but inclined westward. For a time all went well. Twice the cry of land was raised by Pinzon, claiming the pension promised by Queen Isabella, but it was a mere delusion. Then men grew sullen, mutinous and threatening. The life of Columbus was in danger. At last he stood alone. On the seventh of October, led by the Pinzons, the men of all the vessels rising in arms demanded that Columbus should abandon his mad project and sail back. Never did his greatness of soul display itself more nobly. He awed them into submission. He had started to go to the Indies and he intended to pursue the voyage till, by the help of God, he found it.

That night was spent in watching, and as Columbus urged, in prayer At ten o'clock, as he stood on the poop of the Santa Maria, he discerned a light moving in the darkness. The Pinta then ran ahead, and at two in the morning a sailor on board that caravel, John Rodriguez Bermejo

discovered land. The cannon booming over the western wave announced the glad tidings, and Columbus, kneeling, intoned the TE DEUM, which was chanted with heartfelt joy. The ships now lay to in a reef-harbor of immense size, till morning should enable them to approach land safely.

On Friday, October 12, the rising sun discovered to their eyes an island clad in verdant groves of the mangrove tree; a lake whose clear waters flashed in the morning sun lay near the inviting shore. No sight could be more charming to men whom long absence from land had driven almost to frenzy. Anchoring in the harbor, Columbus, now flushed with pardonable pride at the triumphant success, arrayed in a scarlet mantle, and bearing the royal standard with the figure of Christ Crucified, landed in his cutter, as did the commanders of the other vessels. Planting the cross he knelt to adore the Almighty, kissing the earth to which His hand had guided the vessels. Uttering a prayer of singular beauty, which history has preserved, he rose, and named the island San Salvador, Holy Saviour. Then drawing his sword he form-



PORTRAIT OF CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS.

ally took possession in the name of Queen Isabella for her kingdoms of Castile and Leon.

The island was called by the natives Guanahani, and now bears the name of Turk's Island. And from Hawk's Nest Reef Harbor there burst on the view of the great discoverer so many islands around, that he knew not which to visit.

Some of the party now wandered around, full of wonder at strange plants, and flowers, and birds. Others with axes shaped a large cross. No human beings were seen, but at last a few naked forms appeared and cautiously drew near. The Europeans in their dress and arms were a strange spectacle to them, as they with their copper tint, their beardless faces, their want of all clothing, were to the Spaniards. A friendly intercourse began, and all was gladness.

Columbus planted the cross where he had set up the royal banner and intoned hymns to thank God in a Christian spirit. Then continuing his voyage, he discovered several other islands, to which he gave the names of Santa Maria de la Concepcion, Isabella, in honor of the Queen, Fernandina, in honor of the King. Then he reached the great island, Cuba, which he named Juana, in honor of the daughter of Isabella, and finally, Hispaña, which, however, retains its Indian name, Hayti.

While exploring this maze of islands the Santa Maria stranded, and became a total wreck. The great discoverer then erected a little fort on the shore of Hayti, in the territory of the friendly Cacique Guacanagari, and leaving in it forty-two of his best men, sailed homeward in the Niña and Pinzon in the Pinta.

Terrible storms were encountered, and Columbus, fearing that he should never see Europe again, drew up an account, which he enclosed

FAC SIMILE OF THE FIRST LETTER OF COLUMBUS,

Published in 1493,

From the only known copy in the Ambrosian Library, Milan.

Commencement



Señor por que se que aureis plazer dela grand victoria que nro señor me ha dado en mi viaje vos escrivo esta por la ql sabreys como ē xxxij dias pase alas yndias cola armada que los illustrissimos Rey y reyna nros señores me dieron donde yo falle muy muchas Islas pobladas con gēte sin numero. y dellas todas he tomado possessiō por sus altezas con pregon y vādera real estēdida y nō me fue cōtradicho:

Close of the Letter.

ala espana mas a todos los christianos ternan aqui refrigerio p ganancia esto segun el fecho asi en breue fecha enla caravanera sobre las yslas de canaria a xv. de febrero. Mill.y quatrocientos y nouenta y tres años.

Para lo que mandareys El almirante,

Ryma que venia dentro enla carta.

Despues desta escripto: y estando en mar de Castilla salyo tanto viento cōmigo. tal y tueste que me ha fecho descargar los namos por cort aqui en este puerto de lysbona oy q̄ fue la mayor maravilla del mūdo adonde acorde escrivir asus altezas. En todas las yndias he siempre hallado los temporales como en mayo adonde yo fuy en xxxij. dias y bolui en. xxxvij. salvo questas tormentas me han detenido. xxij. dias corriendo por estamar. Dizen aqua todos los hombres dela mar que jamas ono tan mal yuierno no mi tātas verdadas de names, fecha a. xxij, dias de maco.

in a cask, in a cake of wax, and set adrift. At last, however, the Niña reached the Azores, but the Portuguese treacherously seized some of his men who landed to offer up their prayers in a chapel by the sea. With some difficulty he obtained their release, and continuing his voyage, on the 4th of March he was off the mouth of the Tagus, and, not without great risk, succeeded in bringing his storm-racked caravel into the roadstead of Rastello. Being thus driven into the waters of Portugal he wrote to the King, who at once invited him to Court. In spite of his chagrin at his own want of spirit in declining the offers made by Columbus, John II. now received him as he would a prince. Columbus had written letters to two officers of the Court of Queen Isabel, as well as to the sovereigns themselves. He was however anxious to reach them in person. At Palos the crew of the Niña were received as men rescued from the grave. To add to the general joy, in the midst of their exultation the Pinta, Pinzon's vessel, came slowly up the bay. It had been driven to the Bay of Biscay, whence Pinzon had written to the Court.

After fulfilling at La Rabida and other shrines vows made amid their perils and storms, Columbus with some of his party proceeded to Barcelona by way of Seville, bearing with him in his triumphal progress seven natives of the new-found world, with gold and animals, birds and plants, all alike strange to the eyes of Europe.

CHAPTER III.

Columbus is solemnly received by Ferdinand and Isabella at Barcelona—His second Voyage—Other Nations enter the Field of Discovery—Voyages of Cabot and Vesputius—The Name of the latter gives a Title to the New World—Columbus sails on his third Voyage—His Enemies—Bobadilla—Columbus arrested and sent to Spain in irons—His fourth Voyage—He beholds the Destruction of his Enemies by the hand of Providence—Reaches the Coast of North America—Returns to Spain—Dies at Valladolid—Strange Migrations of his Body—His Tomb at Havana.

THE fifteenth of April, 1493, was a glorious day for Barcelona. The whole city was astir. The great discoverer of a New World was to enter the city and be solemnly received by Ferdinand and Isabella. Beneath a canopy of cloth of gold, on two thrones, sat the Queen of Castile and the King of Aragon: and on a rich seat by them the Prince Royal. An arm-chair awaited him, who now approached. At the shouts of the people and the sound of music all eyes turned towards the city gates, and ere long the banner of the expedition was seen by the courtiers around the throne, as the procession made its slow way through the wondering crowd. The sailors of the Niña, with the strange products of the New World, trees and shrubs, fruits and aromatics, rude golden articles, the arms of the natives, birds, animals, and, strangest perhaps of all, several Indians wondering and wondered at. Richly attired, but modest, Columbus, advanced. The Sovereigns arose from their thrones to meet him, and extended their hands to welcome the great Discoverer. He bent his knee in reverence, but they would

not permit it. Isabella bade him be seated and covered as a grandee of Spain. Then at their request he made his report of that wonderful voyage and explained how strange and new the islands were in their people, and their productions. All listened with breathless attention to this unlooked-for result of what had so long been regarded as a dream. It was the triumph of Columbus, the triumph of Isabella.

Then in that spirit of religion which influenced him and made him deem himself specially raised by God to bear the name of Christ to the New World, he expatiated on the field thrown open to Christianity, all were moved to tears.

Columbus's own letters, and letters of Peter Martyr and others, spread the news through Europe. Printing was then fifty years old, and the letter was printed in Spanish, in the strange gothic letter of the period. Of this book only one copy is now known, and we give a fac simile of a page, that our young readers may see what printing was in that day, and what the first book in American history resembled. Latin was, however, the universal language, and the letter of Columbus to Sanchez, translated into Latin, was printed again and again.

The favor of the rulers of Spain did not end in the pomp of the reception. Substantial honors were bestowed on Columbus, and a large and well equipped fleet was at once prepared in which he was to carry over a large body of settlers, domestic animals, and all necessary for occupying the territory. The Grand Admiral with a stately retinue proceeded to Cadiz, and on the 25th of September, embarked in his second voyage in the Maria Galanta, with two other large caracs and fourteen caravels. Among those who sailed with him were Padre Marchena and the illustrious Las Casas. He reached Dominica on the 3d of November, and soon after an island to which he gave the name of his flag-

ship, Maria Galanta. Keeping on he discovered and named others of the Windward Islands, and then reached Porto Rico, called by the natives Boriquen. When he arrived at St. Domingo he found his fort in ruins. His men had all been massacred. Insubordination had broken out, and all had perished in various ways, though Guacanagari, true to Columbus, had endeavored to save them. Saddened as he was at this news, Columbus proceeded to found, at a suitable spot, the city of Isabella, the first European town in the New World. When the works in this city were well advanced, he sent back part of his fleet to Spain, and establishing a post further inland, proceeded on his voyage of discovery visiting Cuba, Jamaica and some smaller islands. Then he gave his whole attention to his settlement, which was in a very distracted condition, many of the settlers being turbulent and mutinous, with but little inclination to any serious work. Columbus, himself regarded with jealousy as a foreigner, had, notwithstanding his high rank as Admiral and Viceroy, great difficulty in establishing order. When he had, as he supposed, placed all on a better footing, he sailed back to Spain in 1496, leaving in command his energetic brother Bartholemew. On reaching Spain he found that his enemies had not been idle there, and that a strong prejudice had been created against him.

His two successful voyages were now the theme of conversation in Europe: and the courts which had ridiculed his projects and the reward he claimed, now saw their error and sought to retrieve it. Portugal had, we have seen, been the first to attempt to prevent Columbus from succeeding, and now protested against the famous line of demarcation drawn by Pope Alexander VI. between the Spaniards and Portuguese, and against the Papal Bull confirming the Spanish right of discovery.

England, where Bartholomew had pleaded in vain, now determined to attempt a voyage of exploration. It seems strange that the route of St. Brendan was again followed.

In 1496, John Cabot, a Venetian, by long residence if not by birth, was in England, where he had been established for some years. Full of energy he applied to the King, Henry VII., for a patent to seek new lands.

The cautious, money-loving King issued a patent authorizing Cabot and his three sons to search for islands, provinces or regions in the Eastern, Western or Northern seas, and as vassals of the English King to occupy the territory, but they were to bring all the products of the new found lands to the city of Bristol, and pay one fifth into the royal treasury, a provision very characteristic of a King who in his last will drove a close bargain as to the price of the religious services to be performed after his death.

Under this patent, John Cabot, accompanied by his son Sebastian, sailed from Bristol in May, 1497, with a single ship, to seek a northern passage to China. After a pleasant voyage of what he estimated to be seven hundred leagues, on the 24th day of June, 1497, he reached land at about the fifty-sixth degree of north latitude, among the frozen cliffs of Labrador. He had discovered North America in its most unpromising part. Seeking the northwest passage he ran along the coast for many leagues, planted the standard of England and the lion of St. Mark for Venice. Then he started again across the Atlantic, noticing two islands which he had not time to visit.

This summer trip of three months gave England her claim to North America.

His return gratified all England, from king to peasant, and

though it had revealed only a barren land, led to further grants from Henry VII.

This same year there sailed another explorer, and the most fortunate of all, for by a strange accident his name was given to the New World. This was Americus Vesputius, born at Florence, in Italy, in 1451, who had been for some time in Spain directing the commercial affairs of Lorenzo de Pier Francesco, one of the princely family of Medicis. He met Columbus in 1496, and seems to have enjoyed his friendship. In May, 1497, he sailed on a voyage of exploration, and running as he estimated a thousand leagues, passing the islands discovered by Columbus, reached the mainland. It is not easy to determine his course, but he seems to have reached Honduras and to have coasted north along the shore of the Gulf of Mexico till, doubling the southern cape of Florida, he again emerged on the Atlantic and ran northward for a month along our seaboard, to an excellent harbor where he built a small vessel. Thence he sailed back, reaching Cadiz in October, 1498.

By some, this voyage has been doubted, by others it is supposed to have been along South America, But a more careful examination leads us to the conclusion that to Americus Vesputius is due the honor of being the first to explore the extensive line of coast which our Republic holds, on the Atlantic and the Gulf of Mexico; and that he did so while the Cabots, starting from the north, were in part examining our Atlantic seaboard.

But while his countrymen were thus revealing to the world the existence of a new and mighty continent, teeming with animal and vegetable life, rich in all that nature can give, but occupied only by roving bands of savage men, Columbus was detained in Spain by the intrigues of his enemies and by the dull delays of stupid or malicious officials.

It was not till May, 1498, that he so far overcame all these obstacles as to be able again to embark: and in that month he set out on his third and most unhappy voyage.

That same month saw Sebastian Cabot sail from Bristol with two ships, and a number of volunteers eager to share in the perils and romance of the undertaking. He crossed the Atlantic, and in the 55th degree found himself in the midst of icebergs, which threatened him with destruction while they filled all hearts with wonder. In spite of the danger he sailed on, till on the 11th of June he reached an open sea which inspired him with hopes of reaching China; but his men became alarmed and compelled him to seek a milder climate. Running down along the coast he saw the immense shoals of codfish on the banks of Newfoundland, so numerous, some accounts say, that his ship could hardly get through them. Then they began to see inhabitants clad in skins, and opened trade with them. Of his voyage we have unfortunately no detailed accounts. He went south till he was at the latitude of Gibraltar and the longitude of Cuba, probably near Albemarle Sound, whence he steered back to England. In his northerly course he saw the polar bear feeding on fish, and apparently described its contests with the walruses, which it so often attempts to surprise asleep on the ice, but which, almost powerless there, seeks to gain the water and drag the bear down.

Vesputius and Cabot enjoyed lives of honor and respect. Both were frequently employed by monarchs and received substantial marks of favor. Cabot, in the Spanish service, visited Brazil, explored the La Plata, and was honored by Ferdinand with the title of Pilot Major of Spain while Emperor Charles V. employed him in new discoveries, and when he returned to England, sought by great offers to induce him

to return. But he preferred England and died at Bristol in 1557, enjoying a pension given by Edward VI.

Vesputius was highly appreciated by the Spanish Kings, who knew his skill in cosmography, as geography was then called, and in the preparation of charts, recording the latest discoveries, to guide the ships constantly starting out of Spanish ports. But the King of Portugal for a time obtained his services, and he not only sailed on several Spanish expeditions, but commanded Portuguese fleets in which he explored the South American coast. He, too, held the title of Pilot Major under the Spanish Kings. Some have charged Americus Vesputius with gross injustice to Columbus in robbing him of the honor of discovering the New World by affixing his own name to it. But there is really no ground for this charge, and though the name America was formed from his Christian name, it was not done by him. The thing came about in this way: In 1507 a celebrated geographer named Waldseemuller published at St. Dié, a little town in Lorraine, one of the provinces recently taken from France by Prussia, a little work entitled "Cosmographiæ Introductio," and to it he added an edition of the four voyages of Vesputius, which had fallen into his hands. Not being familiar, it would seem, with the voyages of Columbus, he ascribed all the honor to Vesputius, and on his map first introduced the name America. Of this book there seems to have been a large edition, as it found its way to all parts of Europe, and as the name was more short and convenient than the term used by the Spaniards, "The Indies," it was adopted on maps generally.

In this same eventful year, Vasco de Gama, doubling the Cape of Good Hope, sailed through the Indian Ocean and planted the flag of Portugal on the shore of Hindostan.

On the 30th day of May, 1498, Columbus, for whom Providence had in store its greatest trials, sailed with six caravels from the Port of San Lucar de Barrameda, a Spanish port not far from Seville.

A French fleet lay in wait for him. Steering a southerly course, he touched at Madeira, whence he dispatched three vessels to St. Domingo, under command of his brother-in-law, Pedro de Arana, designing himself, though in ill health, to make a voyage of discovery before proceeding to that island in person. Taking a southwesterly course, he came before long into the region of those tropic calms, where the sun pours down its fatal heat, and not a breath of air seems to ruffle the surface of the ocean. For a week his vessels rolled like logs. Then, wher wind came, he steered more northerly, suffering greatly, as the long calm had nearly exhausted their supply of water. Finally, on the last day of July, three mountain-peaks were seen, and to this island Columbus gave the name of Trinidad. in honor of the Trinity.

Near it he perceived a strong current, as if some mighty river were sweeping into the sea. When the tide rose, a still stranger spectacle met his eye ; an immense tidal wave, rising as high as his masts, came rolling on, and bearing his caravel up, met the river current, standing like a watery mountain. He was off the mainland of South America, at the mouth of the Orinoco. In memory of his peril, he called it the Dragon's Mouth.

Exploring the coast for some days, he landed on Sunday, and plant ing a cross, had divine service celebrated. Friendly intercourse was opened with the natives, but Columbus, suffering from gout, and nearly blind from an affection of the eyes, felt that he must reach his colony in St. Domingo. There, Francisco Roldan, the judge in the colony, had revolted against Bartholomew Columbus, because he sought to protect the

Indians from the oppressions of men who sought gold by the most wicked means. Bartholomew had failed to quell the troubles, and even the crews of the vessels sent on from Madeira were won over by the malcontents.

Columbus himself arrived sick, exhausted, and, from the condition of his eyes, unfit for active duties.

He endeavored to conciliate, and pardoning the offenders, allowed all who chose to return to Spain in some vessels then ready to set sail. But they did not go till they had wrung from him humiliating conditions.

He then endeavored to restore peace on the island; but Roldan and his party had driven the Indians to a spirit of retaliation and revenge. While endeavoring to appease these, fresh troubles arose among the settlers, and an attempt was made to assassinate Columbus, and he was on the point of flying with his brothers in a ship from the island.

Well would it have been for him had he done so. His enemies had reached Spain, and given their own version of affairs. The Chamber at Seville, intrusted with the management of affairs beyond the Atlantic, was already strongly prejudiced against Columbus. King Ferdinand, who had never been a warm friend to the great explorer, now declared against him openly. Even Isabella was staggered by the charges against him.

A sudden and terrible blow was prepared for Columbus.

The sovereigns resolved to send over a Commissary to restore order in the colony. For this post, requiring the highest qualities, they selected a mere tool of his enemies—a soldier unacquainted with the laws, a headstrong, violent man. brutal and unforgiving. This was the Commander Francis de Bobadilla.

While Columbus was absent from the city of San Domingo, engaged in establishing a strong fort at Conception, Bobadilla arrived with two caravels. He announced himself as Commissary sent to judge the rebels, but on landing, read his patents and an ordinance conferring on him the government and judicature of the islands and mainland of the Indies; and an order requiring Columbus to deliver up all the fortresses and public property into his hands. He at once seized not only these but the private property and papers of Columbus, many of which have never since been found.

But he was a little afraid that Columbus might resist, so he sent a Franciscan to induce the Admiral to meet him. Bartholomew was then at Xaragua, and Diego Columbus alone in San Domingo.

Columbus came in good faith, with no force to protect him. Seeing him about to fall into the trap, Bobadilla seized Diego Columbus, put him in irons, and sent him on board a caravel. When Columbus himself arrived, Bobadilla not only refused to see him, but gave orders for his immediate arrest. Thus was the discoverer of the New World, without the charge of a single crime, without investigation while holding his commission as Viceroy of the Indies, seized, hurried off to a prison, and manacled like a malefactor. No one was allowed to approach him, and no explanation given. Bartholomew was next seized and put in irons on a caravel apart from Diego.

We have seen what the shattered health of Columbus was on reaching San Domingo. Labor and anxiety had worn him down since his arrival. And now he lay on the stone floor of his dungeon, with very scanty clothing, suffering from pain, and denied any but the coarsest prison fare.

Then Bobadilla went to work to secure depositions from all who had

opposed Columbus ; and when he had collected enough false charges to give color to his infamous acts, he sent an officer named Vallejo, with a body of soldiers, to bring Columbus from his dungeon.

" Whither do you take me, Vallejo ?" asked the great man, who, feeling that no law, human or divine, was respected by his enemies, supposed he was to be led to the scaffold.

" On board the Gorda, your Excellency " replied the young officer, who was not destitute of respect for the illustrious victim.

" Is this true, Vallejo ?"

" By the life of your Excellency," replied the young officer, " I swear that I am about to conduct you to the caravel to embark."

With little delay he was carried forth, emaciated, sick, and helpless, and thus in irons borne to the hold of the Gorda, to which his two brothers had been already removed. And early in October the vessel weighed anchor, and he who had just crowned his explorations by discovering the mainland of the New World, was hurried across the Atlantic like a criminal.

When from the deck of the vessel the shores of Hispaniola could no longer be discerned, the officers came to the illustrious man to beg him to allow them to remove his fetters. Columbus refused. They were put upon him in the name of their Sovereigns and he would not violate their orders.

A letter of his to a friend at Court reached there before any report of Bobadilla's, and was at once shown to Queen Isabella. Horrorstruck at the injustice to the great Discoverer, she ordered him and his brothers to be at once set at liberty, and supplied with money to proceed to court. She received him with tears. His conduct was justified, Bobadilla removed, but Ferdinand thwarted his return to the New World.

It was not till May, 1502, that Columbus was able to sail once more out into that ocean which he has made the pathway of the nations. He reached San Domingo, but was not allowed to enter port. To his experienced eye the air was full of portents of a coming tempest. A fleet rode at anchor in the harbor, ready to sail to Spain. It bore the brutal Bobadilla, his greatest enemy, Roldan, and many more who had bitterly persecuted him. They had accomplished their work, and having by every cruelty amassed riches, were now returning to Spain. Forgetting their hostility to him, Columbus warned them not to sail till the storm had passed. To their inexperienced eyes, all was serene. They laughed Columbus to scorn. Forth sailed the gay fleet, but in a moment all changed. The hurricane came on in all its fury, sweeping over sea and land with resistless power. Columbus was equal to the emergency which he had foreseen. Clear as a bell, amid the rattling of the spars and the whistling of the cordage, came his wise orders. His little fleet weathered the storm ; but when the wind died away and the sea grew calm, the gay fleet of his enemies had vanished. It had gone down with all their ill-got wealth. Pursuing his voyage of discovery, Columbus reached Honduras and coasted along to Panama. This was his last voyage. Amid severe storms he finally reached Spain, on the seventh of November, 1503. Shattered in health by all that he had undergone, he lay sick at Seville when another blow came, the death of his true friend, Queen Isabella. His health now rapidly declined. He reached Valladolid, but it was only to die neglected and forgotten in a poor room at an inn : the walls unadorned except by the chains which bound his limbs on the Gorda, and which he had never allowed out of his sight after that period of suffering. Columbus breathed his last May 20, 1506, surrounded by

his sons and a few faithful friends, comforted with all the rites of the religion to which he was so devoted in life.

He was buried as he directed, with his chains in his coffin, among the Franciscans of Valladolid; but in 1573 was transferred with pomp to the Carthusian convent of Santa Maria de las Grutas, at Seville. His journeys were not, however, ended. In 1536 the bones and chains of Columbus crossed the ocean and were deposited on the right of the high altar of the Cathedral of San Domingo; but when Spain lost the island, in 1795, she removed them, as her great treasure, to the Cathedral of Havana, where their place is marked by the monument which closes our history of this remarkable man



TOMB OF COLUMBUS, IN THE CATHEDRAL, HAVANA.



COLUMBUS RETURNING FROM HIS DISCOVERY OF AMERICA, RECEIVED BY FERDINAND AND ISABELLA AT BARCELONA. (Page 125)



COLUMBUS IN CHAINS ON BOARD THE GORDA. (Page 135)



DEATH OF COLUMBUS.

(Page 136)



POCAHONTAS INTERCEDING FOR CAPTAIN JOHN SMITH. (Page 171)



RUINS OF THE CITY OF JAMESTOWN, VIRGINIA. (Page 176)



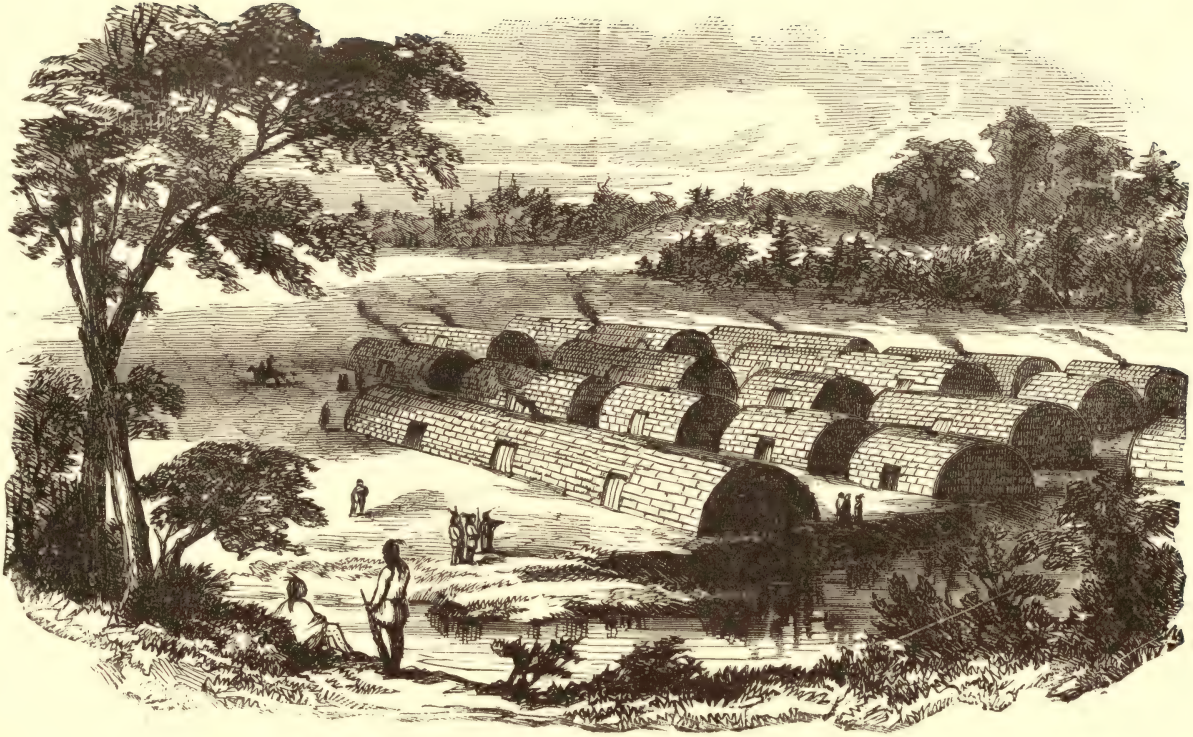
ESCAPE OF THE FRENCH COLONY FROM ONONDAGA.

(Page 194)



HENRY HUDSON OFFERING LIQUOR TO THE INDIANS ON THE NORTH RIVER.

(Page 196)



MANHATTAN ISLAND BEFORE THE DUTCH SETTLEMENT.

(Page 197)

CHAPTER IV.

Attempts to conquer and colonize — The French — The Spaniards—Ponce de Leon and the Fountain of Youth—Vasquez de Ayllon and King Datha—Verrazano and the stories about him—Gomez—The Expedition of Pamphilo de Narvaez — Wonderful escape of Cabeza de Vaca—De Soto and the disastrous end of his splendid expedition—The French, under Cartier and Roberval, attempt to settle Canada—Story of Margaret Roberval.

When Columbus passed away in his neglected retirement at Valladolid, the world had begun to see the result of his great work. The discoveries and explorations of Columbus himself, of Vesputius, Cabot and Cortereal had established the fact that the New World, now to be known by the name of America, was no part of Asia, but a vast continent extending from the extreme north, where it was lost among the Arctic ice, down past the equator, on almost to the southern pole.

While the French were engaged in some voyages to the northern parts, a strange delusion led the Spaniards, in their spirit of adventure, to Florida. In 1513, John Ponce de Leon, one of the old comrades of Columbus, sailed from Porto Rico in three vessels, and on Easter Sunday, March 27th, discovered a land clad with rich-green trees, and balmy with flowers. The day is known in the Spanish calendar as Pasqua Florida, and the name seemed to him so appropriate that he gave the new land the name of Florida, which it has continued to bear amid all the changes and revolutions of more than

two hundred and fifty years. Finding a good port, he landed on the 8th of April, and was the first who took possession in the name of any European monarch of any part of the United States. Spain thus planted her standard. As he sailed along the coast, he found the Indians so hostile that they killed several of his men. But he was delighted with the new land, and resolved to obtain a patent for it and for Bimini. According to some, this old warrior had heard that Florida contained a fountain of perpetual youth, bathing in which took away all marks of age, and gave the veteran the freshness and vigor of his early years. To win and bathe in this fountain was, he thought, worth a man's most earnest efforts.

A patent was easily secured, but John Ponce had to fight the Caribs of Porto Rico, and it was not till 1521 that he sailed with two vessels to take possession of Florida and settle there; but other Spaniards had meantime visited the shore, and had difficulties with the Indians, and he found them more fierce than before. His party was driven to the ships, and he was carried on board so badly wounded that he died soon after reaching Cuba, without having found the Fountain of Perpetual Youth.

Of these Spanish voyagers to Florida, the most famous, or infamous, was Lucas Vasquez de Ayllon, of Toledo, who was driven, in 1520, on the coast of South Carolina, near the Coosaw River, where a gigantic cacique or king, named Datha, ruled over the province of Chicora. Near this realm there had formerly lived, so the Indians told him, men with tails and rough skins, who lived on raw fish.

The natives at first regarded the Spaniards with wonder and alarm, but as they acted kindly the natives grew friendly, and Datha sent fifty Indians loaded with fruits to the Spaniards, receiving them with great joy. Ayllon used this confidence to allure a hundred and thirty of the

Indians on board his vessels, and then sailed off, disregarding the cries and tears of their unhappy relatives on the shore. One of his ships perished, the other reached San Domingo, where his wicked act was condemned, and where almost all his captives died of grief.

After the death of Ponce de Leon, this bad man obtained a patent for Florida, and in 1524 landed with a large force. He marched a day's journey inland to a large town, where the Spaniards were well received for four days. Then the Indians suddenly attacked them by night, and slaughtered them all. Before those on the shore and in the ships knew the fate of their companions, they too were attacked with such fury that many perished, and the survivors were barely able to sail off.

A voyage very important in its results was that made in 1524, by John Verrazano, a Florentine navigator, in the French service, whose family numbered several known as cosmographers.

The Spaniards tell queer stories about this navigator. They say he was a famous pirate, and that he it was who, in 1521, captured a rich treasure ship, in which Hernan Cortes sent over to the Emperor King Charles V., an immense quantity of gold, jewels, and precious articles of various kinds, which he had secured in his capture of Mexico.

A letter of Verrazano published many years after, tells us that after cruising off the coast of Spain with four vessels, he started in one, the Delphine, on a voyage of discovery. Sailing from the Canary Islands January 17, 1524, he ran across the Atlantic, in the most stormy weather, and reached our shores in latitude 34 degrees north—that is, as you will see on a map, about Wilmington, on the uninviting coast of North Carolina. Seeing no harbor he sailed south, but soon turned northward and ran along the coast, following the changes in the seaboardline, occasionally sending parties ashore to examine the country till

he came to New York harbor. This, he is supposed to have been the first white man to enter and to admire. Then he sailed again and entered Narraganset Bay. Here he traded with the friendly natives, then ploughed his way once more, along the coast of New England and Nova Scotia, to the fiftieth degree, near Cape Breton, already discovered by the Bretons, whence he sailed back to France, arriving in July.

The country which he had thus visited seemed full of attractions, rich and fertile, with natives disposed to be friendly, except at the north. He did not land or take possession ; but one of his sailors, attempting to swim ashore, would have been drowned but for the humanity of the natives.

Ramusio, who first published Verrazano's account, and knew many of his friends, calls him a gallant gentleman and says that he proposed to King Francis I. to colonize and christianize the lands he had discovered ; but that sailing again to our shores he was killed, with several of his people who attempted to land, and that they were roasted and devoured by the natives before the eyes of those in the vessels, who were unable to save or avenge them. On the other hand the Spanish historians say that he was captured in 1524, and hung by their countrymen.

Such is the strange mystery that hangs over John Verrazano, whose narrative seems to have first suggested the name of Rhode Island.

Some tidings of a French exploration may have reached Spain, for after a grand consultation of Spanish and Portuguese pilots, at Badajoz, in Spain, as to the possibility of finding a passage to the Moluccas, between Florida and Newfoundland, Stephen Gomez, an old companion of Magellan, was sent out in a single ship by the Emperor, Charles V., in December, 1524. He, too, reached our Atlantic coast, and ran along, entering the harbors of New York and New England. Failing to find

a passage, he filled his ship with Indians, to sell as slaves, and so sailed back to Spain. It was at first reported to the court that he had brough a cargo of cloves, (called in Spanish *clavos*,) and the court were greatly delighted, but when it was found to be (*esclavos*) slaves, the Emperor was greatly displeased, and severely condemned Gomez.

These various voyages established the fact that our coast contained no strait running to the Pacific.

A very imposing attempt to settle the country was made by the disastrous expedition of Pamphilo de Narvaez, an old antagonist of Cortes in Mexico. The Emperor, Charles V., had given him a grant of all the territory of Florida from the Atlantic to the Rio de Palmas, a river which empties into the Gulf of Mexico, between Matamoros and Tampico.

He set out with a considerable fleet in June, 1527, carrying soldiers and a large body of actual settlers, intending to begin a colony on the Rio de Palmas. His pilot was incompetent, and in a storm they were driven on the coast of Florida, near Tampa Bay, and there, on the 15th of April, 1528, he landed and took possession. Then sending his ships on to meet him at a bay which the pilot pretended to know, Narvaez, with 300 men, forty of them mounted, set out to explore the territory along the Gulf. They found a miserable country, with few natives, and were soon reduced to great straits. At St. Mark's Bay, where they expected to find their vessels, no signs of them appeared. Thus abandoned they set to work and beat up their stirrups, spurs, and iron implements, to make saws, axes. and nails, and at last constructed five rude boats. Their shirts were made into sails, horsehair and palmetto bark made them ropes, while the flesh of their horses and corn taken from the Indians enabled them to live. They had now been five

months on our southern shore. So in September the survivors, numbering 50 men, set out in these boats to make their way to Rio de Palmas. On the 30th of October they reached the mouth of the mighty river Mississippi, but the current was too strong for their wretched boats to enter. Here they parted. Narvaez kept close in shore, but his boat was at last driven out to sea and lost. Two other boats, one commanded by Cabeza de Vaca, reached an land on the coast of Texas, where they fell into the hands of the Indians, and for many years were held as prisoners. At last, in 1534, Cabeza de Vaca, with three others, one of them a negro, escaped, and striking inland, travelled on amid great perils and hardships, dressed like Indians, in skins, and differing little from them. They finally reached, after a time, the more civilized towns of New Mexico, and keeping on from town to town, and from tribe to tribe, they early in May, 1536, entered the Spanish settlement of San Miguel, in Sonora, having gone almost completely across the continent in that eight year's march.

The appearance of these few men, as sole survivors of the great expedition of Pamphilo de Narvaez, filled men with astonishment, and all listened with wonder to their stories of the interior of the continent. They had much to tell of wild tribes, of the bison plains, with their immense herds, of the strange towns of New Mexico.

Cortez, who had conquered Mexico, himself set out with a fleet to explore the Pacific coast, and discovered California in 1538.

A force was also dispatched, in 1539, from Culiacan, a province of Mexico, with a negro who had been with Cabeza de Vaca as guide They pushed on till they reached the Rio Grande, where the negro was killed and the expedition returned, a friar, named Mark of Nice, who saw the New Mexican towns only at a distance, giving his impressions

which proved to be very far from the truth. Another expedition, under Vasquez Coronado, set out in 1538, and advanced to the town of Zuñi, which they attacked and took, May 11th, 1541. This town was built on a rocky height, but instead of being a city with walls of stone, proved to be a small place, containing only two hundred warriors, with no gold or riches to tempt the Spaniards. These New Mexican towns, which still subsist as they did three hundred years ago, are built on high and almost inaccessible rocks, the houses all fronting on a square within. Outside there are no doors or openings. Each story sets back a little, leaving a platform which they reach by ladders, and so go on up till they come to the roof where they enter. They were more civilized than the wild Indians, and built these towns of adobes, or sunburnt bricks, as a defence against their enemies. They were a quiet, simple people, cultivating the soil, raising maize, beans, pumpkins, and cotton ; but they had no gold or precious stones. So Coronado, after visiting other towns, pushed on to find Quivira, a place about which great stories were told, but he found only the bison plains. So, after wintering in New Mexico, he returned ; vessels had meanwhile ascended the Colorado for a considerable distance.

All this country seemed unpromising, and no Spanish settlement was attempted.

But while these explorations were going on, produced by the reports of Cabeza de Vaca, another Spanish officer was bold enough to attempt to follow in the path of Pamphilo de Narvaez. This was Hernando de Soto, who had been with Pizarro in the conquest of Peru. "He desired to surpass Cortez in glory and Pizarro in wealth." He offered to conquer Florida at his own cost, and Charles V. readily granted him a patent. His fame gathered noblemen from all parts. Never had there been an

expedition so well appointed. Six hundred men in glittering armor and costly dresses gathered on the fleet which sailed in 1538, from San Lucar in Spain, as gaily as if going on an excursion of pleasure.

In May, 1539, this expedition landed on the coast of Florida at Tampa Bay, and began a march of exploration and conquest, after sending back the ships. Wandering for months along the shore of the gulf towards Pensacola he at last struck inland, and came to the Ogeechee, then along to the headwaters of the Coosa, and so on to the town of Mavilla, on the Alabama. This was a town of well built cabins, better than any they had seen. The Spaniards, weary of their hard life and marches, wished to occupy it. The natives flew to arms. A terrible battle ensued, the first between white men and Indians on our soil that can really be called a battle. Soto gained part of the town and stored his baggage there, but with cavalry and armor and musketry his troops did not rout the Indians without great difficulty. They seemed innumerable and fought with desperation. At last, when they saw that their arrows and darts could not repel the invaders, and that the ground was strewn with the bodies of their bravest warriors, they set fire to the town and retreated. Soto had won the battle of Mavilla, and killed more than two thousand of his enemy: but eighteen of his mail-clad men had been killed and a hundred and fifty wounded; nearly a hundred horses were killed or crippled and all his baggage had perished in the burning town.

His gallant array now stood destitute, weakened, and disappointed. Ships just then arrived at Pensacola, but he was too proud to return and acknowledge his failure. So he marched north, and wintered in Chicasa, a town in the Chickasaw country, in the north of what is now the State of Mississippi In the spring he wished to force the natives to carry the

burdens of his force, now reduced to five hundred men. But this fierce tribe set fire to the town, and attacked the invaders by night. Soto repulsed them with loss, but many of his horses and live stock perished, and arms and armor were ruined by fire, and they had so little clothing left that they were almost as naked as the Indians. But no thought of return entered Soto's mind; he must find a new Mexico or Peru, or he would perish in the attempt.

Then he came to the Mississippi, and could gaze in wonder at that mighty river, of which Narvaez had seen only the mouth. After long toil, he made barges and crossed with the remnant of his force. He struck northward till he nearly reached the Missouri, then finding only bison plains and a few scanty tribes, turned south again and passed the winter on the Washita. In the spring he was again on the Mississippi, at the mouth of the Red.

Below, all seemed a weary waste of cane-brake, and the Indians represented it as almost uninhabited. Soto sank under his disappointments and hardships. Struck down by a malignant fever, he received little care and attention. But he felt death at hand, and calling all around him he named his successor, and giving them his last instructions, prepared to meet his end. On the 21st of May, 1542, he breathed his last, and anxious to conceal his death from the Indians, they performed his funeral rites at night, and then consigned his body, wrapped in a mantle, to the waters of the Mississippi. Such was the sad ending of the pomp and show that opened his march, such the result of his long search for realms of gold. Muscoso, his successor, attempted to reach Mexico by land, but finally returned to the Mississippi, and building boats, descended its turbid and rapid current to the Gulf. More fortunate than Narvaez, he reached Tampico, in September, 1543.

Such was the only result of Spanish attempts at conquest. They all failed but Spain claimed all our country, and knew the whole coast and much of the interior. All were not fierce soldiers; one missionary, Cancer, sought to win the natives by kindness, he landed alone, but he was killed almost instantly.

While Spain was thus wasting men and means in the vain pursuit of rich kingdoms that had no more existence than the Fountain of Youth, France acted more wisely. She did not seek gold; but her sturdy, honest fishermen were gathering real wealth on the banks of Newfoundland. Chabot, the sagacious Admiral of France, under King Francis I., saw that it would be essential to explore, and, if possible, colonize the adjacent continent. To command the expedition, he selected an experienced captain of St. Malo, named James Cartier, and presented him to the King. He sailed from St. Malo, April 20th, 1534, with two vessels, carrying more than a hundred men. He soon came in sight of Newfoundland, and after sailing nearly around it, discovered Chaleurs Bay, and took possession at Gaspé, rearing a cross, with a shield bearing the lilies of France. He entered the port of Brest, on the Labrador coast, already a well-known station.

After advancing as far as Anticosti Island, but without apparently recognizing the river St. Lawrence, he sailed back. His report was so favorable that he was sent out the next year. His little fleet, the Grande Hermine, the Little Hermine, and the Emerillon, after his crew had like truly Christian men venturing on a long voyage, besought the aid of heaven in the house of God, sailed May 16, 1535. Many gentlemen went as volunteers, and two clergymen. The vessels were separated by storms, but met again safely at Blanc Sablon, a place visited on his first voyage. He then entered a large bay, which he named the

Gulf of St. Lawrence, in commemoration of the day on which he discovered it, the 10th day of August.

Two young Indians, whom he had taken to France with him, and who had learned French, now proved useful as pilots. They told him that a great river, Hochelaga, ran up into the country, narrowing in as far as Canada, and that then it went on so far that nobody had ever been at the end of it. So Cartier sailed on, discovered the deep river Saguenay, which runs down amid such wild mountain scenery; and keeping on, came to an island now called Orleans. Then he found at a narrow part of the river a rocky height, on which was perched the Indian town of Stadaconé, ruled over by Donnacona, the Agouhanna or Chief of Canada. This was Quebec.

He anchored his vessels in the St. Charles, and found the natives friendly and well-disposed, but they endeavored to dissuade him from ascending the river, telling him terrible stories about its dangers, and even getting up a kind of masquerade to frighten him.

But Cartier went on in his boats, till he came to the present Montreal, where he found the well-built Indian town of Hochelaga, with a triple row of palisades, standing amid wide fields of Indian corn, beans, peas, and squashes. This town contained fifty large cabins, made neatly of bark sewed together, and divided into rooms, each of which contained a family. The people took the French for visitors from heaven, and brought them their sick and crippled to be cured.

Cartier then ascended the mountain of Montreal, whence he could descry the Green Mountains of Vermont.

The Indians pointed out the upper waters of the St. Lawrence, which they told him could be navigated for three moons, while another river on the north of the island led to other lands. Encouraged by the pros-

pect before him, Cartier returned to his ships, around which a little fort had been thrown and planted with cannon. During the winter, scurvy broke out among his men and many died till they learned a cure from the Indians. In the spring he sailed for France carrying off Donnacona and some of his chief men, an act which cannot be justified.

He was not able to return at once to Canada. It was not indeed till 1540 that Francis de la Roque, Sieur de Roberval, whom Cartier had interested in American affairs, obtained a patent, making him Lord of Norembegua, as the State of Maine was then called, and Viceroy of Canada. Cartier was commissioned to command the fleet, and extensive preparations were made. Spain took alarm, and spies were sent to all the ports of France to find out the object of the expedition. When tidings came that it was to attempt a settlement in the far north, the Spaniards breathed more freely, but it was decided that any attempt of the French to settle Florida must be crushed at once. On the 23rd of May, 1541, Cartier sailed with a fleet of five ships, well equipped and supplied with provisions for two years. Their passage was stormy and it was only after three months buffetting with wind and wave that he anchored before



JACQUES CARTIER, DISCOVERER OF CANADA.

Stadaconé. The natives eagerly asked for their chief and his companions, but they had all died in France, though it does not seem that they were treated with unkindness.

Cartier selected as the spot for his settlement a point now called Cap Rouge, a little above Quebec, and here he laid up his vessel and erected a fort, which he called Charlesbourg Royal. This was the first white post planted on the continent north of Mexico. Leaving the Viscount de Beaupré in command, Cartier ascended the river to explore and examine. During the winter troubles arose with the Indians, in which two Frenchmen were killed. In the spring the colonists, discouraged by the hardships and uneasy at Roberval's delay in coming with supplies, forced Cartier to embark for France, and Charlesbourg Royal was abandoned. Near Newfoundland they fell in with Roberval, but Cartier's people were utterly discouraged, and kept on to France.

Roberval entered the St. Lawrence, and anchoring at Charlesbourg Royal, which he named France Roi, restored Cartier's fort. He then examined the upper part of the river, sent expeditions to explore the Saguenay and the coast of Labrador. But the colony did not prosper. It was not formed of the right material—men of principle, willing to labor and wait patiently. Many died of scurvy and other diseases, or by accidents. At last, when all were heartily discouraged, their eyes were gladdened by the sight of a vessel sailing up under French colors. It was Cartier, come with orders from the King, summoning Roberval to return to France with all his people. The order was promptly obeyed, and France abandoned the St. Lawrence.

Of Roberval's voyage a strange story is preserved by an old chronicler. Among those on board his vessels were his niece, Margaret Roberval, and a young gentleman, to whom she had been secretly married

against the wishes of her family. As they came near Newfoundland Roberval discovered the fact, and, inexorable in his anger, put them ashore with his niece's nurse on an island said to be that still called Isle de la Demoiselle, though the old chronicler supposes it to be the Isle of Demons, which our readers will remember. The unfortunate people built a log house, and when their store of pilot-bread was exhausted, lived altogether on roots, berries and wild-fowl, of which numbers frequented the island. Occasionally larger game was found; but the young man's health began to fail, and ere many months, in spite of all Margaret's care, he breathed his last, and she was left a widow. A child born amid these dreary scenes soon followed its father. The old nurse, her comfort and companion, was the next to be summoned by death, and poor Margaret remained utterly alone beside her three graves. She was however a woman of undaunted courage. She felt that activity alone could preserve her health and life. She had learned to use her husband's arms, and fearlessly encountered even the white bear in its visits to the island, using the fur and flesh for her clothing and food. She lived in hope of being found by some vessel approaching that shore, and to attract them she kept up almost constant fires on the highest point of her island. When she had spent two years and five months on the desolate strand, her fires were seen by a Breton cod-fishing vessel. They were somewhat afraid to approach, but humanity prevailed. Margaret, after kneeling to say a farewell prayer by the graves of her loved ones, went on board with the furs she had gathered in her hunting excursions.

While France was thus attempting to settle in the north, Spain had now securely planted her colonies in Mexico and Peru, and her ships, richly laden, were constantly passing through the Gulf of Mexico on

their way to Spain. Many of these in the fierce tropical storms were unable to withstand the fury of the tempest, and were driven on the northern shore of the gulf. The natives here, who had not forgotten the visits of Narvaez and Soto, massacred the crews of the ship-wrecked vessels, or spared them only for a slavery as bad as death.

It was therefore decided to plant a colony at some convenient spot on our southern coast, and in 1559 Don Tristan de Luna was sent from Vera Cruz with thirteen vessels, carrying no less than 1,500 men with several clergymen, friars of the Dominican order, to attend to the spiritual affairs of the colony and convert the natives

Tristan landed in Pensacola Bay on the 14th of August and was just preparing to send back a ship with intelligence when a terrible storm came on, which destroyed every one of his ships. Many were lost, including all on board the ship ready to sail. While looking around for what could be saved, they found a sloop standing with all its cargo, more than a cannon-shot from the shore, as if set there by human hands.

Instead of building a vessel to send for relief or to carry off part of his large force, he set to work to explore, endeavoring to live on the Indians; but he was soon reduced to great straits, with nothing but acorns, nuts and roots for food. However he formed an alliance with the Coosas, and part of his army with them made war upon a tribe on the banks of the Mississippi who seem to have been the Natchez.

At last, however, he fitted out a boat and sent word to Havana of his distress. Angel de Villafañe soon appeared to take command, but he abandoned the country in 1561, leaving Don Tristan, who gallantly hoped to succeed in establishing a post. But the viceroy of Mexico soon ordered him to return and Pensacola was deserted.

CHAPTER V.

FRANCE, SPAIN AND ENGLAND ATTEMPT TO SETTLE OUR SHORES.

Coligny resolves to establish a Huguenot colony in Florida—Ribaut establishes Charlesfort on Port Royal—Captain Albert de la Pierria—Mutiny—The Survivors saved by the English—Laudonniere builds Fort Caroline on the St. John's, Florida—A Revolt—Some turn Pirates—Relieved in Distress by Hawkins—Ribaut arrives—The Spaniards resolve to crush the Colony—Melendez sent out—The Fleets meet at Caroline—Melendez retires and builds St. Augustine—Ribaut pursuing him wrecked—Melendez takes Caroline—His Cruelty—Inhuman Treatment of the Wrecked—The Massacre of the French avenged by Dominic de Gourgues—Subsequent History of Florida—Raleigh and his Efforts—Tobacco and Potatoes—A Settlement finally made at Jamestown.

Soon after the discovery of America, Europe was convulsed by the Reformation and by the religious wars and troubles to which it gave rise.

France was the scene of a terrible strife, in which Catholic and Protestant contended for the mastery. At the head of the Protestant or Huguenot party was the able Gaspar de Coligny, Admiral of France.

In one of the moments of peace during this war, he resolved to plant a colony in America that might afford a refuge for those of his faith, if, in the doubtful struggle before them, they should be worsted.

Charles IX., who esteemed Coligny, favored his project; and the Admiral selected for its execution John Ribaut, of Dieppe, an experienced navigator and brave man. Many gathered to join the expedition, but as usually happened, few fitted for such an undertaking. Ribaut sailed from Dieppe on the 18th of February, 1562, in two roberges, a

kind of small vessel. A low, well-wooded point, at Matanzas inlet, on the Florida coast, was the first land made, but he ran along till he cam to a beautiful bay, to which he gave the name it still bears, Port Royal. Here, on the 20th of May, amid the moss-draped oaks, which had grown for centuries, the towering pines, the fragrant flowers, he planted—probably on Parris Island—a stone carved with the arms of France, and took possession of the new land.

He then threw up Charlesfort, so named in honor of Charles IX., probably near what is now called Archer's creek, not far from Beaufort. Here Ribaut left twenty-six men, under Albert de la Pierria, and then sailed back to report how attractive a land they had found. These men for a time enjoyed their new life, but they were indisposed to work. their commander was harsh and incompetent. They finally mutinied and killed him, then put to sea in a wretched boat which they built. On the ocean their provisions were soon exhausted, and they had devoured one of their number to save the rest, when an English ship picked them up.

Coligny did not despair. In 1564 he sent out Laudonniere with three ships, which in June, 1564, reached the mouth of the St. John's. Here Laudonniere erected a triangular fort of earth, called Fort Caroline, eighteen miles up the river. The country was beautiful and attractive, but the settlers were ill chosen. There was no order, no industry, no religious worship, nothing to mark a well-regulated colony. They depended on the natives for food, and to obtain it they used entreaty, stratagem, and even force. Some mutinied, and compelled Laudonniere to sign an order permitting them to depart. Then they equipped two vessels, and set out to cruise as pirates against the Spaniards. This sealed the doom of the colony.

Spain had viewed with jealous fear all attempts to settle Florida. Her commerce already suffered terribly from cruisers which ran out from ports of England and France, sometimes recognized by the Governments, sometimes mere pirates. If either of these nations got a foothold in Florida, so near the route of all the rich ships from Mexico, the Spaniards would be ruined. They took alarm at Cartier's colony, distant as it was; the present attempt was one they resolved to put down, more especially as it already assumed in their eyes a piratical character.

There was then in Spain a brave man bowed down by heavy grief, a naval commander full of energy and resolution. He sought from King Philip II. permission to sail for Florida to seek his son whose vessel had been wrecked on that dangerous coast, but whom he hoped to find still alive.

It was proposed to him to conquer Florida, and when news came of Ribaut's colony, to root out the French. He sailed in July, 1565, with a large fleet, but arrived almost alone at Porto Rico, his vessels having been scattered in a storm. With his usual promptness he resolved not to wait for the other vessels but kept on to Florida, making the coast on the 28th of August. A fine haven that he found he named St. Augustine, but he only reconnoitered it at this moment. Then he coasted along looking for the French.

Laudonniere's colony had gone on from bad to worse. Starvation stared them in the face, when one day Sir John Hawkins, the slave merhant, entered their harbor and not only liberally relieved their distress, but sold them a vessel in which to leave Florida. While all were preparing for the voyage, sails were again descried, and ere long the flag of France floating to the breeze cheered every heart. Ribaut had arrived on the 28th of August with seven ships bearing settlers and supplies

His vessels rode at anchor before the fort, as Melendez bore down in the San Pelayo, with four other ships of his squadron. His reply to the French hail was stern and plain, terrible and cruel. "I am Pedro Melendez, of Spain, with strict orders that I cannot disobey: every Catholic I will spare, every Protestant shall die." The French ships, unprepared for action, cut their cables and stood out to sea. Melendez gave chase, but failing to overtake them, returned to St. Augustine. There two of his officers were already landing guns, stores, and troops, founding the first permanent settlement on our soil, our oldest city, St. Augustine. Aware that a decisive struggle must now take place, Melendez pushed on the works to put himself in a position of defense in case of attack. And he acted wisely.

By the bedside of Laudonniere, then sick, the French had held their council. Ribaut, against the will of Laudonniere, determined to take all the best of his force on the ships, and sail down to St. Augustine, so as by a bold attack to crush Melendez and his new colony. He sailed, leaving Laudonniere sick, with a half-ruined fort and a motley collection to defend it.

On the morning of the 11th, Melendez saw that the French were upon him. Off the harbor were Ribaut's ships, black with men. He must fight now, not the unprepared fleet of the first day, but Ribaut, eager and ready. While his men appealed to heaven to save them, the experienced Spanish sea-captain scanned the heavens. There he read a coming tempest, and ere long he felt that St. Augustine was safe, as he saw the French ships wrestling with the hurricane. His own action was prompt. The French fort was clearly left unguarded. In spite of remonstrance and almost a mutiny, he marched with a good force overland, wading breast-high through everglade

and morass, swarming with alligator and serpent, from St. Augustine to the St. John's, and on the morning of the 21st of September he burst into Fort Caroline during a driving rain. The Spaniards cut down all before them without mercy. Before Melendez gave the order to spare the women and children, at least a hundred of the French had fallen. Seventy were spared: Laudonniere, with a few others, reached the French vessels that had remained in the harbor. The sun rose on a scene of horror, and lit up the Spanish flag floating above the fort. Leaving a garrison, Melendez returned to St. Augustine.

It was subsequently charged that he hung his prisoners to trees, with an inscription: "I do this not as to Frenchmen, but as to heretics," but the story is of a later date.

Melendez had returned in triumph to St. Augustine, when one day Indians came to announce that a French ship had been wrecked to the southward, and that the men were unable to cross an arm of the sea. Melendez hastened down. It was one of Ribaut's vessels. The cruel Spaniard gave dubious words: the starving French surrendered, and were butchered in cold blood. Again tidings came of another and larger party. This was Ribaut himself, and those who had been in his ship. The French commander in vain endeavored to make terms. He and his whole force surrendered, and they too were butchered. A few, wrecked near Cape Canaveral, were spared, but the French colony in Florida was utterly extirpated, and Spain held the land for centuries.

France was filled with indignation at the cruel massacre, but the King sought no redress. One man, Dominic de Gourgues, resolved to avenge Ribaut. Obtaining a commission to proceed to the coast

of Africa, he sailed there, and after a fight with the Portuguese and some negro tribes, took in, it would seem, his cargo of slaves, and sailed to Cuba. There he announced to his men his purpose to attack the Spanish fort on the St. John's. His proposal was received with joy.

He soon was off the harbor, and running up the coast, landed. The Indians came flocking to the French flag. Saturiva, a chief, readily joined him to attack the Spaniards, whom he hated.

The force of French and Indians was soon on the march. Through the fragrant woods of Florida, with the beautiful magnolia and the live-oak, where birds of strange hue and all the denizens of the swamps met the eyes of the French, they plodded steadily on, if the story is at all true. A small Spanish outpost lay north of the St. John's. It was carried by storm.

Then the Indians swam across the St. John's, and the French, opening a cannonade across it, passed over in a single boat. A second post was soon taken.

All was now alarm at the Spanish fort San Matheo. The cry, "The French are coming," thrilled through every heart. But the commander resolved to hold his ground. A party was sent out. It was surrounded and cut to pieces. Then the Spaniards attempted to escape by flight. The woods swarmed with red men, and every Spaniard was killed or taken.

The victorious French leader then hung his prisoners on trees, with this inscription : "I do this not as to Spaniards, but as to traitors, robbers, and murderers."

Such is the story of De Gourgues' vengeance, about which there is some doubt.

Amid all this bloody work the city of St. Augustine was founded,

and still stands, a venerable place indeed; with an ancient fort, barracks that were once a convent, and everything to recall other times and another land.

The foundations of St. Augustine were laid amid the din of arms and warlike operations by sea and land. A fort was thrown up, hastily at first, in September, 1565, but when all danger from the French had passed, another was erected on the bar, and the city begun in more regular form, Bartholomew Menendez being the first alcalde. All the settlers were divided into squads, and required to work on the buildings three hours in the morning, and as long in the evening. Thus was St. Augustine built.

Peter Melendez, the governor, had meanwhile sailed to Havana to collect his scattered fleet. As the ships arrived, he sent aid to his establishments in Florida, and setting out with several vessels, explored the coast, seeking in vain for any trace of his son. He entered into friendly relations with the cruel and powerful chiefs of Is and Carlos, and rescued a number of Spaniards, men and women, who had been wrecked on the coast, where the Indians sacrificed one every year to their gods.

But troubles had arisen at St. Augustine and St. Matheo. Mutinies broke out, and for a time, while the alcalde was among the Indians, the insurgents held both places, but they were at last reduced. They had, however, roused the Indians to war by their cruelty, and St. Augustine was soon surrounded by hostile natives, who refused any longer to sell the settlers provisions, and cut off all who left the towns. Among those who fell was Captain Martin de Ochoa, the bravest man in the colony, who was taken in an ambuscade. Emboldened by success, the Indians, gliding up by night, killed two

sentinels on the walls of the fort, and startled the astonished Spaniards by showers of fiery arrows, with which they succeeded in setting fire to the palmetto thatch on the store-house, which was destroyed with all the munitions, provisions, and clothing it contained. The conflagration spread to the dwellings, and all was dismay and alarm in the little town. In vain, even by day, did the Spaniards seek to drive them off. The Indians, lurking in the tall grass, watched them fire, and then, gliding along on the ground like snakes, sent their arrows with terrible aim.



SIR WALTER RALEIGH.

Melendez, hearing of all these troubles, returned to St. Augustine, restored order, quieted the Indians, and suppressed the mutinies. He then sailed up to St. Helena Sound, which you will see on the map of South Carolina. There he built Fort St. Philip, leaving Stephen de Alas in command, with one hundred and ten men. He had thus

explored the coast from the Florida capes to South Carolina; but he did not rest even then. He ascended the St. John's River and sent expeditions and missionaries up even into Chesapeake Bay, where, as early as 1570, a log-chapel was reared on the soil of Virginia.

It seemed as if the whole coast was to become a colony of Spain. But this man of energy was not to be long in Florida. Returning to Spain, he was appointed by the king to command the Invincible Armada for the invasion of England, and died in 1574, just as he was about to sail with it.

With his death the interest in Florida declined; the settlements were confined to the part now known as Florida. There the Spaniards soon, by means of zealous missionaries, gained the Timuquan and Apalache Indians, although many of those devoted men lost their lives in this good work.

In 1586, Sir Francis Drake, who had planted the flag of Queen Elizabeth in California, identified his name with Florida. About the 1st of June he appeared before the harbor of St. Augustine. At the outer fort the garrison, after firing a few volleys at his ships, retreated to the town. Drake took possession of the Fort St. John, and advanced in his boats to St. Augustine. The garrison was only one hundred and fifty strong, and these, with the inhabitants, retreated, abandoning the town to Drake, who set it on fire; and the first American city, with its neat town-hall, church, and other buildings, was entirely destroyed, and the fine gardens around it laid waste. Drake then sailed on to destroy Fort St. Philip, but ran into Carolina and relieved Raleigh's colony. The Spaniards returned to their ruined city, and with help from Havana soon rebuilt it.

Of the subsequent history of Florida we need say little until the period when it became part of the United States.

In 1638 the Apalaches declared war, and advanced to the very gates of St. Augustine, but the Spaniards finally reduced them, and compelled them to furnish a number of men to labor on the public works. Another Indian war broke out in 1687, in which the Apalachicolas and Creeks rose in rebellion because the Spaniards wished to remove them from their towns to another district.

Many Indians at this time retired to the English colony of South Carolina, and the Yamassees not only did so, but became a scourge to Florida, sacking and burning the settlements and missions.

The Spanish government, to keep off other nations on the Gulf, founded Pensacola in 1693, but France and England hemmed her in, and by frequent invasions destroyed the Indian towns, or drew off the people, so that Florida became an insignificant colony.

England was not indifferent to America. Elizabeth had made her kingdom powerful on the sea. She had defied Spain ; she too, like the Kings of France and Spain, could give away with her pen realms in America. One day her favorite, Sir Humphrey Gilbert, inflamed by Frobisher's discoveries at the North, and Sir Francis Drake's exploration of our Pacific shore up to Oregon, asked of the great queen a patent. It was freely granted, and extensive territories were assigned to him. But he did not live to establish a colony. His end was sad.

He sailed to America in a fleet, but disasters overtook him. His largest ship was wrecked. The brave Sir Humphrey was returning in the Squirrel, a little bark of only ten tons burden, when terrible storms came on. No one who had been at sea had ever met with

such mountain waves or fierce wind. Every moment seemed the last, but Sir Humphrey, seated calmly on his deck, called out to those on his other vessel, the Hind: "We are as near to heaven by sea as by land." They were the last words of the brave old sailor. During the night the lights of the Squirrel suddenly disappeared. She had sunk with all on board.

His half-brother, the brilliant and unfortunate Sir Walter Raleigh, obtained a patent as ample as Sir Humphrey's.

One summer day in July, 1584, two English ships lay to off the coast of North Carolina. The land-breeze came off rich with the perfume of flowers and spicy odors. The sky and sea were calm. An entrance was easily found for the ships, and the natives on Wocoken Island sprang up in wonder to see the great canoes come bearing on towards their shore. From the anchored vessels came boats of richly-clad men. The arms of England were set up, and they gazed in wonder on the rich vegetation, the clustering grape-vines, the forests, from which such flocks of birds arose as to deafen with their cries. The timid natives welcomed them.

Returning, full of sanguine hopes, the explorers induced Raleigh to send out a colony. Sir Richard Grenville brought out settlers under Lane to occupy Roanoke Island. They did not understand how to begin: they burned an Indian village, they treacherously killed Wingina, a native chieftain or king. The prospect now grew dark; an ominous cloud was gathering. The colonists, who had not labored to cultivate the soil, saw nothing but destruction.

To their delight they one day beheld ships entering, which by their build and by their flags were recognized as English. Sir Francis Drake, cruising along, stopped in to visit his friends. He found

them in despair, and taking all on board, hoisted sail for England.

Twice more did Raleigh attempt to colonize North Carolina. Each time the colonists, left unprovided, perished by the hands of the red men. The State commemorates his efforts by giving his name to her capital.

By Raleigh's efforts England gained only a knowledge of three American plants, Indian corn, potatoes, and tobacco.

Sir Walter Raleigh acquired a taste for tobacco, and often in his hours of relaxation solaced himself by smoking in the Indian fashion. The story is told that one day, having sent his servant for a pitcher of water, and lighted his pipe in the mean time, the poor faithful fellow, when he returned, seeing his master enveloped in smoke, supposed him on fire, and dashed the contents of his pitcher over him, rousing Sir Walter from his reverie in rather an astonished attitude.

The potatoes he is said to have given to his gardener at Youghal, Ireland. The man looked at them, smelt them, and bit them, on the whole regarding them with great contempt, and, when he did plant them, put them in an out-of-the-way place, bestowing no care whatever on his master's American plants. The neglected potato put out its shoots, but even its purple blossom did not win it favor. At last, at the proper time, Sir Walter ordered the man to dig them up. He obeyed joyfully, but was soon amazed at the multiplicity of the roots. His astonishment grew when his master ordered them to be boiled, and it was not till he had eaten one that he began to look on the potato with favor.

It was soon cultivated extensively in Ireland, and thence introduced into England and other parts. From the fact that it was cul-

tivated first in Ireland, it is sometimes called, even in this, its native country, the Irish potato.

A number of men in England now took up the idea of a colony in America. Several of them were men of experience, who knew enough about America to carry out their plans successfully. King James gave them an ample Patent in 1606, and two companies were formed. The London Company, which obtained all the territory between the thirty-fourth and thirty-eighth degree, soon set to work.

On the 26th of April a little fleet of three vessels, under the English flag, entered the capes and anchored in Chesapeake Bay, naming the capes, in honor of the King's sons, Charles and Henry. The whole land seemed wonderfully attractive. After some deliberation they ascended the James River, and landed fifty miles from its mouth to lay the foundations of Jamestown, named, like the river, in honor of the King.

CHAPTER VI.

Permanent Settlements of England and France—Virginia settled at Jamestown—Early Visits of the Spaniards to the Chesapeake—Powhatan's Tribe—Captain John Smith—Argall—Pocahontas, her Marriage and Death—First Legislature in America—What Jamestown resembled—Opechancanough's War and Massacre—The Company suppressed—Virginia a Royal Colony—The People—Spain settles New Mexico—The French in Acadia—Jesuits in Maine—Romance of La Tour—Madame La Tour—Wars with New England—Acadia conquered, becomes Nova Scotia—Quebec founded by Champlain—His Adventurous Career—Character of the Colony—Wars with the Iroquois—Pieskaret—Montreal—Lambert Closse, the Indian Fighter—The French at Onondaga.

NEWPORT'S vessels, the Susan Constant, Godspeed, and Discovery, driven by a fortunate storm beyond the North Carolina coast, where Raleigh had attempted to plant a colony, had sailed into the mag-

nificent bay which still retains its Indian name, Chesapeake. The English gazed around with thankfulness and wonder, and called the point where they first anchored, Point Comfort. There are few more beautiful bays: rivers, many of them navigable for miles, pour their volume of water into this sheet, which, with its picturesque banks, its charming islands teeming with wild fowl, its rich verdure, might justify the expression of one of the new colony, that heaven and earth seem never to have agreed better to frame a place for man's commodious and delightful habitation.

They were not, however, the first to visit this delightful bay. As early as 1540 some Spanish navigator anchored within the capes, and gave the bay which opened so gloriously on his view the name of St. Mary's Bay, which it long bore in Spanish maps. Soon after Melendez settled Florida, Father Segura, with a band of Jesuit missionaries, led by a native Virginian, who, taken to Spain, had pretended to be a sincere convert to Christianity, penetrated far up the Potomac, but were lured into the wilderness only to be ruthlessly murdered, and the whole party of zealous missionaries perished. Melendez then sent ships to punish the murderers, and Spanish vessels thus woke with the thunders of their artillery the shores of the Potomac. The cruel tribe fled from the river southward, and settled on the James.

When the English colony advanced up the James River to a spot fifty miles from its mouth, this tribe was ruled by Powhatan, who dwelt in savage grandeur on the Pamunkey River The settlers for the new colony were, as usual, badly selected. There were more men to play gentlemen than to fell trees, clear and dig the ground, and put up houses. The queer King of England, James I.,

had given them plenty of laws, and on arriving the Council chose Edward Maria Wingfield president. The most prominent man in the colony, and the man best fitted to aid, was Captain John Smith. They were so jealous of him that they expelled him from the Council. Smith was a man who had seen much of the world. He had been in Holland's war for freedom; in the wars against the Turks, where he fought like a hero; he had been a prisoner in their hands, and escaped in a romantic manner. He was full of energy and resource.

Those in command at once commenced to erect a fort on a tree-clad peninsula, which at high tide was a perfect island. This fortification was triangular in form, with a half-moon at each angle, and from its log-walls four or five cannons frowned on the natives.

While the men were busy felling trees and squaring timber for this work, Newport, with part of the company, ran up the river to the falls, where they found a white boy, supposed to be the child o. members of Raleigh's unfortunate colony.

But even in this brief space the Indians began hostilities. On the 26th of May, 1607, the men working on the fort were startled by an unexpected spectacle. The river seemed alive with canoes; the red men, in all their war-paint, with cries and yells that struck terror to the hearts of the new-comers, surrounded their island. Wingfield, foremost in danger, at last drove the assailants off by means of his cannon, but not till twelve of the colonists were killed or wounded.

Then the fort was completed with all haste, and the settlers began to feel more secure; but the neighboring marshes bred diseases that swept off many; until winter came with its wild-fowl and abundance of game. Then Smith started out to explore. Wingfield was deposed.

One object of the Company in England was to find a stream leading to the Pacific. Gomez, who visited the coast at an early day, convinced the Spaniards that there was no such passage. As we now know the geography of the continent, it seems very amusing to think that Smith ascended the Chickahominy River to see whether it was a short cut to China.

Leaving his boat in charge of two men he struck inland. But his men disobeyed his instructions, and the crafty red men waylaid and slew them.

Smith was soon a prisoner in the hands of hostile Indians. Full of resources, he drew out his pocket-compass, and its wonders made them regard him with awe. He was allowed to send a note to the new fort, but was led in triumph from the villages on the Chickahominy to the Indian villages on the Rappahannock and Potomac, and soon through other towns.

A very pretty story is told by Smith in his later books, that people now begin to doubt very much. Smith was at last brought before Powhatan at Pamunkey. Seated on his mat-bed, with a favorite wife on each side, surrounded by his gravest Sachems, this Indian monarch received Smith as a distinguished prisoner. Water was brought to him, and a feather fan to wipe his face and hands upon, but the council held, doomed to death the stranger who came spying into their land. The warriors, ready to avenge on him their repulse at Jamestown, panted for his blood. He was led forth to a stone, and a stalwart brave swung aloft the heavy stone hatchet that was to crush his head. At this moment, Pocahontas, the daughter of this Indian monarch, who had been watching breathlessly the proceedings, hoping that her father would relent, and spare one for

whom she felt all the childish attachment that a girl of twelve would entertain for one who had always shown her a kindly interest, sprang forward and threw her arms around the neck of the doomed white prisoner, shielding him by her own body. The executioner paused, the chieftain looked sternly at the group, but his daughter's words of appeal changed his decision. Smith was saved, and sent back in safety to Jamestown.

Such is the tale that is told in all lands, and shown in picture and statue.

Smith found the colony reduced to forty men: he attempted to introduce order, and then, in a voyage of three months, sailed all around Chesapeake Bay, thoroughly exploring it, ascending many of the rivers flowing into it, meeting Indians of various tribes, and struck most of all by the gigantic Conestogas, who came down the Susquehanna. His map is one of the best monuments to his fame.

On his return he became President of the Council, and as new emigrants came in, including two women, the first seen in the colony, he enforced industry and established order. Like Melendez at St. Augustine, he required six hours' labor from all. Virginia was not, however, long to enjoy his services. An explosion of gunpowder burnt his hand so seriously as to defy the skill of the colony physician: he sailed to Europe to secure better treatment for his wound, and never returned, although he continued to take a deep interest in the welfare of the colony, and did more by his writings than any other to make it known.

He had no influence at court, no noble friends. Eminently fitted as he was to explore a new country and to manage a new settlement, much as he had done for Virginia, he received no royal grant he

did not even obtain the deed of the lands he cleared or the house he built.

Before Smith sailed, great changes had been made in England in regard to Virginia affairs. The London Company solicited and obtained a new Charter from the King. By this document, issued June 2, 1609, the monarch granted to them all the coast for two hundred miles north and south of James River, with power to appoint a governor. They induced a good and upright nobleman, Thomas, Lord De la Ware, to accept for life the office of Governor and Captain-General of Virginia.

A fresh impulse was given. Nine ships, under Newport, carrying more than five hundred emigrants, sailed from England, bearing Sir Thomas Gates as deputy of the Governor. But only seven ships ran through the hurricane, and reached the James River. Gates' vessel stranded on the rocks of Bermuda, so that the new-comers, with little respect for the authorities in Virginia, caused much trouble.

With Smith's departure almost all semblance of government ceased. Labor was neglected, provisions were wastefully consumed, the Indians were provoked so that they refused all aid. Then came the famous "Starving Time" of Virginia annals. Famine, disease, and war ravaged the settlement. Some took to the sea as pirates. Of the five hundred left by Smith there remained in six months only sixty.

When Gates anchored before Jamestown with two rude vessels built in Bermuda, these spectral men, worn by famine, sickness, and anxiety, came out to implore him to take them from the fated place, looking like the ruins of some ancient town—houses pulled down for firewood; the blockhouse the sole refuge of the wretched remnant

of the hundreds who had settled there. All their stock, horses, swine, poultry, had long since been devoured.

Gates was appalled. There was but one voice, and that was to leave the spot. But he would not burn it, as some desired. Firing a parting salute, they all sailed down the river on the 7th of June.

Jamestown was abandoned.

In Hampton Roads they saw in the horizon the gleam of sails. Lord De la Ware had come with another band of emigrants and supplies. He restored their hopes, and that night Jamestown was again a busy settlement.

Lord De la Ware showed great ability, and the settlement began to prosper. Emigrants poured in with abundant supplies, cattle and live stock; agriculture was encouraged. Jamestown was no longer a mere garrison. Each settler received an allowance of land in fee to improve for his own benefit, and a new settlement was begun at Henrico in 1611.

Ill health soon compelled the good Governor to retire, but Virginia prospered under the strict rule of Sir Thomas Gates and Sir Thomas Dale.

Samuel Argall, an unprincipled man, who plays an important part in Virginia history, well-nigh involved the colony in an Indian war. Pocahontas had on many occasions shown her friendship for the English, but Argall used a treacherous Indian woman to entice Powhatan's daughter into his vessel, and then detained her as a prisoner. This captivity of Pocahontas had a romantic issue. She was received at Jamestown with respect, and while negotiations were in progress with her father, a young gentleman, John Rolfe, already remarkable as the first planter of tobacco in Virginia, was greatly

struck by the amiable qualities of the Indian girl. He soon after proposed marriage, and she accepted. After instruction by the clergyman of the colony, she was baptized and married with her father's consent, her uncle, Opechancanough, attending to give the bride away. The colony gathered into the little church to witness the spectacle; the planter, still young, full of energy, high-minded and graceful, attired in the picturesque dress of gentlemen of that day; the bride, beautiful as the wild deer of her forests, arrayed by the hands of the English women in their dress, full of wonder at the strange ceremonial, full of trust in her chosen husband. It was a day of joy to both white and red man throughout the land of Virginia, and is handed down as one of the great events of history in the paintings on the walls of the Capitol.

It is sad to think that her life was so brief. She sailed to England with her husband, and was received with all honor; but sickening there, died before she could return to America.

There was now at last an English settlement on the American coast that was destined to succeed. We can picture to ourselves what Jamestown was. Not a city of marble palaces and well-paved and lighted streets.

In the woods that covered the beautiful and fertile island, for island it was at times, a good space had been cleared by the vigorous arms of the settlers, and amid the fields, where corn and tobacco were growing beside wheat and other European grains, stood the little town. Two fair rows of houses lined its street, all of framed timbers, two stories high, with a good garret. The public buildings were three large and substantial store-houses, and the neat wooden church. Around all was a good stout palisade, and at the west, on a platform,

cannon were planted to prevent any sudden invasion by hostile Indians. Outside of this palisade farm-houses and some finer dwellings were scattered in attractive spots, and for their protection there were two block-houses, where sentinels kept watch that no Indian war party swam over to the island, to steal unawares on the settlers while at work in the fields or straying in the woods.

We cannot follow all the course of history: how Virginia flourished under good Governor Yeardley, and how it suffered under such men as Argall, who, after his treachery to Pocahontas, destroyed and robbed French settlements in Maine and Nova Scotia, and then became Deputy Governor of Virginia, to crush the colony by his tyranny and vexation.

The worst of such bad men in colonial times was that they were unjust to the Indians, and provoked them to war, in which the innocent settlers suffered.

Hitherto the colony had been governed in England, and the people had no voice in making the laws under which they lived. This could not last. A chance came. Friday, the 30th day of July, 1619, was a memorable day for America. On that day, in the chancel of the church at Jamestown, gathered twenty-two burgesses, representing the different settlements. The minister, Mr. Buck, opened the proceedings with prayer, and all retired to the body of the church. Then each advanced, was sworn in by Governor Yeardley, and took his seat. They elected John Pory Speaker, and he took his place in front of the Governor. The laws of this first Legislature were wise, seeking to restrain evil, to advance education, and to encourage industry and piety.

Powhatan had remained constantly friendly to the English, but he died in 1618, and his influence over the Indian tribes fell to Ope-

chancanough. This Sachem was a dark, resentful man; he never forgot a wrong, and was insensible to kindness. The English, to honor him, had built him a house in the European style, with doors and windows, locks and keys. He was as delighted with it as a child with a toy, and kept locking and unlocking the doors for hours with evident delight. He professed the warmest friendship. A turbulent and troublesome Indian was killed in some affray, and the authorities at once sent to Opechancanough to explain the matter. He was satisfied that the Indian was in fault, and declared that he was glad to be rid of him. He said that the sky would fall sooner than he would break the peace with the white people. Yet he was plotting a general massacre. The Indians came and went into the houses of the settlers, without arms or anything to excite suspicion. They brought in game, deer, turkeys, fish, and furs to sell. On the night of the 21st of March there were Indians at many houses, and the planters urged them to stay, giving them food and lodging.

A man named Pace had an Indian living with him, and another Indian came in. He soon disclosed to the other the projected massacre. Watching his opportunity, this true-hearted fellow crept silently away. Pace, roused from his sleep, saw the dusky form beside him. A whisper of caution, and the whole plot was revealed to him. He sprang to his feet, and dressing in haste, stole down to the river, and sped away in the darkness in his boat to Jamestown. The little town soon turned night into day. All was stir and excitement as messengers darted off to give alarm.

Day broke before the distant plantations could be warned. Men sat down to breakfast with their Indian guests, who were watching the moment. Then they sprang for the planters' arms and began

cutting down young and old. Some rushed from their houses to escape, but the savages were on their track with ferocious yells and blood-stained weapons, and in every direction they saw similar sights, till they at last sank down, tomahawked or shot. In a few hours on that sad spring Friday, three hundred and forty-seven men, women, and children were slain by their firesides with their own weapons, and their mutilated bodies left on the ground.

For a moment all was terror and alarm in Virginia. The enemy had fled, but the settlers crowded to Jamestown and the other forts; some hastened to embark for England. But as soon as the panic was over, they prepared for a war of extermination on the Indians.

There was no chance of bringing them to battle, so the settlers adopted the Indian plan. The Indians of Virginia were all of the Algonquin race, cultivating little ground, living chiefly by fishing and hunting, and they were accordingly much scattered. They had no large palisaded towns, but occupied little hamlets in parties of fifty or more. On these the settlers would steal as silently as Indians. With a ringing hurrah they would dash in on them, cutting down some, and if the rest escaped, it was only to behold from their lurking-place their houses, nets, canoes, crops, given to the flames. Blood-hounds were imported to track the fugitives through the woods, and it became a part of Virginia law that no peace should be made with the Indians. The red man soon had reason to curse the treacherous course of Opechancanough.

King James I. made this massacre a pretext for dissolving the Company under which Virginia had been settled and governed down to this time. He laid all misfortunes at their door. He deprived them of their Charter, and made Virginia a royal colony. Governors

were now to be appointed by the Crown. The planters took alarm. At every settlement meetings were held, and by general agreement agents were sent to England to claim that under the new arrangement the people should retain their Assemblies and make their own laws. The State that was to produce a Washington, a Jefferson, and a Patrick Henry, was thus early jealous of its rights.

James yielded reluctantly; but his Governors were carefully watched by the Virginians, and one of them, Governor Harvey, falling under suspicion, was forced to leave the country.

In the reign of Charles I., Virginia was administered by Sir William Berkeley, an able Governor, who restored peace and harmony, and so won Virginia to the royal cause, that it was the last English possession that submitted to Parliament. When it did yield, it did so almost as an independent power. The Virginians would not allow Cromwell to appoint a Governor; they elected their own Governors during the whole period of the Protectorate, and enjoyed free trade with the world.

Thus was Virginia settled and thus it grew—men attached to the Crown and Church of England, but still more attached to their liberty.

We have thus seen Spain and England succeed in planting colonies on our coast. Spain had penetrated to New Mexico, and John de Oñate finally succeeded in founding San Gabriel, and soon after Santa Fé, and missionaries began to convert to Christianity the half-civilized natives who are known now as Pueblo Indians.

But in 1644 a general revolt of the red men took place. They killed the Governor and missionaries, with many of the Spaniards, only one town escaping. The Spaniards, however, soon recovered

the country, and held it till Mexico became free. It formed part of that Republic till it was ceded to the United States by the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo.

But while Spain and England were thus gaining a foothold in our territory, another European power succeeded in planting a colony at the north, which was long to contend with the English colonies for the mastery in North America. This was France. We have seen how Cartier explored the St. Lawrence; how Coligny, during the wars of religion, attempted to settle Florida.

Though France failed in her first efforts to plant a settlement in North America, she did not abandon the project. Her sons were hardy, bold, adventurous, and at last they succeeded in laying the foundation of a colony which for many years disputed with those of England the control of our continent.

Under the name of New France it extended from the Kennebec to the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and west to Lake Superior and the Valley of the Mississippi.

Roberval obtained a Patent of vast extent. This passed through several hands, and occasional attempts were made to settle, all of which proved unsuccessful.

In 1603, a man of clear head and great energy, Peter du Guast, Sieur de Monts, became Lieutenant-General and Vice-Admiral of all the country between the fortieth and forty-sixth degrees of latitude. This Huguenot gentleman is the real father of French colonization. During the stormy month of March he put to sea in two vessels, accompanied by Samuel de Champlain, an experienced naval man, who had just, following Cartier's route, ascended the St. Lawrence to the rapids. After coasting along Nova Scotia, they entered Passamaquoddy Bay,

and began their settlement on a little island to which they gave the name of Sainte Croix. Here they threw up a little fort, and with willing industry began to clear away the cedars and pines from the sandy soil, and erect dwellings. They planted grain, and made ready



MADAME DE LA PELTRIE WASHING AND DRESSING INDIAN CHILDREN.

to pass their winter, which promised to be severe. With no neighbors nearer than St. Augustine, they endured all the trials of the severe season, but disease thinned them sadly, and in the spring, while

Champlain explored the coast as far as Cape Cod, de Monts sought a new site for his colony. He at last decided upon Port Royal, and to it transferred his settlement, and Maine was abandoned.

Port Royal did not thrive, however; it was a mere trading-post in the hands of French nobles and gentlemen. But Champlain, in 1608, carried out a wiser plan, and began a settlement at Quebec. Below the cliff he landed, July 3, 1608, and laid out a fort. Cape Diamond, tall and bare, and the green heights of Point Levi echo to the woodmen's axes as they level the trees which lined the shore. Champlain is there, directing and guiding, himself an example to the rest. In a few weeks a strong wooden wall enclosed three buildings and a garden spot, while cannon bristled from a platform looking out on the river. Over this floated the flag of France, sometimes to droop, but soon to recover and hold its own here for more than a hundred and fifty years.

Thus were the two colonies of Acadia, or Nova Scotia, and Canada begun.

Jesuit missionaries began to labor among the Indians near Port Royal, but a new proprietor of the place was unfriendly to them. By the aid of a French lady of rank, Madame de Guercheville, they began in 1613 a missionary settlement at Mount Desert Island, on the coast of Maine. They had scarcely landed and commenced building, when Argall, from Virginia, escorting some fishing vessels near there, heard of it, and without any authority attacked and broke up the settlement, killing one of the missionaries, and plundering all. Hearing of the establishment at Port Royal, he visited and plundered that also.

Port Royal was soon restored, and in time Acadia was possessed

by two proprietors, d'Aulnay and La Tour. Of the latter we may here relate an interesting incident. His father joined the English, and receiving many honors, offered to go over and persuade his son to yield his post or join the English. With a considerable force he approached his son's fort, but that gentleman, true to his flag, spurned his father's base offers in a truly noble letter, and prepared to defend himself. He held his own so manfully that the elder La Tour, defeated and remorseful, became the suppliant. To return to England after his failure he durst not do, so he threw himself on the mercy of his son, who assigned him a house outside of his fort, and there maintained him.

Subsequent to this La Tour became involved in difficulties with d'Aulnay. Both sought aid from New England to carry on the war against his own countrymen, whose little posts were dotted along the deeply indented shores of Maine and Nova Scotia. Had they worked in harmony, they might have built up a flourishing colony.

Once, during their struggle, in 1645, d'Aulnay learning that La Tour had left his fort on the St. John's with a slight garrison, marched to attack it with all the force he could muster. But he did not find it an easy task to reduce it. Madame La Tour, with only a handful of men, determined to defend the place to the last. To the summons of d'Aulnay she returned a bold, defiant answer. The fire of her cannon and musketry was such as to drive her assailants off: but on the fourth day one of her men deserted, and d'Aulnay learned how small a force opposed him. But she would not yield. As d'Aulnay was scaling the wall she rushed forward at the head of her little garrison to repel his assault. D'Aulnay, amazed at such courage, proposed terms, and having obtained such as she deemed honorable, the brave lady

surrendered, but the treacherous d'Aulnay on entering seized and hanged all her men but one, compelling the brave lady to witness their execution with a rope around her own neck. The shock was such that three weeks after this gallant lady and devoted wife breathed her last.

With these few incidents in Acadian history we return to Champlain and his colony.

The Indians whom Cartier had found on the St. Lawrence had disappeared. Its banks were lined by roving bands of the Montagnais, called by the New Yorkers in olden time Adirondacks. These brought in furs to the French posts to trade. Other tribes heard of it, and the Algonquins on the Ottawa came down in fleets of birch canoes, loaded with skins of beaver, moose, and deer, to trade with the bearded men who came in mighty ships from over the sea. Other Indians, still of a totally different race, living in palisaded towns, and raising corn and tobacco, beans and squashes, in great plenty on the shores of Lake Huron, and called Hurons by the French, also made their way to Quebec. Champlain made all these wild and savage tribes friends to his little colony. But to be their friend he had to help them against their great enemy. This was a nation occupying what is now New York, from the Hudson almost to Niagara. The French called them Iroquois; the English, when they came to know them, termed them Five Nations, for they comprised the Mohawks, the Oneidas, the Onondagas, the Cayugas, and the Senecas.

Against these the allies required Champlain to join them in war. So, in the early summer of 1609, he ascended the St. Lawrence with a few Frenchmen in a shallop and a large force of Indians. He entered the Sorel River and ascended till the rapids prevented his

further progress. Then, sending back his boat, he went on with the Indians and entered the lake which bears his name. On the 30th of July, as the sun was sinking behind the Adirondacks, they came in sight of a fleet of Iroquois canoes on the lake. The hills around echoed back the yells and cries of the foemen. Both parties made for the shore and prepared for battle on the morn. With the dawn the Iroquois sallied forth from their hastily made fort, led by chiefs with tall plumes. As they came on, Champlain stepped forth from the midst of his allies, in his helmet and cuirass, his arquebuse in his hand. The Iroquois gazed in wonder at this new warrior, but his fire-arms soon laid one chief low and another beside him. Then his allies poured on the astonished Iroquois a shower of arrows. They stood their ground, sending volley after volley at the allies, till Champlain's two comrades, who had approached under cover of bushes, opened fire. Then the Iroquois broke and fled in terror, pursued by Montagnais and Huron and Algonquin along the banks of the lake.

Such was the first Indian battle in Canadian history, fought on the shore of Lake Champlain.

Quebec was slowly growing, with its profitable trade, each year beholding the wide river before it swarm with canoes from the remote west, bearing to the French post skins of animals hunted even as far west as Lake Superior. Champlain was the soul of all. Year after year he was on the Atlantic, hastening to France to engage some high noble to obtain the title of Viceroy and give his influence to Canada; or sailing back with well-chosen men and needed supplies. In 1615 he brought out several priests of the Franciscan Order to minister in his colony and convert the Indians. These simple-minded,

devoted men, with the Jesuits who soon joined them, gave a religious tone to the colony. With one of them, the adventurous Father Caron, Champlain set out for the country of the Huron Indians, and while the priest reared his altar in a rude cabin, amid the dusky denizens of the wild Canadian forest, Champlain prepared to march with a Huron force to attack some allies of the Iroquois in New York State. With a large Huron force they left the palisaded towns of that nation as the Indian summer deluded the French by its sudden warmth. They threaded in their canoes the long line of lakes and rivers leading to Lake Ontario. No human habitation met their eye. It was all wilderness, tenanted only by the wild beast and fowl. Hunting and fishing, the army leisurely made its way till it reached the broad expanse to which these tribes gave the name we still retain, Ontario, beautiful lake. Across its surface, now ploughed by steamers, these light bark canoes bore the host of warriors, and were then hidden in the woods on the southern shore. A march into the interior of the beautiful western part of New York, brought them to the large palisaded town of their enemies. Champlain prepared huge machines to overtop the rude wall, but his allies were rash and ungovernable, and their attacks failed.

Disregarding the protections he devised, they rushed up to the foot of the palisade to fire it; but from the gallery above the defenders hurled stones and poured down water from their large bark reservoirs. Their arrows darkened the air, and Huron after Huron fell dead or wounded. Champlain, fighting gallantly, received two wounds, and at last found the Hurons bent on abandoning the siege. They retreated to their canoes, galled all the way through the forest-paths by the arrows of their foe. At last they reached their canoes, and

were once more on Lake Ontario. Such was the second battle fought by the French to secure the territory of New York.

Various trading-companies from time to time controlled Canada, but Cardinal Richelieu at last formed one known as The New France Company. Under this, Canada had already begun to increase, when an English fleet in 1628 ascended the river and destroyed a French post. A summons came to Champlain to surrender Quebec: but though Kirk, the English commander, had just intercepted his supplies from France, he answered boldly, "I will hold Quebec to the last."

Kirk looked up at the rocky height of Quebec, and at the little fort, and feared to attack. The next year he returned. Champlain and his little colony had almost perished during that dreary winter. He surrendered, and the flag of England waved over Cape Diamond. Champlain was almost recaptured on the St. Lawrence by a French vessel, but was taken to England.

In 1632, Canada was restored to France, and Champlain returned as Governor. A new impulse was given to colonization, and Champlain directed the little colony with great wisdom, till this Father of New France died peacefully on the 25th of December, 1635. He left a name unsullied and unimpeached. He was a skillful navigator, a brave commander, a prudent Governor, and a sincere, upright, practical Christian.

At this time posts existed at Quebec, Tadoussac, Three Rivers, and near Montreal, while the Jesuit missions extended from the mouth of the St. Lawrence to the Huron country, and a college was opened by them at Quebec, the earliest seat of learning in Northern America.

Soon after the death of Champlain the Iroquois renewed their war

on the Hurons, and prevented the French from carrying out a projected settlement in that part. But the missionaries stood their ground, and though exposed to all the horrors of Indian cruelty, did not falter.

Meanwhile a religious fervor was excited in France, and pious people were eager to aid the growth of Canada. In 1639 a ship arrived at Quebec, and from it came Ursuline nuns to open schools for French and Indian girls, and Hospital nuns to tend the sick. As they landed they knelt to kiss the soil of the New World. With the Ursulines came a young widow, Magdalen de la Peltrie, who fled from the gayeties of France to give her fortune and her assistance to the Ursulines. Without becoming a nun she founded their convent and shared their labors. A venerable ash-tree still stands within the enclosure of the Ursuline convent at Quebec, beneath whose leafy shade this devoted lady, two hundred years ago, washed with her own hands and dressed in civilized garments the first little red pupils sent to the Ursulines to instruct. Her zeal was not momentary; she spent her whole life in Canada, aiding in every good work, and when she died, in 1671, was mourned by the whole colony.

In the general movement in favor of Canada, Sillery, a Knight of Malta, sent means to found a settlement for Christian Indians, and a pious association in 1642 founded the city of Montreal. This city became the bulwark of Canada, for almost immediately a new Iroquois war broke out, and the Five Nations attacked alike the French and their allies. Father Jogues, a Jesuit missionary, was captured and carried off a prisoner to the Mohawk, where one of his companions was put to death, and he himself, after undergoing fearful tortures, was at last with difficulty rescued by the kind-hearted Dutch colonists at Albany.

To defend Canada and check the inroads of the Mohawks, Montmagny, the Governor of Canada, whom these Indians called Onontio, built a fort at the mouth of the Sorel.

One day, while the Governor's bark lay in the rapid Sorel, and the soldiers were busy on the fortification, the yell of the Indian broke the stillness of the forest, and a volley from Dutch muskets in their dusky hands rattled among them. Corporal du Rocher rallied his men, and the Mohawks, losing several of their braves, fled in confusion. The annals of Canada abound in heroic achievements.

Ahasistari, a Huron chief, when Father Jogues was taken, refused to abandon him. "I vowed to share thy fortunes, whether death or life. Lo, brother, here I am to keep my vow!" He had been the terror of the Mohawks. Once, on Lake Ontario, he was surprised by a large force of Iroquois war canoes. "We are dead!" cried his braves, "let us fly!" "No! no!" he exclaimed, "let us meet them rather," and seizing his paddle, made his canoe skim over the water towards them. Then, with a bound, he sprang into the foremost canoe, tomahawked one man, dashed two others into the water on either side, and upset the canoe. Before they could realize their position, he was swimming around with one hand and dealing with the right deadly blows with his terrible hatchet at every Mohawk head struggling in the water. With loud cries the other Mohawk canoes took flight, pursued by the Hurons, who picked up their gallant chief.

Montreal could boast of a great Indian fighter in the town major, Lambert Closse, whose skill and bravery often saved that frontier town from the Indians. One day in July, 1651, when the broiling sun poured down on the little town beneath the mountain of Montreal,

and all seemed to languish under the influence, the Sisters of the Hospital were startled by an Indian yell. Mohawks had glided into the town and crept up a ditch to their very door. Closse, with sixteen men, had been stationed there, and though the enemy were two hundred, he fought them steadily, almost hand to hand, from sunrise till the sun sank again in the west. Every sally told, for where Closse charged the Indians gave way, knowing his deadly aim and the weight of his arm. At one time they swarmed over the wall in such force that he could not drive them back, when his only cannon, loaded to its utmost, suddenly burst, killing one Frenchman, but hurling a number of the Indians into the air in fragments and filling the rest with terror.

On another occasion the watch-dogs warned the Governor of Montreal that Indians were prowling around. Closse was sent out to reconnoitre. His scouts discovered the enemy; but he was instantly surrounded by several hundred Indians, who came on with fierce yells from the forest around, whose reddening autumn leaves were a banner of war. Closse saw at a glance his danger, and knowing an abandoned house near, made a bold push and cut his way through the enemy. They reached it with little loss, and, once inside, barricaded it well and cut loop-holes. Taken aback by his bold dash, the Mohawks had paused; now, convinced of their error, they dashed on, but his deadly rifles carried death through their ranks. He kept up the fight till all his powder was gone, then a gallant fellow named Baston, under cover of their last volley, dashed out and reached Montreal at a run. With panting words he told the situation. Ten men started out with him, carrying ammunition and a small cannon. While some reached the house, the rest attacked

the enemy in the rear, and then Closse, sallying out, routed them with terrible slaughter.

The war was not constant. There were occasional lulls. Peace was made with great ceremony at Three Rivers, in July, 1645, and the Mohawks promised to bury the hatchet forever. Yet, when Father Jogues went as a missionary to their towns, he was seized and cruelly butchered.

Then the war was renewed. One of their first acts was to surprise and kill by treachery Pieskaret, a great Montagnais chief, a friend of the French, who, unsuspicious of hostilities, welcomed a party as friends and was killed on the spot.

This Pieskaret was one of the bravest and most crafty of Indians on record. Once, with four comrades, he set out from Three Rivers, resolved to make the Iroquois pay dearly in atonement for the slaughter of his countrymen. Each of his party had three muskets loaded with two bullets chained together.

Grim and silent, they paddled steadily up the Sorel. An Iroquois war party of fifty braves, in ten canoes, at last emerges in their sight, and loud yells arise at the prize so near their grasp. Pieskaret and his men raise their death chant, standing erect, ready for their inevitable doom. But as the enemy are about to seize them, their chant dies away, each stoops to seize a weapon, and fifteen bullets are sent through the frail elm-bark canoes of the Mohawk braves. In a moment the whole war party was floundering in the rapid river, while Pieskaret paddled on, shooting and tomahawking, sparing only a few to lead off as prisoners to grace his triumph.

Another time, as the snows began to disappear beneath the genial warmth of spring, and all travel was suspended, he set out alone.

With infinite toil he threaded the intricacies of the woods, with their deep ravines and swelling torrents, till he came near the Mohawk country. Then he reversed his snow-shoes, putting the point behind. At last the smoke curling from the bark lodges showed him that a town was reached. Concealing himself till night, he stole under cover of darkness into a cabin, cut down all there, and bore off their scalps to his lurking-place. With the dawn came the wild yells, the death cry, and the Mohawks swarmed out to find the assailant. They found tracks entering the village, none going out. Three nights in succession he did the same. The Mohawks durst not sleep. Still Pieskaret watched, and stole warily around till he caught a Mohawk nodding at his post. He struck him down; but his victim gave his death cry. The whole village rushed out. Pieskaret, the fleetest runner known, soon distanced them, and hid himself. A party in pursuit stopped near by to rest. Pieskaret, ever on the alert, returned, tomahawked them, and then made his way to the St. Lawrence with the bloody trophies of his campaign.

The Iroquois cantons poured an immense force into the Huron country, taking town after town, slaying many, carrying off some as prisoners, and putting others to death with the most fearful tortures. The Jesuit missionaries stood fearlessly by their flocks. Fathers John Brebeuf and Gabriel Lalemant were tortured for hours, enclosed in resiny bark, which was set on fire, burned from head to foot with heated stones and iron, scalped, their flesh cut away and devoured before their eyes, till death put an end to their sufferings and crowned their triumph. Nor were they the only ones: in the Huron towns, on their pious journeys among peaceful tribes, the missionaries were slain amid their pious labors.

In a short time Upper Canada was a desert, and the French posts on the St. Lawrence were in a state of siege.

At a moment when all seemed lost, the Iroquois of their own accord appeared, bearing the white flag. Men could scarce believe their senses when these fierce warriors offered peace and invited the French to begin a settlement at Onondaga, and establish missions there.

On the northern shore of Lake Onondaga the French settlement of St. Mary's, with its Christian mission, was begun in 1656, and the truths of the gospel were proclaimed from the Mohawk to the Niagara. Everything betokened success, when signs which there was no mistaking, warned them that the treacherous savages were planning their massacre. The nearest post was Montreal, and to reach it seemed impossible.

A plan was formed. Silently and cautiously they made several large boats within their houses, and collected there all canoes that could be obtained. When all was ready, a young man, who had been adopted by the Onondagas, met the chiefs.

"I must give a feast to my red brothers, a bounteous feast, where all must be eaten."

"It is well."

The little bundles of sticks denoting the number of days to the feast were distributed. All the live-stock were killed, and the feast began. By the rules of the Indians each brave is compelled to eat all set before him, and the French heaped the bark platters. Music and dances varied the entertainment, and they ate away till it was far into the night. Then the gorged and weary savages crawled to their lodges, and were soon lost in a heavy slumber. When all had become

still in the Indian village, the French got down their last boats, and loading them, embarked. All night long they plied the paddle and the oar, and day saw them beyond pursuit. The wide, open lake, Ontario, is reached at last, and keeping well off shore, they threaded the Thousand Islands and darted down the St. Lawrence to Montreal. Meanwhile, their guests, after sleeping far into the day, roused up, and by degrees strolled to the French settlement. All was still. "They sleep heavy," said the Indians. But when the sun began to descend towards the west their curiosity became excited. There was no answer to their knock. At last, some bolder than the rest, climbed and reached a window and entered. From room to room they wandered. The Frenchmen had gone. Then they were perplexed. "The Frenchman had no boats," said they. "He has gone by magic, he has walked through the air, for he has left no trail on land."

Again the French colony was scourged by a desolating Indian war, interrupted by occasional gleams of peace, due, especially, to Garakonthie, an Onondaga chief, who became a Christian and sought to bring his tribe to the arts of Christianity and peace.

In 1662 a change took place in the government, by which the Company ceased to control Canada, and it became a royal province.

CHAPTER VII.

New Netherland—Hudson's Discovery—Christiaensen—Valentine and Orson—Block builds the "Onrust," the first New York vessel—New York and Albany Settled—Treaty of Tawasentha—Dutch West India Company—Purchase of New York Island—The New Netherland—Indian Troubles—Captain Underhill and the Battle of Strickland's Plain—The Swedes on the Delaware—They are reduced by Stuyvesant—Troubles with New England—New Netherland taken by the English.

On the 3d of September, 1609, a little two-masted yacht of not more than eighty tons, such as gentlemen now use for pleasure, cautiously sailed in between Coney Island and Sandy Hook, and anchored in a bay that seemed alive with fish. From the masthead floated the orange-white-blue banner of Holland, but the commander was an English navigator of long experience, who had sailed to find here what Smith sought up the Chickahominy, a passage to India.

All around was beautiful. A white sandy beach, with its plum-bushes, then towering oaks, pine, and cedar, meadows of rich green grass, enamelled with the flowers of early autumn, the iron-weed with its purple masses, the thistle and deep, dark, sumach berries, with snowy masses of aster. Around him was a noble harbor, a capacious basin which received the waters of large rivers. Ere long the Half Moon was approached by canoes, dug-outs of wood, with natives wondering at his little craft, as though it were some Ark of the earliest, or Great Eastern of latest date. In mantles of feathers and robes of fur, with rude copper necklaces, they at first gazed in wonder: when at last they saw that the new-comers were men, they approached with beans and clams to offer. Cautiously did Henry Hudson enter Newark Bay, and sailed up the river that still bears his name, till he anchored beneath the shadow of the majestic Catskills. Further

on he landed in an Indian canoe. A feast was spread for him by a chief: pigeons were shot for their guest, and a dog prepared; but Hudson did not stay to enjoy it, though the Indians, to dispel all fear, broke their bows and arrows and threw them into the fire.

Near where Albany stands he traded for several days, and gave liquor to the Indians so freely, that the tribes long retained the memory of this first revel and use of drinks that were to prove their ruin.

On his way down he had a collision with the natives, and killed several of them near Fort Washington. Then, hoisting sail, he glided into the bay and was soon once more on the open sea. Reaching England first, he sent a report to Holland, but was detained by the government, and not allowed to return in person to his Dutch employers.

But the way was opened to the energetic sons of Holland. Dutch ships at once began to run over and carry on trade with the natives for furs. Henry Christiaensen, of Cleves, the real father of the Dutch colony of New Netherland, led the way, and on his second voyage, in 1611, with Adrian Block, who has left his name to an island which you will find near Narragansett Bay, took back a good ship-load of furs and two young men, sons of Indian chiefs on the Hudson. In allusion to the old fairy tale, and probably from their different dispositions, the Dutch called these two young men Valentine and Orson. They were educated in Holland, and subsequently returned to the Hudson, but were of little service to the Dutch. Orson was an Orson indeed: not long after he caused Christiaensen's death, and was shot down on the spot.

In 1613 Block met with a misfortune. His little vessel, while in the waters near Manhattan Island, took fire and was destroyed.

So he wintered on the island, dreaming, perhaps, of the great city one day to cover it. Block's log-cabins were the first white dwellings in the State. With stout heart he and his men set to work to repair their loss, and the yacht Onrust, which they built, was the first vessel ever launched in New York waters. So began the settlement and industry of New York.

The next year Christiaensen threw up a little block-house on Castle Island, just below Albany. It was called Fort Nassau, and our readers can readily picture it to their own minds. As you approached the island you saw a stockade of stout timbers, fifty-eight feet square. If you landed and made your way up the low island, you found that the fort was surrounded by a ditch eighteen feet wide. Crossing this, you entered the palisade to find a substantial Dutch trading-house, twenty-six feet wide by thirty-six long. To this came in canoes, Mohegans from the east, Mohawks and River Indians from the west, to sell the furs taken in their winter hunts.

It was soon after this that Christiaensen, who had made ten voyages from Holland to the Hudson, met his death as we have mentioned, a sad end to his active career.

The States-General, as the Government of Holland was called, now began to notice the new acquisition. They named the country New Netherland, authorized a trading company, and in 1614 issued a charter. Thus the Dutch colony took its place. Manhattan, which is the Indian word for island, became a well-known place.

The little Dutch colony now sought the alliance of the most powerful Indian tribe in the land, the Iroquois, or Five Nations, and in 1617 concluded a treaty with them at Tawasentha, or Norman's Kill. This treaty, held with delegates from various tribes, and especially

with the powerful Mohawks, became the great bulwark of the colony. From that day the Mohawks, Oneidas, Cayugas, Onondagas, and Senecas looked upon the colonists as friends, and by the influence they exercised over the other tribes, prevented many hostilities. In fact, they never wavered, even when the English took the colony, but continued friendly down to the time of our Revolution, when the British Government used them to desolate our frontier settlements.

The Dutch, centering at Manhattan, explored the coast as far as Narragansett Bay and the Delaware; but the Connecticut and Delaware were claimed as the limits of the colony.

In 1621 a great company of merchants was formed, called the Dutch West India Company, and to it New Netherland was conveyed. The colony remained in the control of this Company till the time of the English conquest. It set to work with activity to increase the settlement and extend trade. Colonists came over and settled where Albany now stands, and in 1622 Fort Orange was erected there. Another fort grew up near Gloucester, New Jersey, on the banks of the Delaware, while the rocky island of Manhattan began to be dotted with houses. Around these posts ground was cleared, grain planted, and an industrious, simple, thriving population was formed.

Under Cornelis Jacobsen May, the first Director or Governor of New Netherland, live-stock in considerable quantities was sent over in 1624, and the Indians saw for the first time horses, cattle, sheep, and swine, domestic animals of which they had no idea.

The next Director, Peter Minuit, is famous for a purchase which he made. He bought Manhattan Island of the natives for sixty guilders, equal to about twenty-four dollars, and this paid in trinkets, and what was worse, in liquor.

We have seen what Jamestown, the first English town, was. What New York was in those days we can also tell pretty well. Below what is now the Bowling Green, negro slaves who had been brought in, were building Fort Amsterdam; near its rising walls were the bark houses of the Dutch settlers, made at first much like those of the natives; each man lived on his own little farm, and all were busy, some building more substantial houses, some trading with the Indians, the mechanics plying their different trades, while cattle browsed in the rich meadows. There was no church or minister; the settlers met for worship in a large room in a horse mill, to which a bell, captured from a Spanish vessel, called them to the services, which were directed by two men, called Consolers of the Sick.

They were good-hearted, cheerful, industrious, practical people, without the reckless misgovernment of the early settlers at Jamestown.

In 1626, Van Krieckebeeck, Commandant at Fort Orange, foolishly intermeddled in an Indian war, and with six men joined a Mohegan war party against the Mohawks; but they had not gone many miles before they were suddenly attacked. A shower of flint-headed arrows swept through their ranks. The Dutch commander and three of his men were killed, the rest fled; two of them, Portuguese soldiers, barely escaped, one of them being severely wounded in the back while swimming a river. Fortunately for the Dutch the Mohawks did not follow up this victory, but became friendly again, and the Dutch, taught by this lesson, never again attacked them.

A great event took place in 1631. The Dutch West India Company, to show the importance of the colony, built at New Amsterdam, as New York was then called, a ship called the New Netherland, of

six hundred tons. It was the largest vessel yet built in America, and probably one of the greatest merchant vessels of its time in the world. The little town must have watched its progress, and grown wild with enthusiasm, when it at last glided down into the water, and was duly named, with a bottle of wine broken over the bow. And when, fully rigged, she took in her cargo of furs and other New Netherland commodities, how all followed her with their eyes as she moved grandly down to the Narrows, beyond Sandy Hook, to the open sea! Every man felt a personal pride in the noble ship, every timber of which grew in the colony, and which bore out a cargo of purely colonial productions.

But while all were thus prospering, a terrible massacre occurred on the Delaware, caused by a trifling thing. At Swanendael, near where Lewiston is now, the Dutch had planted a post with the arms of Holland painted on a tin plate. An Indian chief took this down to make pipes of it. Hossett, the Dutch commander, made great complaints at this insult to his country. The Indians, not understanding this, but supposing it to be what they call some big medicine, killed the chief and brought his scalp to the Dutch. His family, to avenge his death, planned a general massacre of the Dutch, and while they were all scattered in the fields at work, three of the boldest entered Hossett's house, pretending they had come to buy some articles, and as he came down the ladder, killed him. A large dog kept at the little fort caused them some alarm, but they killed it with twenty-five arrows, and then stole out and cut down all the settlers one by one. Then the silence of the grave hung over the desolate valley.

The Dutch were more successful on the Connecticut, where, in 1633, Arendt Van Curler bought of the Pequods and Mohegans land for a

meadow south of Little River, near the present city of Hartford Here the little fort Good Hope was erected, and with its cannon tried to hold the river. But the people of New England had also learned to trade in furs, and they, in spite of the Dutch, ran past Fort Good Hope and settled at Windsor. In a few years they took possession of the mouth of the river, and the Dutch were driven back towards the Hudson.

New Dutch settlements grew up on the Delaware, but in 1638 a Swedish colony came over under Peter Minuits, and established Fort Christina, near Wilmington. The Dutch protested, but the Swedes held on ; emigrants came over, and a little Swedish settlement was formed, with its Lutheran church. They cultivated friendship with the Indian tribes, and showed more zeal than the Dutch or Virginians did to convert them to Christianity.

The Dutch colony advanced steadily. The fruits of Europe were planted and throve, and all was prosperous, when Indian troubles arose in 1640, and Governor Kieft sent an expedition against the Raritans which ravaged their fields and killed many. The Raritans, who had really done the Dutch no wrong, retaliated by attacking the Dutch settlements on Staten Island.

Then a Westchester Indian murdered a man on Manhattan Island, and as his tribe refused to give him up, on the ground that he did it to retaliate the murder of his uncle by the Dutch, Kieft sent an expedition against them, and they made peace, promising to give up the murderer.

Other hostilities followed; the whole colony was alarmed, and from the Mohawk came tidings that that fierce tribe were at war with the French, and actually had a French missionary in their hands, on whom they had inflicted terrible cruelties.

Kieft massacred Indian parties at Jersey City, Corlaer's Hook, and on Long Island. Then the war became general; the Dutch were attacked in the fields and on rivers, and at last found it necessary to raise an army. They gave command to Captain John Underhill, an old Indian fighter from New England. Anne Hutchinson's settlement was, however, destroyed by the Westchester Indians, and Lady Moody's plantation at Gravesend was saved only by the bravery of the colonists, who were attacked by a host of Indians; but a settlement at Maspeth was broken up.

Fort Amsterdam was a scene of confusion: from all parts the settlers came crowding in with all they could save from their burning houses and fields, and while famine threatened the land, Kieft, the author of all the mischief, coolly sent off to the West Indies two shiploads of grain.

It was while the little town on Manhattan Island was in such a state of distress, that the missionary Isaac Jogues, whom the Dutch at Albany had rescued, visited it, and gives us a description which is very interesting. It was then, as it has always since been, a place for men of all languages and religions.

As the war went on, Underhill destroyed two Indian villages near Hempstead, Long Island, killing more than a hundred.

In another expedition, marching over rocks and snow from Greenwich, he came up to an Indian village, standing out in the strong moonlight from the mountain behind. It was full of Indians, who yelled defiance. On charged the Dutch; but the Indians sallied bravely out, fighting till a hundred and eighty lay dead on the snow, and many Dutch fell under the Indian arrows. Then Underhill managed to fire the village, and of the seven hundred Indians only

eight escaped; all the rest were slain or perished in the flames. Such was the battle of Strickland's Plain, the most terrible Indian battle in early New York annals.

At last, in 1645, a great council of the Indian tribes convened at Fort Amsterdam. And in front of it, under the open sky, in view of the noble harbor, Sachems of all the tribes seated themselves in grave silence in presence of the Governor and Council, and solemnly smoking the pipe of peace, bound themselves to eternal friendship with the Dutch.

Under Peter Stuyvesant, who became Governor in 1647, a more vigorous government was established, and order introduced. But the English kept encroaching from the Connecticut, and the Swedes were troublesome on the Delaware. At last the Swedes, under Rising, seized Fort Casimir.

Then, one Sunday in September, 1655, the largest armament that had ever yet sailed out of New York Bay, started for the Delaware. There were seven vessels, led by the flag-ship the Balance, Captain Frederick De Koninck, and carrying in all nearly seven hundred men.

Stuyvesant himself was in command. Fort Casimir was soon retaken, and the Dutch fleet anchored in the mouth of the Brandywine, and invested Fort Christina on all sides. Finding it useless to attempt a defence, Rising, the Swedish Governor, capitulated, Sept. 25, 1655, and the Swedish colony in America ceased to exist.

But meanwhile New Amsterdam was in danger. Provoked by the murder of a squaw, Indians from Stamford to Esopus, and from the banks of the Hudson, gathered, nearly two thousand in number. Before daybreak their fleet of canoes reached the lower end of the

island, and scattered through the streets of the sleeping town. They did not at once commence hostilities, though they robbed several houses. When day came, the authorities in the fort called the Sachems to a conference, and made them promise to leave the town before sunset; but towards evening they killed two men; then the people rallied and drove the Indians to the canoes. Why they hesitated to destroy the town in the morning is not known; but now roused, they ravaged Hoboken, Pavonia, now Jersey City, and Staten Island, killing a hundred settlers, and carrying off a hundred and fifty more, leaving naught but ruins and ashes where all had been thriving farms.

Stuyvesant's return restored confidence: many of the captives were recovered, but he was not strong enough to punish them for the massacre.

When, however, the Esopus Indians attacked the settlement there, killing many and burning several of their prisoners at the stake, Stuyvesant led an expedition against them in September, 1659, but was unable to follow them in their forest retreats. The next year he took some prisoners and sent them to the West Indies as slaves. This and the capture and death of their chief Preummaker forced the Esopus Indians to ask peace, and a treaty was solemnly concluded by Stuyvesant in the presence of delegates of tribes from the Mohawk to the Susquehanna.

But they did not forget their comrades sold into slavery, and in 1663 again attacked the Dutch, killing twenty-one and carrying off nearly fifty prisoners. An expedition under Kregier started in pursuit over rocks and mountains, and at last, in September, overtook them at Shawangunk Kill. Here a desperate fight took place, but

Papequanaehen, the Esopus chief, and fourteen warriors fell; the rest fled, and Kregier took many prisoners, recovered most of the Dutch captives, and returned in triumph.

But the colony was doomed. The English Government had determined to seize it. Charles II. granted New Netherland to his brother James, Duke of York, and in August, 1664, an English fleet anchored within the bay and summoned Stuyvesant to surrender. The Dutch Governor hesitated. Nicolls, the English commander, occupied Brooklyn, and anchored two ships before the wretched fort. Even then Stuyvesant would have resisted, but he yielded to the voice of the people, and on the 6th of September, 1664, a capitulation was agreed to, and New Netherland became New York.

CHAPTER VIII.

The Settlement of New England—The Pilgrim Fathers—Landing at Plymouth Rock—Miles Standish—Massachusetts Bay—New Hampshire—Roger Williams and Mrs. Hutchinson—Providence Plantations and Rhode Island Founded—Settlement of Hartford and New Haven—The United Colonies—The Pequod War—John Eliot, the Apostle of the Indians—Persecution of the Quakers—Settlement of Maryland—Toleration—Indian Relations—Civil War.

THE colonies thus far settled on the coast, were formed by the spirit of adventure or commerce. Religious affairs were attended to in Virginia, New Sweden, New Netherland, but other colonies were now to be formed in which religion was the motive and the absorbing idea.

England had, at the Reformation, separated from the Church of Rome. During the reign of Edward VI. a new church organization

was established, which, under Elizabeth, consolidated into the Church of England. Many of the people, however, and especially those who in Queen Mary's reign had been in Geneva, wished many things altered which were retained by the Church of England. These were known as Separatists, Independents, and Puritans.

Elizabeth and her successor, James I., wished to compel all to join the Church of England, and severe laws were passed against Catholics who clung to Rome, and the Puritans, who deemed the Church of England not sufficiently reformed. They could worship God according to the dictates of their conscience only in concealment and by stealth.

Among the Puritan congregations thus formed, was one guided by John Robinson, at Scrooby, in Yorkshire. After suffering for more than a year, they resolved to seek refuge in Holland, where the Church of the land was in harmony with their views, and where some of their fellow-believers were already settled.

A Dutch captain was approached, and passage secured in his ship for a large party. But he was a traitor. The Pilgrims, long used to caution, stole down by night, and reached the ship with such of their household goods as they could carry without exciting suspicion. They trod the deck, and rejoiced in their escape from pursuivants.

But the anchors were not hoisted, no preparation made to sail, and ere long the vessel was boarded by the minions of the law, and the whole party hurried to the shore and confined in prison. Yet they did not lose heart.

The next spring an unfrequented heath in Lincolnshire, where the wide Humber seeks the ocean, silent, serious men gathered with their families, modest, shrinking women, fearful children. All felt the importance of the moment, and its danger. The boats from the ship at

last came through the curling waves, and some embarked. All was yet safe, but, as a boat sped onward to the ship, the cries of women and children, still left behind, thrilled them to the heart. The soldiery were upon them ; shots came rattling towards the boat ; the helpless ones on the shore were surrounded and dragged off. Agony filled the hearts of those on the ship and those on shore ; but the magistrates, unable to send to their homes those who no longer had a home, soon allowed them to follow their husbands and fathers.

In Holland they found welcome from their countrymen and from the Dutch at Amsterdam, but as some dissensions grew up, Robinson removed to Leyden, and he and his flock, by severe industry, managed to live. But there was much around that was new and strange. They thought of America. Their first idea was to settle in New Netherland, but the Dutch authorities declined. Then they applied to the Virginia Company, and after great difficulty obtained a Patent which was in reality never used. But it decided their action.

Then all was activity in the little colony of exiles at Leyden. Every preparation that their poverty permitted was made for the long and venturesome voyage to an unknown land.

All did not go: Robinson and many more were to remain at Leyden. These accompanied the Pilgrims to Delft Haven, where they were to embark on the Speedwell. There they feasted together. Robinson, their pastor, performed prayer, and with floods of tears the Pilgrims were escorted to the ship in silence, each heart being too full for words.

At Southampton they met the Mayflower, and the emigrants were divided between the two vessels. There they bore away for the American coast. The Speedwell did not do justice to her name. In

a few days she proved unseaworthy. They put back to Plymouth. Some remained in England: all who could find room embarked in the Mayflower, one of the famous ships in American history, that many families look back to as the noble ark that bore their ancestors to our shores.

Sailing on the 6th of September, the little vessel bore one hundred and two souls, men, women, and children. The equinoctial storms swept the ocean, and their voyage was long and dangerous. At last the first glimpse of land cheered their sinking hearts. They were near Cape Cod, and ran South, but soon turned back and anchored within the cape.

Within the cabin they now drew up a covenant, or agreement, for their future government, as they had no Charter, not being in the limits of the Virginia Company. It was the first self-governing community in America.

Bleak as was the coast, and appalling as was the idea of wintering there, all were eager to land. Boats set out to explore the coast and seek a suitable harbor. These parties suffered greatly in their examination of the sandy, snow-clad shore. At last they decided upon Plymouth Harbor, as it has henceforth been called. Here, on the 21st of December, 1620, they landed on a rock that is as famous as the Mayflower that anchored before it.

There was no time for rest. At once the axe rung in the sharp winter air. On a bold hill overlooking the bay a rude fort was thrown up and their few cannon planted on it. At its foot two rows of huts were laid out and staked, to accommodate nineteen families. Leyden Street still marks the path on which these first white houses stood. This was not done in a day. For weeks they toiled incessantly in

snow, and sleet, and rain. But there was cessation. No necessity seemed to dispense with the sacred day of rest. The first Sunday of the Pilgrims, when they met for solemn worship, not in grand cathedral or plainest room, but under the winter sky, with no protection but the rude tent beside them, is a picture of their earnest faith and sincerity.

But the severities of the winter on the bleak coast, with such shelter as they could form, prostrated many. Death entered the little community, and before the spring came to cheer them with hope, one-half the little colony lay buried on the bank.

But none were disheartened. They had found some Indian corn buried by the natives, and had used it, intending, when required, to make compensation. With the spring they would plant and be able to do for themselves.

Then Providence sent them Squando. He was an Indian who had been taken to London, where he had learned English and been well treated. He joined the Pilgrims, and was useful in a thousand ways. He showed them how and when to catch fish ; to use the bony fish that came in shoals, as a manure for the sandy sail, planting the corn, so to say, in fish ; he was their interpreter with his countrymen. He was their faithful friend till they closed his eyes in death.

Early in the spring an Indian of commanding presence stalked into the little village, and said in English, well enough to be understood : "Wèlcome, Englishmen ! " It was Samoset, a neighboring chief, and never did friendly words come sweeter to human ears.

They had seen few Indians, and now learned that sickness had nearly left the land a desert. Plymouth Colony had begun. In England, meanwhile, King James had, in 1620, incorporated a new

Company, called the Council of Plymouth, consisting of forty members and had bestowed upon them all the territory of North America between the fortieth and forty-eighth degrees, with the fisheries, and a heavy duty on the tonnage.

The little colony, falling within the jurisdiction of this Company, solicited a Charter, and obtained one in 1621. John Carver, chosen the first Governor, on board the Mayflower, died from the hardships of the first winter, and William Bradford was chosen. Their military leader, should occasion require his services, was Miles Standish.

Massasoit, chief of the Wampanoags, who dwelt north of Narragansett Bay, came soon to visit the Pilgrims, and was received with all the ceremonies their poverty permitted. A treaty of friendship was soon formed, and Massasoit was always true to his pledge. Canonicus, the chief of the Narragansetts, was not so amicable. One day an Indian stalked in, bearing a bundle of arrows tied in a rattlesnake's skin, from this chieftain, his challenge and defiance. Governor Bradford replied in the same language of signs. He stuffed the serpent's skin with powder and ball, and sent it back. This awed the chieftain and prevented a war.

The first Indian troubles arose from no fault of the Plymouth settlers. They had come to America by the help of a kind of stock Company, in which some English merchants had advanced money. One of these, a man named Weston, thinking that his money would not repay him soon enough, sent over a set of settlers on his own account. Like most of those who came to other settlements, these were idle, thriftless men. They intruded themselves on the people of Plymouth for some months, consuming their scanty provisions, but doing nothing to help the colony. At last they began their own settle-

ment at Wissagusset, now Weymouth, on the south shore of Massachusetts Bay. As such men always did, they soon began to feel a want of provisions, and attempted to obtain a supply from the Indians by violence. The natives formed a plot to destroy all the English on the coast. A terrible fate thus menaced the little band at Plymouth. Their friend Massasoit lay dying, but hearing, as he lay stretched on the mat in his wigwam, the danger of his allies, he sent to warn them. Standish was authorized by the colony to act. With a promptness that has made his name famous among Indian fighters, this brave man marched at once upon Wetawamot, the head of the conspiracy, surprised and killed him with several of his men. The reckless band who had brought about these troubles, broke up their settlement, and Plymouth remained the only white post in what is now Massachusetts.

Sir Ferdinando Gorges, who had befriended the Pilgrims, and was gratified by their success, obtained for himself and John Mason a grant for a tract which he styled Laconia, extending from Salem to the Kennebec. They began the work of colonization lavishly, and sent out men who on the whole proved worthy settlers, though few in number. Portsmouth and Dover in New Hampshire, settled by these pioneers, rank next to Plymouth as the oldest New England towns.

Other settlements were started at various points along the shore, most of which failed. Among these was one begun by Wollaston and conducted for a time by Morton, a rollicking fellow, who called the place Merry Mount, set free the indentured servants, erected a maypole, and kept up a wild career, till the people of Plymouth, shocked at his conduct, sent an armed party which arrested Morton and sent him out of the country.

The founders of Plymouth were Separatists. The Puritans did not

wish to separate from the Church of England, but to remain in it and reform it. These, now still more stern and severe, founded Massachusetts Bay. The originator of the project was Mr. White, a Puritan clergyman of Dorchester, England, who, after rousing the interest of his fellow-believers, obtained from the Plymouth Company the grant of a large tract from the Charles to the Merrimac, and three miles beyond each of those rivers. To carry out the new settlement, John Endicott, a stern, courageous man, was chosen as Governor.

In June, 1628, he was sent out with a small party, including his own family. More fortunate than the Pilgrims, they arrived in September, and gathering the scattered settlers on the coast founded Salem. Charles I. incorporated the adventurers under whom the colony was founded as "The Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay in New England." Colonists soon poured in, chiefly from Boston in Lincolnshire, and clergymen of Puritan views were sent as guides for the new settlers; some, who came full of attachment to the Church of England, were promptly sent back. At first the government of the colony was managed in England, but as soon as it was transferred to America, there was a great increase in the number and rank of the emigrants, many being persons of high character, wealth, and learning.

In 1630 fifteen ships sailed from England for Massachusetts Bay, bearing about a thousand emigrants, carrying all that was needed for a permanent and successful settlement. It was the most important expedition that had yet sailed from England for the New World.

John Winthrop, the new Governor, with Dudley and others, embarked on the Arbella, so called in compliment to Lady Arbella Johnson, one of the emigrants. They arrived in June, and settled Boston. From the time they said their last "Farewell, England!" to

the receding shores of their native land, till they reached that of their hopes, religious services were maintained daily on the ships. The same spirit prevailed when they landed, and in all the little settlements formed as at Plymouth, a religious tone prevailed. They disregarded King and Bishop, they formed their own church discipline, elected their pastors, and made their Geneva Bible their sole guide and law.

Thus were Boston, Dorchester, and Watertown added to the list of settlements.

Although the new colonists were not subjected to the terrible privations and hardships which the Pilgrims at Plymouth experienced, still they had much to suffer. Those sent out under Endicott to prepare the way had done little, and had no provisions laid up. The sea voyage had brought sickness and debility ; delays in forming suitable shelter, and a severe winter told sadly on the community, so that before December two hundred died. Some lost heart in the spring, and returned to England, but the great majority remained.

In a General Court held in 1631, they carried their religious views so far as to allow no man to become a freeman, or vote, who was not a church member ; and as the number of these was small, not one-fourth the men were ever allowed to vote.

Driven from England by harsh measures, they had little idea themselves of religious freedom. In their zeal they wished to force all to embrace their views or depart. Genuine religious freedom, the right of every one to hold his own religious views without dictation from the State, or loss of his civil rights, is one of the happy doctrines of our times.

Massachusetts grew. Settlers came over year by year ; ferries were established ; water-mills and wind-mills brought the elements to roll the

wheels for man's use, and the coasting vessels of the thriving colonists ran along the coast, to the Dutch at New Amsterdam, and their fellow-Englishmen in Virginia.

The Indian tribes respected their energy and activity. The Sachem of the Mohegans came from the Connecticut with glowing accounts of that valley, to invite the Puritans to settle there as a protection against the Pequods ; the Nipmucks sought their protection against the Mohawks ; Miantonomoh, the Narragansett warrior, became the guest of Winthrop.

So strong did the settlers feel, that when the English Government appointed a Royal Colonial Commission, to revise the laws, regulate the Church, and revoke Charters, Massachusetts prepared to resist, and appointed men to manage the threatened war.

Troubles were, however, to begin at home. Among the emigrants who came over to Boston in the Lion, in 1631, was Roger Williams, a young and enthusiastic clergyman. He claimed a larger freedom of opinion than the Puritans relished, and yet had himself many strangely fanatical ideas. He did not join the Church at Boston, but was received at Plymouth, and after a time welcomed by Endicott at Salem. There, by declaiming against the cross in the English flag, he induced Endicott to cut it out. The General Court of Massachusetts condemned Salem for receiving him, and when Williams remonstrated, they passed sentence of banishment against him, though, as winter was nigh, they allowed him to remain at Salem till spring. His friends increased day by day. The Boston clergy sent to seize him in mid-winter, and ship him off to England. Three days before the officers reached Salem, Williams, bidding adieu to his family, left that settlement during a storm, plunging into the wintry woods. Fourteen weeks he wandered

on, often with no house but a hollow tree, suffering from hunger, cold, and hardship. The lodges of Massassoit at Mount Hope and of Canonicus at last offered him a shelter. The country on the Narragansett Bay was now the object of his future plans. Here, beyond the limits of previous Patents, the high-minded Williams already prepared to found a new colony, which should be a home of religious and civil freedom.

A beautiful bend on the Seekonk River, now known as Manton's Cove, invited him. Massassoit granted him lands, and here in the spring Williams began to build and plant. But his friend Winthrop warned him that he was within the limits of Plymouth, so he left his cleared fields and his half-built house. In June, 1636, a frail Indian canoe bore him with five companions to the spot now called Slate Rock. As they glided to the shore some Indians from the heights welcomed them with the friendly salutation, "What cheer, Netop, what cheer?" Keeping on to the mouth of the Mooshausic River, he landed, and upon the beautiful hillside rising from the river's edge, he descried a spring, and around it commenced the settlement which in a spirit of thankfulness he named Providence. A beautiful city now covers the spot, but Roger Williams' spring is not forgotten or neglected. One doctrine of his had given offence in Massachusetts. He maintained that even under a Patent from the King, men should buy the lands of the Indians. True to this, he purchased of Canonicus and Miantonomoh the lands he required, jealous as those chiefs were of English intrusion. He paid for the lands out of his own scanty means, but gave lands to settlers who came in as a free gift.

The little community throve under this kindly spirit, binding themselves to obey all orders made for the public good by the majority of the settlers.

The severity shown towards Roger Williams did not crush all freedom of thought at Massachusetts Bay. A gifted and brilliant woman, Mrs. Anne Hutchinson, began to express religious views that did not harmonize with what was already firmly established. The meetings at her house were attended by many persons of superior intelligence and worth. Among those who embraced her opinions was a clergyman of the name of Wheelwright, who became her firm supporter. There had come over, about these times, a brilliant public man of high rank and influence in England, Sir Henry Vane. The people of Massachusetts were so taken with him, that in spite of his youth and his ignorance of their systems, they chose him Governor. His ideas could not be cramped by the narrow system of Massachusetts, and he lost his popularity by advocating the cause of Mrs. Hutchinson. At last he resolved to leave a place so uncongenial, and sailed back to England. There he took an active part in the Puritan movement that overthrew Charles I., and finally died on the scaffold.

Mrs. Hutchinson, Wheelwright, and Aspinwall, who had threatened to appeal to the King, were then put on trial as heretics, and all their adherents were deprived of arms.

A large number of the people thus proscribed by the General Court determined to seek another home. A party under John Clarke and William Coddington set out for the Delaware. But Williams, who entertained them kindly, advised them to settle on Narragansett Bay. They visited the spot he suggested, a charming island in the bay, and decided to abandon their journey southward. By the influence of Williams they obtained from the chiefs of the Narragansetts a grant of Rhode Island, paying forty fathoms of white wampum for it; and each settler also paid the Indians for his lands.

As the last signs of winter were wearing away, and spring flowers were here and there struggling to be seen, at the close of March, 1638, John Clarke, William Coddington, and their sixteen associates began



SIR HENRY VANE, GOVERNOR OF MASSACHUSETTS BAY.

at Pocasset, or Portsmouth, the settlement of Rhode Island, to be governed by the laws of the Lord Jesus Christ, the King of Kings.

These two little communities prospered in the kindly simple govern-

ment, and, though Massachusetts continued to show hostility by carrying off Baptist settlers, and punishing them for not obeying Massachusetts laws, Williams more than once, by his influence with the Indians, saved Massachusetts from bloodshed. These two little colonies continued separate for some years, till, in 1663, Clarke obtained from Charles II. a Patent uniting them under one government.

We have seen how some English settled on the Connecticut in spite of the Dutch and their Fort Good Hope. Others followed: Windsor, Hartford, and Wethersfield were founded; but the settlement was unimportant, till June, 1636, when the Rev. Mr. Hooker set out with an emigrant party of one hundred men, women, and children, and after a two weeks' slow journey through the almost pathless woods, driving their cattle over mountain and stream, warned of danger by the howling of the wolf and other wild beasts, cautious and prudent, they at last reached Hartford. The new Colony of Connecticut took form.

Quinnipiack, on Long Island Sound, invited another band of emigrants, led by the pious merchant Theophilus Eaton and the Rev. John Davenport, who, in April, 1638, founded the colony of New Haven, which rivalled Massachusetts in the strictness of its religious views, allowing none but church-members to become freemen, and admitting members very sparingly. On the first Sunday after their arrival, April 18th, Mr. Davenport preached to his flock beneath a spreading oak, and for nearly thirty years continued to minister to them. For nearly as many years Eaton was elected Governor at every annual election.

There were thus scattered along the New England shore a series of little colonies, Plymouth, Massachusetts, Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, New Haven, and Hartford, each independent of the others,

and following out its own ideas: all formed by industrious, steady men, and thriving, growing, from day to day.

The New England settlements on the Atlantic coast occupied a part where the natives were too few and scattered to cause alarm. Those in Connecticut were, however, near the large and unfriendly tribe of Pequods. Lawless men provoked trouble. The crew of a small trading vessel were killed on the Connecticut in 1633, and soon after a settler was murdered on Block Island. The Pequods then prepared for a general war, and urged the Narragansetts and Mohegans to join them and exterminate the English. Roger Williams set out in a wretched canoe. Through storms, wind, and high seas, he made his way to the house of the Sachem of Narragansett. The Pequod was there already with his fresh scalps, and unawed by their fierce looks, Williams, at the risk of life, stayed till he had won the Narragansetts, and saw the Pequods depart smothering their disappointment.

Connecticut prepared to meet the coming war. A force under John Mason, aided by Uncas, and sixty Mohegan braves, sailed down the Connecticut, and met at its mouth a reinforcement from Massachusetts Bay under Underhill. Their allies, the Narragansetts, looked at the little force of white men doubtfully.

"Your design is good," said Miantonomoh; "but your numbers are too weak to brave the Pequods, who have mighty chieftains and are skillful in battle." They little knew the power of the white men in war, and were now to see it.

The Pequods lay east of the river Thames, and Mason marched westward. Two hours before dawn the New England army advanced to assault a Pequod fort that crowned a hill by the Mistic. Each felt that he must conquer now or there was no safety for their new homes.

The barking of their dogs roused the Indians, and with loud cries of "Owannux, Owannux!" they prepared to resist. Their weapons were no match for the muskets and swords, but they were brave and numerous: as one fell, another took his place. "We must burn them!" shouted Mason, as he applied a blazing brand to a cabin. The English drew off from the burning town. The palisades now prevented all escape of the doomed tribe. As they attempted to climb, they were shot down; if they attempted a sally they were cut down. Six hundred Indians, men, women, and children, perished. The sun rose on the ruins of the town and the half-consumed bodies of its population.

The Pequods rallied and attacked the New England troops as they retired, but were again defeated. The rest of the tribe then fled, and were hunted down without mercy; every wigwam was burnt, every cornfield laid waste. Sassacus, the last chief of the Pequods, fled to the Mohawks, who slew him and sent his bloody scalp to Boston.

Emigration to the New England colonies increased under the severe measures of Charles I. against all who did not conform to the Established Church. When the Long Parliament met in England, two hundred and ninety-eight ships had borne to the shores of New England twenty-one thousand two hundred souls. The wigwams and sheds that first sheltered the settlers, had been succeeded by well-built houses; fifty towns and villages had been formed, there were nearly as many churches, and these orderly communities drew abundant crops from their generally poor soil; their flocks and herds multiplied, while trade in fish, and lumber, and grain, and furs, increased. A public school was established at Cambridge in 1636, which soon took the name

of Harvard College, from a generous clergyman who gave it his library and half his fortune. In 1639 the first printing-press north of the Gulf of Mexico was set up, and Stephen Daye, the pioneer American printer, struck off "The Freeman's Oath," and the next year printed the Bay Psalm-Book.

In 1642, New Hampshire, by the will of its people, who were harassed by disputes of proprietors, was annexed to Massachusetts Bay, under separate laws, church-membership not being required for the privilege of freeman. Massachusetts then attempted to annex the colonies on Narragansett Bay.

There was soon felt a necessity for a union among the scattered colonies: Massachusetts, Plymouth, Connecticut, and New Haven, formed the United Colonies of New England. The object of the confederacy was mutual protection against Dutch, French, and Indians. The general affairs, especially the making of peace or war, and all negotiations with the Indians, were confided to two Commissioners from each colony. This union lasted for fifty years, and did much to strengthen New England, and paved the way for a more general union of all the Colonies, and eventually for the United States of America.

The short war between Miantonomoh, the Narragansett chief, and the Mohegans, did not disturb the white settlements. Uncas and his Mohegans defeated Miantonomoh, who had attacked them with a thousand braves. They took the haughty chief prisoner, and left his fate to the Commissioners of New England. These would not interfere, and Uncas put him to death.

During the war between England and Holland, in 1654, New England for the first time was drawn into European quarrels, and the

wars of the Old World then began to be fought in the New. Canada had, a few years before, proposed that neutrality should always exist in America, whatever wars might take place in Europe, but the Commissioners declined the offer. Had it been accepted, some of the bloodiest pages in American History would have been unwritten.

A New England expedition under Sedgwick, in 1654, prepared to attack New Netherland, but as peace was made in Europe, the expedition turned northward and conquered Acadia, as the French called Nova Scotia, although there was no war between England and France.

There was not, at first, much zeal among the New England settlers for the moral improvement of the Indians. They did not make any attempt to raise them from their savage, heathenish ways; but some of their friends in England wrote, reminding them of what the French and Spaniards were doing. Among those who then devoted themselves to this good work, the most renowned was the Rev. John Eliot, minister of Roxbury, usually called the Apostle of the Indians. There were at the time nearly twenty tribes of Indians in New England, but they were all of the same great Algonquin nation, and their languages were much alike. Mr. Eliot set to work to study the language of the tribe nearest to him. There was no grammar or dictionary; he had to make these for himself. But at last he mastered it so far that he could preach in it, and on the 28th of October, 1646, he preached to the Indians at Nonantum, now Newton, the first sermon in their own tongue. And it is a curious fact that just about the same time a French missionary from Canada began to preach to the Indians on the Kennebec.

These two good men met a few years later in friendly intercourse, each able to appreciate the labors of the other.

Eliot's sermon led to much inquiry, and the medicine men took alarm and tried in every way to stop his labors, but Eliot was undaunted; he visited all the Indians in Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies as they then extended. Five years' labors bore their fruit. On a pleasant spot on Charles River a little town of Christian Indians had grown up, with its neat church amid the clustering wigwams. It was a wild village, for it was hard to civilize them, and they never took readily to the white man's way of working. Still Eliot labored on, the church was regularly organized, he printed the New Testament, and then the Bible, in their language, and trained up several Indian ministers. His Bible was the first copy of the Scriptures printed in America, and was a work of immense difficulty, as the Indian languages are very different from those of Europe, and some of the words in it are so fearfully long that the very sight of them raises a laugh

Firm, zealous, benevolent, he was the father of the Indians, exercising an influence over them that no other missionary or other white man obtained; and he was their constant protector. His delight was to be among his red children, instructing them, telling of Christ and a better world.

While this picture of Massachusetts history cannot but please us, there is another that is sad. Among the sects that arose in England was one founded by George Fox, the Society of Friends, commonly called Quakers. In England they met great opposition from the Established Church and the Puritans. When two of them arrived at Boston in 1656, the whole colony took fire. The trunks of the two Quakeresses were searched, their books were burned, they were examined as witches, imprisoned, and finally sent back to England, as several others were who came afterwards. A severe law was then

passed against them, and Quakers coming in were fined and flogged; the law even directed an ear to be cut off and the tongue to be bored if they were convicted a second and third time. Growing more intolerant, they next made the penalty banishment, and if a banished Quaker set foot on the soil of the United Colonies, he was to die.

Late in October, 1659, while the woods were a picture of beauty, in all the rich tints of autumn, a crowd gathered around a gallows erected at Boston, and Mary Dyar, an old adherent of Mrs. Hutchinson, with three other Quakers, was led out to die. The ropes were fastened around their necks, and they had prepared to die, when Mary was reprieved. "Let me suffer as my brethren," she cried, "unless you will annul your wicked law." But as her companions swung in the sight of heaven, they carried her beyond the limits of the colony. The resolute woman returned, and this time they hung her.

Two others were condemned to die; but the bold Wenlock Christison awed his very judges: "I demand to be tried by the laws of England, and there is no law there to hang Quakers!" They sentenced him, but shrunk from hanging him. They expelled the staunch Christison and his companions.

The Puritans were not the only sufferers in England: the penal laws passed against the Catholics, or adherents of the old Church, were of fearful severity and they were enforced with rigor. At last Sir George Calvert, Lord Baltimore, a member of the Virginia Company, and highly esteemed by James I., having become a Catholic, resolved to found a colony where those who shared his opinions might freely worship God. An attempted settlement in Newfoundland failed. He then wished to colonize part of Virginia, but they would not admit him. Returning to England, he solicited from Charles I. a Patent for ter-

ritory in America. He died while the affair was in progress, but on the 20th of June, 1632, a Charter of Terra Maria, or Maryland, was issued to his son, the new Lord Baltimore. This nobleman fitted out two vessels, The Ark and The Dove, in which two hundred emigrants, nearly all gentlemen of respectability, embarked with two clergymen, to found in the New World a colony, where they might freely worship God.

They sailed in November. After a long and stormy winter passage, in which the Ark was for a time at the mercy of the winds and waves, they, late in February, came in sight of Point Comfort in Virginia.

On the banks of the Potomac they found mighty forests, stretching as far as the eye could reach, a rich and fertile soil, a sweet and balmy air. The natives came down with every mark of hostility, but confidence was soon established.

On Blackstone Island they landed and threw up a little fort, March 25th, 1634, divine service being devoutly offered up by Father Andrew White, to consecrate their new colony to the Lord. The Governor, Leonard Calvert, then planted a cross, as the emblem of Christianity and civilization.

The priests at once opened intercourse with the native chiefs, and Maryland so gained their good will, that the colonists never had any trouble with the Indian tribes within its borders, to whom these good men could announce the gospel.

As their permanent settlement, Governor Calvert finally selected the village of the Yaocomico Indians, and, like Roger Williams, believing it necessary to purchase lands of the natives, he bought from them their village and the country around. The Governor then took possession of the place, and named the town St. Mary's. The settlers at first occupied the Indian wigwams till they had erected houses.

Soon all was bustle and activity, building the guard-house and stores, into which all their goods were carried. While this work was pushed rapidly on, a small craft bore into their river the Governor of Virginia. Calvert received him on his ship, and invited all the neighboring Indian chiefs to dine with them, seating the friendly King of Patuxent between himself and Governor Harvey. When the buildings were ready, the colonists landed with much pomp, with cannon firing and banners waving. A large Indian wigwam was the first church, and Maryland was from the first a religious colony, but one that offered to all who came, freedom to worship God according as their conscience directed.

The Charter of Maryland gave the power to make laws to the freemen and the Lord Proprietor. The first Assembly met early in 1635, and another in 1638. In these some contention arose as to the right to propose the laws, but it was finally conceded to the colonists.

The new settlement grew steadily, being formed of earnest, industrious men; the Indians continued friendly. Tayac, King of the Piscatoways, having been won to civilization and Christianity, was solemnly baptized in a bark chapel at his town, in 1640; and Anacoston, a neighboring Sachem, came to live among the whites as one of them.

The Susquehannas and the Indians on the eastern shore were enemies of the Christian Indians, whom the Marylanders had occasionally to protect; but the great trouble in the early annals of Maryland was given by a man named Clayborne, who claimed as a prior settler under the Virginia Charter. During the civil war in England, Clayborne sided with the Parliament, and for a time got the upper hand in Maryland.

Governor Calvert was obliged to fly; the clergy were seized and sent to England; many of the settlers were robbed and banished; but the Governor having raised a force in Virginia, crossed the Potomac, surprised the enemy, and re-entered St. Mary's in triumph. He died a few years after, and was buried at St. Mary's, regarded as a great and good man by the colony which he had founded.

Under Governor Stone, in 1649, was held a famous Assembly, which established liberty of conscience "for all professing to believe in Jesus Christ." This is one of the greatest glories of Maryland, that men of all denominations of Christians there joined hands together, worshiping God each according to the dictates of his own heart, none seeking to force another to change his views.

Clayborne, for a time, overthrew Governor Stone, and in an Assembly passed severe and cruel laws, totally unlike the mild and gentle spirit that had actuated the early settlers. Stone took up arms, but in a hard-fought battle, March 25th, 1655, was defeated, wounded, and taken prisoner by the Puritans, who put several of the prisoners to death in cold blood.

Cromwell, to whom Lord Baltimore appealed, condemned the whole proceedings against Stone, and Fendall was appointed Governor.

For a time progress was made towards restoring peace and harmony, but then Fendall began to plot against Lord Baltimore, and had obtained an appointment as Governor from the Assembly, when Cromwell died, and the authority of the Commonwealth came to an end.

CHAPTER IX.

The Indian Tribes—Their Divisions—Their Complexion—Habits—Dress—Houses and Mode of Life—Their Wars—Religion—No Domestic Animals—Their Care of the Dead—Hieroglyphics—The Mound-Builders.

We have seen how different the various colonies were in their origin. The Atlantic coast was settled by men of various nations, of various religious views, so that each colony had a peculiar character of its own. In the designs of Providence these were steps preparing for the blending of all into one nation, in another century to take its place among the proudest of the world.

In tracing the rise of each little community, Indian tribes have been mentioned. A few words as to these people, whom our ancestors found possessing the land, are here required; for every one should know something of those who went before us.

The Indians on the coast, from the mouth of the St. Lawrence to North Carolina, were all of one family, which is now called the Algonquin. The tribes belonging to this family extended inland far beyond the utmost limits to which the English colonies then reached. The French, who were more daring, had by their missionaries and traders pushed by way of the St. Lawrence and the Lakes westward to Lake Superior. All along the way to the Lakes and the Mississippi they found tribes speaking dialects of the Algonquin, and none who did not, except one set of nations, who were completely surrounded by these Algonquins. The Algonquins and Adirondacks in Canada, the Chippewas, Ottawas, Pottowatomies, Illinois, and Miamis, at the West, the Narragansetts, Mohegans, and Pequods, of New England, the

Mohegans of New York, the Delawares of Pennsylvania, the Powhatans, and most of the Virginia and Maryland tribes were Algonquins, and resembled each other in their mode of life and the language they spoke. Surrounded by them were the Hurons, near the lake that bears that name, the Five Nations in New York, the powerful Susquehannas, the Nottoways in Virginia, with some smaller tribes, and the Tuscaroras in Carolina. Near them lay the Cherokees, and south again were the Creeks, or Muscogees, and the Choctaw tribes, with whom the Spaniards had most to do.

These Indians were all much alike in color and habits, with differences, of course; some being a little more industrious, others more debased. Their color was nearly that of copper. Their only clothing at first was skins, and this was very scanty: men in some parts wore only a breech-cloth, and women a short petticoat, sometimes only of moss. The men looked with disdain on all work except war, hunting, or fishing; everything else was left to the women. The Algonquins depended almost entirely on hunting, and had no permanent villages; moving about, pitching their tent-like wigwams of bark, or skins, or mats, as they chose, often suffering greatly in the severe winters. The Five Nations, Hurons, and other tribes of that family, were more industrious; they built pretty substantial bark houses, each to hold several families, and surrounded them all by a strong palisade, sometimes two or three, one within the other. Around the top of the palisade, inside, they had stones to throw down on any enemy, and large bark vessels of water to prevent their setting fire to the palisade. Outside were their fields, where they raised Indian corn, tobacco, squashes, and beans.

They made their canoes, like their houses, of the bark of trees, and

in some parts of the trunk of a tree, hollowed out. The Algonquins made the best canoes, using birch bark, while the Iroquois used elm bark. The Algonquins also made very useful and curious snow-shoes, an oval frame of wood, held together by a network of sinews. With these they traveled easily on the surface of the snow, without sinking, and in this way hunted in winter, overtaking the deer, whose sharp hoof cut through the frozen surface of the snow.

The Indians knew nothing of the use of metals; native copper found at the West was rudely fashioned into ornaments, but never into a cutting instrument. Their arrow and spear heads were made of stone, and these are still often dug up in some parts of the country. Their hatchets, or tomahawks, were made also of stone, with a groove on each side, by which they were tied fast to the handle. Of course their houses were nearly destitute of what we would call furniture; they had no chairs, no tables, no bedsteads, and the young Indian girl had no looking-glass but the water of the nearest stream. They made bark vessels to hold water, or hollowed them out of a piece of wood; in many parts they made rude pottery, but they had nothing that they could put over the fire. They boiled water by heating stones red-hot, and dropping them into the vessel of water. The flesh of the animals they killed was broiled or roasted over the fire, or baked in a sort of oven made in the ground, a hole lined with stones. In this they built a fire, and when the stones were hot, they took out the fire, put the meat in, and covered it up close till it was cooked. In dressing the skins of animals they were quite expert, rendering them very soft and durable.

Although so poorly off, both men and women were fond of finery, tattooing and painting their faces and bodies with the most glaring

colors, made from plants or earths. Porcupine quills, feathers, the claws of birds and animals, all served to adorn their persons; but what was the most precious thing to them, and served as decoration, and almost as money, was wampum, a kind of beads made of the clam-shell. Belts of this constituted wealth; they were given at all treaties to confirm the different articles, and were the only thing that passed as money. After the whites came and began to buy furs, beaver skins were also in many colonies a kind of money, in transactions with the Indians and among the whites.

In war the natives were very cruel; they did not fight pitched battles, but tried generally in small bands to surprise their enemy, or take them unawares. They killed men, women, and children, without distinction: if they took any prisoners they either adopted them into the tribe to take the place of some whom they had lost, or they tortured them, tying them to a stake, burning them from head to foot, cutting off and devouring their flesh before their eyes, and continuing these tortures till the poor victim expired. The prisoner never asked mercy; he sang his death-song, taunted his enemies, boasted how many he had killed and tortured, called them squaws or women—in a word, did all he could to provoke them.

Their great trophy was the scalp of their enemies. As soon as an enemy fell they ran up, and cutting the skin around just below the hair, tore off the skin and hair together, with loud yells. In their warlike expeditions they carried very little provisions, generally only parched Indian corn, and they endured hunger and hardship with great courage.

Their ideas of religion were very strange. The Algonquin nations believed in spirits called Manitoo, so that they easily got the idea of

God as the Kitchemanitoo, or Great Spirit. The Five Nations believed in a god called Agreskoy. They worshiped him by sacrifices of animals and of prisoners taken in war. They all believed in evil spirits, and were more anxious to appease them than to worship the good. They had no temples or priesthood, at least among these Northern tribes. The only class that approached that of priests, were those whom white people called Medicine Men.

They were the great propagators of all the superstitions; they pretended to be in league with the evil spirits, and to be able to tell the future and cure diseases. They pretended that diseases were caused by evil spirits, and went through a series of horrible ceremonies and noises to drive them out. They attached great importance to dreams, and believed that if a person did not obtain what he dreamed of, it would cause sickness, and perhaps his death.

An Indian chief once came to Sir William Johnson and told him that he had dreamed that Sir William had given him his fine red coat with gold-lace trimmings. Sir William found that he had to give it to him or the man's death might be laid to his charge. But he determined to be even with him. So, some time after, he met the old chief and told him that he had dreamed that their tribe had given him a large tract of fine land that he had set his eye on. This made the Indian groan, but dreams were dreams; the tribe gave the land, but asked that they should all now stop dreaming.

The Indians had no domestic animals, no horses or cows, goats, sheep, or swine; the only animal around their houses was the dog. They had, therefore, no carriages or wagons of any kind; they had no roads but footpaths, or trails, leading from village to village, or to their fishing stations. Along these all had to be carried on the backs

of their women and prisoners. They were very expert with their canoes, and would run them down very dangerous rapids; when they ascended the rivers, and came to falls and rapids, they took their light canoes out of the water and carried them on their shoulders above the difficult part. These places the French called Portages, and the word has come into common use, although our ancestors always called them Carrying Places.

The Indians took great care of their dead. Some tribes buried infants under the trail leading out of the village; some bent down a young tree and bound the child, wrapped up in skins, to the highest branch, and let it fly back again, so that the little one was far up from the wild beasts, among the birds and blossoms. Generally each body, wrapped up, was buried in the ground or placed on a scaffolding near the village. When this was done, after some years, there was a Feast of the Dead. The bones of their dead were taken down by each family, wrapped up in furs, and these, with some of their most valuable articles, were all buried together in a long trench. Games and curious ceremonies continued for several days at these Feasts of the Dead. Occasionally, farmers and others, in digging, come on these Bone Pits, or Indian graves.

What we have said of these tribes is true for all those who occupied any part of what is now embraced in our happy Republic, except a small portion on the Rio Grande, that is now called New Mexico.

Our readers will remember their strange houses of several stories, and their more extensive cultivation, as well as the advance they had made in civilization, weaving the wool of the Rocky Mountain sheep.

None of the Indian tribes in our Northern parts had any system of writing; nothing but the rudest hieroglyphics on bark or skin, or

occasionally on stone, were ever attempted, and these told only of some hunting exploits or success in war. They had no monuments of any kind to preserve the memory of past events, no literature, and few tales or legends even of great warriors and their deeds.

Some strange traditions intermingled with wild dreams, as to the origin of men, and the life to come, or of the way in which the tribe reached the place where the whites found it—this was all.

The Micmac Indians, near the Gulf of St. Lawrence, were the only tribe who had anything like a general system of hieroglyphics; and theirs has been preserved, and is still in use, missionaries finding it such a help, that books have been printed in it.

In Mexico the system of hieroglyphics was very full, and much of their history is preserved in monuments that can still be read. The Peruvians preserved a knowledge of events by knotted cords, called *quipos*, but this plan was far inferior to the Mexican.

The languages of the Indian tribes were very different from any known to Europeans, and the construction of their sentences was so different, that it was found almost impossible to give anything like a close translation. The missionaries who, for the love of God, set to work to learn these languages, in order to preach Christ to these poor benighted people, had terrible work at first. They had to go to the cabins and learn the names of things, and so keep on, day by day, till they had a good stock of words, and could try to talk some, writing down all they could to help others. Of these missionaries, Pareja, in Florida; Sagard, Brebeuf, Chaumonot, Bruyas, Rale, in Canada; Eliot, Roger Williams, Edwards, in New England; Campanius, in New Sweden, and White, in Maryland, were in the earliest times those who succeeded best in mastering these languages.

This will give some idea of these tribes as they were first found. The whites supplied them with iron articles, and cloth, which they used instead of furs ; they also, unfortunately, sold them liquor, and this the Indians never could use in moderation. It led them into great crimes, drunkenness and murder, often causing the death of white settlers and so bringing on wars.

If one Indian killed another, they always made it up by presents of wampum. When they killed a white man they wished to do the same, "cover the body," as they said, with presents. But the whites would insist on punishing the man. The Indians did not understand this, and would refuse to give him up. They thought it hard that if liquor given by white men set an Indian so crazy that he killed a white man, they must have their warrior killed ; they thought their plan of presents best. The French generally adapted themselves better to the Indian style, and in such cases took presents and maintained peace, while the Dutch and English drew on themselves disastrous wars.

All the Indian tribes had traditions that they had come from a distance, generally from the West or Northwest, towards the Atlantic coast. As the country became more settled, white people discovered mounds in various parts, some of them very curious in shape, like birds, animals, or men, in Wisconsin ; in rings and lines in other parts ; in the South like pyramids of steps. These seem to be the work of tribes who were in the country before the Indians. Some of them contained remains of the dead, with articles curiously carved, showing much more skill than any Indians we know, and sometimes very good figures of birds and animals of the tropics. As we do not know anything more about these people than what the mounds tell us, they are generally called the Mound-Builders.

PART II.

THE COLONIES FROM THE REIGN OF CHARLES II. TO THE REIGN OF GEORGE III.

CHAPTER I.

The English Kings and Parliament begin to take part in American Affairs—General View of the Country—Reign of Charles II.—Connecticut and Rhode Island receive Charters—Philip's Indian War—New York—Penn founds Pennsylvania—Carolina founded—Virginia and Maryland.

ALL the colonies established on the Atlantic shore had been settled under Patents granted by European Governments, but the English monarchs, from the days of Queen Elizabeth to those of Charles, had not concerned themselves much about America after signing the Patents and affixing their great seal. People whom nobody missed had gone over there to settle in a wild country among savage men, and that was all about it. Cromwell tried to get the Puritans to leave New England, and settle in the West Indies and in Ireland. Under him, too, the Puritans attempted to obtain the mastery in Maryland, and he shipped many thousands from England, and especially from Ireland, who were sold as slaves in the colonies.

When Charles II. came to the throne, the colonies of New England, Maryland, and Virginia had so increased, that their importance could not be overlooked. Maryland and Virginia hailed with joy the Restoration of the royal power, but Massachusetts lamented the fall of the



FIRST SABBATH SERVICE OF THE PILGRIMS.

(Page 209)



ROGER WILLIAMS TAKING LEAVE OF HIS FAMILY BEFORE HIS FLIGHT FROM SALEM

(Page 214)



ELIOT, THE APOSTLE OF THE INDIANS, PREACHING TO HIS FLOCK. (Page 222)

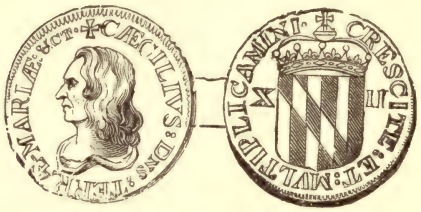


A YOUNG LADY'S DOWER HER WEIGHT IN PINE TREE SHILLINGS.

(Page 241)



THE PINE TREE SHILLING.



THE LORD BALTIMORE SHILLING



INDIANS ATTACKING THE EARLY SETTLERS (Page 251)



PENN'S TREATY WITH THE INDIANS UNDER THE ELM TREE AT SHACKAMAXON.

(Page 259)



BACON BEFORE THE VIRGINIA COUNCIL. (Page 262)



THE FAMOUS CHARTER OAK AT HARTFORD, CONNECTICUT. (Page 267)

Puritan Commonwealth, and looked forward with anxiety to the course of the new King. It was known that the Quakers and others had made great complaints in England of their severity and strictness.

They sought to avert the storm by an address to the King, but they did not comply with the recommendations contained in his letter of reply.

Winthrop, Governor of Hartford, a man of learning, polished and adroit, went to England, and was so favorably received by Charles II., that he obtained a very favorable Charter, establishing the new colony of Connecticut, embracing not only Hartford but New Haven also.

The colonists of New Haven were highly indignant at this step, but, though supported by Massachusetts, were at last forced to submit to the new arrangement.

Less obstinate in his views, Winthrop had seen the wisdom of making their system agree more with that of England, by giving the right to vote more freely, and not confining it to their own church-members.

The famous Charter issued May 10th, 1662, established "The Governor and Company of the English Colony of Connecticut in New England in America." The Governor and House of Deputies were to be elected every year.

Clarke had been no less prompt to secure favorable terms for the colony of Roger Williams, and on the 8th of July, in the same year, Charles II. issued another Charter, creating the "English Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations."

These Charters gave the first tokens of a new era of liberality. They provided that no person within the said colonies should be molested or called in question for any difference in matters of religion which did not actually disturb the civil peace.

While these colonies were organized under their new Charters, Massachusetts and Plymouth remained firm. They gave fair words, but did not comply with the King's wishes, or adapt their forms to the English laws.

Charles did not act precipitately. He was a man of pleasure, but his brother James, Duke of York, was a man of system, as well as great industry, and had displayed bravery on sea and land. He took a lively interest in American affairs, and the commerce of England. He seems to have been the first who had any enlarged views of the English interests in America.

New England and Maryland were separated by the Dutch colony, and the French in Canada were very active and energetic. Their missionaries and traders were already busy south of Lake Ontario, and they had made one attempt to settle there. If these pushing Frenchmen got possession of the Dutch colony, it would give the English no end of trouble. So James hunted up English claims for New Netherland, and obtained from Charles II., on the 12th of March, 1664, a Charter granting him all the territory between the Connecticut and the Delaware, and also of the tract between the Rivers Pemaquid and St. Croix, in what is now the State of Maine. The Dutch had settled the larger tract, and had occupied it for many years ; England and Holland were at peace, but this did not weigh much.

Commissioners were appointed and sent over, with several ships of war and a body of soldiers. They were to land first at Boston and present a letter from the King, asking, among other things, the aid of the colonies to reduce the Dutch.

At the close of a long summer day, as the Sabbath stillness in Boston was beginning, two ships of war, the Guinea and Elias, came to

anchor off the Long Wharf at Boston. They were the first vessels of the English navy that had ever seen that harbor.

A General Court was called. After some delay an order was issued for two hundred volunteers against the Dutch. They also modified somewhat their laws, allowing men not church-members to vote under certain conditions, but these were such that few could benefit by them.

The expedition sailed for New Netherland, and, as we have already seen, reduced that colony, which became New York. The flag of England soon floated from the Kennebec to the Chesapeake, and the English King could look with pride on the new country rising beyond the Atlantic, where the laws, the language, and the spirit of England were to be perpetuated.

There was even for a moment the project of conquering Canada, and thus making England supreme in the northern portion of America.

Life in these colonies differed greatly. New England was strict and sombre. Amusements were almost unknown. Christmas and other holidays, kept up in England, and on this side in Virginia and Maryland, with great merriment, were forbidden. Dancing, and all games of cards or dice, even bowling and other games of exercise, were prohibited as well, while in Virginia the richer planters lived the life of the English gentry, and sports were freely indulged in. Virginia raised tobacco and smoked it freely, but in New England it was a serious matter, especially on Sunday. The strict observance of that day was the great point of New England life. It began on Saturday at sunset, and lasted till the sunset again. During that time no child could play in the streets, no travelling was permitted. All had to attend the meeting-house in the place. But though religion was thus ob-

served, there were some points in which their customs seem strange now. They had, at first, nothing like Sabbath-schools for catechising the young; and the children of church-members only were baptized. The marriage and the funeral took place without the presence of a clergyman, which is now so general.

We have seen how they broke up Morton's settlement at Merry Mount, and one of his great offences in their eyes was his planting a Maypole and keeping up Mayday.

In Virginia the Church of England prevailed, and its services were performed regularly, without question or dispute. Maryland had Episcopalians, Puritans, and Catholics. In New York, with its Dutch population, into which some English had already crept, the people were strict Calvinists, adhering to the Church in Holland, and under the Dutch rule no other worship was allowed by law; but the people were good-natured, and seldom troubled their neighbors about religious matters. They loved enjoyment in a quiet way, and dancing and merry-making never came amiss. They kept up the holidays of the old country, with some sports that occasionally brought laws to check them, such as goose-pulling and pail-tipping. Paas, or Easter, Christmas, and New Years, were the great holidays. The last was devoted to visits to each other, and in every house a table was spread with good things for the guests. Christmas was the holiday of little ones, who expected from St. Nicholas, or Santa Claus, a visit with presents if they had been good, or, if they had been naughty, a rod from Ruprecht.

The colonists had always found a difficulty in the want of money, and tobacco, beaver-skins, wampum, or peague, were at times used as substitutes. Lord Baltimore struck in England coins for Maryland, which are now very rare, and prized by collectors. Massachusetts

struck the first coins issued in America. These are known as Pine Tree money, as they bear on one side a rude figure of a pine-tree.

The first pieces struck were plain pieces of silver, with NE and XII or VI stamped on them, but in October, 1652, the General Court of Massachusetts directed the establishment of a mint, and authorized the striking of shilling, six-penny, and three-penny pieces. They bore a double ring, enclosing a tree with the word MASATHVSETS around, and on the other side, NEW ENGLAND, 1652.

The striking of these coins gave offence in England, as only sovereigns are considered as entitled to coin money, and in this country now only the United States Government, by the Constitution, has this right.

Mr. Hull was the mint-master of Massachusetts, and received a certain percentage for all the money he struck. This gave rise to a curious story that is told about him and the Pine Tree shillings. When his daughter was married to Mr. Sewell, the father said nothing about any portion for her. But the marriage went on, and while all the guests were congratulating the married couple, in the way that Puritan fashions permitted, in came two serving-men lugging huge scales, such as are used in warehouses. Old Mr. Hull made his daughter get into one scale, which she did with open eyes and mouth, wondering whether she was to be sold by the pound; but the servants came back, lugging an iron-bound chest, which, at his direction, they emptied on the floor, and out came the fresh, flashing Pine Tree shillings. Then the chest was put in the scale, and the shillings filled in till the young lady rose gradually from the floor, and swung easily, just balancing her weight in silver. "There, son Sewell," cried the good mint-master, "take these shillings as my daughter's portion.

Use her kindly, and thank Heaven for her, for it is not every wife that is worth her weight in silver."

Another story relating to these pieces is also told. After the Restoration, the coining of this Pine Tree money was made one of the charges against Massachusetts. The agent of the colony took one of the later issues, in which the rude tree was rather bushy, and presented it to the King, telling him that his faithful subjects in Massachusetts had put the oak-tree on their coin to commemorate his escape from his enemy by hiding in an oak-tree. "Jolly dogs," said the Merry King, "jolly dogs!" and he made no further trouble about the matter. You may recognize these coins by the illustrations we give.

When Stuyvesant, on the 29th of August, 1664, at the head of his Dutch garrison, marched out of the little earthen Fort Amsterdam with colors flying, drums beating, and matches lighted, he led his sullen troops down Beaver Street, to the North River, to embark on the West India Company's ship Gideon. Then, while the people, whose houses clustered around the fort, looked on, the red flag of England, with the cross of St. George, was run up the flagstaff of Fort James and saluted by the guns of the English fleet, and the Lord High Admiral was the Proprietor of New York.

Colonel Richard Nicolls, as Governor, established the Duke's laws for the government of the colony. When Sunday came, after the Dutch had ended their service in the church within the fort, the chaplain of the English forces performed the services of the Church of England, and for many years this one edifice served for both; nor has the kindly feeling then established ever been disturbed.

Fort Orange surrendered to Colonel Cartwright, who immediately formed a treaty with the Mohawks and Senecas, and the change of pos-

session throughout was effected so promptly that a French expedition against the Mohawks were thunderstruck, as they approached Fort Orange, to find floating over it the red flag of England. It had become Albany, a name given in honor of the Duke's Scotch title.

One of the first things that marked the change of ideas was the establishment of a race-course on Hempstead Plains, Long Island. It continued for many years to be the favorite annual resort of the Governors of New York and of the Long Island farmers.

The Duke of York wished to extend colonization, and readily granted, June 23d, 1664, to John, Lord Berkeley, and Sir George Carteret a part of his newly-acquired territory, giving it the name of New Jersey, in compliment to Carteret, who had gallantly defended the Island of Jersey against Cromwell.

Under this grant, Captain Philip Carteret came out with a small body of settlers in the Philip, in 1665, and in August landed at the head of his colonists on the soil of New Jersey, with a hoe on his shoulder, to show that he was to become a planter himself. The spot chosen as the capital of the new colony was a spot on the Kills, where four families had already planted themselves under authority from Nicolls. Carteret named the spot Elizabethtown, in honor of the wife of Sir George.

But the Dutch were not going to let the English have their American colony without a struggle. They prepared to meet England on the sea, but the Duke of York, with a fleet which included some of the ships and officers who reduced New York, defeated the Dutch Admiral Opdam at Lowestoff. Then France joined Holland, and the war became general.

The Duke of York at once sent over to Nicolls to try, with the aid

of New England, to reduce Canada, with which the Mohawks were already at war.

This was the first English project against Canada. But Massachusetts and Connecticut declined to act in the matter. Canada was so far away, beyond rocky mountains and howling deserts, that it would be impossible to march there. Some mounted men were sent out from Hartford, who went a hundred and twenty miles to find the way to Canada, but came back disheartened.

The French made an alliance with the Onondagas, and built forts on the Richelieu, and Fort St. Anne on La Motte Island, in Lake Champlain. This last post, begun in July, 1666, was the first white settlement in what was one day to be the State of Vermont.

Soon after, the French, to reduce the Mohawks to peace, invaded their canton and burned their towns. There was little chance of the English reducing Canada.

Nicolls even began to feel uneasy for New York. The Dutch, after defeating an English fleet in the Thames, were scouring the Atlantic. A Dutch fleet under Krynssen captured an English man-of-war and twenty-five other vessels on James River, and filled Virginia with consternation.

But the war came to an end, and, at the treaty of Breda, Holland gave up all claim to New York.

Still the peace did not last long. Again the English and Dutch fleets meet in battle at Solebay, off the English coast, and the Duke of York fought with courage, Colonel Nicolls, his first New York Governor, being killed by his side in the action.

In 1673, two Dutch admirals, Evertsen and Binckes, entered the Chesapeake, and captured a tobacco fleet in spite of the frigates that

protected it. Then they sailed for New York, and in August anchored near Staten Island.

Lovelace, the new English Governor, was in Connecticut, and Manning, the commander of Fort James, was too weak to cope with such a force; but though the fleet was within musket-shot of the fort, he refused to surrender. The fleet then opened fire, and Fort James replied; but six hundred Dutch soldiers landed, back of where Trinity Church now stands, and, encouraged by the Dutch settlers, advanced to storm the fort, which, seeing no hope of resistance, surrendered, and the Dutch flag floated again over the place.

New Jersey became again part of New Netherland. The eastern end of Long Island alone resisted the Dutch, with aid from Connecticut, but the Dutch captured many New England coasting vessels, and excited alarm all along the coast. The Treaty of Westminster came at last, in 1674, by which England recovered a province of such immense importance to her.

But during this time France had not been idle. She not only by her missionaries had won the Onondagas and other western cantons, but had built Fort Frontenac on Lake Ontario, and extended her missions and explorations to the country around the great Lakes. All the tribes learned to look with respect to the Governor of Canada, Ononthio, and the King of France, the Great Ononthio, as the Iroquois called him.

In 1673, Joliet, a young French Canadian, accompanied by Father Marquette, a pious missionary, descended the Wisconsin to the Mississippi, and glided down that river in their bark canoe, till they came to the towns of the friendly Arkansas. Then, seeing that this great river must empty into the Gulf of Mexico, and afraid that they might

fall into the hands of the Spaniards, they slowly paddled their way up against the strong current, and ascending the Illinois River, reached Lake Michigan.

The illustrious Marquette set out later to winter among the Illinois, and plant a mission; but his health failed. He planted his rude cabin at Chicago, the first white habitation at the place, but though he recovered sufficiently to go on to the town of the Kaskaskias, he died by the shore of Lake Michigan, as he was striving to reach Mackinaw.

Robert Cavelier, better known as the Sieur de la Salle, followed up Marquette and Joliet. He was commandant of Fort Frontenac at Toronto; he threw up a fort at Niagara, and there built the Griffin, the first vessel that ever navigated the waters of Lake Erie, intending to carry on a great trade in furs, of which he had the monopoly.

He reached Illinois, and there built Fort Crevecœur, or Broken Heart, for his troubles began. The Griffin, sent back from Mackinaw, was never seen again—lost in a storm or destroyed by Indians. He made his way back to Fort Frontenac almost alone, and led out a new party, only to find his fort abandoned and his men scattered. He finally, however, descended the Mississippi to the Gulf of Mexico in 1682. Hennepin, a Franciscan friar connected with his expedition, had already, in 1680, ascended the Mississippi to the Falls of St. Anthony, which owes its name to him.

La Salle then returned to France and fitted out an expedition to found a settlement at the mouth of the Mississippi, but he missed it, and was landed on the coast of Texas. While trying to reach the Mississippi overland, he was killed by his own men.

By these discoveries France claimed all the north and interior of North America, and was hemming England close in to the Atlantic

coast. Long after this, French maps showed the English colonies as a little strip on the shore, while half of North America was New France.

New England, on religious grounds, did not like the French as neighbors in what is now Maine and Nova Scotia, but did not see her great danger. Virginia was too far from the frontier, but the Duke of York saw the necessity of action. On recovering New York, his instructions to his Governors, Andros and Dongan, were to keep the French north of the lakes, to win the Five Nations to the English side, and to occupy Maine.

This began the great struggle between France and England for the control of North America.

While New York was again rapidly becoming more like the neighboring English colonies, New Jersey began to grow. Berkeley, one of the owners, sold his share to two Quakers, one of whom, Fenwick, in July, 1675, founded Salem, on the Delaware, and, as this part was set off as a separate colony, called West Jersey, many of their fellow-believers settled there. Carteret then grew tired of his American interests, and sold out to a number of Quakers, of whom William Penn was the chief one. They obtained a new grant from the Duke of York, and founded Perth Amboy. All these things brought out settlers. Baptists from New England settled at Middletown Point; Presbyterians at Newark and Elizabethtown; so that New Jersey presented a greater variety in its settlers than any other colony, and what is best of all, they lived in peace.

But while New York and New Jersey were thus gaining, New England was suddenly plunged into a terrible war. The labors of the missionaries to convert the Indians had not met with any success among the great Southern tribes, the Pokanokets, or Wampanoag, the

Niantics, the Narragansetts, and Mohegans. Massasoit, chief of the Pokanokets, left two sons, Wamsutta and Metacom, who, wishing English names, received from the Court at Plymouth the names of Alexander and Philip. The latter was soon sole chief, and for some years maintained a friendly attitude: but he was gloomy, and looked with no favor on the rapid increase of the English. Gradually suspicions and rumors of Indian plots came.

One day John Sausman, an Indian preacher at Natick, who had long lived with Philip, came hastening in to Plymouth. He had just paid a visit to his old friend the chief, and what he saw told him that Philip meant mischief. The chief of the Pokanokets was summoned. He obeyed, but in a few days Sausman was found murdered. Three Indians were arrested for the crime, tried, and executed, to the great indignation of the red men. In their eyes Sausman was a traitor, deserving death. The three men had obeyed the orders of their chief, and the Indians demanded vengeance.

On the 20th of June, 1675, while the little village of Swanzey lay in all the stillness and quiet of a New England Sabbath, the wild yell of the native braves proclaimed that a deadly war had begun. Two houses in flames showed the alarmed people that all was in danger. Men gathered together in the strongest houses; watches were set; but the Indians clustered around the town, house after house was pillaged, and every incautious man cut down and scalped.

The Indians were armed with good muskets, and were as expert in handling them as any white. They were, then, no mean foe. As the news came in, a force was raised and marched under Captain Moseley, an old West Indian buccaneer, to punish the Indians. Philip attacked them on the march and even advanced on them in force, but was

driven off. Then that chief left Mount Hope, and with his flying army began ravaging the Plymouth territory. Fires blazed from Dartmouth, Taunton, and Middleborough. The roadsides were dotted with the bodies of settlers slain in their fields or tomahawked by the Indians as they hurried them along. Savage, entering Mount Hope, found eight heads of settlers set up on poles.

Meanwhile the settlers were endeavoring to win over the Narragansetts, hoping to keep that important tribe from joining the hostile Indians; but, though they gave fair words, other tribes unexpectedly flew to arms. Captain Hutchinson, sent to Brookfield to induce the Nipmuck Indians to be peaceful, fell into an ambush. The Nipmucks had already taken up the hatchet, and Philip was soon in their midst, fierce for slaughter, and desperate in his plans.

Brookfield was besieged. A large house had been fortified, and the survivors of Hutchinson's party and the settlers were all huddled together there. The messengers for aid who were sent out perished, and all around the house seemed alive with the furious foe. All night long the blazing arrows came down on the devoted house, and it required every eye and every hand to prevent a conflagration.

The Indians pushed up combustibles to the house, and sought to fire it, but by brave sallies the garrison drove them off and extinguished the flames. Then, to the joy of all their thankful hearts, the rain came pouring down, and they could rest and hope.

Just after sunset, on that fifth August day, their hearts bounded: they heard afar the clatter of many hoofs, and amid a rattling fire from the Indians, in rode old Major Willard, a gray-haired veteran, with forty-seven heavy-armed men. Brookfield was saved, and the Indians,

who had lost nearly eighty in killed and wounded, retired to their swamps and fastnesses.

Every town in New England was now in alarm, and prepared to meet a sudden attack.

The wily enemy stole cautiously about, never attacking where they saw preparations. Thus the summer wore away. On the 1st of September the people of Hadley were gathered in their meeting-house for a solemn fast, and their good fire-locks were stacked along the aisle, when a yell showed that they were surrounded. Out they rushed to meet the enemy, but the affair was so sudden that all was confusion, and they would have been shot down like sheep, had not a white-haired man of old-fashioned dress suddenly appeared. Like some veteran commander he gave the word in a clear, ringing voice. Order was restored ; one good volley into the Indian foe, and a headlong charge with pike and sword sent them flying from the town. The men of Hadley looked around for their champion and deliverer, but he had vanished as mysteriously as he had come.

Long after, the mystery was solved. Colonel Goffe, one of the three judges of Charles I., who fled to New England, was then concealed in Mr. Russel's house in Hadley. As all were in the meeting-house, he did not fear observation, and went to a window to enjoy a look at the beauties of creation, which he so seldom gazed upon. He had seen the savages come stealing in Indian file over the hill and down upon them. Full of his old military ardor he rushed to the spot in time to form the startled colonists, and lead them to victory. Then he fled to his concealment.

There was another desperate fight at Bloody Brook. So little of the crops planted in New England could be gathered, that after Hadley was abandoned, a party was sent to finish threshing the grain already

in the barns. As the well-loaded wagons were slowly fording Bloody Brook on their return, the men stopped to gather wild grapes that hung from the vines festooning the dense trees. From every side poured out a stream of fire. The forest was alive with Indians.

Down, down, went the brave fellows! Scarce a man escaped. Old Moseley at Hadley heard the firing, hastened up, and attacked the Indians in their work of scalping and plundering; but though, as usual in battle, his wig was hung on a bush and got many a bullet intended for his head, Moseley could not drive them off. They seemed countless. Towards night, when his men were ready to drop with weariness, they heard the roll of the drum. Major Treat had come down the river with a hundred sturdy men and fifty faithful Mohegans. Then, at last, they drove the enemy from Bloody Brook.

Scarcely a Massachusetts settlement was left on the Connecticut. Springfield was saved with difficulty, after seeing many fine dwellings in flames.

The Narragansetts had, at first, promised peace, but they protected Philip's men, and the danger was that at an unguarded moment they might dash down on the settlements. The colonies resolved to take the first step. The Narragansetts were called upon to renew the peace. They held aloof in sullen silence. All through New England troops gathered for the attack on this powerful tribe, and the Narragansetts concentrated the warriors of their tribe and allies from far and near, at the swamp-fort in South Kingston. Here, on an island reached only by a frail bridge, stood their wigwams, enclosed in well-planted rows of palisades.

Through the dreary snow-covered land and leafless forests, the army of the colonists marched, with no shelter at night, wading through the

drifts by day. At noon, on the 19th of December, they came in sight of the fort, and without delay formed to attack it. On in the van went the men of Massachusetts, Plymouth and Connecticut supporting. A general yell burst from the enclosed Narragansetts; it was answered by the hearty cheers of the New England men. The marksmen, picking their antagonists, opened fire on both sides. Down in the storm of flame and bullet went many a brave leader, but the colonists dashed into the fort; the Narragansetts, nerved to despair, crowded down upon them. Foot by foot, with gallant men falling, the New Englanders were forced back out of the fort that had cost so much. They gathered in set determination. Another rush, and they are in again, never to be dislodged. The wigwams were fired, and ere long they held the ruined fort, strewn with the dead bodies of hundreds of the foe, and of seventy of their own brave men, while a hundred and fifty more lay writhing in pain.

With the snow falling fast around them, the army took up its homeward march, bearing on rude litters their wounded.

The power of the Narragansetts was forever broken.

The war continued all along the frontier. Lancaster was taken while the minister, Rowlandson, was seeking relief, and his wife's sufferings form a pathetic story. Captain Pierce, of Plymouth, lured into ambush by Canonchet, perished with most of his force. Town after town had to be abandoned. But the Indians began to suffer for food, and had to scatter more widely. In the spring they received a terrible blow from Denison of Connecticut, who defeated several Narragansett parties, and captured the great Canonchet and two other sachems. The haughty chief refused to submit, and was put to death by the Mohegans.

In May, Captain Turner, forgetting all he had suffered as a Baptist, gallantly led a force from Boston. A long night-march brought them at daybreak to an Indian camp at the falls that have ever since borne his name. Dismounting, they secured their horses, and, as stealthily as Indians themselves, glided up to the camp of their savage enemy, who became aware of their presence only by the volley that poured in among them. The scene that followed is one not easily described. It was one in which wild confusion, despair, and frenzied efforts were blended. The surprise was complete. The resistance was short and irregular. The Indians taken at a disadvantage, the rapid stream before them made escape hopeless; the white men almost encircled them. Man, woman, and child eagerly sought the covers; most were cut down, while some, seeking to escape by swimming the river, were hurried over the falls or shot in the water. Three hundred Indians fell, and the largest supply of provisions and ammunition that the hostile tribes possessed was destroyed. But while the New Englanders were exulting over this victory, the woods again re-echoed the fierce yell of the red man, and a fresh body of Indians dashed upon them, surprising them as completely as they had surprised. Fortunately, Turner was able to keep his men in good order; they steadily fought their way through, and, recovering their horses, began their retreat. The whole country swarmed with Indians. Their march was under constant fire, and brave Captain Holyoke, covering the retreat, suffered terribly, though he fought like a hero, and charged the Indians repeatedly, driving them to their coverts. Turner was killed while crossing Green River, and Holyoke led the survivors of his gallant band to Hatfield, which the Indians soon after attacked.

Major Talcot, of Connecticut, also showed himself a good Indian fighter, in his defense of Hadley, and in his glorious battle-week in June, when he defeated the Indians in four different engagements, leaving two hundred and fifty of their braves stark on the soil. So heavy were his blows that for the first time Indians came in and submitted to the mercy of the whites.

In all these battles and fights, Philip, the prime mover of all, was never seen by the New Englanders, and it was not certainly known where he was ; but in the second year, when the spirit of the Indians was broken, he appeared and was nearly captured in a fight in which several of his family were killed or taken, and he himself escaped only by flinging away even his ammunition. Captain Church, a famous Indian fighter, was close on his track, and Philip's band, almost all relatives of his own, was daily thinned. The Sachem seems to have come back to die at his ancient home. His wife and son were soon captured, to be sold into West Indian slavery. His comrades began to despair. One talked of submission. Philip slew him. The brother of his victim fled to Church, and guided his troops to Mount Hope. They reached the spot at midnight, and lay down in the bushes. When day broke the Indians perceived that they were surrounded, and attempted to cut their way through. At one point an Englishman, and Alderman, a friendly Indian, were posted. Philip, half dressed, dashed past them ; both fired the Englishman's gun missed, but Alderman's sent a bullet through the heart of the chief. He fell upon his face in the mud and water, with his gun under him.

The great Philip, last of the Pokanokets, or Wampanoags, was no more. With a cruelty learned from the Indians, they mangled the remains of the once haughty sachem. His hands were carried as

trophies to Boston, and his head to Plymouth, where it was exposed upon a pole on Thanksgiving Day. Many Indians, especially Praying Indians, who had joined the enemy, were then hanged, and for months the gibbet was never without a victim. Others were shipped off to the West Indies and sold as slaves, to toil away their lives beneath the sun of the tropics.

This ended the war in that part of New England; but along the coast of Maine, where the Indians had many private wrongs to complain of, the war still raged furiously, till not an English settlement remained from Casco Bay to the Penobscot. A little fort on Arrowsick Island was taken by a bold stratagem. The Indians stole up to the sentinel, and as he turned to enter the fort before his successor came out, they rushed into the fort with him, and cut down nearly all the garrison in a few moments.

During one of the lulls of the war in this section, a party of four hundred Indians came to York and proposed peace to Major Waldron, the commander there. He got up a sham fight the next day, near the fort. When the Indians had fired their muskets, he surrounded them with his men and took the whole party prisoners. Half of them he allowed to go, the rest were sent to Boston, thence to the West Indies, to be sold as slaves. This cruel act of treachery the Indians never forgave; it rendered them more furious. York, Wells, Black Point, were destroyed, and the midnight sky was lighted up with blazing houses and barns. They even ventured out in boats and captured twenty fishing vessels, killing all on board.

At last, peace was made at Casco, in April, 1678, with Madockawando and other Eastern chiefs, and New England could breathe freely.

Sad was the change in the happy smiling landscape, where industry

and thrift had built up so fair a colony. Ten or twelve towns had been utterly destroyed; forty others, more or less burned down; five or six hundred stalwart men had fallen in battle or been cut down unawares, or, worst of all, had perished amid all the refinements of Indian torture. As you rode along, you met everywhere scenes of desolation, ruin, and distress. Every family was in mourning, thousands were destitute, the public debts of the colonies were more than all the personal property.

While Massachusetts was in this distress, she began to reap the reward of her refusal to modify her institutions and laws so as to conform to those of England. Charles II. began to follow the matter up. Maine, west of the Kennebec, was now, by a decision of the Courts, adjudged to the heir of Gorges, and though Massachusetts purchased his rights, this did not help them. In 1678, Charles established New Hampshire as a royal province, and restored Mason, the old patentee, to his rights; but the people there were of the same mind as those of Massachusetts, and royal Governors, collectors, and other officers, for some time had a sorry time of it.

Massachusetts did not take warning; the King's letters were met by long, evasive responses, and the agents of the colony were instructed to make all possible delay. But the King acted promptly; proceedings were begun in the Court of King's Bench, to set aside the Charter of Massachusetts, on the ground that they had violated it; and, as technical objections arose, new proceedings were begun in the Court of Chancery, under which the Charter was declared void in 1684, and Massachusetts became a royal province.

New York was gradually assuming the form of an English colony, and the people becoming accustomed to English rule. Under Thomas

Dongan, who came out as Governor in 1683, an Assembly was called, and New York began to make laws for self-government. Dongan was one of the ablest colonial Governors ever intrusted with power in America, and labored earnestly to build up the colony, and to extend its limits to the St. Lawrence and Lake Ontario. Of the French power he was the steady antagonist.

The Assembly, convened under this able man, passed a Charter of Liberties, establishing freedom of conscience, and guaranteeing all the liberties held dear by Englishmen.

The Five Nations formally submitted as subjects to the King of England, and Dongan restrained them from annoying other colonies, allowing none to treat with them except through the Governor of New York.

To the southward another colony was now begun. William Penn had become interested in New Jersey, and thus learned the fitness of the New World as a home for emigrants. The English Government owed him a large sum, which had been due to his father, Admiral Penn. The Duke of York had esteemed the father and liked the son. Charles had no money to pay old debts, but Penn offered to take as compensation a grant of land in America, and James recommended his brother to grant him all the land north of Newcastle, and between the fortieth and forty-third degrees.

On the 6th of March, 1681, the charter was issued under the Great Seal. Penn proposed to call the land New Wales; but as this was not liked, he suggested Sylvania, from its abounding in forests, but Charles insisted on putting Penn before this, to honor the Admiral, and so it became Pennsylvania.

Penn was made absolute proprietor, with power to ordain laws, appoint officers, and enjoy general authority; but the laws were to be

assented to by the freemen of the province, and be approved by the King, and no taxes were to be raised except by the Provincial Assembly. To provide for any such case as had arisen in New England, it was provided that Episcopal clergymen, approved by the Bishop of London, were to reside in the province without molestation.

Thus the old colony of New Netherland had grown into New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and the counties on the Delaware, which now form the little State of Delaware. These were claimed by the Duke of York as part of New York, and by Lord Baltimore as part of Maryland. Penn bought from the Duke all his rights to them. He sent out William Markham as Deputy Governor in 1681, with three ship-loads of emigrants, and full instructions. In September of the following year, Penn prepared to go himself to take possession of his new province. In a beautiful letter he took leave of his wife and family, then, with six hundred of his fellow-believers, he set sail in September, 1682, for the new abode of peace, where they were to begin what they called the Holy Experiment.

The passage was long, and the frequent deaths among the passengers cast a gloom over them all. At last, on the 27th day of October, William Penn landed at Newcastle. Swedes, Dutch, and English were already settled in the new province, and they numbered between two and three thousand, plain, strong, and industrious people, living in peace with each other and the native tribes. The disposal of the territory to Penn was regarded favorably. The news of his landing was soon spread far and wide, and on the next day, in the presence of a crowd of the settlers of the various tongues, his deeds were produced; the agent of the Duke surrendered the territory by solemnly delivering

earth and water, and Penn, as proprietor, pledged himself to grant liberty of conscience and civil freedom.

He visited the various settlements, finding the land good, the air clear and sweet, the springs plentiful, and provisions good and easy to come at, an innumerable quantity of wild fowl and fish; in fine, he says, "What an Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob would be well contented with."

Before leaving England he had addressed a letter to the Indians, and as soon as he had seen the position of his province, he held his first grand treaty with them. Beneath the great elm-tree at Shackamaxon, on the northern edge of his future city of Philadelphia, William Penn, surrounded by a few friends in the peaceful garb of his sect, with no military parade or arms, met the assembled delegates of the Indian tribes. From the tribes on the waters of the Delaware came the clans of that name; Shawnees from the interior, and the stately Conestogas from the Susquehanna, all met beneath the wintry sky and the leafless branches of the elm. Distinguished simply by his blue silk sash, Penn addressed them, not to purchase lands, but to form the covenant of friendship which he had offered.

"We meet," he said, "on the broad pathway of good works and good will; no advantage shall be taken on either side, but all shall be openness and love. I will not call you children, for parents sometimes chide their children too severely; nor brothers only, for brothers differ. The friendship between me and you I will not compare to a chain; for that the rains might rust, or the falling tree might break. We are the same as if one man's body were to be divided in two parts; we are all one flesh and blood."

The children of the forest were touched by these words of peace

and from that day to this, the Indian has recognized in the Quaker a friend indeed. They received the presents of Penn with sincerity, and with hearty friendship they gave the highest and most solemn guarantee known to the eastern tribes, the belt of wampum

Thus was the foundation of Pennsylvania laid: peace with the Indians, liberty and toleration for all. A General Convention met at Chester in December, and framed the laws for the province. All were free, all were equal; no taxes were to be laid but by law; every man could vote, and, without regard to religion, could be elected to office. Sunday was to be a day of rest, and stage-plays, bull-baits, and cock-fights were prohibited.

Having selected a site for his city, Penn bought the land of the Swedish settlers who occupied it, and on a neck of land between the Schuylkill and Delaware, well suited for a town by the convenience of the rivers, the firmness of the land, the pure springs and healthy air, he in January, 1683, laid out his city, to which he gave the name of Philadelphia, meaning Brotherly Love.

Vast were the hopes of Penn, but he little dreamed of its future greatness; that in less than a century it was to be the cradle of a great Republic, soon to bear its starry flag from ocean to ocean.

In two years Philadelphia had grown from four little cottages to six hundred houses, and the schoolmaster and the printing-press had begun their work.

Having given his colony the form and impulse his amiable heart desired, and erected a modest brick house for himself, Penn returned to England in 1684, bidding a touching farewell to the colonists and to the virgin city Philadelphia.

In Virginia, after the restoration of the royal power under Charles

II., the aristocratic feelings recovered, and the Church of England was established, and maintained by laws almost as severe as those which upheld Congregationalism in New England. The Governor, Sir William Berkeley, bore himself very haughtily, and much discontent prevailed. At last Indian troubles gave it an occasion to show itself.

The Conestogas, or Susquehannas, as they are sometimes called, from the river on which they dwelt, had, after a long war, been disastrously defeated by the Senecas and other Iroquois tribes, and driven down into Maryland and Virginia. In the confusion of their hasty entrance into these colonies, several outrages were committed, which were charged upon them, but were more probably the work of the Senecas.

Some of the Conestoga chiefs met a party of settlers to justify themselves and make terms of peace, but the settlers, in the heat of passion, murdered them. Old Berkeley rebuked this sternly. "If they had killed my father and my mother, and all my friends, yet if they had come to treat of peace, they ought to have gone in peace."

The crime brought terrible consequences. The wretched Conestogas, finding those among whom they sought a refuge to be as great enemies as the Senecas, commenced a war in earnest, and from Mount Vernon to the falls of the James they roamed, slaying and devastating, till they deemed their dead chiefs avenged. Then they offered peace, but the colonists rejected it. Other Indian tribes who had wrongs to complain of now followed the example of the Conestogas, and Virginia was plunged into the horrors of Indian war.

The Governor and his aristocratic associates did nothing to allay the storm; but the people rose. Choosing as a leader Nathaniel Bacon a

brave and eloquent young planter, they demanded leave to rise and protect themselves. Berkeley haughtily refused.

Where the James River leaps into the low-lands, lay the plantation of the enthusiastic popular leader. The savage enemy made a dash here, and killed several of his men. He had declared that if another white man fell he would raise troops without authority. Five hundred men soon rallied to his standard, and he marched against the Indian foe. Berkeley proclaimed them rebels, and raised troops to pursue them, but the people, tired of the tyranny of the Governor and Assembly, rose and compelled the Governor to dissolve the Assembly. Bacon, having driven off the Indians, returned in triumph, was elected to the Assembly, and made Commander-in-Chief. This legislature passed many acts to secure the liberties of the people, but Berkeley refused to sign Bacon's commission. That young leader, fearing treachery, withdrew, and returned at the head of an armed force. The old Cavalier met them undaunted. Baring his breast, he cried, "A fair mark, shoot!" "I will not," replied Bacon, "hurt a hair of your head, or of any man's; we are coming for the commission to save our lives from the Indians."

Berkeley finally yielded, and Bacon, after rebuking the Council for the exorbitant taxes, abuses of Government, and the misery of the country, obtained a regular commission. At the head of his eager soldiers he drove the Indians from their lurking-places in forests and swamps, and was about to bring the war to a close by a vigorous campaign, when Berkeley proclaimed him a traitor. Bacon appealed to the people, and a general rising answered his call. Berkeley fled, but, raising some troops and Indians, by aid of the English ships then in Virginia waters, he returned to Jamestown and again proclaimed

Bacon a traitor. That popular leader was soon before the place with his forces. Under the mild light of a September moon, a rude intrenchment was thrown up. Berkeley's motley horde lost heart, many fled to the ships, the rest deserted the town, and Bacon entered. Fearful that he could not hold it against the reinforcements that Berkeley might receive from England, Bacon set fire to the village, two of his chief adherents applying the torch to their own houses. The little church, the new State House, soon caught, and the cradle of Virginia. with all its recollections, was soon a mass of flames. To Berkeley's fleet, anchored twenty miles below the town, it proclaimed the determination of Virginians to be free, even at the sacrifice of all they possessed.

The ruins of the church-tower that survived, still stand as a monument to mark the spot connected with the names of Gosnold, Smith, Powhatan, Pocahontas, and Bacon.

When Bacon came up to the opposing army, there was no battle. The Governor's troops joined him. In the midst of his triumph, Bacon fell sick and died. The people were left without a leader. Berkeley, securing some capable men, defeated parties of the popular troops, and hanged Hansford, a gallant young planter, who fell into his hands. Others followed to the gallows, till twenty-two of the best and purest men in Virginia had perished. Others died in prison. Everywhere estates were confiscated and people driven from their homes. Virginia was filled with wretchedness, misery, and tears. When tidings of this vindictive cruelty reached England, the kind-hearted Charles II. exclaimed: "The old fool has taken away more lives in that naked country, than I for the murder of my father."

A squadron took out English troops to Virginia, the first who ever entered an American province. Sir William Berkeley returned to

England, but Bacon's movement left Virginia with less freedom than it had before.

Maryland enjoyed comparative quiet during the reign of Charles II., and though one of its officers was concerned in the killing of the Susquehanna chiefs, the colony condemned him, and avoided war.

Pennsylvania was not the only new colony which dates from this reign. A number of English noblemen, anxious to be lord proprietors in America, obtained, on the 24th of March, 1663, a grant for the Province of Carolina, extending from the thirty-sixth degree of north latitude to the river San Matheo, since called the St. John. Lord Clarendon, the Duke of Albemarle, Lord Ashley Cooper, Sir William Berkeley, and Sir George Carteret, whose names we have met already with Lord Berkeley, and Sir John Colleton formed this body of proprietors.

The land was not wholly unoccupied. Settlers from New England had planted themselves there, and from time to time Virginians had explored it and attempted settlements. These new colonists purchased lands from the Indians, and were framing a simple government for themselves. Berkeley, acting as Governor of Virginia, and one of the proprietors of Carolina, appointed as Governor of the Virginia pioneers William Drummond, who convened the first Assembly of northern Carolina, and organized the Government in 1666.

The year before, Sir John Yeamans was appointed by the proprietors Governor of a party of settlers from Barbadoes, who purchased a tract on Cape Fear River, near the New England settlers.

Elated by the progress of colonization, the proprietors obtained a new Charter, giving them a vast territory extending to the Pacific Ocean. Then the philosopher Locke drew up a Constitution and laws

for this great territory, in which there were to be nobles of different ranks, proprietaries, landgraves, and caciques. William Sayle was appointed the first Governor, but it was found impossible to put in force the laws that seemed so wise to philosophers and statesmen in England. At last the proprietaries wrote to the colonists, "Settle order among yourselves."

Sayle's party of emigrants touched at Port Royal, and then settled, in 1670, on the Ashley River, at the first high land. This was the commencement of South Carolina. But the spot was not favorable for commerce, and on the neck of land between the Ashley and Cooper Rivers soon grew up a town, called, in honor of the King, Charleston. Embowered in evergreen trees, with flowers of rich perfume, it was long a spot that attracted settlers in spite of its unhealthy air.

If the proprietaries did not establish their elaborate laws, they did encourage emigration, and settlers poured in from New England and New York, from Barbadoes, and from England, Ireland, Scotland, and Holland. Then came the Huguenots, expelled from France by Louis XIV.

To mould all these different classes into one community was not easy, but it was finally accomplished, and perhaps the pretensions of the proprietaries hastened it, for in a little while all the settlers agreed to oppose them and their authority.

CHAPTER II.

Reign of James II.—James projects a Union of the Colonies—New York invaded—Connecticut and the Charter Oak—Indian Troubles in Maine—Fall of James—Reign of William III.—Andros seized—Old Governments resumed in New England—William neglects America—Sad Condition of New York—Leisler—Indian Wars—Waldron—Lachine—Schenectady—Salmon Falls—Casco—Phips fails to take Quebec—William sends a Governor to New York—Leisler refuses to submit—Taken—Hanged—New Charter for Massachusetts—The Witch Trials—Captain Kidd.

James II., Duke of York, came to the throne of England on the death of his brother, Charles II., in 1684. As a Catholic he was distasteful to the people of England, and it was evident that his reign would be short. Under other auspices he might have been one of the best English rulers. He was a brave and capable commander, well acquainted with the commerce of England, and one of the few Kings who took a real interest in American affairs.

One of his projects was to unite the colonies together. When he became King he was proprietor of New York; Massachusetts was a royal province; Connecticut and Rhode Island had just been organized under charters. He united Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Maine, and the Narragansett country under Joseph Dudley as Governor; and he prepared to annex other colonies to this new government. Then, for the first time, the service of the church established by law in England, was performed in Boston.

Dongan, the Governor of New York, was busy checking the French, who, provoked by the raids of the Five Nations, invaded the Seneca country with a considerable force, led by the Marquis de Denonville, Governor of Canada.

The Senecas met him on his way inland, and for a time a fierce battle raged. Soldiers from the battlefields of Europe, Canada militia, fron-

tiersmen, Indian allies of the French, representing tribes from the shores of Maine to the shores of Lake Superior, all met to do battle with the Iroquois on the soil of New York. The action was sharp, and many noted braves fell, but the Iroquois drew off, and the French entered their ruined towns. Denonville then restored La Salle's fort on the Niagara, and claimed all western New York. Dongan supported his allies with arms and ammunition, and endeavored to win the western tribes to England.

James, a more patriotic Englishman than his careless brother, Charles II., supported Dongan, and when the French King complained, insisted that the Iroquois were his subjects, and that as such he would protect them. The French proposed, and James agreed to, a perfect neutrality in America in case of future war.

Following up his plan of forming the colonies into one powerful government, James had sent out the active and capable Sir Edmund Andros, as Governor General of the Territory and Dominion of New England. He landed in Boston in December, 1686, with an imposing force of British troops. One of his first steps was to induce Connecticut to surrender her Charter into his hands, so that he could make that province part of his territory. He soon after, in pursuance of instructions based on erroneous reports that Connecticut had submitted, left Boston with several of his council, and some sixty grenadiers as his guard. For the first time such a retinue dashed in its pomp and glitter through the New England woods.

At Hartford the General Court was in session, and Andros called for the surrender of the Charter, which the people prized so dearly. A pleasing tradition was long kept alive by the reverence paid to the famous tree at Hartford, called the Charter Oak, which braved

the winds till it was blown down in a great storm in August, 1856. The story is that after Andros had secured one copy of the Charter, and all were looking on in sadness and gloom, the lights were suddenly extinguished as Andros stretched out his hand to grasp the other. There was delay in relighting the hall, and then the Charter had vanished. Lieutenant Joseph Wadsworth had secretly carried it off and hidden it in the hollow of this old oak. But there are doubts as to this story, and though the Charter was probably concealed in the tree, Wadsworth had apparently secured it previous to the coming of Andros.

Dongan's experience and his warnings now induced James to consolidate, if possible, all the English colonies into one, so as to give the Indians a greater idea of English power, and more easily check the French. New Jersey was also placed under Andros, and then New York, so that all the colonies from the fortieth degree, except Pennsylvania, were incorporated into one vast province as the Dominion of New England. Sir Edmund Andros was the Viceroy, and Captain Francis Nicholson, Lieutenant Governor.

Like Dongan, Andros eagerly watched the French, and sent the Rose frigate to Penobscot to break up a French settlement and trading-post of the Baron de St. Castin. The property of that nobleman was seized and carried off, and the act cost New England dearly. St. Castin, or Castine, as the English settlers called him, had come over to Canada as a young ensign in a French regiment. When it was disbanded he had grown to like the New World, so he wandered off to the coast of Maine, and planted his tent among the Indians on the Penobscot. He liked them so well that he married a daughter of Madockawando, and exerted immense influence over the Indians all

along the coast, and thus carried on a very large and profitable trade. The Indians considered him as one of their great chiefs, and looked upon the injury done him as a wrong against them, which they resolved to retaliate.

While Andros was at Albany, looking after the Indian affairs of New York, tidings came that troubles had arisen at Penobscot. The Indians had risen, and Massachusetts sent a force to put them down. Andros, anxious to avoid a war, hastened across the country to Boston, and raising a force of eight hundred men, went to Maine in the depth of winter, sharing all the hardships of the troops, though many perished on the march.

The Indians fled to the woods, and the troops were unable, after all their hardships, to bring them to action. Andros was now reaping the harvest he had sown. The whole coast of Maine was in danger, and to secure the scattered settlements, he planted a number of garrisons along the coast.

James was no longer on the English throne. His nephew and son-in-law, William, Prince of Orange, had invaded England and been acknowledged as King, with Mary as Queen.

Utterly unlike James, William seems to have taken no interest in American affairs, and he was not, like James, a man to busy himself with them. Instead of dispatching definite instructions at once to all the American colonies, he acted with hesitation, and showed no care or promptness. He left everything in confusion.

This was the cause of terrible troubles and border-wars on this side of the Atlantic.

When the Revolution took place in England, Andros was still in Maine. He returned to Boston. There a revolution also took place.

Seeing it hopeless to attempt to maintain his authority, Andros was on his way to embark on the Rose frigate, when he was induced to meet Bradstreet and others at the council chamber. There he was arrested and thrown into prison.

A Council of Safety assumed the Government in Massachusetts. Plymouth reinstated its old Governor and its old Administration. Connecticut brought out her hidden Charter, and Governor Treat resumed his duties.

Opening the dispatches addressed by William to Andros, the Council of Safety proclaimed William and Mary.

No colony, indeed, made any resistance, but troubles took place in New York and Maryland. In the last, as no instructions arrived, the deputies of Lord Baltimore hesitated to proclaim William and Mary. But an association was formed, headed by a disreputable man named John Coode, who was soon after indicted and fled. A revolution took place, a Government was formed which William sanctioned, and finally, in 1691, he made Maryland a royal province, appointing Sir Lionel Copley Governor.

In New York matters were even more serious. Nicholson, the Lieutenant Governor, finding that Andros was a prisoner, sought in vain to obtain his release. He convened the Common Council of the city, and, to quiet the people, proposed that part of the city militia should mount guard in the fort. One of the seven militia captains, Jacob Leisler, saw an opportunity to raise himself. Ignorant, fanatical, ambitious, he began by letters and speaking to excite distrust and trouble. In a little while half the people of New York believed that Nicholson had threatened to burn New York and massacre the people.

A slight quarrel about a sentinel soon brought things to a point. Never had New York been so excited. The drums were beat, and the citizens appeared in arms. Leisler's company entered the fort and took possession. It was at first agreed that the various captains should command in turn, but Leisler soon had all in his own hands, proclaimed the Prince of Orange, and the people supposed that it was to be again a Dutch colony.

Nicholson, finding himself stripped of all power, sailed for England. Bayard and other members of the Council retired to Albany, and attempted to organize Government there. Leisler then had himself appointed by his men Commander-in-Chief of the province, and addressed a letter to William and Mary.

England and France were now at war, and both parties claiming rule in New York were full of fight. At Albany the Five Nations were encouraged to war on the French. The treaty of neutrality effected at the wish of Louis XIV. was disregarded, and the colonists sought a war with Canada, and were ready to use the Indians against that province.

This was one of the most unfortunate steps in our history. All the horrors which for many years desolated our frontiers, might have been avoided.

The French wished peace and wished to avoid Indian hostilities. Finding that they must have war, they went to work with a will. The garrisons established by Andros in Maine had been withdrawn. The Indians, siding with the French, chanted the war-song from the Connecticut to the St. John's. Waldron's treachery had never been forgotten, and was now to be avenged.

One stormy night some squaws came to the garrison houses at

Cocheco, asking shelter till morning. No tidings of the coming war had reached Waldron, so they were carelessly admitted.

At midnight they threw open the doors, and the Pennacook braves rushed in, shrieking and yelling. Many were cut down at once; but every Indian thirsted to reach Waldron. The old man, wakened by the noise, leaped out of bed. "What now? what now?" he cried, as he rushed on the Indians, sword in hand. So fierce was his rush that they gave way before him, but as he turned to get other arms, they sprang on him, struck him down senseless, and then dragged him to the hall.

There they seated him in a chair on top of a table, and exclaimed, "Who shall judge Indians now?" After a time they surrounded him again, brought out his books, and laid them on the table before him; hen, in mockery of his way of trading, each Indian stepped up and crying, "I cross out my account!" with his knife drew a deep gash across the old man's breast; and so they went on, till the veteran, fainting from loss of blood, and murmuring "Oh Lord! oh Lord!" fell forward on a sword.

Cocheco was soon a mass of fire; house and mill alike sent up their volumes of flame, lighting up the scene; twenty-two settlers lay dead, and by the gleams of firelight the dusky warriors were seen hurrying away nearly as many more prisoners.

A little girl, seven years old, a grand-daughter of Major Waldron, during the attack was sent by the Indians to an inner room to tell the people to come out. She hid, but was found and dragged off, half clothed and barefooted. Her sufferings were terrible: her Indian master once was going to kill her, and actually set her up against a tree and aimed at her; another time an Indian girl pushed her off a

high rock into the river, and she nearly drowned, but she dared not tell for fear of worse treatment. Once they stole off in the morning and left her, covered with the snow, alone in the woods. The poor little thing went crying after them through the wilderness, tracing them by their trail on the snow. Another time they made a great fire, and threatened to roast her alive, but she ran to her master, and clasping her little arms round his tawny neck, promised to be good, and touched his heart.

Such were the horrors which the colonies brought on themselves, when all might have been avoided.

The Five Nations, instigated by the people of New York, dealt a still heavier blow on Canada. Fifteen hundred braves of the League, with some English, all well armed, set out to invade Canada. Never had such a force of red men taken the field. Through the forests they marched to Lake Champlain, where they built their fleet of canoes. No scouts warned the French of their approach. They glided down with noiseless stroke into the St. Lawrence, and passed Lake St. Louis during the fierce hailstorm that came on during the night of the fifth of August. Their canoes soon ran silently on the shore at La Chine, a few miles above Montreal. The little French village lay buried in slumber. The war-whoop roused them to fall beneath the balls of the Indians or their murderous hatchets. Men, women, and children perished, and, firing the town, the Indians added to the horrors of the scene, and prevented all escape. Here and there a brave man would attempt to defend himself and those dear to him. Few escaped. Those who fell into the hands of the Indians alive underwent every torture that savage fury could invent. Children were put alive on spits, and their mothers forced to turn them before a fire. All night long the

hideous orgies and cruelties of the Indians continued. The sun rose on a scene of indescribable horror. Only two houses in the whole village remained, and not a living inhabitant; all else was blood and ashes. Two hundred people had perished; a hundred and fifty more were hurried off as captives.

Denonville, Governor of Canada, sent out Lieutenant Robeyre with a detachment to hold Fort Roland. The Indians attacked it with such fury that the little garrison were soon surrounded by dead. But it was all in vain. The foe were countless, and the little band was thinned till the brave Robeyre, faint and wounded, stood alone.

Du Luht, whose name has been given to a new town on Lake Superior, was more successful, when encountering two canoes of Iroquois on the Lake of the Two Mountains. Plying their paddles with hot haste, the Iroquois rushed upon him. Du Luht forbade a man to fire, and the Iroquois bullets, fired in haste, rattled harmlessly by. Quick struck the paddles till the range was sure; then, at his word, his deadly volley poured into the Iroquois canoes. Every bullet told. Eighteen braves lay writhing in their riddled canoes; four plunged into the water to seek safety by swimming, but of the whole band only one escaped.

But all was alarm in Canada. Fort Frontenac was abandoned and fired, and a mine with a slow match lit to blow it up. The Indians, going to attack it, found ammunition and plunder to reward them.

Four days after the attack on Lachine, a hundred Christian Indians from a French mission on the Penobscot, appeared before Fort Pemaquid, on the coast of Maine. Coming partly by sea, and partly by land, they found the people utterly unprepared. They rushed furiously

through the village, breaking into the houses, and slaughtering all before them.

Captain Weems in the fort opened fire with his cannon, but the Indians took to some stone houses and behind a rock that jutted out. A regular frontier fight began. Each watched his antagonists keenly, and every exposed body was instantly a mark for a ball. At last the sun began to decline, and wishing to close the matter at once, an Indian summoned Weems to surrender.

"I am tired," replied the undaunted man; "I am tired, and must go to sleep."

All night long the rattle of musketry was kept up, and with daylight the fire into the fort was terrible. Weems, finding it hopeless, agreed to capitulate, and the Indians allowed all who survived to march out and embark. The Indians, with a self-restraint not often seen, stove in a cask of rum which they found in the fort.

All was now confusion at New York. King William, after Nicholson's return to England, sent out a letter addressed to him at New York. Leisler opened it, and declared that it made him Lieutenant Governor, and imprisoned all who opposed him. He harassed the people of Albany in order to make them submit to his rule.

Amid all this confusion, Count Frontenac, the new Governor of Canada, was preparing to avenge the bloody massacre of Lachine. In the very heart of a Canadian winter, three expeditions of French and Indians started out over the snow and ice. One from Montreal aimed at Schenectady; another, from Three Rivers, at Salmon Falls, and a third, from Quebec, at the settlement on Casco Bay.

Schenectady was the frontier town, and, in spite of the dangers of a time of war, was merry as winter could make it. One Saturday after-

noon, Talmage, who commanded the little garrison in the fort, urged the people to be cautious, as warnings had come. The people laughed at his fears, and gayly spent the afternoon in their warm houses. The gates of the palisades, even, were left open, and they set up snow men there as mock sentinels.

While all this foolery was going on, the French and Indian force, under Saint Helene and Manteht, were almost within gunshot.

Weary, hungry, and numbed with cold, they waited till every light disappeared in the doomed village. At midnight they charged through both gates at once into the place, and attacked Talmage's fort. The war-whoop rang through the village ; houses were fired, and a general slaughter ensued.

Stout Adam Vrooman defended his house like a hero, and the French gave him quarter ; they spared a widow's house, and endeavored to save the minister, who was, however, killed. Sixty persons were slain in that bloody night. Twenty-five escaped from the place, and lighted by the glare of their burning houses, hastened almost naked through the deep snows to Albany ; one of the wounded, Simon Schemerhorn, who had succeeded in finding a lame horse, reaching that city early on Sunday morning, to terrify all with his fearful tidings.

The other expeditions of the French were equally successful. Hertel, with the men of Three Rivers, pushed on till his scouts reconnoitred Salmon Falls, now Berwick, in New Hampshire. In three parties they attacked three garrisoned houses, one supplied with cannon. The yell of the Indian was met by a bold cheer ; but one by one the defenders fell, and the survivors surrendered. Then the invaders applied the torch. The settlement was in flames, and the Indians slaughtered on all sides the herds of cattle in the burning stables.

The people of Portsmouth heard of the disaster, and gave chase to the enemy. Hertel halted at the narrow bridge over Wooster River. The brave New Englanders dashed over it, firing rapidly. Hertel, trained to border fighting, let them approach and rushed upon them. With terrible loss the men of Portsmouth were hurled back, and Hertel continued his retreat.

The fort at Casco Bay was invested by Portneuf's party. Some of them by night stole up almost to the gate, and lay in ambush. At daybreak Robert Greason fell into the trap and was slain. The scalp-halloo told the garrison of their danger ; fifty men boldly sallied forth to meet them. A desperate hand to hand fight followed. Only four men out of fifty ever lived to re-enter the fort. Still the place held out, but as Hertel joined him, Portneuf pushed the siege quickly, and at last Casco surrendered.

All the northern colonies were now in consternation. The French might rouse every Indian against them.

Leisler urged all the colonies to join in a union for the reduction of Canada ; and, as their authority was no better than his, they agreed, and the first North American Colonial Congress met at New York in 1690. They agreed to raise an army of eight hundred and fifty-five men to conquer Canada. This seems a very insignificant force indeed ; and when Fitz-John Winthrop, the commander, reached Lake Champlain and found the Indians dying of small-pox, and discontented, he returned to Albany, and the whole expedition came to nothing, though Captain John Schuyler, with some whites and Indians, made a bold dash into Canada, and ravaged La Prairie, destroying houses, barns, and cattle, killing and carrying off many of the French settlers.

Massachusetts fitted out a fleet under Phips to attack Port Royal,

a French post, now replaced by Annapolis, in Nova Scotia, intending, if successful, to sail round into the St. Lawrence, and take Quebec.

No such fleet had ever sailed out of an American port, and the greatest hopes were built on its success. Port Royal had before baffled English attacks; but when, on the 19th of May, 1690, the French guards on the coast saw the fleet, they started in all haste to warn the commander of the fort. Despairing of being able to make any defense, he capitulated, but Phips pillaged the place, demolished the chapel, and treated the people harshly. They were never again to be long under French rule, and their history is a very sad and pitiable one. War had put them under a government that they could not love, and which looked on them with dislike.

Phips, flushed with victory, determined to attack Quebec. Storms delayed him, and it was not till October 14th that he anchored with thirty-four sail near that city. Frontenac, the Governor of Canada, finding Montreal safe from Leisler's army, had hastened back to Quebec, and had fortified it with great skill.

He was ready for the fight. In a little while a boat came rowing from the New England fleet, the white flag flying at the bow. Before it reached land a French boat met it, and received Phips' messenger, who was blindfolded and led into the Castle of Quebec. The cunning French led him by a roundabout way, so that he heard plenty of soldiers marching, and rattling of guns, to make him think the place was full of troops. When his bandage was taken off he stood in the presence of the haughty old Count, who was surrounded by his officers and the great dignitaries of the colony. He handed to Frontenac the summons of Phips, and an insolent one it was, and taking out his watch, said that he could not wait for his answer more than an hour.

The French officers were furious ; but Frontenac sternly told him, "I will not keep you waiting that long for my answer. Here it is. I know no King William. . . I will answer your master by the mouth of my cannon. Let him learn that this is not the way to summon a man like me!"

As soon as the boat with its white flag had carried the messenger back to the New England fleet, the batteries of Quebec opened. One of the first balls carried away Phips' flag, and it floated so near the shore that a French boat ran out and secured it, and for many a day it hung as a trophy in the old Cathedral.

Phips replied with the cannons of his ships, and landed his army to attack the city, but the shore swarmed with Canadians and Indians, who seemed innumerable. Every tree seemed to shelter an Indian marksman. They bounded around the army, dodging from rock to rock, from tree to tree. At last Frontenac ordered up a battalion of his regular troops, old French veterans, and Phips' army was forced back to the water's edge.

So it went on for several days, fighting on land, while the ships and fortifications cannonaded each other furiously. At last, baffled on shore, Phips withdrew his men, leaving his cannon to the French, and with his shattered ships fell down the St. Lawrence.

Canada, wild with exultation and joy, reared a church to Our Lady of Victory, but Massachusetts heard the tidings with dismay. The expense of the expedition had been enormous, and the expected plunder did not come to pay it. For the first time paper money was issued. Massachusetts, having no money, printed promises to pay.

In New York the people tried to escape the cost by denying Leisler's power to impose taxes.

Order of Lieut. Gov. Leisler, with Autograph and Seal.

By The Lievt Governr &c.

THESE are in his Majties name to Will & Require you to forwarne & forbid all ꝑſons in yor Bayliwick to go on board ye Ship Jacob Wm Maſſon Comandr & that you forthwth Cauſe good & true Watch to be kept that no ꝑſon goes aboard of him wch may pilote him through helgate & if any ꝑſon refuſe to obey you that him or them you ſeize & bring before me to anſwer for their Contempt. Given under my hand & ſeale this 30 8ber in ye Second Year of their Majties Reigne 1690.

To ye Conſtables of harlem & bouwery

Jacob Leisler



LEISLER'S PROCLAMATION.

Amid all these troubles, King William had sent over no Governors, no instructions. The American colonies were all acting for themselves. It seems as if he cunningly wished them to be weakened and ruined. At last he appointed Colonel Sloughter Governor of New York, with Major Richard Ingoldsby as Lieutenant Governor, but they did not sail from England till December, and then Sloughter went to Bermuda, so that Ingoldsby arrived first at New York. He demanded possession of the fort for the King's forces and their stores. Leisler was very angry at the demand, and, provoked to find that some of the old Council were reappointed, refused to give up the fort.

Ingoldsby then landed his troops with great caution, and quartered them in the Stadt House, or City Hall. The Council appointed by King William, except two whom Leisler kept in prison, met, but the Governor did not arrive.

Leisler, however, was gathering men in his fort, and had his cannon trained to bear on the city, so the Council summoned militia from the other counties. Leisler then summoned the Lieutenant Governor to disband his forces, and on his refusal opened fire upon them, himself discharging the first cannon in this mad and desperate attempt. The fire of the fort was returned, and several were killed in this civil war. The next day the firing went on till news came that the frigate Archangel was at the Narrows with Governor Sloughter on board. Word was at once sent to him, and he came up in all haste. He read his commission, took the oaths, swore in the Council, and then sent to demand the fort. Leisler still refused.

The next day Ingoldsby, by the Governor's command, advanced and required all in the fort to ground their arms and march out, promising pardon to all but Leisler and his Council. Now, full of alarm at

the difficult position into which they had got, they all submitted. Leisler and his chief adherents were imprisoned, and brought to trial. Leisler and his son-in-law, Milborne, refused to plead; but they were convicted of holding the King's fort against the King's Governor, and sentenced to death.

The whole colony was now greatly excited, some praying for the prisoners' pardon, others clamoring for their punishment. The Indians ascribed all the disasters to Leisler, and showed great hostility to him. So Sloughter at last, by the advice of his Council, ordered their execution. It is said by some that he signed the death-warrant after being well plied with wine at a dinner-party.

Amid a driving rain on Saturday, May 16, 1691, Leisler and Milborne were conveyed from their prison to a gallows erected near the present Sun Office. There, receiving the last consolations from Domine Selyns, the Dutch minister, Leisler, whose word had for nearly three years been law in New York, made his dying speech, and was swung off as a felon. He and Milborne were buried at the foot of the gallows.

For years after this, New York was distracted by the violent opposition of the Leisler and anti-Leisler parties.

William at last began to consider American affairs. After much endeavor on the part of the New England agents, a new Charter was drawn up for Massachusetts, but it was not altogether to the liking of the people. The ideas of King James were to some extent shared by William; he, too, wished to consolidate the colonies and increase the royal power. So Massachusetts under the new Charter was a pretty large colony, as you will see on any map. It included the old Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth, Maine, Nova Scotia, and all between them.

The people were no longer to elect their Governor, or appoint their judges; the Governor was to be named by the King, and the Governor and Council appointed the Judges. If any man felt dissatisfied with the decisions of the highest court in Massachusetts, he could now appeal to the Privy Council in England.

Every form of Christianity, except the Roman Catholic, obtained freedom of worship, and in this point the Charter agreed with all others issued at this time. Catholics were not admitted to the rights of their fellow-Christians as long as the British rule lasted, nor were Jews more than barely tolerated.

The new Government in Massachusetts was no longer in the hands of the Church, and from this time ceased to direct Ecclesiastical matters; each church managed its own affairs.

To please the people of the colony, William allowed the agents of Massachusetts, the chief of whom was a famous minister, the Reverend Increase Mather, to suggest names for the officers to be appointed by the crown; William Phips, who had been so unsuccessful at Quebec, was accordingly appointed, and he came out in 1692 with the new Charter.

The people were not very well pleased, but the new Government was organized, with Phips as Governor.

Then commenced one of the strangest and most terrible affairs that ever occurred in the country, the Witchcraft Delusion in New England, in which many innocent persons perished; and after all, some little scamps of deceitful children were at the bottom of it all.

The first important case in which a person was tried for witchcraft, was that of a woman named Glover, in 1688. She was one of the thousands of poor Irish people who had been torn from their own homes

and sold as slaves in America. She had defended her daughter against a charge of stealing made by the daughter of John Goodwin, a girl of thirteen. This girl, to secure revenge, pretended to be bewitched by Glover. Three others of the family joined her. Instructed apparently in tricks taught them by Indian nurses, they pretended to be deaf, then dumb, then blind, then they would all purr like so many cats. Ministers were called in, and poor old Mrs. Glover, "the wild Irishwoman," was arrested. One way of trying the witches was to make them say the Lord's Prayer. The poor creature said it in Irish; but they could not tell whether she said it right or not; she said it in Latin, but, being a poor ignorant creature, made a few mistakes; but in English she could not say it, for the simple reason that it was not her language; she had learned it after a fashion in New England, but no one had taught her English prayers. So, says our great historian Bancroft, the ministers and Goodwin's family had the satisfaction of getting her condemned as a witch and executed, for she was only a friendless emigrant.

It is horrible to think that children could have played such pranks as brought this poor woman to such a terrible death.

For a time, political affairs kept this witchcraft business back, but in 1692 it began again, and again children were at the bottom of it. The family of the Reverend Samuel Parris, minister in Salem village, was the next field. They had an Indian slave named Tituba, with whom the children were a great deal. She taught them a number of tricks—to imitate fits, frothing at the mouth, ventriloquism, and many of the arts of the Indian medicine-men, and filled their minds with all manner of superstitions. When they began to do their pranks before their parents, a doctor was called in: as he could make nothing of it, he

said they were bewitched. Mr. Parris had been at variance with some of his people, and the cry was raised that his children were bewitched. Immediately people around were accused as witches, and conviction and death came much quicker after accusation than they do in our days. Martha Corey did not believe there were any witches, so she was accused and hung; the Nurses, Cloyses, and Mr. Putnam left the church in disgust, Rebecca Nurse was hung, Sarah Cloyse imprisoned, and Putnam escaped only by making his house a fortress, and standing ready to fight for his life. A poor old woman, Sarah Good, was pointed out by the children as a witch, arrested, tried, and sentenced to die. Even her little child, five years old, was also arrested as a witch, and put in prison, loaded with heavy chains! While they were dragging Sarah Good off, the cruel minister, Nicholas Noyes, told her she was a witch, and she knew she was a witch. "You are a liar," cried the doomed woman, "and God shall give you blood to drink." Twenty-five years after, Noyes was seized with a bleeding from the lungs, and died actually drinking blood!

Once the girls began they had to keep up, they went through all their contortions, accused one and another, twisting into all possible attitudes, stiffened as in death, crying out at intervals charges such as: "There is the black man whispering in Cloyse's ear! There's a yellow bird flying round her head."

Every one present was moved with sympathy for these poor children, some ten in all; and all eagerly clamored for the punishment of the accused. Rebecca Nurse was a lady universally esteemed, the jury acquitted her, but the Chief Justice kept them confined till they found her guilty, so perfectly mad had people become.

Then the greatest victim came: George Burroughs, minister of

Salem before Mr. Parris, and, in fact, his rival. He was a man of herculean strength, and had often amused his friends by feats showing his immense power. He is said to have put his finger into the barrel of a gun, and held the weapon out at arm's length. All this was now brought out as proof of diabolical power. He was tried, hung, and buried beneath the gallows.

Old Giles Corey would not plead, that is, would not answer "Guilty" or "Not Guilty." For refusing to plead, the punishment in those days was fearful. It was to be pressed to death. And Giles Corey was pressed to death. A large board was placed on his breast as he lay flat on the ground, and weights laid on, increasing till he died, three mouthfuls of bread being given him the first day, and three sups of water from the nearest stagnant pool the next, and so on to the end.

The horrors of these scenes roused protests in New England and abroad. People began to think. They shuddered at what they had done. The girls soon showed by their lives what they really were. One, Ann Putnam, repented and confessed.

Such was the great witchcraft delusion of New England, in which a lot of good-for-nothing children led the most learned and shrewdest men of New England to murder innocent people.

Before this horrid work stopped, twenty people were executed, fifty-five more were sentenced to death, and the prisons contained a hundred and fifty more awaiting trial.

King William sought to control the colonies by a new method. He made Fletcher, the royal Governor of New York, Commander-in-Chief of the militia of Connecticut. The people opposed this as a violation of their Charter, and were not disposed to submit.

One pleasant day in October, 1693, Fletcher appeared in Hartford

to read his commission and assume authority. William Wadsworth, the senior captain, was drilling the train-bands on the village green, when Fletcher advanced and bade Bayard of New York read his commission. Before the first word could reach the ears of the militia, Wadsworth ordered the drums to beat. Fletcher commanded silence, and once more Bayard began to read. Once more the drums beat. "Silence!" exclaimed Fletcher. "Drum, drum! I say," shouted Wadsworth, adding, as he turned to the Governor of New York, "If I am interrupted again I will make the sun shine through you in a moment!" The cowardly Fletcher, awed by a gasconading threat of an old country militia captain, retired fuming and storming, and his royal master explained his orders so as to leave Connecticut in peace.

New England had suffered so severely in the campaigns against Canada, that they made no further attempt to wrest that province from the French. But the New Yorkers were bolder. A small force of colonists and Indians, under Peter Schuyler, marched stealthily up through the woods of northern New York, and entering Canada, approached La Prairie, a little village opposite Montreal. A considerable French force was stationed in a fort here, and a body of Indians lay near it. Schuyler, however, resolved to strike a blow. Favored by the darkness, his men stole silently along, and were almost up to the fort just as the first light of day began to appear in the east, when a French sentinel caught sight of them. He fired his piece and called "To Arms." The soldiers had had a merry-making, deeming their enemies in New York. Confusion reigned supreme.

The sentinel's alarm roused them all. He was a brave man, and firing again, killed a Mohawk Indian, but was himself cut down. On dashed Schuyler and his men into the quarters of the Canadian militia.

An irregular fire met them, but the militia and Ottawas soon broke. St. Cyrque, the French commander, brought up his regulars, but Schuyler formed his men and poured in a deadly volley that made the valley echo. St. Cyrque was mortally wounded, and several gallant officers beside him ; but he would not leave the field. Other troops coming up, at last forced Schuyler from his position, and he drew off, fighting those sent in pursuit. But a brave French party got between him and his boats, and, well covered by trees, kept up a desperate fight. It was frontiersman and Indian against frontiersman and Indian. Every tree was a cover, and every man, on either side, that was exposed for a moment became a mark. It was at last a hand to hand fight, and a deadly one. Paul, a celebrated Huron, and young Le Bert were killed on the French side, and Schuyler reached his boats only after terrible loss, and without flag or baggage.

The Mohawks soon after defeated a French party at the Long Rapid, on the Ottawa ; so that Frontenac resolved to punish their aggressions. In January, 1693, a French force on snow-shoes marched down through the desolate land, and destroyed the three Mohawk villages, meeting a desperate resistance at one of them, and being hotly pursued on their homeward march. It was a terrible undertaking to attempt to carry on warfare in such a season. There was no hope for the wounded or weary.

Then there was a series of Indian raids, and proposals of peace, but finding them all come to nothing, Frontenac marched with a large force of French regulars, militia, artillery, and Indians of a host of different tribes, to attack Onondaga. Fort Frontenac had been restored, and from it this great army set out. It landed at the mouth of the Oswego, and marched up, dragging the cannon by hand, and the boats too at the falls.

Night came on before they reached Onondaga, but a bright light reflected from sky and woodland told that the Onondagas had fired their town and fort, and retired. When the French reached it there was nothing but smouldering ruins. The vast expedition was useless; there was no enemy to fight. One old man, found in the woods, was tortured by them with fearful cruelty.

Vandreuil, leading a detachment to Oneida, burned the fort and villages of that tribe, rescued many French prisoners, and cut down all their corn.

This was the last French invasion of what is now New York. They had at different times ravaged all the cantons but one, but had not done the Five Nations any great injury, or broken their spirit. Had France been able to hold the territory of these fierce Indians, the struggle of the colonists against them would have been a doubtful one. The Canadians were good fighters, and their frontiersmen took readily to Indian ways, and in the border fights were dreaded by the English colonists and Indians. At New York the people and the Indians began to think they would do better to avoid fighting.

New England, however, suffered most in this war. The Abenaqui tribes had received so much injustice at the hands of the colonists, that they were implacable. Led by a French officer named Villieu, they swept like a torrent through the country. Oyster River, now Durham, New Hampshire, was first attacked, and the stout garrison-houses were surrounded by the whooping, yelling foe. In spite of the stubborn defense every place was carried and destroyed.

Taxus, one of the chiefs, even dashed into Massachusetts with a band of fifty braves, and came like a whirlwind on Groton. Lieutenant Lakin's house was the first attacked. A sheet of flame and a volley

repulsed them, but on they came with fierce yells and stubborn determination. They carried it at last, and hurried off with a dozen prisoners, leaving twenty scalped and weltering in their blood.

The colonists burned to avenge these raids, but having seized some Indians who came to Fort Pemaquod with a flag of truce, the Indians and French invested that fort in 1696. Chubb, the commander, when summoned to surrender, replied that if the sea were covered with French vessels, and the land with Indians, he would not surrender. But Iberville's ships and St. Castin's skill were too much for him; just before the enemy were ready to storm the place, Chubb surrendered. Fort Pemaquod was then utterly destroyed.

Three Massachusetts ships, proceeding to attack St. John, had already been met by Iberville, who, with his French and Micmacs, engaged them and captured the Newport, of twenty-four guns, to the great dismay and indignation of Massachusetts, who had always controlled the sea.

The war between England and France, known in this country as King William's War, lasted till 1697, when a treaty of peace was made at Ryswick.

King William's war did not affect the more southerly colonies, but they did not find that monarch more favorable to their liberties than James. In a most arbitrary fashion William deprived Penn of Pennsylvania, and Lord Baltimore of Maryland, making them, like almost all other provinces, royal colonies. Penn was even arrested in England, and imprisoned more than once, but the noble old man trusted to the justice of his cause. The royal Governor sent to Pennsylvania had a sorry time of it, and Penn was at last allowed to return. Penn was ready to meet the wishes of the people. He invited them "to

keep what was good in the Charter, to lay aside what was burdensome, and to add what may best suit the common good."

Gradually a new government was formed that was acceptable. But the three counties on the Delaware had organized a separate government under William Markham in 1691, and they were jealous of their independence. They did not wish to be annexed to Pennsylvania again, and they succeeded.

The new government of these colonies was full of liberty and toleration.

Maryland, under the royal sway, underwent many changes. The seat of government was removed from St. Mary's to Annapolis. The Episcopal Church was established by law, and, though some toleration was gradually given, the Catholics who had founded the colony were, down to the time of our own glorious Revolution, deprived of all rights as citizens, and their religion proscribed. Lord Baltimore finally, to regain his power in Maryland, became a member of the Church of England.

But while William encouraged intolerance in the provinces, and apparently liked to see the colonists adverse to each other on religious grounds, he did not like them to claim their liberties.

Whenever the Maryland Legislature wished to claim the privileges of the Great Charter of England—the Magna Charta extorted from King John—or passed any Bill of Rights and Liberties, William vetoed it.

Virginia, under Nicholson and Andros, who were so unpopular in New England, prospered. Andros first collected the records of the colony, and thus saved materials for its history, and established a Post-office to diffuse more readily information through the province.

Nicholson, in 1691, conferred a lasting benefit on Virginia by founding William and Mary College, which, next to Harvard, is the oldest in the country. It became the great seat of learning for the southern colonies, and from its walls came forth the noblest patriots of the next century.

During the reign of William and Mary the Carolinas were in a constant turmoil of dissension, but it all turned to toleration and freedom. It had a season of happiness while the honest Quaker Archdale was Governor; he brought all to his own peaceful and just ideas, and won the friendship of the Spaniards by restoring to Florida Christian Indians who had been torn from that province to be sold as slaves.

So, if we look at what was gained in America during the reign of William and Mary, there is little to cheer us. At the North, bloody and desolating border wars; civil strife in New York, Maryland, and Carolina; a steady increase of royal power, with Governors established under it; Admiralty Courts were established, the English laws of trade were enforced, the Church of England established by law. It did not look as if the people were working their way to freedom, but they were.

As soon as the peace left France free to carry on her plans in America, Iberville, who had been so energetic at Fort Pemaquid, and who, though a Canadian, was deemed one of the ablest commanders in the French navy, was sent out to complete La Salle's last undertaking. He reached the mouth of the Mississippi in 1700, with two frigates and some other vessels, and explored the great river for some distance, planting the French arms at the mouth. In May he began the first French settlement on the Gulf of Mexico, at Biloxi, in the present State of Mississippi. A fort was erected, and the colonists began to

clear and cultivate the soil. The colony did not prosper, the settlement was moved to Mobile, and finally New Orleans was founded. As in all other French colonies, missionaries at once began to labor among the Indians, but their success was not great. The Indians of the South showed little inclination. Missionaries were killed at different times, still they did some good; and Louisiana, though feebly, grew at last to be a comparatively thriving colony.

Every few years some man is reported to be wasting time and money hunting along the coasts of the Northern States for treasures hidden away by Captain Kidd. If all the money spent in looking for Kidd's money were put together, it would make an enormous fortune.

Captain Kidd was a real person, and he flourished at the time of which we are writing. England had for many years encouraged men who were little better than pirates—Hawkins, Drake, and others—to plunder Spanish ships. The English colonies, as they grew up, found it profitable to trade with pirate ships, who ran into their harbors to obtain provisions and dispose of their plunder. Sometimes they had letters of marque as privateers, from some European Sovereign then at war, as a mask for their real object. Other expeditions were fitted out directly from the colonies, and many wealthy families owe their origin and importance to such shameful work.

At last, however, such complaints were made, that William III. ordered the Earl of Bellomont, whom he had made Governor of New York, to suppress piracy. It was resolved to get up an expedition, and a ship was purchased by Bellomont, Robert Livingston, of New York, and several Englishmen of rank. The object was about as bad as piracy, for the King was to have one-tenth of the profits. Of this ship, Kidd, who had distinguished himself in the West Indies, was

made captain, and he had two commissions, one to cruise against the French, the other to proceed against the pirates in the American seas. He sailed from England in the Adventure galley, and capturing a French ship on the passage, brought her into New York. There he gathered a larger crew, and sailed to the East Indies. Here he began a series of indiscriminate attacks on any vessels that seemed worth capture, and even attacked the Mocha fleet, though convoyed by two men-of-war, one English and one Dutch.

Falling in with the ship Royal Captain, his crew wished to capture it, but Kidd struck the leading mutineer, Moore, on the head with a bucket, so that he died.

Soon after, however, he captured some Moorish vessels, and a very rich Armenian ship, The Quedagh Merchant.

But news had now reached England of his career, and he was proclaimed a pirate. So he ran over to the West Indies, and leaving the Quedagh Merchant, came to New York in the sloop Antonia, setting a returned pirate with his plunder ashore in Delaware Bay. He landed some treasure on Long Island, and sent more to New York. Lord Bellomont was in Boston, and Kidd wrote to him, offering to justify his course. Bellomont induced him to come to that city, as Kidd, in fact, did, with his wife and children, who had come from New York to join him. There he was suddenly arrested, though not till he had made a desperate fight, continued to the very presence of Bellomont, into whose lodgings he rushed. All his property was seized, embracing one thousand one hundred and eleven ounces of gold, two thousand three hundred and fifty-three ounces of silver, with many jewels and goods as valuable as the precious metals.

A ship of war soon bore him off to England ; and as William made

a grant to the Earl of Bellomont and others of all the treasure taken from Kidd, all concerned were anxious to have him put out of the way. He was tried for killing Moore, and soon convicted, for he had no witnesses or counsel. He was hanged, and the odium attached to the whole affair checked all piracy in America, as no one any longer ventured to have anything to do with it.

How far Kidd was false to his instructions will never be known; but he was evidently carrying out the views of the men of rank, who really profited by his evil deeds.

CHAPTER III.

Reign of Queen Anne—She involves the American Colonies in the War of the Spanish Succession.

THE Treaty of Ryswick had enabled the English colonies in America to repair their losses, and once again turn their attention to the peaceful arts of trade, agriculture, and manufactures. This happy time did not last long.

On the death of William III., Anne, the second daughter of James II., became Queen of England. She at once found herself involved in a war that convulsed all Europe; a war to divide Spain, or at least to prevent a French prince from ascending the throne of that country.

This war again plunged the American colonies into the most terrible distress. England sent her fleets out on the ocean, and her armies to the Continent, but English homes were as happy as ever. To the colonist in America war was a very different thing, it left his home, the

fruit of long years of toil, it left his life, and the lives of his wife and children, at the mercy of the savages.

In King William's War France was alone engaged ; in Queen Anne's, Spain and France were united, so that there was danger from Florida on the south, and Canada on the north.

South Carolina began the operations in America. James Moore, the Governor, raised a considerable land and naval force to reduce Florida. His land forces of militia and Indians under Colonel Daniel attacked first the Spanish missions in Guale, now Amelia, and other islands on the Georgia coast. The Indians here had been converted, and in no small degree civilized, by the Franciscan missionaries. A Quaker, wrecked on the coast, was taken from one village to another till he got to Carolina, his whole party being kindly treated in all, received in the large building in the centre of each town, used for storing goods, holding their Indian councils, and entertaining travelers. All these peaceful villages were ravaged by Moore, who killed many of the people, and carried off great numbers as slaves, and three of the missionaries as prisoners.

The Spaniards in St. Augustine, warned by tidings of this hostile inroad, soon beheld this force at their gates, while a fleet of fourteen or fifteen vessels prepared to attack them from the sea.

That ancient city, which had already suffered severely in olden time, was again ravaged in November, 1702, the church and Franciscan convent burned, and the little town almost completely laid in ashes. But the Governor, Don Joseph de la Cerda, was a sturdy old Spaniard, he threw himself into the castle, and bade defiance to the enemy.

Moore had not guns heavy enough to reduce it. He sent to Jamaica

for aid, but the Spanish Viceroy of New Spain had been warned, and as Spaniard and Carolinian looked eagerly to the sea, one fair morning in 1703, they saw the tapering masts of ships. Every heart throbbed with anxious expectation. Slowly the vessels rise to view—two Spanish men-of-war. All was dismay in the camp of Moore. To be caught between the garrison, fierce to revenge their desolated city, and the formidable force arriving, would be ruin. Abandoning his ships, ammunitions, and stores, Moore began to retreat along the road traversed years before by Menendez. With thinned ranks he re-entered his own colony. Carolina was in dismay. The failure of the expedition plunged them in debt, and, unable to pay it, South Carolina issued paper money.

Burning to wipe away the disgrace, Moore prepared to strike at a weaker point. On the Bay of Apalache were numerous towns of Indians, converted and partially civilized by the Spanish missionaries. The chiefs had learned to read and write. They were peaceful, contented, and happy with their flocks and herds. Towards the close of December, 1705, Moore, with fifty white men and a thousand heathen Indians, burst like a furious torrent on this happy Christian community.

Ayavalla was first attacked, the church fired, the missionary killed, and numbers of the Indians slain or hurried off to endure savage tortures. Some few attempted to withstand the enemy, but they were defeated. The Spanish commander with his little garrison hastened up with such Indians as he could gather, but was repulsed. The whole land was filled with blood and slaughter, and the trail of the retiring army was marked by the corpses of the missionaries and their converts. The Apalache nation was forever scattered.

The next year a French fleet menaced Charleston ; but where the French effected a landing they met a desperate resistance.

While Carolina was thus suffering from her unwisely rushing into a European war, she had received a gift that was to be of great value. A vessel from Madagascar, touching at Charleston, presented to the Governor a bag of seed-rice. This does not seem as great an event in history as a battle ; but from it grew one of the great staples of Carolina—its valuable rice-fields.

When it became evident that another war was at hand, the northern colonies acted differently. New York, although it had in the Five Nations, or Iroquois, a powerful body of friendly Indians, who liked war better than peace, felt little inclination to cope again with the active French Canadians, who made up for lack of numbers by energy and daring. The French were always disposed to remain neutral, and let the mother countries fight out their own battles in Europe, so New York and Canada agreed to keep quiet, and thus avoided all the horrors of war.

Dudley, Governor of Massachusetts, hesitated and finally refused, so New England chose to fight the French alone. The Indians in Maine were already in arms to avenge the plundering and injury done to their chief, the young Baron de St. Castin.

When the French found that they must carry on the war, they went to work as Moore did in the South ; they raised bodies of militia and Indians to attack New England.

Lieutenant Beaubassin, with a flying corps, dashed through New England like a meteor, ravaging and destroying. All the country from Casco to Wells was in a conflagration. One wintry night in March, Hertel de Rouville, with two hundred and fifty men, while the

sentinels at the little village of Deerfield, on the banks of the Connecticut, were away from their posts, walked in snow-shoes over the drifted snow to the very top of the palisades intended to protect the little village.

Suddenly the fierce war-whoop rung out on the cold night air. The danger against which they had been warned was upon them in all its terror. Strong men seized their weapons and prepared to fight to the last. The shrieking children were gathered by their mothers to avoid the first rush of the savage foe, and gain time to appeal for mercy. Each family must prepare for captivity or death.

Thirty-five of the people were killed, and numbers hurried off as captives to Canada; a long weary march through snow and ice. Their sufferings were terrible, and early accounts give a touching picture of all they underwent.

Such cruelties are terrible, but New Englanders might have avoided them, as New York did, and can blame only their own rulers. The French did not consider it wrong for them to act as the English did in Carolina.

The minister of Deerfield, the Rev. Mr. Williams, with his family, were hurried away among the prisoners, and when Mrs. Williams' strength failed she was tomahawked. When peace came he returned to New England, but his youngest child, Eunice, remained with the Indians, and finally married a chief. Long years after, in the dress of an Indian squaw, she came to visit her relatives at Deerfield, but they could not prevail upon her to stay; she returned to her new home. One of her descendants, Eleazar Williams, some few years ago made quite a sensation by claiming to be really Louis XVII., the boy King of France, who is said to have died in prison in France soon after the execution of his father, King Louis XVI.

"In the following years Indians, singly or in bands, stealthily approached towns in the heart of Massachusetts, as well as along the coast, and on the southern and western frontiers." Every forest seemed known to them in all its intricacies, and not a spot in New England was safe. "Children, as they gamboled on the beach; reapers, as they gathered the harvest; mowers, as they rested from using the scythe; mothers, as they busied themselves about their household duties, or sat singing to their innocent babes in the cradle beside them, were victims to an enemy who disappeared the moment a blow was struck," and who was sure to be present the moment vigilance relaxed.

In vain did the colonial government offer bounties for scalps. So few were actually taken, that it has been estimated that every scalp taken by New England in this war cost them three thousand dollars.

As the war went on, a council of Indian delegates was held at Montreal in 1708, and a formidable expedition planned against New England. But the plan was not carried out.

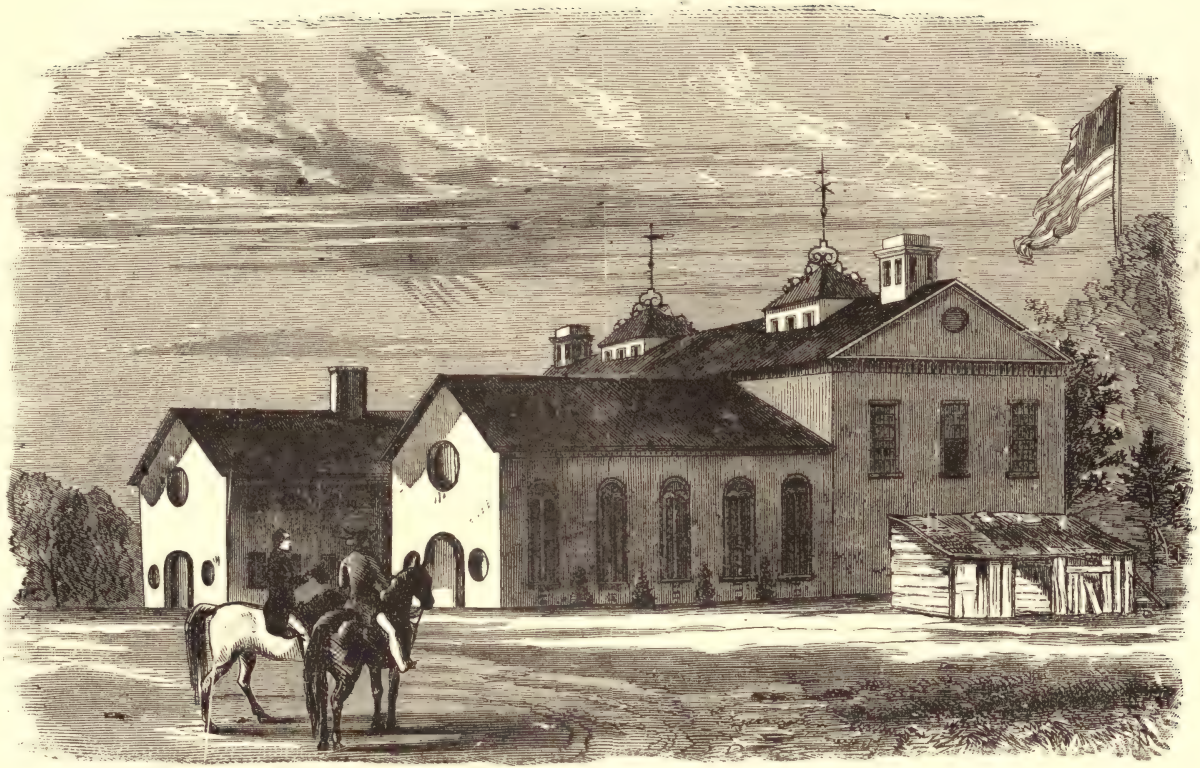
A small party under des Chaillons and Rouville, not finding the other parties at the rendezvous at Lake Winnipiseogee, resolved to strike a blow at Haverhill. This place was then a cluster of cottages and log cabins round the meeting-house, almost hidden in the woods that lined the banks of the gentle Merrimac. In a feeling of perfect security all gave themselves to sleep one August night, little dreaming that the neighboring wood concealed the dreaded foe. At daybreak, after prayers, Rouville gave the signal of attack, and they rushed into the village, slaying all before them. Few escaped the first fire and charge. The escape of Mary Wainwright was strange indeed. Her husband was slain at the first fire; but she fearlessly unbarred the door,



MAJOR WALDRON'S GRAND-DAUGHTER. (Page 272)



EXECUTION OF PERSONS CONDEMNED FOR WITCHCRAFT (Page 285)

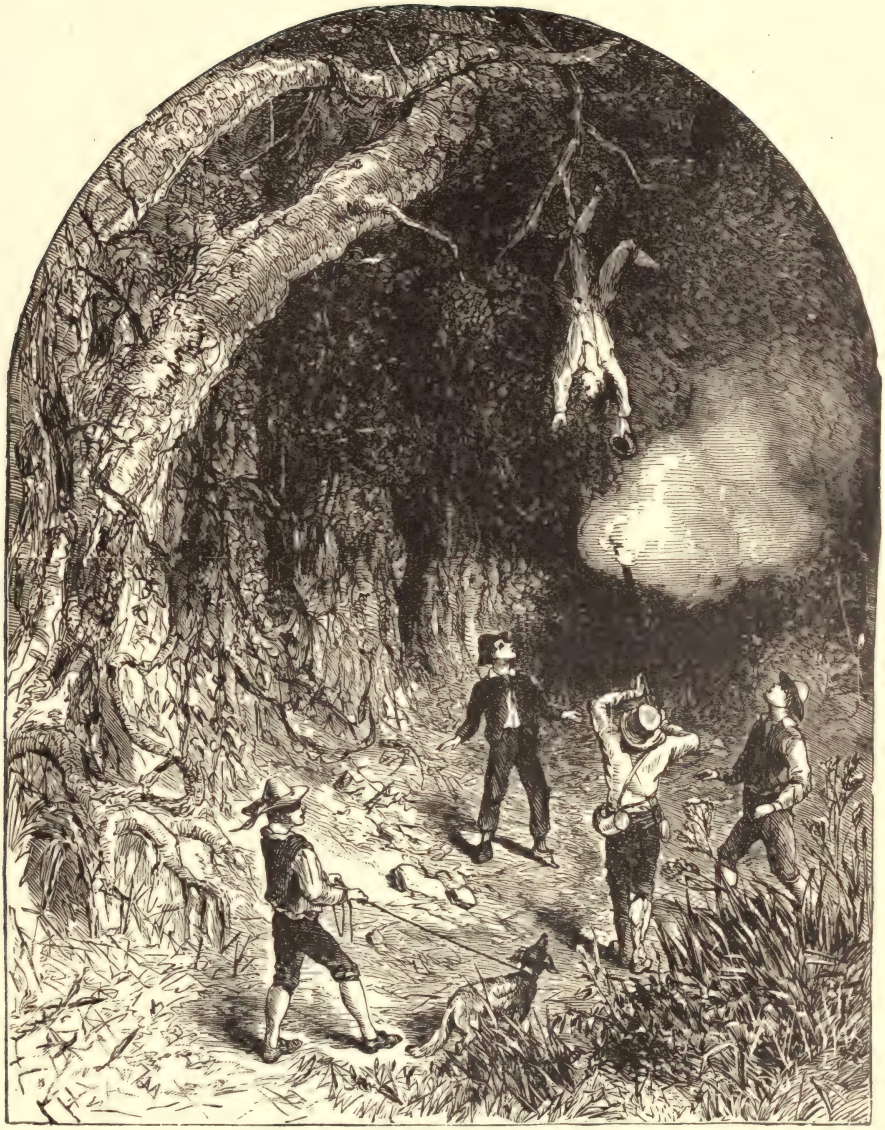


WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE, VIRGINIA. (Page 292)



CHAMBERLAIN AND PAUGUS AT LOVEWELL'S FIGHT

(Page 311)



EARLY ADVENTURE OF GENERAL PUTNAM. (Page 355)



DEATH OF GENERAL WOLFE AT QUEBEC. (Page 371)



THE STAMP RIOTS IN NEW YORK. (Page 392)



THE BOSTON TEA PARTY—DESTRUCTION OF THE TEA IN BOSTON HARBOR. (Page 402)

and with a cheerful countenance invited the Indians to enter. She procured readily all they asked for, and when they demanded her money, she went to another room as if to get it, and gathering up all her children but one, succeeded in escaping.

Two Indians approached Swan's house. With his wife he endeavored to keep them from entering the door, which had no bar. But the two stalwart Indians were too much for their strength; the door yielded, and Swan bade his wife fly, as he could hold out no longer. She was not one to fly. Seizing a sharp-pointed spit from the wide fire-place, she drove it into the exposed body of the foremost Indian, who was crowding through the half-open door. With a yell he bounded off, and his comrade, equally dissatisfied, supported him with many expressive Indian grunts, giving the Swans time to make their escape.

But Rouville was in a critical position: the noise of battle had aroused the villages far and near, and from every town and hamlet came hurrying bands of armed men, mounted and on foot. The French party struck into the woods, but soon found their retreat intercepted.

Then a desperate fight ensued. Dashing down everything they bore except their arms, the French and Indians dashed into the ambuscade. The rifle rang out for a moment, but then it was a deadly fight, hand to hand and man to man. With the loss of several of his officers, Hertel at last cut his way through and succeeded in reaching Canada, though hotly pursued.

The colonies now implored Queen Anne to deliver them from such scenes by sending a force sufficient to conquer Canada. They had tried to reduce Port Royal, and failed before the vigorous defense of Subercase.

Vetch prepared the plan of a campaign, and a large force was raised

in the colonies. The Five Nations threw aside their neutrality, and reluctantly agreed to join the English.

The army of the colonies gathered at Albany, and, under Nicholson, once Lieutenant-Governor of New York, marched as far as Lake Champlain. A fleet of fifteen ships of war, under Sir Hovenden Walker, was sent out from England with forty transports and five regiments of Marlborough's veteran troops. It came over to Boston, and taking on board New England troops, sailed for Quebec. In that city all was anxiety and alarm, for news came in that Port Royal had finally yielded to a New England force and British ships. Taken for the last time by England, who was now to retain it, this place became Annapolis.

Vaudreuil, the Governor-General of Canada, set to work to put his capital in a state of defense. Engineers threw up new works, and every one, women as well as men, labored to make the city impregnable. Time wore on, and Canada, all anxiety, saw no enemy. Montreal was not attacked by the large army reported by French scouts on Lake Champlain ; and the fleet that had left Boston did not appear. At last a vessel came with tidings that the English fleet had been wrecked near the mouth of the St. Lawrence. French vessels hastened down. The shore was strewn with dead, and with the remains of eight transports and their cargoes, which had been driven on the rocks and dashed to pieces by Admiral Walker's obstinacy. Nearly a thousand persons perished ; Walker saved several hundred others, and sailed away, his only achievement being the conquest of Cape Breton as he sailed back.

Nicholson, hearing of the disaster, and finding his Indians hostile to him—for they were dying of small-pox, and insisted that the English

had given them clothes infected with that disease—broke up his camp and retired.

Thus, for a second time, Canada saw herself saved as if by the hand of heaven. To commemorate this, the new church at Quebec was styled Our Lady of Victories.

But the war had now come to an end. Louis XIV., exhausted and broken, was ready to secure peace at the sacrifice of his American possessions. By the Treaty of Utrecht, in 1713, France gave up to England Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, and Hudson Bay, with all the fur trade in those northern parts.

The American colonies gained nothing directly, and those at the north now found themselves overwhelmed with the debts they had been forced to contract in this long war.

Notwithstanding the constant military and naval operations that engrossed so much of her reign, Queen Anne took an interest in the religious affairs of the colonies beyond that shown by any other English sovereign. She was ardently attached to the Church of England, and through her Governors did all she could to have it established in the American colonies. It got a foothold in New York, and made some progress even in Quaker Pennsylvania, though the Governors she sent out were not always a credit to the Church they so strenuously upheld. Queen Anne made many presents of altar silver to the American churches, some of which are preserved to this day, and those who can show Queen Anne's plate feel a pardonable pride.

Perhaps the worst Governor sent out by Anne was Lord Cornbury, whom she appointed Governor of New York and New Jersey. He was a near relative of the Queen, but a most worthless scamp. His great amusement was to dress himself in a lady's clothes and in that guise

promenade up and down on the ramparts of the fort. He attempted to make the Established Church the only one in the colony, and excited great discontent by his prosecution of the Rev. Mr. Mackemie, a Presbyterian clergyman; for, although people talked of religious freedom, it generally meant only that one party was to have it all its own way, and the rest submit.

The foreign wars were not the only troubles of the American colonies during the reign of Queen Anne. North Carolina had received a number of emigrants from the German provinces on the Rhine, to whom lands were assigned in the district still occupied by the Tuscaroras, a tribe of the same origin as the Five Nations in New York, warlike, haughty, and suspicious. Instead of purchasing what lands they wanted from the native chieftains, as Roger Williams, Lord Baltimore, and William Penn had done, the authorities of North Carolina sent their Surveyor-General Lawson to lay off the territory for settlement. When he appeared on their lands with Graffenried, the leader of the German emigrants, the wrath of the Tuscaroras was roused to fury.

Ignorant of the Indian character, or unsuspicious of danger, perhaps despising the savage inhabitants, Lawson and Graffenried kept on with their work, selecting spots for settlement. While on the upper waters of the Neuse, they were suddenly seized by sixty Tuscaroras, arrayed in their war-paint and armed to the teeth. They were forced to travel all night long, as the silent braves hurried in Indian file through the woods. When morning broke they came to a Tuscarora village, and were delivered to a chief. In a short time a council of the sachems of the nation gathered, and after a debate of two days, they decreed that Lawson, who came to sell their lands, and the stranger who came to

occupy them, should die. The large fire was kindled, the ring was drawn around the victims, and strewn with flowers. Round the white men sat the chiefs in two rows ; behind them were three hundred of the tribe, going through the wild dances with which they keep up every important occasion. Then the moment came, and though Graffenried, as less guilty in their eyes, was then spared, Lawson perished amid the flames and the tortures which the yelling braves inflicted as they gathered around him.

Graffenried, horrorstruck, with the yells of the Indians and the dying moans of Lawson ringing in his ears, awaited the same fate. But his life was spared ; and when, a month later, he was allowed to depart and make his way to the settlements, he traveled on in vain. Where thriving little villages had, with all their busy life, dotted the country, he found only blackened logs, ashes, and the remains of the dead.

German and Huguenot settlers had been swept away. The Indians had planned a general attack ; bands were sent out in all directions, every village was surrounded, and the lighting of some house or barn gave the signal of attack. Then the furious red man, full of one idea—that he must exterminate the whites, or be driven from the lands of his fathers,—rushed upon the unsuspecting whites. Night was made hideous with the scenes of slaughter, as the braves, with a pine-torch in one hand, and a tomahawk in the other, pursued the flying settlers, cutting them down without mercy, tracking them into the woods and wherever they sought refuge. For three days the massacre continued along Albemarle Sound, till the savages stopped from sheer exhaustion in their bloody work.

North Carolina, in alarm, called on the neighboring colonies. Spotswood, of Virginia, tried to aid them by securing the fidelity of part of



LONG SAULT RAPIDS ON THE OTTAWA, SCENE OF MANY INDIAN FIGHTS.

the Tuscaroras, who had not taken part in the massacre, but the Virginia Assembly began to quarrel with the Governor, and nothing was done.

Gallant South Carolina was prompt at the call of humanity. She had managed her Indians better, and Barnwell, calling out the militia, rallied around him friendly Indians whom their wise policy had secured. Cherokees and Creeks, Catawbas and Yamassees, marched with Barnwell on that long expedition through the unbroken forest. As they approached the scene of war, the Indian scouts brought word that the Tuscaroras were intrenched in a rude fort on the Neuse. On the map you can almost mark it in the upper part of Craven County. But there were no cravens on either side. Although a few North

Carolina militia joined Barnwell, he could not storm the Indian for The Tuscaroras fought better than the New England Indians; with all the superior tactics of the white man, Barnwell failed to dislodge them. Surrounded by difficulties, he at last brought them to terms of peace.

But as the army returned it wantonly attacked and carried off friendly Indians, and again North Carolina was desolated by midnight raids and slaughters. The government of the colony was in a wretched condition. All was disorder, there was no head, no capacity to lead. Amid it all came the yellow fever sweeping through the land. North Carolina lay helpless. But Spottswood, the Governor of Virginia, at last succeeded in winning part of the Tuscaroras, while the South Carolina army under Moore attacked one of their forts on the Neuse with such fury that he took it, capturing eight hundred of the enemy. Then the remainder were hunted down to sell as slaves, or if they resisted, to cut down and scalp, so as to receive the bounty now offered by government for these bloody trophies.

At last the hostile part of the Tuscaroras, finding it impossible to hold the ground against the Carolinians, resolved to abandon their native soil for which they had fought so bravely; they moved northward through the wilderness to their kindred, the Five Nations in New York, and settled near Oneida Lake.

While the English were thus undergoing in the South all the horrors of Indian warfare, which Virginia and New England had so often experienced, the French, for the first time, were at war with one of the nations in their own territory. The Foxes, a turbulent western tribe, promised the Iroquois and English to burn Detroit, massacre all the French, and place the English in possession of that important point.

They gathered in force around the little western town, and drew the Kickapoos and other Indians into the plot.

Joseph, a Christian of the Fox Nation, warned the French commandant of the coming attack. That officer acted promptly: he threw his little garrison and the settlers into the fort, and destroyed all the houses that could aid the enemy in attacking him.

The Indians on whom he could depend were off on their hunt. Fleet sped his messenger through the woods and by the rivers to summon all to his aid. Prompt at his call came Huron, Pottawatami, Sac, Menomonee, Illinois, Osage, and Missouri. The Foxes were not dismayed. Twenty braves in all their war-paint came yelling up to the fort, defying the French.

When the allies moved, the Foxes withdrew to their own fort, and to escape the terrible fire kept up, dug rifle-pits in the ground. Then the besiegers raised scaffolds so as to fire down into the fort. The Foxes were cut off from water, and suffered terribly from thirst, but they raised the red flag and declared they had no Father but the English. Every now and then proposals would be made, but were refused, and the Foxes kept up the fight, shooting fiery arrows into the French fort, till their own fort was full of dead bodies, and many had deserted. Then they managed to escape to a peninsula running out into Lake St. Clare, and still called Presque Isle. Here, after a desperate fight which lasted four days, they surrendered. The men in arms were nearly all put to the sword; the rest of the men, with the women and children, were divided as slaves among the allies of the French. Thus dearly did the first Indian allies of the English pay for their devotion to the cause.

England failed to gain a foothold in the West, but the Treaty of

Utrecht, signed April 11, 1713, gave to England supremacy in the fisheries, the entire possession of Hudson Bay, Newfoundland, and Nova Scotia: and France agreed not to molest the Five Nations, who were recognized as subject to the dominion of Great Britain.

The next year Queen Anne died.

CHAPTER IV.

Reign of George I.—His Neglect of America—The Yamassee War in South Carolina—War with the Abenakis in Maine—Death of Father Rale—Lovewell's Fight.

With the death of Queen Anne ended the house of Stuart, and George, Elector of Hanover, a German prince, ascended the throne of England—a dissolute man, ignorant of the language, and indifferent to the interests of the people over whom he was called to reign.

For the American colonies he cared still less. They prospered by the neglect of the house of Hanover, and when their prosperity tempted the third George to oppress them, he lost them forever to England.

Of this reign the great feature is the steady struggle of the people against the royal Governors, by which the feelings of liberty grew deeper and stronger in all minds. And as the same trials produced sympathy between the different colonies, it tended to unite them more closely together.

The first great event of this reign was ushered in on the 15th of April, 1715, Good Friday in that year. The Yamassees, who had emigrated from Florida to South Carolina, and done good service in the

Tuscarora war. Now they were bent on mischief. English traders were at Pocotaligo, and Nairne, an English agent, had come to treat of a firmer peace, ignorant of the vast Indian conspiracy. Suddenly the slaughter began. One boy escaped to the woods, running like a deer for life. To avoid the Indian trails was his only safety; the thickest woods were his course. After nine weary days he reached a garrison. Seaman Burroughs, a man of great strength and courage, broke through the Indians who encircled him, and trusting to his fleetness of foot, struck out for the settlements. The red furies were on his trail, arrow and tomahawk and ball whizzing past him; twice they came truer to the savage aim, and tore through his flesh; but he kept manfully on, the blood streaming from his wounds. Running ten miles and swimming one, he reached Port Royal with his tale of terror and dismay. That town was at once abandoned, and in ships and canoes the inhabitants fled to Charleston. Around that city the Indian bands narrowed in, halting only to torment with all their savage fury the planters, with their wives and children, who had fallen into their hands.

Governor Craven raised a force and met the confederated warriors on the banks of the Salkehachie, in April, 1715. The battle was a bloody one, and though it lulled for a time, was again furiously renewed, neither side showing any inclination to yield. The air resounded with savage yells; every tree covered a warrior, and arrows and bullets in showers met the steady onset of the Carolinians. At last they routed the savage foe, and pursued them beyond the limits of Carolina. The Yamassees returned to Florida, the Uchees and Appalaches retired southward. South Carolina was delivered from its savage foe, but not till four hundred of the colonists had perished by midnight assassination, in torture, or in battle.

Then came trouble at the North. The Treaty of Utrecht left Maine free from all claim of France, but the native tribes were friendly to the French, and were converts of the French missionaries. The New Englanders they disliked as intruders on their lands. Chiefs were seized and sent to Boston, and, though ransomed, were detained. Hostilities began, the English seizing the young Baron de St. Castin, and a force under Westbrooke ravaging their villages and pillaging the house and chapel of the missionary Rale at Norridgewalk, on the Kennebec, and another on the Penobscot.

In a second attack on Norridgewalk the New England troops surprised the place, and killed many of the tribe, bearing away, too, in triumph the scalp of Father Rale, whom they slew at the foot of his mission cross.

The Abnakis were broken by these heavy blows, but the war still continued between small parties. Among those raised on the English side, the most famous is that of John Lovewell, who, meeting the Indians with their own tactics, did much to check them. His fights were numerous, but the most deadly was that at the pond that now bears his name, near Fryeburg, in which he fell.

After the most desperate of the conflict was over, Chamberlain, one of the bravest Indian fighters of his time, spent with the exertion and the heat, made his way to the water's edge to get a drink of water and to wash out his gun, which was foul from constant firing. Just as he emerged from a copse of willows and set foot on the pebbly shore, he saw opposite him the stalwart form of Paugus, the most famous of the Indian braves. Both had come for the same objects. All now depended on celerity; each begun to clean his rifle, and they seemed to keep time with each other. Both rifles were ready to the moment.

"Now, Paugus," said Chamberlain, "I'll have you," and he began to load with care. "Na, na, me have you," replied Paugus, loading as rapidly. At the same moment each poured in the powder, rammed in the wad, dropped in the bullet, and sent it home. Paugus began to prime his rifle; Chamberlain struck his gunstock a sharp blow on the ground, his rifle primed itself. Before Paugus could cover him with his deadly rifle, Chamberlain aimed coolly and true, his bullet passed through the heart of Paugus, as the chieftain's ball, uncertainly aimed, cut through Chamberlain's hair. The hunter gathered up the trophies of his victory, and hurrying back to where the fight was going on in all its fury, shouted that Paugus was slain. Paugus! Paugus! was echoed from tree to tree; the Indians looked in vain for the form of their chief, and, convinced that he had fallen, abandoned the struggle and stole away into the depth of the forest.

In this bloody fight fell, too, the Rev. Mr. Frye, whose name is preserved in the neighboring town. He, too, had slain a chief, and had just raised aloft his bleeding scalp, when he fell, pierced by an avenging bullet.

While the English colonies were thus struggling with Indians within their borders, France was making gigantic efforts to build up a great empire in America. She built Mobile to check the Spaniards, and in a brief war twice took Pensacola. She claimed the whole valley of the Mississippi, on the ground that as she held the mouth of the river all land up to the source of every stream emptying into it belonged to her. And this, in fact, was a generally received principle. But this view left the English colonies only the coast. Streams that rose in Carolina, Virginia, and Pennsylvania, ran into the Mississippi; they could not give up all this to France, but the French gained the Indians,

even those who had long known the English: she founded Natchez in 1716; New Orleans in 1718; Fort Niagara in 1721, and soon after Crown Point, on Lake Champlain, while the Delawares and Shawnees on the Ohio hoisted the white flag of France. All the great routes to the Mississippi by the Ohio, Wabash, Illinois, and Wisconsin rivers were in the hands of the French; they were commencing the planting of sugar in Louisiana, opening trade with Mexico, mining on Lake Superior and in Minnesota. Had the French government applied itself to increase Louisiana, it would have become formidable to the English colonies, but its affairs were left to companies and individuals, and Law used it to found a gigantic system of fraud, known as the South Sea Bubble. So completely was the sway of France established, that a Canadian in Louisiana, du Tisnet, purchasing a compass, set out overland through the wilderness, and fearlessly made his way to Quebec, and gathering his family, returned by the same route to the banks of the Mississippi.

England did little to enlarge the bounds of her colonies, though by erecting Fort Dummer, in 1724, she secured what is now Vermont.

During the reign of George I., the Baltimore family regained control of Maryland, the Earl of Baltimore having, in 1715, abjured the Catholic religion, and conformed to the Church of England.

But if a Lord Proprietor thus regained power, the Proprietaries of South Carolina, in 1719, completely lost all power, the Assembly having in that year renounced all dependence on the Proprietaries, and declared themselves a royal province. Johnson, the last Governor for the Proprietaries, endeavored to check the popular movement. But the militia were called out, and from every ship and fort floated the flags to cheer them on. In the King's name Johnson commanded

Parris to disperse his men. Parris answered: "I obey the Convention," and the King, before whom the people laid their claims, appointed as first Royal Governor, Nicholson, a man thoroughly familiar with American affairs, having held rule in New York, Maryland, and Virginia, and led the Canada and Port Royal expeditions. His first act was a firm treaty of peace with the Cherokees.

CHAPTER V.

Reign of George II.—The English Government prevents American Manufactures and Commerce—Good Effect produced—Oglethorpe and the Settlement of Georgia—Tomochichi—The Cherokee's Answer—Position of the English Colonies—The French—Law's Projects—The Natchez—Massacre of the French—Escape of Doutreleau—The Choctaws attack the Natchez—Louboi's Operations—The War with Spain—Oglethorpe's Campaign against St. Augustine—Monteano invades Georgia—The War with France—The New England Troops take Louisburg—It is restored to France—The French on the Ohio—George Washington—He is sent to occupy the Ohio—Defeats Jumonville—Capitulates at Fort Necessity—The War begins.

GEORGE II., who came to the throne of England, 1727, was as much unused to the affairs of that kingdom as his father had been; but he was active and warlike, and his reign was not destined to be one of peace; and before its close the American colonies were called upon to pour forth in the cause of England the blood of their brave sons, and the fruits of their honest labor.

And yet the hostility to the colonies which began with William III. continued. Under George II., the King and Parliament, jealous of American prosperity, sought to cripple them. Various branches of industry were prohibited by laws passed in this reign. Hats manufactured in one colony could not be sent into another; no colony was allowed

to manufacture any iron-ware, or enter largely into the manufacture of bar-iron; they were not permitted to carry on any trade with the colonies of other nations. So the colonies were cut off from manufactures and from a market. England kept all in her own hands; what America raised must go to England at England's price, and what goods America needed she had to buy in England at England's prices.

The consequence was that all the specie was drawn out of the colonies, and paper money had to be issued. As things grew worse this could not be redeemed, and sank rapidly in value.

As this distress became general, a spirit of resistance spread through the colonies, and intercourse increased. Each colony began to take more interest in the others, and they were drawn more closely to each other.

Another evil was the slave-trade, which England encouraged, as it enabled her to draw money from the colonies, for she had the monopoly of taking slaves from Africa, and supplying America with this class, who were eventually in our days to be the cause of a terrible war. England wished, by introducing negro slaves, who could never mix with the settlers and claim the rights of British subjects, to prevent the colonies from becoming too strong.

Yet in spite of all obstacles raised by the English Government the American colonies increased in population, extent, and wealth. The tendency of settlement was along the Atlantic coast, and some attempts were made to form a new colony south of Carolina.

General James Oglethorpe, a kind-hearted but often visionary man, was the successful planter of Georgia. His benevolent heart had been touched by the suffering of poor debtors in England, of whom hundreds languished in prison under the cruel laws of that day, with no

means to pay their debts, and cut off from any work by which they could ever hope to do so.

For them and for Protestants driven by war from their German homes, he resolved to found a colony in America, and in June, 1732, he obtained from George II. a patent for Georgia.

England caught up his enthusiasm; money was voted by Parliament, and contributed by the wealthy, and in November Oglethorpe sailed, with a hundred and twenty emigrants. While the settlers were landing at Beaufort, Oglethorpe ascended the Savannah river. A high bluff, about half a mile from the village of the Yamacraws, seemed to him the spot for his capital. On the site of Savannah he was welcomed by Tomochichi, the Yamacraw chief, who offered him a bison-skin with a head and feathers of an eagle painted on the well-dressed inside surface. "The feathers of the eagle are soft, and signify love," said the chief; "the buffalo skin is warm, and signifies protection. Therefore, love and protect our little families." Four beautiful pine-trees protected the tent of Oglethorpe where he thus made his covenant of friendship with the red man. And here, on the 12th day of February, 1733, he received the little flotilla, the sloop and periaguas that bore to Savannah the settlers, who soon laid out the plain, rough houses on its regular streets.

Delegates of the various Indian tribes came, all friendly to the new colony. A treaty was soon signed with the Creeks, by which Georgia claimed all the territory from the Savannah to the St. John's.

A Cherokee came. "Fear nothing," said Oglethorpe, "but speak freely." "I always speak freely," replied the haughty warrior, "why should I fear? I am now among friends; I never feared even among my enemies." Even the Choctaws came, declaring that they preferred

the English to the French, who had just been building forts in their territory.

For while the new colony had on the south the feeble Spanish colony of Florida, the French were endeavoring to control the Indians up to the very coast. If you look on the map of the United States, you can see the thirteen English colonies as they were at last formed, New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode Island, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia. These were gradually extending further into the interior, but had scarcely gone beyond the first ranges of mountains, or the main rivers. Maine depended on Massachusetts, and was confined to settlements on the coast. Fort Dummer, erected on the site of the city of Brattleboro', in 1724, was the frontier post of New England, and became the cradle of Vermont. New York was protected by the Five Nations, and had a fort at Oswego, but the settlements, had not gone beyond the banks of the Hudson and Mohawk.

The French were scattered all through the interior, and the English settlers knew that part of the country only from French books. The French had a fort, at Crown Point, on Lake Champlain, erected in 1724, and another at Niagara, and were preparing to occupy the head waters of the Ohio. They held Michigan with forts and trading settlements at Detroit, Mackinaw, and Sault St. Marys; they had a fort at Vincennes in Indiana; Fort Chartres, in Illinois, with settlements at Kaskaskia and Cahokia; a settlement at Green Bay. By these forts and settlements they controlled all the Indians of the northwest, and of the various tribes none were hostile to them except the Foxes.

At the mouth of the Mississippi Louisiana had grown; New Orleans was settled, Mobile was solidly planted; there were posts at Natchito-

ches, on the Arkansas, and among the Natchez and Choctaws, plantations were dotted all along the river. Slaves had been introduced there also, and the cultivation of sugar begun.

During a brief war with Spain, the French took Pensacola from the Spaniards, who afterwards retook but could not hold it, though the French restored it again when peace was made, in 1721.

A strange attempt to aid the settlement of Louisiana was made about this time. A Scotchman, named Law, started, in France, a gigantic company for colonizing Louisiana. Such exaggerated accounts were given that all the people were crazy for shares in the company; every one was going to make a fortune in a few days. Settlers and slaves were sent out, cities and towns were planned on paper; but at last the bubble burst, and in the ruin and disaster into which France was plunged, the colony of Louisiana was forgotten. Many settlers returned, but the colony was too firmly planted to perish.

A terrible blow was now to fall upon it.

The Natchez were a peculiar tribe of Indians, differing from most of those east of the Mississippi. They had a rude oval temple in which a perpetual fire was kept burning, and they worshiped the sun. Their chief, as descended from that god of day, was called the Great Sun, and his cabin stood on a knoll near the temple. There were two classes in the tribe, one consisting of nobles, the other apparently a Choctaw tribe which had been reduced to captivity and bondage.

The French had from the first had trading posts among this tribe, and Iberville had planned a city there named Rosalie. Gradually, settlers planted their cabins there, and under wise commandants all went well. In 1729, however, an overbearing, brutal officer named Chopart was sent to Natchez. Full of avarice, he wished to become an exten-

sive planter, and as no spot seemed to him richer or better than that where the chief village of the Natchez stood, he ordered them to remove from it. At this outrage the Natchez were roused to fury, and they determined to defeat the plans of the unscrupulous man.

They sent to the neighboring tribes to tell their grievances. The Choctaws had long wished the destruction of the Natchez, who were old enemies of theirs. They now pretended great sympathy, and proposed a general massacre of the French. Runners went from tribe to tribe, and many nations joined in the conspiracy. The Arkansas and Illinois were known to be devoted to the French, but except them, almost all the tribes near the Mississippi were engaged in it, while English traders, who hoped to secure the whole Indian commerce of the southwest, urged them on.

On the morning of the 28th of November, 1729, the Natchez, induced by the arrival of boats from New Orleans with rich cargoes, began the work of blood. They were well armed, and the French were taken unawares ; almost every man was slain before the sun had reached noon. Brave officers who had ever been their friends, the pious missionary, whose life and words had ever been devoted to the Indians, the mechanics who had so often given them a welcome, and done them service, all were butchered ; and the Great Sun sat in the shed of the storehouse of the company smoking his pipe, while his braves piled around him the heads of the French. The settlement at Natchez was swept away. Nowhere had any resistance been made except at the house of La Loire, one of the officers. He was surprised near his house and attempted to cut his way through, but though he killed four Natchez, he was finally dispatched, overborne by numbers. The people in his house made a brave defense ; the Natchez rushing up were received

with a deadly volley ; six fell dead before they carried the house, and then to find only some dead bodies ; the rest of the brave defenders had escaped.

Two hundred of the French perished ; their wives and children were in the hands of the Natchez as slaves.

The Yazoos and other tribes slew the French among them ; a missionary, Father Souel, missionary to the Yazoos, being slain with the rest.

Another missionary had a most extraordinary adventure. This was Father Doutreleau, a missionary in Illinois. He was on his way to New Orleans, and had proposed to stop at the Yazoo post on New Year's, and perform divine service with the missionary there. Finding that he could not reach there in time, he landed at a pleasant spot, and prepared his little altar to say mass. His boatmen meanwhile, seeing a flock of water-fowl, fired their guns into it, and then, as the priest was all ready, returned to join in the service of the day. Just at this moment some Indians came up from a canoe, and hailing the French as friends, all knelt down, the Indians behind. The clergyman had proceeded with the service only a few moments when the Indians, who were Yazoos in the plot, fired on the French. One of the men fell dead, the others sprang to their feet and rushed to the boat. The priest, wounded in the arm, knelt to receive the death-blow, but as the Indians, firing hastily, again missed him, he too, in his vestments, as he was, started for the boat, and had to wade into the water to reach it, for his men, supposing him dead, were already pushing off. The Indians were close upon him, and their last fire sent a charge of small-shot into his mouth. Provisions, arms, all were left ashore, and the little party could escape only by speed, and to distance the fleet canoes of the Indians seemed impossible.

There was an old gun in the boat, with a broken lock, which they were taking to New Orleans. As the Indians gained on them they would aim this at them, and the red men, dodging to avoid the shot, lost headway. In this way the fugitives eluded them, and after narrowly escaping at Natchez, where the Indians tried to lure them ashore, reached the French camp.

When the first terrible news came to New Orleans, all was consternation and dismay. They knew not whom to trust. Every Indian seemed an enemy. The only hope seemed to be in securing the aid of the Choctaws, and the brave Swiss, de Lusser, started at the risk of his life for that tribe, to sound their feelings, and, if possible, secure their aid and friendship.

Le Sueur, one of the great early explorers of the northwest, who had begun to work the rich mines of Minnesota, gained the Choctaws completely, for the crafty tribe now hoped rich pay from the French, and plunder in abundance from the Natchez, when that nation was destroyed.

While the French army was slowly advancing from New Orleans to punish the Natchez, Le Sueur and his Choctaws reached the scene of blood, and suddenly attacked the enemy, on the 27th of January, with such fury that he killed eighty, took many prisoners, and delivered fifty-three of the French from their terrible captivity, as well as a hundred and fifty negroes.

Some days after, Loubois came up with the French force and besieged the Natchez in their forts, but the Indians made a brave resistance. Loubois' regular soldiers were miserable fellows picked up in France, and were of little service, but the colonists and negroes fought bravely ; the Choctaws were eager for plunder. At last, on the

25th of February, 1730, the Natchez gave up the French prisoners in their hands to the Choctaws, and then stole away by night.

Some took refuge among the Chickasaws ; a part kept up the war, attacking every French boat. The largest of these bodies took post on the Washita, where they were invested by the French in January, 1731, and compelled to surrender. The Great Sun, with other chiefs, fell into the hands of the French, who sold all their prisoners, some four hundred, as slaves in the West Indies.

Another party pretended to submit, and asked to be received among the Tonicas, a tribe faithful to the French, and led by a brave Christian chief. But the Natchez only sought revenge : they suddenly rose on the Tonicas, and slew the chief and many of his people before they were driven out. Another party attacked the French post at Natchitoches, but the gallant St. Denys called to his aid friendly Indians, and even his Spanish neighbors, and the Natchez were utterly defeated.

By this time Louisiana again became a royal province, and Bienville, the founder of the colony, was once more Governor. He undertook to chastise the Chickasaws. An expedition from Louisiana was to ascend the Tombigbee, and attack their towns, while another from Illinois invaded them on the north.

The expeditions moved in May, 1736. The Louisiana force made its way with great difficulty up the Tombigbee, and marched to attack the first Chickasaw fort. But they found it a strong place, with the English flag floating over it, for English traders had helped to fortify it. After several brave attempts to storm the fort, Bienville, who had suffered considerable loss, abandoned the siege and retreated.

The Illinois force, under Vincennes and d'Artaguette, reached the Yalabusha, and seeing nothing of the Louisiana army attacked the

Chickasaws. They carried two forts, but, in the third, the little force of brave northwestern pioneers was nearly cut to pieces. Vincennes and d'Artaguette fell into the hands of the enemy, with many others wounded; their brave chaplain, Father Senat, remained to share their fate. Voisin, a brave boy of sixteen, commanded the retreat, and through a thousand dangers led the survivors back to Illinois. When all danger was past the Chickasaws burnt all their prisoners at the stake, only a few escaping to the English in Carolina.

Another expedition against the Chickasaws, in 1739, was equally fruitless. These Indians were the barrier of the English colonies, and, in the struggle now coming on, they, with the Six Nations, helped in no small degree to turn the scale of victory.

The English colonies were now advancing to freedom. Newspapers became a great help, diffusing knowledge and discussions of public matters among the people. On the 24th day of April, 1704, the Boston News-Letter, the first newspaper ever issued on the continent, appeared in Boston. Others grew up in other colonies, and some gave great displeasure to government by their boldness and freedom. John Peter Zenger, the proprietor of a New York paper, was put on trial. To ensure his conviction, the judges struck off the list of lawyers all who took up his case. But a brave old lawyer from Philadelphia, Andrew Hamilton, came on to defend him. So eloquent was his defense that the jury brought in a verdict of "Not guilty," and the freedom of the press was established.

Meanwhile the youngest of the colonies was involved in a border war. Georgia had grown with a rapidity seen in no other British province. The disinterestedness and zeal of Oglethorpe brought in numbers of industrious settlers, all eager to improve the country and ad-

vance their own fortunes by honest toil. Some Jews were sent out by merchants of that faith in London; German Protestants, from Salzburg, founded Ebenezer; Scotch Highlanders settled New Inverness, other villages arose, and Oglethorpe built Frederica, a strong fort on St. Simon's Island, and, claiming the St. John as his boundary, planted Fort St. George on an island at its mouth. Spain protested against this, but affairs were almost all arranged between the two countries, when George II., in 1739, declared war against Spain, and prepared to attack the Spanish colonies in America. Admiral Vernon, victorious at Porto Bello, was ordered to prepare for a new expedition. All the American colonies north of Carolina were called upon to furnish men, and they did. Vernon sailed to attack Carthagena, but was utterly defeated, losing in all nearly twenty thousand men. Few of the colonists who went on that fatal expedition ever lived to see their native land. Vernon would be justly forgotten had not a spot on the Potomac been named in his honor, which, as the residence of the illustrious Washington, was to be forever a spot revered by every American heart.

The Carolinas and Georgia had not been called upon to join in Vernon's expedition, as they were under Oglethorpe to conquer Florida. With the forces of Georgia and South Carolina, he invaded the Spanish province, and took Fort Picolata, and awaited only for his Indian allies and tardy Carolina militia to advance upon St. Augustine.

At last, in June, 1740, with six hundred English regulars, four hundred militia, and a body of Creek Indians, he advanced to the walls of St. Augustine. The Spanish commander, Monteano, had prepared to meet them; his garrison was strong and brave; in frequent sallies he broke through the English lines, causing great loss, so that at last Ogle-

thorpe saw his naval support sail off, and his militia and Indians depart. He then retreated.

The Spaniards, in their turn, sent a fleet to attack the Georgia posts. Fort William, on Cumberland Island, was attacked by Monteano, and with difficulty relieved by Oglethorpe.

Monteano then landed to attack Frederica ; but Oglethorpe, with the eye of a soldier, had placed it so that its defense was easy ; a road between a wood and a marsh led to it. Here, his Highlanders, from the wood, covered by the trees, attacked Monteano's advance, and a desperate fight ensued. The Spaniards fought gallantly, and did not give up the attempt to cut their way through till after losing two hundred of their men, their dead strewing the ground that has ever since been called the Bloody Marsh.

Oglethorpe was so full of his Spanish affairs that he wrote letters to the other colonies warning them against Spanish agents in disguise. One of his letters came at an unfortunate time at New York. In 1741, some tinners at work on the roof of the church in the fort set it on fire, and all the buildings there were destroyed. In a few days it was generally believed that it was set on fire by negroes, and that there was a negro plot to burn the city. Many negroes were arrested, tried, and executed. Oglethorpe's letter gave people a new idea. They were already half crazy with fear, and now began to arrest white people. A poor non-juring clergyman, who lived by teaching, was tried under a law against Catholic priests, passed in Bellomont's time, and also as the prime mover of the whole plot. He too was hanged, with several others, and many negroes burned at the stake. For a time no man was safe, but at last the delusion passed over, and few cared to admit that they had any hand in it.

But the northern colonies were now to feel all the horrors of war. Almost all the countries of Europe had become involved in the difficulties, and France was also at war with England, in 1744. News reached the strong French fort at Louisburg, and they at once prepared for action. A force under Duvivier surprised the little English garrison at Canseau, destroyed the fishery, the fort, and the other buildings, and carried off eighty men as prisoners of war to Louisburg. An Indian force also besieged Annapolis.

New England burned to reduce Louisburg, and an expedition was soon fitted out. New York sent artillery, and Pennsylvania provisions; New England furnished all the men, Massachusetts alone sending three thousand men. The expedition, intended to overthrow the power of France and the Catholic religion, set out headed by a chaplain bearing an axe to hew down the crucifixes on the churches. The fleet of a hundred vessels bore the army, under Colonel William Pepperell, to Canseau. There, fortunately, Commodore Warren, with a British squadron, joined him, and on the 30th of April, 1745, they came in sight of Louisburg. It was a strong place for fishermen, and farmers, and mechanics to take. Its walls, forty feet thick, and from twenty to thirty in height, were surrounded by a ditch eighty feet wide, and were mounted by nearly two hundred cannon, while the garrison of sixteen hundred men, six hundred of them regular troops, seemed to make it madness to think of reducing it.

But the sturdy men of New England did not give up. With stubborn perseverance they set to work in their own way to take the stout fortress on which France had spent millions under the direction of her best military engineers. They knew nothing about zigzags and parallels; but they resolved to plant their batteries and make a breach in

the stout walls. A large morass prevented their reaching a suitable spot, so they built sledges, and the sturdy lumbermen dragged the cannon over the marsh on these. Waldo's and Tidcomb's batteries were soon playing on the stout walls of the French fortress, which returned the fire vigorously ; and the French, by their Canadians and Indians in the woods, galled the New England troops. Day after day the firing went on, but there seemed no hope of reducing the place. The wise naval officers pooh-poohed the idea, and laughed at provincial militia taking such a fortress. Even the cool New England men began to tire, and four hundred attempted to take the island battery, but the French met them desperately, and the colonial troops drew off, leaving sixty dead, and more than a hundred prisoners. But the Shirley frigate, under brave Captain Rous, enabled Commodore Warren's fleet to capture the Vigilant, a French man-of-war coming with ammunition and supplies to the relief of the fort.

When Duchambon, the French commander, saw this, he lost heart and began to despond. Soon after, from his ramparts, he beheld all in activity on sea and land. The fleet and the provincial army were preparing for a joint attack on the fort.

Then, on the 17th of June, 1745, Duchambon surrendered the strongest fortress on the American continent to an army of undisciplined New England men, who had just laid down their tools in their workshops, or their ploughs in the fields. The colonies in America showed their power, and had achieved the greatest success won by English arms in this war. The city of Louisburg was a perfect wreck, scarcely a house had escaped during the bombardment.

For his achievement, Colonel Pepperell was knighted, and made a colonel in the British army ; as was also Governor Shirley.

New England was wild with joy and exultation, and France, burning with anger, sent fleets to recover Louisburg, but disaster after disaster thwarted all her plans, although these naval forces created great alarm all along the New England coast.

There were no important operations in this war between Canada and the colonies, although the Indians in the French service, and small parties, ravaged the New England frontiers. The Six Nations took no part in the war. They sent an embassy to ask the French to keep the war parties out of their cantons and hunting grounds. The French desired nothing better, and as the English authorities no longer asked neutrality, the colonies were exposed to the old border ravages.

At Crown Point, on Lake Champlain, the French had their Fort St. Frederic, commanding the entrance to Canada. From this the French officer posted there, De Croisilles, sent out the war parties in all directions. Besides their old missions in Canada, the French had established a new one at the mouth of the Oswegatchie, to which they attracted numbers of the braves of the Six Nations, who were discontented with the English.

The most important blow struck was the capture of Saratoga, by a French force under Marin, in November, 1745. That spot, since the seat of so much fashion and gayety, the very home of luxury and enjoyment, was then a straggling frontier village, made up, like most of those in New York, of various elements, Dutch, English, and German. It was soon taken, and the flourishing place, with its mills and block-house, and farm-houses, far and near, given to the flames, while the cattle were slaughtered in the fields. Thirty of the people were killed in the attack, and sixty hurried off as prisoners, with a large number of negro slaves.

Fort Massachusetts, on Hoosac river, in what is now the town of Adams, was the frontier post on the New England side, and this was constantly beset by prowling bands of Indians. One day, as Sergeant Hawks and John Miles were riding on a horse, they were fired at by two skulking Indians, and both wounded. Miles escaped to the fort, but Hawks fell from his horse. The Indians rushed upon him to scalp him. Desperation gave him courage, he rallied his strength, and seizing his gun covered one of them. This turned the tables. One Indian jumped down the bank, the other took to a tree and cried for quarter. Hawks, dizzy and confused, kept calling for help, and when it came the Indians had fled, one leaving his gun, which he durst not return to pick up.

In August, 1746, a force of French and Indians under Rigaud de Vaudreuil invested Fort Massachusetts. The little fort had a garrison of only twenty-two men, and the French force numbered several hundred, but Sergeant Hawks resolved to show fight, and though he had only a few pounds of powder, kept up the fight for twenty-four hours, and then surrendered on favorable terms.

This war came to a close by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, in October, 1748, but the spring of the following year had opened before it was known in New England, or relieved the farmers on the frontiers from the danger of skulking Indians.

Then all was peace again, treaties were made with the tribes in Maine, and hopes entertained of a long season of peace.

New England was doomed to see Louisburg, which had cost her so much blood, and time, and treasure, restored to France by this treaty, without any compensation being made to the colonies whose conquest was thus disposed of.

At the South, Oglethorpe, who had begun the war to establish his

claim as far south as the St. John's, saw the line between Georgia and Florida fixed where it now is, at the St. Mary's.

The treaty, hastily concluded, did not settle the important northern boundary with the French, and in consequence, the bold Canadian partisan officer, La Corne, took Beaubassin, which Cornwallis retook after a bloody assault and built Fort Lawrence. On the other side, Captain Rous, in the Albany, attacked and took, off Cape Sable, a brigantine from Quebec. On both sides the feeling was bitter, and a new war seemed threatening.

The statesmen of Europe were, however, cooler and less disposed to renew hostilities. These matters were all arranged, and by degrees the war spirit in America calmed down.

Before the close of the war a Congress of Governors met delegates of the Indian nations at Albany, with a view of strengthening all the tribes in the English interest, so as to aid in the reduction of Canada. Though their assistance was not immediately needed, the conference was continued, as the colonies had at last awaked to the necessity of meeting the French in the west.

The colonists had in the last war fought side by side with the English by land and sea, and had met French regulars as well as Canadian militia. They began to think that they were pretty good soldiers themselves, and English governors found that the spirit of independence was growing.

In spite of the odious restrictions put by England on American manufactures and trade, the colonies grew rapidly. Industry, intelligence, schools, and papers were doing their work.

New England had relaxed somewhat, but still maintained a high moral tone. Boston was the wealthiest and most thriving town, and

the houses of the merchants showed its prosperity. In the principal houses of Boston, there was a great hall ornamented with pictures, and a great lantern, and a velvet cushion on the window-seat that looked into the garden. A large bowl of punch was often placed in the hall, from which visitors might help themselves as they entered. On either side was a great parlor, and a little parlor or study. These were furnished with great looking-glasses, Turkey carpets, window-curtains, and valances, pictures and a map, a brass clock, red leathern-back chairs, and a great pair of brass andirons. The chambers were well supplied with feather-beds, warming-pans, and every other article that would now be thought necessary for comfort or display. The pantry was well filled with substantial fare. Silver tankards, wine-cups and other articles of plate were not uncommon, and the kitchen was completely choked with pewter, iron, and copper utensils.

The wealthier Virginians also made much display, while New York presented a more homely and simple life. They breakfasted on tea without milk, and sweetened with a small piece of sugar passed around. The dinner was light, meat not being always served up.

Our young readers will wonder that many things familiar to them were then unknown. To kindle the fire in the morning, they had to get a spark in the tinder-box by striking a flint on a steel, and then they lighted, at this spark, a match of shaving tipped with brimstone. A candle or whale-oil lamp was then lighted. There were no lucifer matches, and no gas. The immense chimneys had their wood fires kept in place by andirons ; there was no coal mined then or used ; and stoves were unknown.

No canals or railroads facilitated travel or the conveyance of goods ; no steamboats puffed along the rivers and sounds. Steam was unknown

in the factory or the mine. News traveled slowly. Affairs in Maine would be heard of in Georgia in perhaps a month's time.

After the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, a new spirit of activity awoke and all felt that something must be done to keep the French off the Ohio. Both countries aimed at one point, so as to control that river and the West. This point was the junction of the Alleghany and Monongahela rivers. None of the English colonies wished to go to the expense of establishing a fort there; and the geography of the country was so little known that it was supposed to be in Virginia, and Pennsylvania paid little attention to it. At last a company was formed called the Ohio Company; but France was preparing to occupy it. She had forts at Niagara, Presqu'ile, now Erie, and at Venango. The French attacked Piqua, killing and capturing the English traders, with many Indians, including the king of the Piankeshaws, who was put to death. Then they prepared to occupy the valley with a large force.

Governor Dinwiddie, of Virginia, had been urgent in his letters to the dissolute king, George II., and now at last obtained leave to remonstrate with the French.

For the perilous task he selected a young Virginian officer, a good son of a widowed mother, clear-headed, active, energetic, brave, and adventurous—George Washington, then just twenty-one, a surveyor, accustomed to the woods and mountains. Following the Indian trail, with Christopher Gist, an old frontiersman, as his guide, they struck the Indian trails, and reached the forks of the Ohio, for which the struggle had begun. Here he saw as in a vision the future city of Pittsburg. Pushing on he met Tanacharison, the Half-king, as he was called, a steady friend of the English colonies. At Venango, he found the French posted. The French officer in command was sanguine that his country

would hold the Ohio. "The English can raise two men to our one," said he, "but they are too dilatory to prevent any enterprise of ours." They had some reason to say so, for the Canadians were prompt, active, and accustomed to discipline. They marched at once on receiving orders. In the English colonies, there was always disputing and debating, and a regiment was not put into the field till after a long wrangle between Governor and Assembly.

Where Waterford now stands Washington found Fort le Bœuf, commanded by le Gardeur de St. Pierre, a veteran Canadian officer, whose long career had enabled him to obtain a complete mastery over the Indians, who both feared and loved him.

Washington presented his letters, but got a soldier's reply. "I am here by the orders of my general, to which I shall conform with exactness and resolution."

The young envoy of Virginia then retraced his way through the wilderness, to report to the Governor at Williamsburg the defiant attitude of the French.

This was the first public act of Washington, then only twenty-two years of age. His journal was made public, and drew attention to him as one well fitted to undertake any perilous expedition, to command men, and cope with experienced European officers. Thus early did Washington impress men with his singular ability for public affairs. Near Bridge's Creek, Virginia, where the pilgrim can no longer discern any sign of the homestead that once opened its hospitable doors, is a slab recording the fact that here, on what is now reckoned the 22d of February, 1732, George Washington was born. He was the oldest son of Augustine Washington, by Mary Ball, his second wife; but his boyhood was not spent at his birth-place. His father removed to an estate in Stafford

County, and here young George grew up. His elder brothers, fruits of a former marriage, were sent to England for education, but George enjoyed only the common advantages of planters' sons, few of whom pursued studies beyond the ordinary branches of an English education. He was but eleven years old when his father died, and his future training, as well as the care of his property, devolved on Mary Washington. Most great men owe their greatness in no small degree to a mother, and this is eminently so with George Washington. She possessed solid sense and decision, was strict in her discipline, and deeply religious, inspiring her children with a love for all that related to God's service, not by harshness, but by counsel and example.

Washington ever felt the deepest love and reverence for his mother, and never failed to show it.

As he advanced, he was fond of adventure, of sports in the open air, of riding, and of life in the woods. He grew up hardy and vigorous in mind and body. His first choice was the sea, and through the influence of his brother Lawrence, and Lord Fairfax, an English nobleman, then residing in Virginia, he obtained a midshipman's warrant in the English navy. His luggage had actually gone on board, when his mother's heart failed, and he abandoned his scheme of a naval career.

Resuming his studies at school, George, now with his mind attracted towards the army and navy, resolved to improve in all the branches that would be of service to him, and especially cultivated mathematics.

He had several good qualities; he was very methodical, accurate, and persevering. He had that magic of method which of itself works wonders. He was soon a leader. His school-fellows appealed to him to decide the disputes which arose among them, and in every project he was looked up to as a chief. He delighted in athletic sports, and by

his readiness in them, as in his studies, commanded the respect and affection of his young associates.

Even after leaving school he continued his mathematical studies, and eagerly went through all works within his reach that treated of military affairs, from the mere drill of the private soldier to the management of armies or fortification of posts.

At the age of sixteen, he set out with the surveyor's chain and compass, to lay out estates possessed by Lord Fairfax, beyond the Blue Ridge. This practice in woodland life was of great service to him. Lines were to be run through wood and morass, over mountain and stream, in a district far from any settlement. He had to work hard and fare hard, cook his own meals, and often hunt for them, and for months he was a stranger to bed or roof.

The hardship did not discourage the boy, whom heaven was thus training for a great work. The position of public surveyor was bestowed upon him, and, as it was evident that his abilities fitted him for the post, George Washington was, at the age of nineteen, chosen to command one of the military districts into which Virginia was divided; this gave him the rank of Major, and pay amounting to a hundred and fifty pounds a year. Major Washington immediately set to work to organize and equip the militia in his district. But he was called from his duties to accompany his brother Lawrence to the West Indies; yet the voyage did not restore his failing health; and before he was twenty-one, George was the head of the family, intrusted with the management of Lawrence's estate at Mount Vernon, for the widow and infant daughter.

His next public duty was momentous indeed. Adjutant General of the Virginia forces, well acquainted with the frontiers, he was dis-

patched on that first mission, which has led us into this sketch of his life.

So alarming did the French position seem to Governor Dinwiddie, that he urged the Assembly of Virginia to raise men and money to keep the disputed lands for the English race. But the Legislature was less far-sighted than the Governor. They hesitated, they doubted, but at last raised £10,000 for the protection of "the settlers on the Mississippi." Several additional companies were raised, and of the regiment Washington was appointed Lieutenant Colonel. His practised eye had marked the spot where Pittsburg now stands, darkening the sky with the smoke of its thousand furnaces. By his advice, Captain Trent was sent on with forty-one men, to build a fort at this point, and raise the English flag. He was sent on himself with his companies to occupy the new work, but at Wills' Creek heard that it was too late. The French, while the Assembly were debating with Dinwiddie, had acted promptly. Already the energetic Marin had led a considerable force towards the Ohio, and had built one fort, and was erecting another, when he died, to the great regret of the French. Contrecœur, who succeeded him, pushed forward with six or seven hundred men, and falling suddenly on Trent's party, dispersed them, and seizing the fort, completed it, the Chevalier le Mercier, a French engineer, directing the works.

On hearing these tidings, Washington began to intrench himself at Great Meadows; but learning that a French detachment was approaching him, resolved to meet it; and early on the morning of May 28th, pushed on, with the Half-king, and a force of Virginians and Indians. They came upon the French, under Jumonville, in a rocky wood, where they had thrown up some huts to protect them from the

rain. On seeing the English approach, the French flew to arms. Jumonville attempted to act in his character as envoy, and began to read a summons, requiring the English to withdraw, but Washington gave the order to fire, and after a brief skirmish, Jumonville and ten of his Canadians were killed and scalped, and twenty-one taken prisoners. This began a new and terrible war, that changed the whole future of North America.

The French heard these tidings with indignation. In their eyes it was a base assassination, and in Canada and France, all clamored for redress. Contrecœur, at Fort Duquesne, acted promptly. Dispatching couriers to Quebec, to inform the Governor of the commencement of hostilities, he sent out de Villiers, with a force, to attack Washington. The young Virginian officer, now colonel by the death of Fry, seeing his critical position, had sent for reinforcements; and had fallen back to Great Meadows, where he threw up Fort Necessity, a little work which he hoped to hold till relief came. But the only reinforcement was a company from South Carolina, under Captain Mackay. As daring and adventurous as the French, Washington, leaving Mackay at the fort, again advanced to meet the enemy, but, as Indian scouts soon warned him of the approach of a formidable French and Indian army, he fell back.

Fort Necessity was at once invested. It was in a clearing between two wooded hills, and was garrisoned by five hundred men, with ten pieces of artillery. De Villiers had six hundred Canadians, and a hundred Indians. Taking advantage of the position of the fort, the French and Indian sharp-shooters, posted in the trees on the hillside, kept up a deadly fire into the interior of the fort, silencing the guns, as it was death to approach them. When more than fifty of his men lay dead and wounded in the little fort, Washington, finding it impossible to

use his cannons, or even his rifles, against a foe whom he could not see, capitulated, the French allowing them to return to Virginia with everything except their artillery, retaining only two, Robert Stobo and Van Braam, as hostages for the restoration of the French taken prisoners at Jumonville's defeat. This capitulation took place July 4, 1754; and Washington, leaving his fort in the hands of the French, returned to Wills' Creek, where Fort Cumberland was erected to protect the now exposed frontier.

The hostages were taken to Fort Duquesne, and treated with great courtesy; but Stobo, violating his parole, sent a plan of the fort and details of the French forces to Washington. When this was discovered he was arrested, tried, and condemned to death. His life was, however, spared, though he had to undergo a long and very severe imprisonment. He failed in one effort to escape, but at last, winning the favor of the jailer's daughter, he got away from Quebec, with several other prisoners. Their adventures are almost incredible.

Finding a bark canoe, they started in it, and finally reached the southern bank of the St. Lawrence. Here they lay hid in the woods watching the parties in pursuit of them. At night they started down the river in their canoe, and for ten nights kept on their way, lying hid by day, and keeping alive by means of some provisions which they took from two Indians. Coming in sight of a French sloop, they surprised it, just as their canoe had become useless. Eluding a French frigate, they kept on more boldly, but were nearly wrecked. Just then they fell in with a French schooner, well armed and supplied, which they also took, and in it, after a thirty-eight days' voyage from Quebec, reached Louisburg.

Dinwiddie had urged so strongly a general action on the part of the

colonies, that a Convention of Committees of the Assemblies of New York, Pennsylvania, Maryland, and the New England colonies met at Albany, in June, 1754.

Twenty-five delegates from all the colonies, from New Hampshire to Virginia, were thus brought together, to form a plan for closer union, and though Virginia sent none, de Lancey of New York acted in her name, with full instructions from Dinwiddie, the projector of the scheme. The sachems of the Six Nations had also been summoned to a great council at Albany, and sent their wisest chieftains. Every voice declared that America could prosper only by a union of all the colonies. Governors appointed from England, patriots born and nurtured on American soil, all agreed in this. The irregular action of the separate colonies led only to disaster. Even the Indians taught them that they must unite or perish. "Look at the French," said an Iroquois chief, "they are men; they are fortifying everywhere. But, we are ashamed to say it, you are like women, without any fortifications. It is but one step from Canada hither. and the French may easily come and turn you out of doors."

A committee was accordingly appointed to draw up a plan of union. They were all eminent men; Benjamin Franklin, with Hutchinson of Massachusetts, Hopkins of Rhode Island, Pitkin of Connecticut, Tasker of Maryland, and Smith of New York. But Franklin had already conceived and matured a plan which he presented and which was adopted.

It was a remarkable plan, foreshadowing the Republican Union which was to be formed in a few years. Philadelphia was to be the seat of the proposed Federal Government; at its head was to be a Governor General appointed by the King. Then there was a grand

council of members elected by the Legislatures of the different colonies, according to the amount of contributions raised by them, no colony, however, to have less than two nor more than seven. The Governor General was to nominate all military officers, and the council all civil officers; no money was to be issued except by the order of the Governor and council.

Each colony was still to manage its own concerns, but this new government was to establish new settlements, raise an army and navy, and apportion taxes among the colonies.

This plan was adopted after considerable debate, but did not meet with general favor. In England it was looked upon with distrust; and the colonies feared that it would deprive them of liberties.

But Franklin lived to see it carried out on even a grander scale than he dreamed of.

Benjamin Franklin, who thus came prominently before the people of England and America, is one of the most illustrious of our countrymen. Men have been esteemed great for a time, but gradually sink out of sight. This is not the case with Franklin. His fame still abides.

Son of Josiah Franklin, one of a race of sturdy blacksmiths at Ecton, England, who, in the reign of James II., emigrated to New England, Benjamin was born at Boston, January 17, 1706. His mother was the daughter of Peter Folger, the old Nantucket poet. On the stone which covers their remains at Boston, their son inscribed, "He was a pious and prudent man; she a discreet and virtuous woman."

At the age of eight, Benjamin was sent to the public grammar school, where he learned to read, and write a clear, bold hand. In figures he did not excel. His school time was short. At the age of ten he was

taken into his father's tallow chandlery, but his brother James arrived from England two years after this, with material to set up a printing office. Benjamin was apprenticed to him. He was a great reader, but he stuck to some good books as his favorites, among them the Spectator, Cotton Mather's "Essays to do Good," and De Foe's "Essay on Projects."

When his brother started the "New England Courant," he became a contributor, but not daring to offer them openly, for fear of having them rejected contemptuously, he slipped them by night under the door, and then listened with satisfaction to the praise bestowed on them.

The paper was a spicy one, and soon got into trouble in those strict days, so that before long, Benjamin found himself free from his apprentice's indentures. Quarreling with his brother, he raised money by selling his books, and made his way in a sloop to New York, and so on to Philadelphia, rowing part of the way on the Delaware.

He entered Philadelphia tired, hungry, and almost penniless, one Sunday morning in the Fall of the year 1723. His person and his clothes were dirty; his pockets stuffed with shirts and stockings; for those were days of immense coats, and waistcoats, and cavernous pockets. Topped off with a broad-brimmed hat, he was an odd figure indeed. He made his way to a baker's and bought three penny rolls, and was amazed to find them so much larger than in Boston. As he had no room in his pockets, he walked on with a roll under each arm, munching the other. In this comical guise, he passed the house of Mr. Read, on Market Street, and excited the merriment of Miss Deborah, who, in all her Sunday finery, stood laughing at the uncouth young man, little dreaming that she was laughing at her future husband. He strolled on

eating, and as one good Philadelphia roll satisfied him, he gave the other two to a poor woman and her child. He then entered the great Meeting-house of the Quakers, and as it was a silent meeting, the weary traveler soon fell asleep, and rested quietly till the service ended.

He soon found employment as a printer, and found a friend in Sir William Keith, Governor of Pennsylvania, who urged him to set up in business for himself. His father declining to advance the money, Keith sent Franklin to London to purchase material, promising to send him a draft for the necessary amount. But great men sometimes have very short memories, and young Franklin found he had gone on a fool's errand. He was not one to be disheartened, but went to work at his trade, and, after a stay of nearly two years in London, finding an opportunity to go into business in Philadelphia, returned. But death soon broke up the concern, and Franklin went back to Keimig, his old employer. He was soon proprietor, editor, and printer of the Gazette, married Deborah Read, and became a prominent and active man. His paper abounded in short essays, in pointed sayings, and patriotic hints. His "Poor Richard's Almanac" became very popular from the maxims which it contained, and was subsequently published under the title of "The Way to Wealth."

In 1736, he began public life, as clerk of the General Assembly. He was soon after made Deputy Postmaster, established the first magazine published in America, and projected the American Philosophical Society, and the Pennsylvania Hospital.

He had just received his appointment from London, as Postmaster General for the colonies, when he was sent to the Congress at Albany, which has led us into this sketch of his life.

CHAPTER VI.

Reign of George II. Continued—Commencement of the Reign of George III.—War with France renewed—General Braddock sent over with English Regulars—His Plans—He attempts to take Fort Du Quesne—Defeated and killed—The unfortunate Acadians—Baron Dieskau sent out by France—Defeated and taken on Lake George—Montcalm takes Oswego—Louisburg taken by Boscawen and Amherst—Abercrombie defeated by Montcalm at Ticonderoga—Bradstreet takes Fort Frontenac—William Pitt—Forbes advances on Fort Du Quesne—Sustains a Defeat—French evacuate Pittsburg—Johnson defeats d'Aubry and takes Niagara—Amherst drives the French from Lake Champlain—Wolfe at Quebec—Battle of the Heights of Abraham—Wolfe and Montcalm—De Levi defeats Murray and besieges Quebec—Canada surrenders—Close of the War.

ENGLAND and France were still at peace, and the English government gave the French King every assurance of their wish to maintain friendly relations, but at the same time prepared to send over to America a formidable force of regular troops to conquer Canada. While the French government was instructing du Quesne, the Governor General of Canada, to act only on the defensive, to avoid bloodshed, and to strengthen Canada by Indian alliances, Edward Braddock, Major General and Commander-in-Chief of the English forces, was on his way with a regiment of British regulars across the Atlantic, and soon arrived in the Chesapeake. He was a harsh, brutal man, strict in discipline, and brave.

He met the Governors of several colonies at Williamsburg; but found no revenue raised, and no likelihood that any would be. His instructions had increased the general suspicion of the colonists, for it was laid down that the colonial officers were to have no rank when serving with the King's officers. Eager as Washington was to fight in the cause of the colonies, he resigned in disgust.

While matters were in this unpromising condition, France, at last

convinced of the bad faith of England, sent reinforcements to Canada, under the veteran Dieskau. The English Government sent Admiral Boscawen in pursuit of the French fleet; he overtook it, and without any declaration of war, captured two of the French ships off Cape Race.

Thus the war began on the ocean.

The rest of the French fleet, with Dieskau and Vaudreuil, the new Governor General of Canada, himself a Canadian by birth, reached Quebec.

Braddock, at Alexandria, proposed four expeditions against the French. Lieutenant Governor Lawrence, of Nova Scotia, was to drive the French from all that district; Sir William Johnson, who had great influence with the Six Nations, was to lead a force of militia and Indians to reduce Fort St. Frederic at Crown Point; Governor Shirley, of Massachusetts, was to take Niagara, unless Braddock himself captured it after taking Fort Du Quesne, which he said could detain him only three or four days.

At last, after great difficulties, Braddock got his army in motion, and at Cumberland two thousand effective men were assembled. Washington attended Braddock as one of his aids. Daniel Morgan, famous in his Jersey village as a wrestler and a deadly marksman, was a wagoner.

On the 19th of June, Braddock, by Washington's advice, left Dunbar behind, and pushed on more rapidly with twelve hundred picked men. Washington knew something of the frontier life, and knew that the French were prompt and active.

On the 8th of July, they were within twelve miles of Fort Du Quesne. The French authorities had given up all hopes of saving it; the Indians, whose runners had brought in tidings of the great English force, looked upon resistance as hopeless. One man felt too proud to yield without a

blow. Daniel Lienard de Beaujeu had just been made commandant of Fort Du Quesne and the French troops on the Ohio. He called on the Indians to go out with his small force and meet the enemy. They treated him as a madman. Then he resolved to go with his handful of Canadians. As he filed out with his petty force, after attending divine service in the chapel of the fort, he tauntingly told the Indians to go to Quebec, and report that they had seen him go to die, and had not dared follow him. Stung at this, they took up their arms, and marched with his little band.

Beaujeu's intention was to ambuscade the ford of the Monongahela, but the refusal of the Indians had made him lose precious moments. As that glorious summer day dawned on the river and the woods that lined it, Beaujeu, a tall, slight man, in his frontier-dress, with only his officer's gorget or crescent at his neck to mark his rank, himself, at the very head of his men, came full in sight of the British and American force moving up from the river-bank. The burnished arms gleamed in the summer sun; the regular tread of the infantry, the gay uniforms and lines of cannon, all were before him. He did not recoil. Waving his carbine over his head, he ran on towards the English, leaping and cheering on his men. On rushed Canadian and Indian, with yell and cries. The English advance, under Gage, was swept back; before they could recover their senses, their artillery was captured, and they were driven back on the vanguard, while the Canadians and Indians, taking to the trees on the flanks, by their deadly volleys increased the confusion and dismay. Braddock hurried on, and drew up his remaining guns, but there was no enemy in view. The forests echoed with the thunder of cannon, as the balls tore through the ancient trees, but still the fight went on; the French pressing steadily on them. At last Beaujeu,

their commander, fell, but Dumas took command. For two hours the English kept up the battle, few of them getting a glimpse even of their enemy. The regulars, at last, terrified by the yells and by the strange kind of warfare, lost all control, fired at random, even killing their officers, and at last broke and ran. Sir Peter Halket and twenty-six officers were killed, and seven hundred and fourteen men killed or wounded; of Braddock's aids, Washington alone was alive; two horses were killed under him; his clothes torn by bullets, for an Indian chief aimed repeatedly at one in whom he saw a dangerous enemy. "Some potent Manitou guards his life," said the Indian. "By the all powerful dispensations of Providence I have been protected." Braddock had mounted his sixth horse, when a bullet entered his side and he fell mortally wounded. Then all was confusion. The Virginia troops under Washington covered the flight, and were nearly cut to pieces. Of three companies scarcely twenty men were left alive.

As this disorderly horde rushed panting into Dunbar's camp, that officer caught the panic. He destroyed his cannon, stores, and baggage to the value of £100,000, and evacuated Fort Cumberland, to retreat to Philadelphia, burying Braddock by the way-side, near Fort Necessity.

The ground, still known as Braddock's field, was in the hands of the French. The forest glade was strewn with dead and wounded, with artillery, arms, equipments. Never had such a victory been achieved, and at so slight a cost, for the French lost only three officers and thirty men.

Beaujeu, who died in the arms of victory, was borne to Fort du Quesne through the woods. It was a strange funeral, as chiefs, in the spoils of English officers, with their faces and bodies in all their war-paint, with scalp, yell, and rattle of firearms, stalked beside the bier

of one who had shown such skill and valor. The old friar in the fort chanted a requiem mass and consigned the body of Beaujeu to earth in the little cemetery of the fort.

Such was the battle of the Monongahela, as the French call it, or Braddock's Defeat, as it is generally known in our annals.

Unexpected as a victory to the French, it filled them with enthusiasm ; unexpected as a defeat to the colonies, and to England, it did precisely what was required at the moment. All were now ready to vote money and raise men to carry on the war. This fighting the French was a serious business.

The British general selected by the crown, full of pride in the superior military skill of the Old World, was shamefully defeated, and killed at the very first step by a handful of provincials, and all his great plans of conquest were scattered to the winds, his best army lost, with all its artillery and munitions.

Of all the plan of Braddock, but one part had succeeded, and that was one of the greatest crimes in American history ; this was the seizure of the Acadians.

After the conquest of Acadia, or Nova Scotia, the French Government invited the French settlers in that colony to remove to Cape Breton ; but as the English Government, unwilling to have the country depopulated, offered them inducements to stay, they unfortunately remained. Their position was one of great difficulty, then and ever after. Many would have emigrated, if they could have sold their farms, but there was no one to buy. They naturally sympathized with the French and did not wish to fight against them. From time to time they were subjected to many hardships and oppressive acts, but always lived in hope of better times, endeavoring to keep peacefully in their quiet settlements.

They were now called upon to take a new oath of allegiance, in which they would swear to fight against their countrymen, and as it was known that they would refuse, preparations were made to destroy their settlements and carry them off. Had they been enemies, such an attack on them, when unarmed and defenseless, and the ravaging of their country, would have been a horrible deed; but they were actually under the protection of the laws of the Government which thus treated them.

On the 2d of September, Winslow arrived with a fleet, and summoned all the men to meet in the church at Grandpré, on Friday the 5th. When they had entered, he read a proclamation declaring all their property forfeited and themselves prisoners.

They were then marched down to the shore, and in squads sent on board the ships; their families sent separately, no regard being paid to family ties or affection. Seldom has such a scene been witnessed, of cold-blooded malignity on the one hand, or of such sudden and unexpected calamity. And while they were huddled on the bleak shore, or proceeding to the ships, they saw the savage soldiery firing their villages, burning church, and house, and barns, so that the whole country was in flames; at least a thousand buildings were thus destroyed, and fifteen thousand unfortunate people torn from their homes, and hurried away to a strange land. Had they been taken to France, they would have found sympathy and relief, but, with a cruelty that was fiendish, they were scattered all along the coast, from New Hampshire to Georgia. They were cast ashore without any means of support; with no place before them but the poor-house. Many, by unheard-of hardships, reached their countrymen in Louisiana or Canada; many on their way were arrested and taken off again.

Five of their leading men, who had been put ashore in Pennsylvania, petitioned the brutal and ignorant Lord Loudun, the British Commander-in-Chief, for some relief, but he seized them and sent them to England, asking that they should be impressed into the navy as common sailors, although all men of dignity and wealth in their own land.

Bancroft says of these unfortunate people: "I know not if the annals of the human race keep the record of sorrows so wantonly inflicted, so bitter, and so perennial as fell upon the French inhabitants of Acadia."

The army intended to attack Fort St. Frederic, at Crown Point, consisted of New England militia, and was commanded by William Johnson. Fort Edward was erected, and Johnson, at the end of August, advanced to the shore of Lake George, and encamped with his force of three thousand four hundred men.

Dieskau, the French commander, seeing him so dilatory and careless, resolved to attack Fort Edward. He advanced along Wood Creek, but his guides led him astray, and being nearer to Johnson's camp, he determined to attack it.

Johnson, startled to hear that the French were actually in his rear, sent a force under Colonel Williams of Massachusetts, and Hendricks, the old Mohawk chief, to relieve Fort Edward. His first intention was to send out only a scouting party, but Hendrick, the old Mohawk chief, said: "If they are to fight, they are too few; if they are to be killed, they are too many." Accordingly, a detachment of twelve hundred marched out. The French and Indians posted themselves in ambush at Rocky Brook, four miles from Lake George, in a semicircle on both sides of the route, concealed on the left by the thickets in the swamps, and on the right by rocks and trees.

The French Mohawks let their New York countrymen pass, then from every rock and tree came the deadly ball, as the rocks echoed back the rattle of musketry. Williams and Hendrick fell, the former near a large boulder still shown as Williams' rock ; Nathan Whiting, of New Haven, restored order, and by rallying from time to time, and keeping up a fire, managed to save part of the force.

At the camp all was confusion. A few cannon were brought up from the lake, and the axe flashed as the sturdy arms hewed down trees to form some kind of intrenchment. Dieskau came in view of the enemy about eleven o'clock in the morning, having reached an eminence overlooking Johnson's camp, and the American troops, from their position, saw the polished arms of the French on the hill-top, glittering through the trees, as platoon after platoon passed down. Dieskau's army was discontented and weary. The Indians and Canadians asked time to rest before attacking the enemy ; the French Mohawks actually halted ; then the Abnakis did the same, and the Canadians, seeing something wrong, hesitated. Without waiting to form a plan of action, or giving his men time to rest and recover, Dieskau charged with his regulars according to European ideas of war. They came down the hill into the clearing in splendid style, and under a terrible fire from the New England troops, who lay flat down behind their intrenchment of trees, the gallant French endeavored to push their way into the camp. For five hours the fight was maintained, till nearly all the French regulars perished ; the Indians and Canadians, galled by the English artillery, and utterly demoralized, giving them but feeble support. At last the regulars gave way. Dieskau had received three wounds, and finding that he could not be carried from the field, calmly sat down on a stump to meet his fate. Then the English troops charged

from their camp; a renegade Frenchman shot the unfortunate general, giving him a wound from which he never recovered.

The French rallied at their battle-field of the morning, and were resting there when they were suddenly attacked and routed by some New Hampshire troops, under the brave Captain McGinnis, who fell in the arms of victory.

So ended the third engagement fought on that bloody 8th of September, 1755, in which nearly a thousand men were killed and wounded.

In this battle Johnson was wounded early in the action, and the battle was really fought and gained by General Lyman of Connecticut, but the merit of the American was overlooked, while Johnson obtained all the credit, a large grant of money from Parliament, and was created a baronet.

He neglected to take advantage of his victory, and building Fort William Henry on the site of his camp, allowed the French to occupy and fortify Ticonderoga, while he returned to Albany.

Shirley was to have met Braddock at Niagara, but he got no further than Oswego, where he built a new fort, which he left in command of Mercer and returned.

During the Winter, Shirley, in a Congress of Governors, planned the campaign for 1756; but war had been declared at last in Europe, and England sent over Lord Loudun, as Commander-in-Chief, with Abercrombie as next in command, and a large force of soldiers with tents, ammunition, and artillery for a long campaign, and German officers to drill the American militia.

Abercrombie reached Albany, and quartered his troops on the citizens. News came in that a French army was advancing on Oswego,

which had just been supplied with provisions by Bradstreet, but Abercrombie and Loudoun, with ten or twelve thousand men at their orders, lay inactive.

The Six Nations, disgusted at such conduct, sent to the French to propose neutrality.

The French were not inactive. They were, indeed, preparing to attack Oswego, and on the 27th of March, 1756, a convoy of provisions and supplies for Oswego was surprised near Fort Bull by a French party from Fort Presentation, now Ogdensburg, under the command of Lieutenant de Lery. But this attack warned the little garrison of Fort Bull, and they prepared to hold the post. De Lery attacked it, and after a stubborn fight the French entered the fort. But the cry of alarm rose, the desperate garrison had fired the powder-magazine, and the French had barely time to draw off when, with a roar like thunder, an explosion sent in all directions the material of the fort, and the valuable munitions stored there. Thus, by the inaction of the English generals, the line of forts carefully prepared by the provincial authorities was broken and Oswego isolated. Then the energetic de Villiers posted himself at the mouth of Sandy Creek, and by his vigilance and activity completely cut Oswego off from all relief.

France had seen the English armaments cross the Atlantic. She, too, sent her well-trained regulars, with abundant supplies, and at their head one of the knightliest of men, the Marquis de Montcalm, whose brother is remembered in history as one of the infant prodigies. This capable soldier, a man able to understand what war in America was to be, hastened at once to Ticonderoga, examined all the country around it, and took measures for its defense. Then he resolved by secrecy and celerity to take Oswego. Some of his troops were already at Fort

Frontenac; he led others in person from Montreal, regiments of regulars, and a large force of Canadians and Indians. On the morning of the 4th of August he reviewed his troops at Fort Frontenac; before midnight, on the 6th, he was at anchor in Sackett's Harbor.

The English had for years been fortifying Oswego. The main fort was on the right bank of the river, a large stone building surrounded by a wall flanked by bastions. On the other bank of the river frowned Fort Ontario, erected more recently. This outpost was at once invested, and though the garrison held out for a day, they at last, at nightfall, spiked their guns and retreated to Fort Oswego, under cover of the darkness.

Montcalm occupied the fort at once, and turned the cannons on Fort Oswego, while Rigaud, with a detachment, crossed the river under fire, and gained a wooded height beyond the fort, cutting it off from another little work called Fort George. The next morning a furious fire was opened upon the fort, and at eight o'clock, Colonel Mercer was killed, and the wall was soon breached. Just as Montcalm was preparing to storm the place, Littlehales, at ten o'clock, hoisted the white flag. Montcalm gave them no time, but insisted on an immediate surrender, for he had intercepted a letter announcing that General Webb was on his way to relieve the fort, General Loudoun having at last concluded that there was some danger. By eleven o'clock the capitulation was signed, and Shirley's and Pepperell's regiments, sixteen hundred strong, marched out as prisoners of war, to be sent down the St. Lawrence. More than a hundred cannon, six vessels of war, a large number of boats, and great quantities of ammunition and provisions remained with the forts in the hands of the prompt and energetic Montcalm. He planted the cross and the arms of France, then demolished the forts

almost in sight of Webb, who, learning the full extent of the disaster, retreated with the haste he should have shown in coming.

Loudoun quartered his useless army on New York and Philadelphia, leaving the French in possession of the frontiers, and the Indians ravaging all the distant settlements.

But while the English commanders were thus losing valuable time, and the Governors of the colonies were planning the next campaign, there was hot work going on. Lake Champlain, even in mid-winter, was a battle-ground. Among the American rangers at Fort William Henry were men who were one day to occupy no inconsiderable place in their country's history, John Stark and Israel Putnam.

Many were the exploits of the rangers. Soon after the opening of the year 1757, Stark, with seventy-four men, started down the frozen surface of the lake on a scout. Between Ticonderoga and Crown Point they saw a French party of ten or eleven sledges come dashing on, gay and merry. A sudden dash, a brisk fire, three sledges are captured, with seven prisoners. The rest give the alarm, and out swarm a party of French and Indians, more than double the number of Stark's force. He gained a rising ground, and a covert of trees. There he kept up the fight all day long. At night he effected a retreat, with a loss of twenty killed and missing. This exploit won Stark his first promotion.

Israel Putnam had been fond of adventure from his boyhood in Connecticut; and many stories are told showing his fearless courage and persistent daring. One of our historical scholars has worked hard to show that they are all only stories, but we shall tell some, and if the reader believes them, we cannot help it.

One day, he, with a party of boys, espied a fine bird's nest on a very

high tree. "I'll wager," said young Israel, "that there is not a boy for ten miles around that can get that nest," and when all agreed, still turning their longing looks at the unattainable prize, he cried out, "I'll try." Up he swarmed, and reached the limb, but it was too slender to bear his weight; still he attempted to climb out on it; a crackling sound was heard, but though his young comrades, full of terror, cried out to him not to venture, on he went. "I've got it," he shouted, but his cry was premature, the limb broke and he fell. Fortunately his trowsers caught in one of the lower limbs, and there he hung head downward.

"Put, are you hurt?" they asked. "No," he replied, "but I can't get down unless some one can get up here and cut me clear." There was no knife among them, and seeing their hesitation, he called out to one who had a rifle,

"Jim Randall, fire at the little branch that holds me, and if you are a good shot save me."

"But you'll fall!"

"Jim Randall, will you fire!" and fire he did; the ball struck, the splinters flew, and Putnam fell to the ground, escaping with a few bruises. When they had picked him up, and he could breathe, he stuck his hand into his pocket and drew out the nest: "I said I would get that nest, and I was bound to have it."

His adventure with the wolf some years later was a famous one, and was repeated in various forms in schoolbooks for years.

An old she-wolf had ravaged the sheepfolds of all the Pomfret farmers, and was finally tracked to a cave on the Connecticut. All attempts to worry and smoke her out failed. Then Putnam ventured in with a torch in one hand, and a rope attached to his leg, that he might

be drawn out if necessary. He found the cavern slope down for some fifteen feet, then, after a level of ten, ascend for about sixteen feet. He kept steadily on till his torchlight flashed in the eyes of the savage brute. Jerking the rope he was drawn out, and entering with his rifle, killed her as she was springing on him. As soon as he fired they drew him out, but he went back to drag her out.

Early in the war he had enlisted a number of his neighbors, and reported himself at Fort William Henry.

As March, 1757, wore on, Peter Francis de Rigaud, a brother of the Governor of Canada, set out on a winter expedition against Fort William Henry, a march of a hundred and eighty miles, in snow-shoes, dragging their provisions on sledges, using dogs to draw them over the smooth ice. Such was the service to which the hardy Canadians were inured. On the night of the 16th, the eve of St. Patrick's day, they came in sight of the fort, as they had planned; for knowing that there were many Irishmen in the British regulars, they counted on a general merrymaking in the fort, and very little watchfulness for any enemy. They had reckoned well. The liquor flowed free and fast, but Stark, who was temporarily in command of the Rangers, many of whom were Irish, fearful of mischief, forbade the sutler to issue any spirits to the men without a written order, and then pretended to have such a lame hand that he could not write one. While all is merry within, a French pioneer tries the ice without with his axe, then a rush is made with scaling-ladders to surprise the fort. Stark's foresight saved it. The Rangers held them at bay, and after a sharp struggle, brave Rigaud drew off, finding his force too small; but he burned three vessels, three hundred batteaux, large boats for carrying troops, and the huts of the Rangers within their pickets, and the store-houses. If he failed to carry

William Henry, at leas the prevented any English movement against Fort Carillon at Ticonderoga.

Loudoun now formed a new plan. Leaving Bouquet to watch the Carolina frontier, Stanwix the West, and Webb at Lake George, he prepared, with the New England and Nova Scotia forces, to take Louisburg. The slow English general impressed four hundred men at New York, and seized vessels, and, with his army, including five thousand regulars who had just come over under Lord Howe, he sailed to Halifax. There he heard what he should have learned before, that Louisburg was held by a very strong garrison, and covered by a large French fleet. His whole work was useless, and he sailed back to New York without striking a blow.

The French had been wide awake. "Now is our time," said they. Montcalm, with fresh troops from France, and Indians from the West, was preparing to move on Fort George ; and the French forts on the lake were all strong, with intrenched camps between them. Montcalm was soon on the spot, showing officers and men an example of endurance and watchfulness. The French parties swarmed around the English posts. No one could venture out. Marin in one expedition returned with forty-two scalps. But the American boatmen boldly held the lake. The Ottawas resolved to teach them a lesson. On the 24th of July, they ambuscaded Colonel Palmer's barges. The Indians rushed on his party suddenly, terrified them by their yells, so that only two barges escaped, all the rest were taken or sunk ; a hundred and sixty of the Americans perished, nearly as many, including eight officers, were taken prisoners.

Then on the plain above the portage of Lake George, Montcalm held a general council of all his Indian allies, tribes from the banks of Lake

Superior and Lake Michigan, to tribes on the sea-coast of Maine. To the Iroquois, as the most numerous, he gave the great Wampum belt of six thousand beads, which was to bind them all together. The Iroquois gave it in turn to the Ottawas, and other western tribes.

Then, slowly and cautiously, he moved up the lake to attack the fort. On the morning of the 2d of August, the Indians launched boldly out into the lake, and in a long line of canoes stretched across its beautiful bosom, making the shores echo with their furious war-cry.

The English garrison under Colonel Monro were taken by surprise. They were surrounded on all sides. La Corne with his Canadians cut them off from the Hudson, Montcalm with his main body occupied the skirt of the wood on the west side of the lake, and detachments burned all the English barracks, and cut off the stragglers.

Webb lay at Fort Edward with four thousand men, and could have called out the militia, but he did nothing, leaving the gallant Monro and his garrison of five hundred, and the seventeen hundred in the camp to their fate. On the 4th of August, Montcalm summoned him to surrender, but Monro's answer was a defiance. Then the siege began, and the artillery soon opened on the fort, and the French lines narrowed in. At last, when half his guns had been dismounted and his ammunition was almost spent, Monro hung out a flag of truce.

The siege had cost the English one hundred and eight killed, one hundred and fifty wounded; while that of the French, though the attacking party, had not been half that number.

Lieutenant Colonel Young met Montcalm in the French trench. The French general at once summoned the Indian chiefs, that they might concur in the terms granted, and adhere to them. At noon, the capitulation was signed. The English, pledging themselves not to

serve against the French for eighteen months, were to be sent to Fort Edward under an escort, with their private effects, leaving all the arms and munitions of war; all the French and Indian prisoners were to be liberated. Montcalm had kept all intoxicating drinks from his Indians, and urged the English to destroy everything of the kind in the fort. At night, the English garrison retired to the camp under French guard, and Montcalm occupied the fort. By a fatal imprudence, the English neglected to destroy the liquor, and, what was worse, gave it freely to the Indians. The night was a hideous debauchery. At daybreak, as the English troops filed out, the drunken Indians began to plunder and then to tomahawk them. Many—thirty, perhaps fifty—were slain; others fled to the woods. The little French escort was powerless; Montcalm hurried up with his officers, and a corps of troops, and many were wounded in attempting to save the English. At last they gathered fifteen hundred of the terror-stricken people, and in all haste guided them to Fort Edward. Others, in the midst of the French, reached Fort William Henry again, and for days cannon were fired, and scouting parties sent out till five hundred more were collected, who were escorted to Albany.

This massacre, more than the battle, filled all with terror. Webb lay shivering at Fort Edward; Albany, in danger, called on New England for aid; people west of the Connecticut were ordered to destroy their wagons and drive in their cattle. Loudoun, whose pompous plans were to demolish French power, proposed to encamp on Long Island so as to save the British colonies!

Montcalm demolished the fort, however, and withdrew. His Canadians had their harvests to gather in, for these men alternately fought and tilled the soil. The vast stores of the English army were a treas-

ure to Canada, and were won with a loss of only fifty-three men.

The English were driven from Lake Champlain, now left to its solitude; they were driven from Lake Ontario; they had been driven from the Ohio. France seemed to predominate in North America. England and her colonies were humiliated. Yet the power of France hung by a thread. Canada was really exhausted, and abandoned by the unworthy King of France, whose name and whose vile favorites' names are never uttered, even now, by old Canadian-French without the expression of the deepest contempt. "I shudder," wrote Montcalm, in February, 1758, "when I think of provisions. The famine is very great." "For all our success New France needs peace. Otherwise, sooner or later it must fall, such are the numbers of the English, such the difficulties of our receiving supplies."

Bread was dealt out by weight to soldiers and inhabitants. The only hope was in the wonderful genius of Montcalm, and the mismanagement of the English commanders.

But a new spirit had been infused into English affairs. Pitt was called to the ministry by the will of the English people. His vigorous mind gave order and system to the whole conduct of the war.

As before, three several expeditions were set on foot. A fleet, under Admiral Boscawen, was to bear to Cape Breton an army under the cautious Jeffrey Amherst and James Wolfe, whose singular military ability had been already remarked. General Forbes, with another army, was to accomplish what Braddock had failed in, the conquest of the Ohio valley; while the army to operate against the French on Lake Champlain, and reduce the enemy's forts, Carillon at Ticonderoga, and St. Frederic at Crown Point, was to be commanded by Abercrombie.

with whom Pitt associated Lord Howe as the real soul of the enterprise.

The armies were to be well officered, and to lack nothing really required.

Boscawen's fleet of twenty-two ships of the line and fifteen frigates, in June, 1758, was discerned from the walls of Louisburg. Under the fire of the frigates, the army of ten thousand men landed, through the surf-beaten, rocky shore, Wolfe leading the first division, and jumping into the water to form his men, and charge the French battery and abattis of felled trees. The French were driven in and the place invested. Thus one point was gained. Wolfe, heading the light infantry and Highlanders, soon gained another, surprising the lighthouse battery on the northeast of the harbor entrance.

Then for more than a month the siege went on, the English ships and batteries hurling their shells into the doomed place till it was but a heap of ruins. The French ships in the harbor were burned or captured by Boscawen.

The Chevalier de Drucour had done all that a brave man could. On the 27th of July, 1758, he capitulated, the French forces were sent to France, and the English commander took possession of Cape Breton and Prince Edward's Island.

Louisburg, once a thriving city, with the strongest fortress in the New World, was left to decay. It is now only a mass of ruins, one of the cities of the past, like Jamestown and St. Mary's.

That same month beheld another and still more formidable English army at Lake Champlain. Nearly ten thousand provincial troops from New England, New York, and New Jersey, among them Roger's experienced and daring Rangers, had gathered, with their own officers and

chaplains, and beside them lay the more soldierly-looking camp, where six thousand regulars, trained in battle-fields and campaigns of the Old World, prepared for action. It was by far the largest body of white troops ever assembled in North America. This host embarked on the beautiful waters of Lake George, in more than a thousand batteaux and boats, with their artillery on rafts, all gay with flags, while the martial strains from the bands woke the echoes. All day long, under a cloudless sky, the fleet moved on undisturbed by the appearance of a foeman. Landing at sunset, at Sabbath Day Point, they began to talk over the fight of the coming day.

Montcalm, in himself a host, vigilant, active, farsighted, had been long aware of the force approaching him. His Fort Carillon was strongly placed. He improved its advantages by destroying bridges and encumbering roads. His own position, on a height, he fortified by felling trees, and using every natural impediment. He called in all his outposts but one under de Trepezec, and every man plied the axe to strengthen and defend the lines.

Early the next morning, the English, under Howe, landed on the west side of the lake, about a mile above the rapids. Bourlamaque, sent out to watch their movements, fell back slowly. De Trepezec, misled by guides, suddenly came upon the English advance near Trout Brook. Without regarding the disparity of numbers, de Trepezec charged; the contest was short and desperate; half the French perished, half remained prisoners, but the cause of English supremacy lost Lord Howe, who fell at the head of his men. Abercrombie withdrew his troops to their landing-place. The next day he prepared to attack Montcalm in form. A triple line was formed, out of cannon-shot; rangers, boatmen, and light infantry in the van; then the pro-

vincial troops ; the regulars forming the third line. Johnson, who came up with his Indians, took no part.

Montcalm's little force were still laboring at their intrenchments, when the cannon sounded to bid them drop axe, and spade, and pick, and seize their muskets. De Levi had come in the night before with four hundred men, and they were all sanguine. Montcalm, at a point where his keen eye could sweep the line, threw off his coat for a hot day's work. The English regulars were to pass through the provincials, and carry the French line with a charge of bayonets. The French were to keep motionless till the order to fire. Thus, without a shot on either side, the English line moved on. Up and up the rocky hill-side, it moved in splendid style, till it became disordered amid the rocks, and trees, and rubbish. Then, from the whole French line, came a well-delivered and continuous fire of cannon and musketry. Officers and men went down by hundreds, but, though Abercrombie was far in the rear, the officers in the field fought like heroes ; again and again, they led up their men to assail the less complete parts of the French lines, and endeavoring to turn their left, where Bourlamaque repulsed them till he was dangerously wounded, and was hard pressed. The fate of the day seemed to waver, when Montcalm sent reinforcements that saved his line.

For three hours the attacks were incessant, and the whole force was thrown on the French centre and left. Again Montcalm and de Levi were at hand, and the English line repulsed. One last desperate charge on the centre, and the battle was over ; the English line fell back in such disorder that they fired into each other. The battle of Ticonderoga was lost. Two thousand English lay dead or wounded on the bloody slope.

Abercrombie, in fright and consternation, with an army four times that of Montcalm, fled to his boats in disorder, and did not feel safe till he had the lake between him and the French.

To keep up the panic, Montcalm sent out daring parties. One of these seized a convoy between two of Abercrombie's forts. Rogers with his rangers attempted to surprise them. A brisk action occurred, in which Putnam, commanding the rear, was captured with twelve or fourteen rangers. His men were cut down at once. Himself, too noble a prize, was bound to a tree, and a tomahawk, hurled in wantonness, laid open his cheek. The stake would have been surely his fate had not Marin, a French officer, rescued him, and finally, after many hardships at the hands of the Indians, enabled him to reach Montreal.

Bradstreet, a provincial officer, had early in the campaign asked leave to operate against Fort Frontenac, now Kingston. At last Abercrombie listened to him. Bradstreet, with twenty-seven hundred men of New York and Massachusetts, and a few Indians, pushed on to Oswego, whence he passed in boats across Lake Ontario, and on the 25th of August landed within a mile of the fortress by which France controlled the lake.

The French garrison, astounded at the unexpected appearance of an English force, fled, leaving a few to surrender to Bradstreet the fort, with the armed vessels under its guns, and all the supplies intended for Fort du Quesne, and the other frontier posts, which were thus doomed. Bradstreet's success thus secured that of Forbes, who, with an army of Highlanders from South Carolina, Royal Americans, two fine Virginia regiments under Washington, prepared to reduce Fort du Quesne. Wayne was here as a boy to see what war was like, and the future painter, West, was able here to see subjects for his pencil in later days.

Bouquet, who was in the advance, detached eight hundred Highlanders and Virginians under Grant to reconnoitre. Grant, unaware that Aubry had reached the French fort with a reinforcement, conceived the plan of taking it. He advanced in sight, and posted his men so as to cut off a party sallying out. But Aubry rushed out with his whole force, attacking Grant with such fury along his whole line, that he gave him no time to get his men together, but routed his whole command so completely that Grant fled, leaving nearly three hundred killed or prisoners. Grant, a few moments before elated with the idea of victory, was himself taken.

Forbes, who was dying with a fatal malady, came slowly on; so slowly, that Washington at last obtained leave to push on more rapidly with a part of the force. On the 24th of November, 1758, the general encamped within ten miles of the fort. Then de Lignery, the French commander, who had long been out of provisions, and of goods to win the Indians, set fire to the fort which had begun the war; lighted by the flames, his boats pushed off, some for Fort Machault, some for the Mississippi. The next day, the English army took possession of the spot, which at the suggestion of Forbes, was named in honor of the statesman who had planned the conduct of the war. Pittsburg is still a monument of his ability, and of the gratitude felt towards him in America.

One of their first cares was to visit Braddock's field, and inter the bones of their countrymen who fell in that disastrous day.

Both parties prepared for the campaign of 1759. Pitt planned again three expeditions, and sent from England men and supplies to ensure their success. France did nothing to save Canada, and that colony was left in its hour of supreme danger to battle for its own ex-

istence, and for the honor of France. Wolfe, with an army of eleven thousand men, was to be conveyed by Admiral Saunders' fleet up the St. Lawrence, where he was to reduce Quebec. Amherst, who was made Governor of Virginia, and commander-in-chief of the English armies in America, was to sweep through Lake Champlain, and occupy Montreal, while an army under Prideaux was to capture Fort Niagara, now almost isolated.

To save, if possible, this last post, Montcalm sent, in April, Captain Pouchot, a skillful engineer, with three hundred regulars and Canadians, all he could spare. It was not in hopes of holding Niagara, but solely to divert the English forces from Canada. Pouchot at once strengthened his fortifications, and tried to gain the Senecas, who knew him well. He also called on Lignery, at the Ohio, and Aubry, in Illinois, for aid.

Meanwhile General Prideaux, with two battalions from New York, a battalion of Royal Americans, two English regiments, and artillery, with a large Indian force under Sir William Johnson, advanced to reduce the fort, of which the ruins are still visible on the flat, narrow promontory jutting out into the rapid Niagara. They embarked on Lake Ontario, at Oswego, and soon landed near the fort, which was at once invested in form. Pouchot was summoned to surrender, but returned a decided refusal. Then the siege began, Pouchot returning Prideaux's fire with effect; shortly after the English general was killed by the bursting of one of his own mortars, and the command devolved on Johnson, who followed up his plans with skill and judgment. Pouchot's only hope was in the forces that d'Aubry and Lignery might collect. At last an Indian brought in letters announcing their approach. De Lignery had gathered the French on the Ohio, with all friendly In-

dians ; d'Aubry came at the head of Illinois settlers and Indians, amounting in all to about twelve hundred men.

Johnson prepared to receive them, and check any sally from the fort. He threw his light infantry, supported by grenadiers and troops of the line, between the fort and the falls, with his Indians on the flanks, and in ambush.

Aubry and Lignery charged impetuously, but failed to move the British line, while the English Indians galled their flanks so, that when the English advanced, they were thrown into disorder and broken. An utter rout ensued, de Lignery, Aubry, with many officers, were wounded and taken, others were cut down in the pursuit, in which the Indians and English slaughtered without mercy. Among the rest, the Rev. Mr. Virot, the chaplain of the French force, was taken and hewed to pieces.

Pouchot, from his fort, saw what seemed a mere skirmish ; when he learned the full extent of the disaster, and the retreat, towards Detroit, of the survivors, he looked at the ruined walls of his fort, and capitulated with his brave handful of men, which had held in check the well-appointed force of Johnson.

De Levi then took post at Ogdensburg, to prevent Prideaux descending at once on Montreal. Amherst sent Gage to drive him from that position, but Gage, like Amherst, loitered, and Montreal, menaced by two armies, and almost defenseless, still remained in the hands of the French. Conscious of their inability to resist the British artillery and army, the French troops under Bourlamaque abandoned their lines at Fort Carillon, Ticonderoga, and retreated, leaving only a small garrison in the place. A few days later, these and the garrison of Fort Frederic fell back to Isle aux Noix, and the flag of France ceased to float over the soil of New York.

Amherst might then have occupied Montreal, and co-operated with Wolfe before Quebec, but he merely sent a detachment to destroy the Abenaki town of St. Francis, and then prepared to go into winter quarters.

Wolfe's army had meanwhile, in June, been borne within sight of Quebec, by Saunders' fleet of forty-four men-of-war, frigates, and armed vessels. On the 26th of June, the whole armament arrived off Isle Orleans, on which they disembarked the next day.

Wolfe could now, on the spot, see the magnitude of the task assigned to him. Louisburg was fortified by science, but there, nature aided science to make the place nearly impregnable. Every point for miles above and below the city, was fortified and defended, and Montcalm. directing, animating all, was no unworthy antagonist.

The English fleet lay anchored in the river, controlling it. The French first attempted to destroy or cripple the fleet, by sending down fireships, but these were grappled by the sailors and towed away from the shipping.

The English army lay encamped across Isle Orleans, and soon occupied Point Levi, planting batteries of mortars and heavy artillery to bombard the city at the narrowest part of the river. Red-hot balls and shells poured into the ill-fated city. The night was lighted up by the glare of these rocket-like engines of destruction, as they curved over the river, and fell into Quebec. Flames shot up in all directions, lighting up the scene far and near. Fifty houses were set on fire in a single night, the lower town was demolished, the upper town greatly injured.

This was kept up for a month, but no impression was made, and the French seemed to have no idea of surrender.

Wolfe resolved to force Montcalm to an action. He tried the line of the Montmorency, but could not discover a place through which he could force his way. Then he explored above the city, but in vain. Almost desperate, he selected a landing-place at Montmorency. The grenadiers and Royal Americans landed, and without waiting for support, ran hastily towards the French entrenchments, from which they were hurled back in disorder. Other troops came up, but Wolfe saw it would be useless to sacrifice his men in a vain attempt. He re-embarked, having lost four hundred men.

Murray, sent above Quebec, dispersed some invalids and women at Deschambault, and heard of the fall of Niagara, and of the French retreat from Ticonderoga and Crown Point. Wolfe looked now for Amherst, but no messenger even came from that general.

Wolfe then laid before his three brigadiers three plans for attacking Montcalm. All were rejected, and it was determined to convey four or five thousand men above the town, and draw Montcalm from his impregnable position to an open action, Wolfe, himself, began to examine the shore almost inch by inch. He himself discovered the cove which now bears his name. He saw the narrow path winding up, and the petty force that held its termination on the summit. Here he resolved to land his troops by surprise.

Montcalm, believing the worst danger past, had sent de Levi with a detachment to Montreal. Bougainville was watching the English along the shore.

Admiral Holmes was at once sent with some ships to hold Bougainville. Saunders set the active James Cook, soon, like Bougainville, to be known by his voyage around the world, to sound near Beaupré as if for a landing. Then Wolfe, on the 13th of September, with Monckton

and Murray, and about half the force, set off in boats, and glided down. They soon reached the cove, hidden by the over-hanging rock, and were taken for a French party expected with provisions. Wolfe and the troops leaped ashore; the light infantry and Highlanders clambered up the steep hill-side, aided by the stunted trees and shrubs, and after a brief skirmish, dispersed the picket and guard under de Vergor at the summit. The heights gained, the rest followed, and at day-break, Wolfe, with a small army of veterans, and four cannon from an abandoned battery, was drawn up on the Plains of Abraham, so called from Abraham Martin, one of the earliest settlers of Quebec. Montcalm believed it only a small party. When the truth was made clear, he saw that the decisive moment was come. "They have at last got to the weak side of this wretched garrison," he cried; "we must crush them before noon."

He at once ordered the Guyenne regiment to the heights to watch the enemy, and leaving only fourteen hundred at Beauport, in the intrenched camp, moved with the rest. He sent off to call in Bougainville, but the messengers lost precious time. De Levi too was summoned, though too far distant to arrive in time.

The French troops had more than three miles to march, a hill-side to climb, and heavy grain-fields to cross. They came almost at a run, and reached the battle-field exhausted, while Wolfe's men had enjoyed four hours' rest.

The two armies were about equal in numbers, but Wolfe's was composed of well-disciplined regulars, while half of Montcalm's were militia and Indians.

Separated by a little rising ground, the two forces cannonaded each other for about an hour, while the skirmishers kept up a fire of musketry.

Montcalm's army, with the regulars and artillery as the centre, had its right, of the Quebec and Montreal militia, resting on the Sainte Foye road, the left, composed of Montreal and Three River militia, stretching to the hill overlooking the river. Wolfe was drawn up before a series of knolls which shielded him from the guns of Quebec. Monckton was on his right, at the Samos wood, and Townshend on his left.

Montcalm led the army impetuously to the attack; the English, by Wolfe's orders, held their fire till the French were within forty yards, then poured in a steady, well-directed fire. It was fearfully destructive. Montcalm's two brigadiers, de Sennezergues and Fontbrune, were killed, and the whole French thrown into confusion. Wolfe, who had been cheering on his men, in spite of two slight wounds, now led a charge at the head of his grenadiers upon the French left. It gave way, and only a part, covered by trees, kept up the fight, galling the English flank. In the midst of this success, a third ball struck Wolfe in the breast, inflicting a mortal wound. "Support me," he cried, to an officer near him; "let not my brave fellows see me drop." He was carried to the rear, and an officer supported him, as they raised him to take a drink. "They run, they run," said the officer, looking over the field. "Who run?" asked the dying hero. "The French," replied the officer, "are giving way everywhere." "Now, God be praised, I die happy!" said Wolfe, as he expired.

Montcalm did all that he could to rally his men, and retrieve the day. While covering the retreat of his force, he too was mortally wounded near the St. John's gate. Two grenadiers ran to his support, and by their aid he entered the city, replying with his usual courteous grace to the expressions of commiseration from some ladies. A sur-

geon pronounced his wound fatal. He gave the last directions, and said: "I leave the affairs of the King, my dear master, in good hands. I have always entertained great esteem for the talents and ability of General de Levi." With his dying hand he wrote to Townshend, commending the prisoners, both French and Canadians, to his humanity. Then he gave himself entirely to preparation for a Christian death.

Bougainville arrived in time to see the rout of the French army. Townshend feared to engage him, and he himself, not venturing to renew the battle, drew off.

The defeat of Montcalm left Quebec at the mercy of the English. Vaudreuil, Governor of Canada, wrote to de Ramsay, who was in command at Quebec, not to wait for an assault, but to raise the white flag as soon as his supplies were exhausted.

There were, indeed, only a few days' provisions in the place, so that Ramsay, seeing no hope of relief, capitulated on the 18th September.

The campaign of Wolfe and Saunders on the St. Lawrence had thus been brilliant and successful, and we can only regret that Wolfe tarnished his name by fearful cruelties on the Canadian villagers, many of whom were butchered in cold blood, amid their blazing homes.

Amherst lay inactive, and in the spring moved his army of ten thousand men to Oswego, although the French had abandoned all their works between Lake Champlain and Montreal, and, as we shall see further on, it was not till nearly a year after Wolfe's glorious victory and death that Amherst entered Montreal.

The American colonies had been induced to look upon some infringements on their liberties as military necessities growing out of the war with Canada, and like many nations in history, they were deluded by

this; but they awoke in time. They already began to fear that their freedom was menaced. In its exultation, the English Government threw off the mask, and by resorting to odious and illegal Writs of Assistance to enforce the British Acts of Trade, drew on itself the hostility of almost all the colonists.

CHAPTER VII.

Reign of George III.—The Cherokee War—The Treaty of Peace with France—Florida taken in exchange for Havana—Pontiac's Conspiracy—England resolved to tax America—Stamp Act Riots in America—Battle of Golden Hill—Boston Massacre—The Tax on Tea—Resistance of America—The Boston Tea Party—North Carolina Regulators—New Indian War.

WHILE his American affairs were in this position, George II. suddenly died of apoplexy, and on the 25th of October, 1760, his grandson, George III., ascended the throne, inheriting in Europe the kingdom of England and the Electorate of Hanover, and possessing half the northern continent of America, in itself a realm whose government required the utmost justice and wisdom. While the northern colonies were engaging the French, Carolina was involved in an Indian war, by the mere wantonness of an English Governor, self-sufficient and ignorant like most of his class. The Cherokees had ever been friends of the English, as the neighboring colonies had often recognized. In the wars, their braves had served faithfully, but no notice was taken of them, and although they had left their fields untilled to serve in the army, no provision was made for their wives and children, or for themselves on returning to their untilled fields. Half starving, these braves, on their way home, here and there, took the food they needed to reach their villages. The colonists pursued them and killed several.

A spirit of revenge was excited. Two soldiers were killed at Telli-

quo, in revenge. This was the act of a few. The nation disavowed them, and sought to renew the former alliance and friendship.

But Governor Lyttleton demanded the murderers; and when they hesitated, stopped all ammunition and goods on their way to the Indian towns. All was excitement in the Cherokee towns, and they saw no way to peace except by taking up arms.

Lyttleton called on the neighboring colonies, and friendly tribes, for aid.

Oconostata, the great warrior of the Cherokees, came to Charleston. Lyttleton repulsed him rudely. "I love the white people," said the chief; "they and the Indians shall not hurt one another; I reckon myself as one with you."

But Lyttleton was bent on an Indian war: "I am now going with a great many of my warriors to your nation," was his fierce reply, "in order to demand satisfaction of them. If you will not give it when I come to your nation, I shall take it."

He set out from Charleston with the Indian envoys under guard, and, by his display of force, compelled the Cherokees to sign a treaty of peace in December, retaining hostages for its fulfillment.

His exultation at this was unbounded, but he little knew the Indian character. They were brooding over the matter, with hearts full of fury. Oconostata resolved to rescue the hostages, and the very treaty was a declaration of war. The commandant at Fort Prince George was lured out into an ambuscade and shot. It was the death-knell of the hostages, who were all butchered. As this became known, the mountains echoed with the war-song, and, obtaining ammunition from Louisiana, the Cherokees burst like a destroying hurricane along the frontier. The Muskogees, or Creeks, seemed ready to join them, and Carolina was in imminent peril.

Amherst was called upon for aid. He ordered Montgomery and Grant from the Ohio, with Highlanders and Royal Americans. At Ninety-six these regulars joined a body of Carolina rangers. They moved rapidly into the Cherokee country, and, using Indian tactics against the red men, came by surprise on the village of Little Keowee. Though the barking of a dog gave an alarm, it was too late. The English burst in upon them, slaughtering nearly all, sparing only some women and children. The other towns in the beautiful Keowee valley were then abandoned by the Cherokees, and given to the flames by the army. These villages were all beautifully situated ; with neat houses, and well-filled storehouses of Indian corn. The Cherokees, taken utterly by surprise, and never dreaming of so prompt an invasion, had made no preparations. All was destroyed, and the articles left in the houses, money and watches, wampum and skins, enriched the soldiery.

Montgomery sent to offer peace before treating the other towns in like manner. But the haughty chief made no reply. Then Montgomery crossed the Alleghany. No enemy was seen till he reached the Little Tennessee. One day, towards the end of June, 1760, as he was pushing along the muddy bank of the river, through a broken valley covered with dense undergrowth, the Cherokees suddenly sprang from the bushes, and a withering volley staggered the line. The officer leading the advance, the gallant Morrison, fell, but there was no flight, no disorder ; the Highlanders and provincials drove the enemy from their coverts, and chasing them from height to hollow, made the wilderness ring with their cheers and shouts. But the victory cost Montgomery twenty killed and seventy-six wounded.

He was now sadly perplexed. To go on with his wounded was diffi-

cult indeed ; and this he must do to relieve Fort Loudoun. So, deceiving the Cherokees by kindling fires, he fell back, and on the 1st of July reached Fort Prince George.

Fort Loudoun was left to its fate. It surrendered to Oconostata on the 8th of August, and the garrison, two hundred men, were sent towards Carolina. At Telliquo, the fugitives were surrounded ; Demeré, the commander, and twenty-six officers and men, were killed for the murdered hostages. The rest were taken back and divided among the tribes. Attakullakulla, the head chief of the Cherokees, who possessed little real authority, was friendly to the whites. He resolved to rescue Stuart, an old friend of his, who was now a prisoner. To save him from being compelled to fight against his countrymen, Attakullakulla, or Little Carpenter, as the Carolinians called him, took him off, pretending that he required his aid in hunting. Once in the woods, the chief struck for Virginia, and for nine days and nights travelled on through the wilderness as only an Indian could travel, till at last they encountered a Virginia detachment.

Montgomery's campaign had but made the Cherokees resolute and vindictive. Yet he resolved to depart, and, in spite of all the entreaty of the people, sailed for New York with part of his force.

It required another tedious expedition under Grant, in 1761, to close the war. Another battle was fought on the banks of the Little Tennessee, in which the Cherokees were again defeated. Then the new Cherokee towns and settlements were wasted, and four thousand natives left homeless. Their spirit was broken. They sought peace.

While this war, provoked by a haughty and ignorant English Governor, was desolating Carolina, England nearly lost Canada. Amherst loitered with his army on the way to Montreal. Murray lay in Que-

bec. Bougainville had come up too late to save Montcalm's army on the Heights of Abraham ; but his forces joined de Levi. That able general attempted to surprise the city in midwinter, but finding it impracticable, laid siege to Quebec, in the early spring, with an army of ten thousand men. On the 28th of April, Murray marched out of the city, and attacked the French line at Sillery wood. The French, under Bourlamaque, met the onset, and charged in turn so furiously that Murray, fearing to be completely surrounded, fled in disorder to the city, leaving a thousand men on the field, and his fine train of artillery. De Levi, who had lost only three hundred men, pushed on, and opened trenches against the town. The English garrison, now sadly cut down, labored earnestly to hold out till aid came. De Levi pushed on to capture Quebec before vessels could reach it. All eyes were turned towards the river in fear and hope. At last vessels were seen, men-of-war were approaching. Every eye was strained to see the first flag. To Murray, the white flag would be a signal of ruin ; to de Levi, one of triumph. It was the English fleet. The last hope of France was gone. De Levi, baffled, abandoned his now useless guns.

On the 7th of September, Amherst met Murray before Montreal. Vaudreuil, the last French Governor, had long expected the day. He capitulated, and surrendered to England all Canada, and the Northwest.

On the 8th of September, 1760, the French rule ended.

The war in the northern part of the continent closed. The British flag floated undisputed from Hudson Bay almost to the Gulf of Mexico, and from the shores of Lake Superior and Michigan to the Atlantic. But, in Europe, the war was raging more fiercely than ever ; almost all the Continental powers being arrayed against England and Prussia. To

carry on the war with Spain, George III., who had now ascended the throne, succeeding his grandfather, George II., in October, 1760, called on his American subjects to aid in reducing Havana. On the 30th of July, 1762, after a siege of twenty-nine days, in which the brave Spanish commander, Don Luis de Velasco, was mortally wounded, Moro castle was taken by storm, by a combined force of English regulars, West India negroes, and sturdy militia, from New England and New York, Putnam among them, with others who had last fought in the chilly borders of Canada. Many of our brave soldiers perished before Havana, in this fatal midsummer campaign in the tropics, and left their bones to decay on that Cuban shore. Havana, and all its wealth, with the castle, fell into the hands of the British.

When, at last, in November, peace was restored, England gave up this conquest for Florida. She also received a cession of all Louisiana, to the Mississippi, except the island of New Orleans; all Canada, Acadia, Cape Breton, all the French possessions, except the two little islands of Saint Pierre and Miquelon, that you can scarcely find on your map. At the same time, France ceded Louisiana to Spain, and the lilied flag ceased to float on the continent of North America, where, but a few years before, her maps showed almost the whole continent as French.

The treaty was definitively signed at Paris, February 10th, 1763.

England had taken possession of all that France claimed as Canada. In September, 1760, Amherst had despatched Rogers, whose rangers had done such signal service against the French, to take possession of Detroit, the key to the West, as well as of Michilimackinac and other posts.

Where Cleveland now stands, he was confronted by Pontiac, the

chieftain of the French Indians, who haughtily demanded his business in that country, without his permission.

Rogers explained to him that the flag of France had fallen, and that he went to take possession of the French posts, to live in peace with all the tribes. After some deliberation, he consented to their progress, and even saved them from an ambuscade of Detroit Indians. Rogers, sending on Vaudreuil's instructions to the French commander. landed with his rangers opposite Detroit, and encamped. An officer was sent over, the French garrison filed out, and laid down their arms : the militia were then disarmed, the French flag was lowered, amid the yells of the Indians. Forts Miami and Ouiatenon, with Michilimackinac, were soon after occupied.

In all the West, one French fort alone was left, that of Fort Chartres in Illinois.

The western tribes found that a new rule had begun.

They did not like it.

From the banks of the Niagara to the shores of Lake Superior, from Lake Erie to the Gulf of Mexico, there was a fast growing hate of the English, and their colonists. Could France have called out this spirit a few years before she might have saved Canada.

The discontent that pervaded all the tribes, prepared them for any plot. All that was required was a leader, and this soon appeared in Pontiac, Chief of the Ottawas, said by some to have been himself a Catawba. Nature had made him a leader of men ; he was already revered by all the Indian tribes of the northwest as a hero, a man of prowess in war, of wisdom in council, a man of integrity and humanity, as they regarded it.

He soon formed a vast conspiracy among the tribes, for a simultane-

ous attack on the English posts. He himself was to surprise Detroit. His preparations were crafty indeed. Announcing to Gladwin, the commander, that he would in a few days pay him a visit with some of his braves, he, in the Indian villages around the fort, prepared his men for the work of slaughter. Securing saws and files, they cut off the barrels of their guns so that they could hide them under their blankets. And with these, and knives and tomahawks, sharpened to their keenest edge, the chieftain, with about three hundred of his braves, stalked into the fort on the 7th of May. Pontiac bore a wampum belt, white on one side, green on the other; when he turned this his men were to begin the work.

But Gladwin had been warned the day before by an Ojibwa girl, and was ready for the emergency. Pontiac rose, holding the fatal belt, and began to address Gladwin, professing strong attachment to the English, and desiring to smoke the pipe of peace. As he raised the belt, Gladwin made a slight motion with his head, a sudden clang of arms rang from the hall without, and the long roll of the drum drowned the voice of the chief. Pontiac hesitated, and closing his address, sat down, baffled and perplexed.

Gladwin answered in a few words. He wished the friendship of all the tribes, but if they preferred war, stern vengeance should follow the first hostile act. Unwisely, perhaps, he allowed the braves to depart, for the next morning hostilities began. An English party sounding on Lake Huron, were seized and murdered.

On the 10th, Pontiac summoned Gladwin to surrender, and, on his refusal, massacred an old English woman and a sergeant, the only persons of English race who lived outside the fort. Two English officers were also surprised and murdered on Lake St. Clair.

For six hours, the besieging Indians, skulking behind bushes, houses, knolls, or flying rapidly past, poured their deadly shots into the embrasures of the fort, carrying balls in their mouths so as to lose no time in loading. They finally drew off, to begin preparations for a regular siege, and so deceived Gladwin, that he sent out two officers to treat with them. All the Indians in that part had joined Pontiac except the Christian Hurons, whom the missionary Potier long restrained, but even he, at last, failed to control them, and they were forced to join the forces of Pontiac.

On the 16th of May, a party of Indians appeared at the gate of Fort Sandusky. Ensign Paulli, the commander, admitted seven as old acquaintances and friends, and all sat down to smoke. Suddenly a signal was given, and Paulli was seized, bound, and carried out. Every soldier and trader in the post was already murdered.

The old Jesuit mission on the St. Joseph's had become a British post, under command of Ensign Schlosser. On the 25th, a party of Pottawatamies appeared in friendly guise, and were admitted. In less than two minutes Schlosser was seized, and all his men but three butchered and scalped.

On the 13th of May, Lieutenant Cuyler had left Fort Niagara, and embarked from Fort Schlosser, just above the Falls, with ninety-six men, ammunition, and provisions for Detroit. Meeting no enemy, he landed carelessly at Point Pelee, near the mouth of Detroit river, and was preparing to encamp, when he was suddenly attacked by a body of Hurons or Wyandots. Cuyler formed his men around the boats, and a vigorous fire of musketry was kept up, but the Indians made a furious charge, and the English troops were thrown into confusion and fled to their boats. Two boats, with thirty or forty men, escaped, the rest

were taken in triumph past Detroit, where the disappointed garrison saw this sad result with heavy hearts. The prisoners in one boat, when nearing an English vessel off the fort, rose on their guards, and amid the fierce volleys of the Indians, who pursued them, managed to reach the vessel; all the rest were tortured and butchered.

At Fort Miami, near the present Fort Wayne, the commander was enticed out to visit a pretended sick woman. He was at once shot down, and his men were soon surprised and murdered.

At Fort Wea, in Indiana, they were captured in a similar way, but there were kind-hearted French settlers near who purchased their lives.

Thus, fort after fort, so recently garrisoned by English soldiers, disappeared utterly. Officers and men were alike English; had colonial troops been employed, they would have been better fitted to deal with the savages.

Strange was the fall of Fort Michilimackinac. The story is that of a terrible game of La Crosse.

On the 2d of June, the Ojibwas living near assembled near the fort to play this game now so popular in Canada and England. They invited Major Etheridge and his garrison to witness it. All was calm and peaceful. The gate of the stockade was open; the officers, and some of the little garrison, looked on from the top of the palisades.

As the game went on, the ball was driven nearer and nearer, and there were often shouts of applause at a good hit. Suddenly, after a close struggle, the ball came spinning from the midst of the players towards the entrance to the fort. On rushed the players, and passing their squaws, caught from under the women's blankets knives and tomahawks, then rushed with yells of fury into the fort. Etheridge and

Leslie were seized, while every Englishman in or out of the fort, was butchered without mercy. Only one man escaped, Alexander Henry, a trader, who was hid away by a Pawnee woman, a slave to one of the French residing there. But he was finally discovered, and had long to suffer the cruelties and privations of an Indian captive.

At Fort Presqu'ile, where Erie now stands, the brave Ensign Christie made a gallant fight for two days, but finally surrendered. He and his men were taken as prisoners to Detroit.

The garrison at Fort Le Bœuf was attacked, but escaped by night; that at Fort Venango fell, no man knows how, for none was ever seen alive to tell its story.

Fort Pitt and Fort Ligonier were menaced, and finally attacked; the out-lying settlements were in flames; five hundred families from the frontiers of Maryland and Virginia fled to Winchester.

Thus Detroit was left alone in the West. Again Amherst tried to relieve it, and finally threw sixty men into it, in June. Late in July, Dalyell arrived with two hundred and sixty men, entering under cover of night. Full of confidence, this young officer wished at once to make a midnight sally on the savage foe. Gladwin, who had seen enough Indian fighting to know what it was, opposed this, but at last yielded. Before three in the morning, Dalyell sallied out with nearly two hundred and fifty picked men, keeping along shore, and protected by two boats. After a short march, they came to an Indian intrenchment, from which poured out such a deadly volley that the whole body was thrown into confusion. Twenty of the English were killed, and twice as many lay wounded on the battle-field of Bloody Run. Rash, but brave, Dalyell fell while trying to bring off his wounded, and his gay uniform and scalp decked the dusky forms of savages.

This triumph filled the Indians with exultation. No tribe now hesitated. All gathered around Pontiac, who held Detroit besieged by a thousand men.

The English military authorities were roused to something like energy. Bouquet, a Swiss officer of merit, was sent with a considerable force to relieve Fort Pitt, and reinforce Detroit. As he approached Fort Pitt, he was suddenly attacked by the Indians who had been investing that fort. Bouquet and his officers were fit for their task, and the soldiers, chiefly Highlanders, were cool and experienced. All day long, on the 5th of August, they fought the savage foe, and at night they lay on their arms at Edge Hill. The morning showed the Indians in force on every side. Bouquet saw but one course; an Indian one. Posting two companies in ambush, he pretended to retreat in disorder. With wild yells, the Indians rushed on in pursuit in wild confusion, when suddenly, from the right, and left, and front, came the rattle of the deadly musketry. The Indians, crowded together, were shot down in numbers, then, panic-struck, fled, routed and defeated.

Bouquet had won the day, but his killed and wounded were one-fourth of his force, his horses were almost all killed, and it was with great difficulty that in four days he reached Fort Pitt.

But the joy which filled all hearts at Bouquet's success, was damped by an unexpected disaster at Devil's Hole, near Niagara.

At that spot, the road winds near a fearful precipice. On the 13th of September, a numerous train of wagons and pack-horses proceeded from the lower landing to Fort Schlosser, and the next morning returned. As they reached this dangerous spot, they were suddenly greeted by the blaze and rattle of a hundred rifles, and before the smoke lifted, the Indians dashed out with tomahawk and scalping-knife. Horses and

men, in wild panic, went over into the boiling current; many were murdered and scalped in the road. In less time than it takes to record it all was over. Stedman, who commanded the party, cut his way through and escaped. A drummer-boy who went over the precipice was caught by his drum-strap in the branch of a tree, and succeeding at last in quietly getting a foothold, hid away in a hollow of the rock till all was still. At the firing, some soldiers from a little camp rushed out to save the train. They were ambuscaded and cut to pieces; a few only reached Fort Niagara. The Indians who thus opened the war in New York were the Senecas, one of the Six Nations, whom Sir William Johnson was supposed to control so completely.

A reinforcement for Detroit, under Major Wilkins, miscarried, and everything seemed desperate. The first effective measures towards a general pacification proceeded from the French in Illinois. De Noyon, a French officer, still in command at Fort Chartres, sent belts, and messages, and calumets of peace to all the tribes, declaring to them that the King of France had given up all his territories to the King of England, and urging all the tribes to bury the hatchet, and take the English by the hand.

On this, the Wyandots and some other tribes made peace, and abandoned the siege of Detroit. Then Bradstreet arrived with a considerable force, large enough, indeed, to have overawed all, but he acted feebly, and the Indians in bands still ravaged the frontiers, burning and slaughtering. A party of rangers came on a schoolhouse in the woods. All was suspiciously still within. They entered. There lay the teacher dead on the floor, with his Bible in his hand, and his nine pupils scattered around him, all scalped, and all dead but one, who was carefully tended and recovered.

But if Bradstreet acted feebly, Bouquet did not. By rapid movements, by stern and unwavering decision, which no Indian wiles could move, he compelled them to stop hostilities, and give up all their prisoners. The return of the prisoners led to many touching scenes. Members of families long mourned as dead, were again clasped in loving arms. An old woman had lost her daughter nine years before. In the crowd of female captives, given up by the Indians, she discovered one in whose swarthy and painted face she thought she could still trace the likeness of her lost darling. She addressed her in all the endearing words a mother can employ, but the girl, who had forgotten almost every word of English, gave no sign of recognition. The poor old mother complained bitterly, that the child whom she so often fondled on her knee had forgotten her in her old age. Colonel Bouquet watched the scene, touched with pity. A thought struck him as she uttered these words. "Sing her," he exclaimed, "the song you used to sing to her when a child." The woman obeyed. Almost instantly a bright look came into the girl's face, she hesitated as if trying to recall something long past, then sprang into her mother's arms. The chord had been touched.

Pontiac retired from Detroit, and after vain endeavors to rouse other tribes to join him, calmly awaited proposals of peace. Croghan soon appeared ; the various tribes submitted to the English power ; and at last, British troops were enabled to reach Fort Chartres, where the last French flag floated till late in the year 1765. It may seem strange to our readers, but the English officers, finding it impossible to reach it through the hostile tribes in the West, had twice attempted to go in boats up the Mississippi, and twice been driven back by a few Indians.

Pontiac was soon after killed at Cahokia, by an Illinois Indian, whom an Englishman had hired to assassinate the great chieftain of the West.

CHAPTER VIII.

State of the Colonies after the Conquest of Canada—England's Exertions in America—Jealousy of the Colonies—She resolves to tax them, and maintain a large Army among them—The Stamp Act proposed—American Opposition—Its final Passage.

THE conquest of Canada and Nova Scotia, Cape Breton and Newfoundland, and the cession of Florida, and all Louisiana east of the Mississippi, gave England a vast territory in America, with none to dispute it. Canada had a hardy, industrious population, adapted to its severe climate; Florida, however, became almost a desert, as the Spaniards retired to Cuba. The colonies, during the war, had not, indeed, borne the main brunt, as in former wars, but, by their aid, had contributed to all the great operations, and there was not a colony which had not given the wealth and blood of her people for the triumph of England. But the colonies were not to share in the fruits of the victory. No part of the conquered territory was to benefit them. England garrisoned it with her own troops, and, as we have seen, stationed regulars in the Western forts.

The old colonies were perhaps unwise in not offering to do this; it would have strengthened their power wonderfully, and removed one pretext for England's maintaining an army in America. But England, already jealous of the growing power of America, resolved to keep an army of ten thousand men there. To support these, and pay some of the cost of the last war, required money, and it was found that the

colonies did not readily raise money for others to spend, so it was determined to tax America by Act of Parliament. Many wise men opposed it, as one old principle of English liberty was, that there should be no taxation without representation; so that for an English Parliament, where the colonies were not represented, to tax the colonies, was against all right. But the ministry held to the plans. They discussed one plan and another. Of all, one only seemed easily managed, and that was a Stamp Tax. In our times, we have seen the Government of the United States resort to this means of raising money; every check, every receipt, every deed or mortgage, every contract, wills, and many law documents were of no value, unless a stamp was attached. In our times the stamp is printed separately, and fastened to the paper by gum. In the olden time, the royal stamp was impressed upon the paper or parchment, really stamped on it. Paper thus stamped had to be bought of Government officers for the various uses, as a higher or lower stamp was required.

The colonies were indignant at this measure, and at the severity with which the English Government was enforcing the navigation laws, seizing their shipping on various pretexts for trading contrary to English laws. They had suffered severely during the war, and had spent their substance lavishly. For several years together, they had raised more men, in proportion, for service than England had; in the trading towns, one-fourth of the profits of their commerce was annually paid for the support of the war, and in the country the taxes were half the rent of the farms. As for maintaining an army there was no necessity. The Spaniards west of the Mississippi were their nearest neighbors. For a century, they had held their own alone, against French and Indians, and could now easily manage the Indians.

Their representations, however, were unheard, though the eloquent book of James Otis, "The Rights of the British Colonies Asserted," set some of the most sensible men thinking. New York and Massachusetts sent over strong remonstrances, but really, people knew little, and cared less, about America.

At last the matter came up in Parliament. Charles Townshend, the leader of the party for taxing America, dwelt on all England had done for America. "And now," he concluded, "will these American children, planted by our care, nourished up by our indulgence to a degree of strength and opulence, and protected by our army, grudge to contribute their mite to relieve us from the heavy burthen under which we lie?"

There was in that House one who had fought under Wolfe, who knew America and the Americans. Such an argument roused him to indignant eloquence. As Townshend sat down, Barré rose, and with eyes darting fire, and out-stretched arms, exclaimed: "*They planted by* YOUR *care!* No; your oppression planted them in America. They fled from your tyranny to a then uncultivated, inhospitable country, where they exposed themselves to almost all the hardships to which human nature is liable, and, among others, to the cruelties of a savage foe, the most subtle, and I will take upon me to say, the most formidable of any people upon the face of God's earth; and yet, actuated by principles of true English liberty, they met all hardships with pleasure, compared with those they suffered in their own country, from the hands of those who should have been their friends. *They nourished up by* YOUR *indulgence!* They grew up by your neglect of them. As soon as you began to care about them, that care was exercised in sending persons to rule them, in one department and another, who were perhaps the deputies

of deputies to some members of this house, sent to spy out their liberties, to misrepresent their actions, and to prey upon them; men, whose behavior upon many occasions has caused the blood of those SONS OF LIBERTY to recoil within them; men promoted to the highest seats of justice, some who, to my knowledge, were glad, by going to a foreign country, to escape being brought to the bar of a court of justice in their own.

"*They protected by* YOUR *arms!* They have nobly taken up arms in your defense; have exerted a valor amidst their constant and laborious industry, for the defense of a country whose frontier was drenched in blood, while its interior parts yielded all its little savings to your emolument.

"And believe me—remember, I this day told you so—the same spirit of freedom which actuated that people at first will accompany them still.

"But prudence forbids me to explain myself further. God knows I do not at this time speak from motives of party heat; what I deliver are the genuine sentiments of my heart. However superior to me in general knowledge and experience, the respectable body of this House may be, yet I claim to know more of America than most of you, having seen, and been conversant in that country. The people, I believe, are as truly loyal as any subjects the King has; but a people jealous of their liberties, and who will vindicate them, if ever they should be violated. But the subject is too delicate; I will say no more."

This speech had a thrilling effect, and was copied in all the papers in the American colonies, beginning with New London. The name of SONS OF LIBERTY was caught up and echoed through the land.

But the ministry were powerful, and on the 27th of February, 1765,

the Stamp Act passed in the House of Commons by a vote of two hundred and forty-five to forty-nine ; nearly five to one. In a few days, the House of Lords agreed to the bill. The King was laboring under an attack of insanity, and the bill was signed by commission.

By the Stamp Act and the Navigation Acts America was bound in fetters. Her trade with all other countries except England was crushed ; her manufactures suppressed, and a scheme begun by which every dollar of their property could be wrung from the people.

The tidings were received with consternation. In Virginia, the legislature was in session. Patrick Henry had just been elected a member to fill a vacancy. His maiden speech was one to urge the adoption of resolutions which he proposed, claiming for Virginians equal rights and franchises with the people of Great Britain, and above all, the right of being taxed only by representatives of their own choice. A stormy debate ensued, and many threats were uttered. Many members sought to moderate the impassioned orator, but Patrick Henry, full of the greatness of the danger, cried out : " Tarquin and Cæsar had each his Brutus ; Charles the First his Cromwell ; and George the Third "—" Treason," shouted Robinson, the speaker, already a defaulter to the colony. " Treason, treason," shouted the adherents of English power, while Henry, fixing his eye on Robinson, as if to wither him for his interruption, continued without faltering—" may profit by their example."

Carried away by his eloquence, the resolutions were passed. As rapidly as the mails of that day could bear the Virginia paper to other colonies, these resolutions were reprinted, and all America was aflame.

In New York, resistance was universally talked of. The odious act was printed, and hawked about as " The Folly of England and Ruin of

America." Associations of Sons of Liberty were organized in all the colonies. Merchants met, and resolved to use no stamps, to stop importing English goods, or buying them from any one, till this odious law was repealed. Home manufactures were to be encouraged, and home-spun goods were to be the mark of a true patriot.

The British officers embittered this feeling by their tyranny. Men were impressed for the British navy, and this led to resistance and retaliation. Thus, at Newport, the boat of an offending English captain was seized and burnt on the common amid the cheers of the people.

Everywhere the people, by processions, by burning in effigy the obnoxious ministers, by raising liberty-poles, showed their determination to resist.

At Boston, in August, Oliver, the Governor, with Bute and Grenville, was hung in effigy, and a vast multitude, in great order, bearing the images on a bier, marched directly through the old State House, shouting, "Liberty, Property, and no Stamps," and, demolishing a frame building, said to have been intended for a Stamp-office, they used the material for a bonfire, in which they consumed the effigies. Lieutenant Governor Hutchinson ordered the colonel of the militia to beat an alarm. "My drummers," said he, "are in the mob." He then attempted to disperse the crowd by the aid of the sheriff, but was glad to escape with his life.

Everywhere it was declared that the Stamp Act was a violation of Magna Charta, and of no force. All determined that no stamps should be issued or used. Those who had accepted appointments as Stamp-officers were forced to resign. By October, not a Stamp-officer was to be found, and on the 1st of November the Act was to go into operation. At New York, Lieutenant Governor Colden resolved to receive the

stamps himself, and was supported by Major James, the commander of the troops, who boasted that he would cram the Stamp Act down the people's throats with the point of his sword, and promised, with twenty-four men, to drive all its opponents out of New York. Yet Colden fled to the fort, and got marines from a man-of-war to protect him. He would have fired on the people, but was menaced with the fate of Porteus, at Edinburgh, who was hanged by a mob.

When the day came, a vast torchlight procession, such as New York has always delighted in, promenaded the streets, bearing a scaffold with effigies of the Governor and the Devil, and banners inscribed, "The Folly of England and the Ruin of America." They went down to the fort, and, fearless of its cannon, knocked at the gate, then broke open Colden's coach-house, and placing the figures in his elegant vehicle, bore them around the town, and finally burned them, with the fragments of his carriage and sleigh, at the Bowling Green.

James's house was also visited, and his furniture taken for a bonfire, as a punishment for his bravado.

In every large town there were demonstrations showing the public feeling. At Portsmouth, in New Hampshire, the bells were tolled as for a funeral. Liberty was dead. Notice was given to her friends to attend. A coffin neatly adorned, and bearing the inscription, "LIBERTY, AGED CXLV. YEARS," issued from the State House, to the sound of muffled drums, while minute guns boomed as the sad procession moved along. A funeral oration was delivered, but as the deceased revived, the inscription was altered, the bells rang out a merry peal, and all was joy and exultation.

These were the acts of the populace, led by the Sons of Liberty, and had there been only this, the ruling powers in England might have

treated it all as the freaks of a mob, that would soon be forgotten. Many, indeed, were of this opinion, and thought that after a while the people would get used to paying the tax, and not regard it.

The liberties of a country are always lost in this way. Some little incroachment is suffered under a plausible pretext, then another is added, and people wake up at last to find that all their liberties have been swept from them.

It was not so with our forefathers. They were vigilant and prized their liberties. While the people thus showed their feeling, the leading statesmen of America met in Congress at New York, on the 7th of October, 1765. This was the first Continental Congress. Delegates came from Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Connecticut, Pennsylvania, Maryland, and South Carolina, with informal delegations from Delaware, New Jersey, and New York. Their object was to consider the safest groundwork on which to rest American liberty. They elected as chairman Timothy Ruggles of Massachusetts, and continued in session for fourteen days. Sterling patriots were there, James Otis, Robert and Philip Livingston, Thomas McKean, and Cæsar Rodney, with Lynch, Gadsden, and Rutledge of South Carolina; some were less true and decided, but they all agreed on the necessity of union and resistance to oppression. They adopted a Declaration of Rights, written by John Cruger, a petition to the King, drawn up by Robert R. Livingston, with bold and eloquent memorials to both Houses of Parliament, from the pen of the able James Otis.

These statesmen implored the King and Parliament, in calm and dignified language, to pause in their illegal course, which could only bring misery to both countries.

When tidings of all this reached England, and the acts of the Con-

gress were printed there, a general excitement ensued. Merchants saw a profitable trade ruined. Manufactures had to stop. People were thrown out of employment. So the merchants and manufacturers of England turned on Parliament as the cause of their ruin, and joined in the petitions of the colonies.

The matter came up in Parliament. Pitt was again the defender of the rights of the Americans.

"We are told," he cried, "that America is obstinate; America is almost in open rebellion. Sir, I rejoice America has resisted: three millions of people so dead to all the feelings of liberty, as voluntarily to submit to be slaves, would have been fit instruments to make slaves of all the rest. . . . I know the valor of your troops, I know the skill of your officers, I know the force of this country; but in such a cause your success would be hazardous. America, if she fell, would fall like a strong man; she would embrace the pillars of the State, and pull down the Constitution with her. Is this your boasted peace? not to sheathe the sword in the scabbard, but to sheathe it in the bowels of your countrymen? The Americans have been wronged, they have been driven to madness by injustice. I will beg leave to tell the House in a few words what is really my opinion. It is that the Stamp Act be repealed absolutely, totally, immediately."

America looked to this great statesman as their friend and champion. His statue was erected in various parts. That in New York stood in Wall Street, till the English occupied the city during the Revolution; and then the soldiers, hating him as one who encouraged the colonists in their ideas of liberty, broke off the head, and mutilated the statue. The broken remains of the statue of William Pitt are still preserved in the Historical Society in New York. a monument of his integrity, of the

respect our fathers entertained for him, and of the British hatred of American liberty.

Benjamin Franklin was then in England. He was examined before the House of Commons. His answers were, like all he said, clear, plain, and to the point. They asked him whether the people of America would submit to the Stamp Act if it was moderated. He answered, bluntly and plainly: "No, never, unless compelled by force of arms."

General Conway brought in a bill for its repeal, and after much discussion it was repealed by a vote of two hundred and seventy-five to one hundred and sixty-seven.

The odious act was indeed removed, but Parliament passed another act, claiming the power to bind the colonies in all cases whatsoever.

In America, the news of the repeal was received with unbounded joy and exultation. It was the first victory won. But the wise statesmen who had grown up in the various colonies saw that it was but the beginning. In fact, in 1767, the ministry in England proposed to lay a duty on paint, paper, glass, and lead, and also on tea, which had become a very common article in America. Pitt was stricken down with illness; scarcely a voice was raised for America, and the bill passed. New York had given offense by refusing, through her Assembly, to quarter soldiers on the people, so Parliament, growing bolder, by a new act, restrained the New York Assembly from any further powers till it submitted to the will of England.

Again, all America was in a flame. "What is it we are contending against?" says Washington. "Is it against paying a duty of three pence per pound on tea, because burdensome? No, it is the *right* only that we have all along disputed." Public meetings were called, pamphlets issued full of eloquence and political wisdom. It was resolved

again to use no English manufactures. Massachusetts sent a petition to the King, and a circular to the other colonies. The English ministry called on Massachusetts to rescind the circular as rash. The answer was defiant.

Officers were sent over to collect the custom-house duties. John Hancock's sloop Liberty was seized, on a charge of smuggling, in June, 1768, and placed under the guns of a man-of-war. A riot at once broke out in Boston ; the custom-house officers barely escaped with life. Their boat was dragged in triumph through the city, and then burned on Boston common, while the custom-house officers, frightened out of their senses, fled to the Romney man-of-war. As if this were not enough, the commander of the Romney began to impress men to serve on his ship, in direct violation of an Act of Parliament.

The indignation of the people, roused by this, was kindled to fury, when they learned that two regiments had been summoned from Halifax, and would soon land in Boston.

The people called on Governor Bernard to convene the General Court, or Legislature. He refused. Then the people met in Convention, and again addressed the King.

The next day the troops arrived. Massachusetts refused to provide them quarters, so they were landed under cover of the ships-of-war, and with loaded muskets, and fixed bayonets, the hated foreign soldiery marched into Boston. One regiment was placed in Faneuil Hall, the other encamped on the common, and the next day, Sunday, took possession of the State House, and patrolled the streets.

The Legislature of Virginia was in session. It denounced the conduct of the Government so boldly that Governor Botetourt dissolved it. They met as a Convention, and passed resolutions against im-

porting British goods. Boston, Salem, New York, and Connecticut followed. Then the General Court of Massachusetts met: it refused to proceed to business till the troops were removed. So the Governor at last prorogued them and went to England.

Alarmed at the storm, yet stubborn still, the Parliament repealed all the duties except that on tea.

Troubles had already begun in America between the red-coats, as the soldiers were now called, and the people.

In New York, the English party succeeded in getting a majority in the Assembly, and that body agreed to give quarters to the troops. The soldiers lost no opportunity of showing their contempt for the people. In January, 1770, a party of them attempted to cut down and blow up a liberty-pole which had been erected in the Park; they attacked some citizens who denounced them, and finally succeeded at night in leveling it. The Sons of Liberty called a meeting, and declared the soldiers enemies of the peace. The soldiers replied by scurrilous placards, and two of them, while posting these libels up, were arrested. An attempt of the soldiers to rescue their comrades led to what was long known in New York as the Battle of Golden Hill. Though the soldiers were reinforced from the barracks, the citizens, unarmed as they were, disarmed and dispersed them, though not till several citizens were severely wounded. The soldiers were completely overcome, when their officers appeared and ordered them to their barracks. One young man, who in this struggle wrested a musket from a British soldier, carried it through the whole Revolutionary war, and lived to a great age, to see his country among the greatest nations on the earth, and his descendants still cherish, as a relic, the musket won by Michael Smith, the Liberty Boy.

In Boston a similar feeling arose. The people, abused by the soldiers, proceeded to extremes. On the 5th of March, a mob collected around the soldiers, and pressed on them so that they called for assistance. Captain Preston sent eight men with unloaded muskets to aid them. The mob then began to pelt the soldiers with snow-balls, and anything they could find. The soldiers loaded their muskets, but the mob, led by Crispus Attucks, a mulatto, rushed on, and Attucks dealt a terrible blow at Captain Preston, which the Captain parried. It struck a bayonet from a soldier, which Attucks seized. A struggle ensued, till at last a soldier who had been struck down sprang up and shot Attucks dead. Five other soldiers fired. Three men were killed, and five wounded.

The tumult in Boston then became fearful. The cry was: "The soldiers are risen." The Governor endeavored to allay the excitement. The soldiers were ordered to their barracks. The next day, Preston and several of the soldiers were arrested for murder, for our forefathers thought more of their liberties than we do in our days, and soldiers had no right to shoot down the people without an order from a magistrate, and certain forms of law.

This was called the Boston massacre. The victims were buried with solemn ceremonies, and for years an oration was delivered as the anniversary of the Boston massacre came around; so deep was the feeling against the attempt of the army to crush the liberties of the people.

The trial of Captain Preston and his soldiers was an important event. It lasted six days. They were defended by two of the purest patriots, John Adams and Josiah Quincy, jr. Two were convicted of manslaughter, the rest acquitted.

As the news of this affair spread through the continent, the feeling

grew more intense. Up to this time the people had been asking their rights as British subjects; they asked their British liberties. Now they became Americans. The very name of British became odious. Everything that represented the British Government was odious. It required only a trifle anywhere to bring on a collision.

At Newport, an armed revenue schooner, the Gaspee, had been very active in enforcing the revenue laws, and annoyed all the American vessels entering Narragansett Bay. Lieutenant Duddington, the commander, an ignorant bully, made himself doubly obnoxious by compelling all vessels to take down their colors in his presence, firing into them in case of neglect. He insolently refused to show Governor Wanton, of Rhode Island, his commission or orders. All was accordingly ripe for any opportunity to give him and his masters a lesson in good manners and common sense.

On the 9th of June, 1772, Captain Lindsay's packet, Hannah, the regular packet from New York, came in sight. Lindsay did not lower his flag, and Duddington at once gave chase. Knowing every inch of the bay, Lindsay ran close in to a point near Namquit, where he knew not one pilot in ten could go safely, and soon, looking back, he chuckled to see the Gaspee run aground hard and fast. On he sailed, full of triumph, when a new idea entered his head. Why not get rid of the Gaspee altogether? On reaching Providence, he told where she lay, and as she could not get off before flood-tide, men's minds were soon made up. John Brown, a leading merchant, had eight long-boats prepared, and at dusk a man went around with a drum calling on volunteers to meet. Between ten and eleven o'clock at night, the boats, manned by Brown, Captain Abraham Whipple, and other brave fellows, numbering sixty-four in all, pushed out in silence. As they closed in around the Gaspee,

they were hailed by a sentinel on her deck, and as no reply came from the boats, he roused Duddington, who ran up in his shirt, and ordering off the boats, fired a pistol at them; with the flash of his weapon came a flash from the boat, and he fell wounded to the deck. The assailants then boarded the Gaspee, and after dressing Duddington's wound ordered the crew to leave the schooner, taking their commander and all they or he owned. As soon as the last of them left the Gaspee, and no great time was given, the captors set fire to the schooner, and as the flames licked up the masts and rigging, they pulled off through the darkness, while far and near, the people, seeing the light, spread the tidings that the boys had burned the Gaspee.

The next day, Governor Wanton issued a proclamation, offering a reward for the perpetrators of the audacious act. Admiral Montague came down, and blustered and threatened. The English Government sent out a special commission, and offered five thousand dollars reward for the leader, and half as much for the arrest of any other person engaged in the destruction of the Gaspee; not a man, woman, or child could be found in Rhode Island who knew anything about it. Money did not tempt the poorest to become an informer. These cases showed that the colonies would no longer submit.

England, too proud to retract, was embarrassed. She made the Colonial Governors and judges independent of the people, by paying their salaries. Governors dissolved or prorogued Assemblies, but this did not help matters. The East India Company had its storehouses in England full of tea, that Americans liked, but refused to buy. So the English Government resolved to send some over to America, as the American merchants would not order any.

This caused a new excitement. Philadelphia led off by a public

meeting, which denounced as an enemy of his country every man who aided or abetted in unloading, receiving, or selling the tea. Merchants to whom the tea was consigned were required to pledge themselves not to receive it.

In Boston, similar meetings were held, but the consignees refused. The vessels arrived. A mass meeting was held at Faneuil Hall, which directed the ships to be moored at a certain wharf, and set a guard to watch them. The consignees wished to land and store it till fresh orders came from England, but the people insisted that the ships should take it back.

The Governor and the custom-house officers would not yield, and refused to give them a clearance, or let them go without one. An excited multitude gathered at the old South Church, still standing. Speeches were made to confirm them in their resolutions, and at last darkness began to cover the scene. Suddenly, in the gallery, a man disguised as a Mohawk Indian raised a war-whoop. It was caught up and repeated without. "Hurra for Griffin's wharf!" was now the cry, and the meeting hastened down to where the three tea-ships lay. The disguised men boarded the tea-ships, and, while the crowd looked on in silence, they took out three hundred and forty-two chests of tea, broke them open, and poured the contents into the waters of Boston harbor. Their task did not end till every chest was emptied. When the last chest disappeared over the side of the vessel, the word was given to retire, for they did not touch a thing belonging to any of the ships. One of the men, however, had noticed that one of the party, who evidently liked a cup of tea, had filled his pockets. He caught hold of him, crying: "No, boys, here's another chest!" and made him empty it all out. The crowd then dispersed without further noise or trouble.

As they moved away, they passed a house where Admiral Montague was. In his indignation, he raised the window and cried out: "Well, boys, you've had a fine night for your Indian caper, haven't you? But mind, you've got to pay the fiddler yet." "Oh, never mind," shouted Pitt, one of the leaders, "never mind, Squire; just come out here, if you please, and we'll settle the bill in two minutes!"

That very night, men who had come in from the country to attend the meetings carried back the news, and it quickly spread. Paul Revere was sent as an express messenger, to bear the information to New York and Philadelphia. Every eye kindled with joy at this solution of the great difficulty. The ships for New York were driven off by storms, and when they did arrive, the pilots, in obedience to the Committee of Vigilance, would not bring the vessels up, so they sailed back to England. Those for Philadelphia, finding matters no better there, did the same. At Charleston tea was indeed landed, but they had to store it in damp cellars, where it was soon ruined.

The tea matter had proved as signal a failure as every other.

One colony had especial troubles of its own. This was North Carolina. It had been cursed beyond all others with a needy set of office-holders, sent there to wring money from the people under any and every pretext. The most exorbitant taxes were levied, and yet the provincial treasury was empty. The land abounded in informers, the vilest of the vile, but there was no justice to bring to account those who were defaulters to the treasury. Driven to desperation, a number of the poor people formed a secret society, and, under the name of Regulators, entered into a compact, binding themselves by oath not to pay any taxes at all, until all exorbitant fees were abolished, and official embezzlement punished and prevented. They saw no hope except in self-

government, and a speedy release from the unchristian and plundering crew who had poured in on them.

The wanton seizure of the horse of one of the Regulators, as he was riding to Hillsborough, led to a collision. The people rescued the horse, and several shots were fired from among the crowd into the roof of the house of Fanning, the military commander. On the 30th of April, 1768, the Regulators held a general meeting at Rocky River, and drew up a petition to the General Assembly. Fanning, on this, seized Herman Husbands and William Butler, two prominent liberal men, who had not, however, joined the Regulators. They were thrown into prison, and treated with all severity. When Husbands was brought to trial, his innocence was so clear, that even a packed jury and an unscrupulous judge had to acquit him. The heavy charges brought by the Regulators against Fanning, led to his trial. The court had to convict him on six indictments, so they fined him one penny, and fined three poor Regulators fifty pounds apiece. At the next election, Husbands was chosen to the Assembly, but was expelled. Tryon, the Governor, then arrested the patriot, and threw him into prison, and forced the Assembly to pass a Riot Act by which people could be tried in any Superior Court, no matter how distant from their homes—an atrocity unheard of in any free country.

The Regulators gathered in the woods, and resolved to use the last resource. Honor and good faith prompted them to join for the rescue of Husbands. Tryon was intimidated. The patriot was set free. The Regulators remained in arms till it was agreed that the differences should be left to an umpire.

Fanning and Tryon were bent on revenge. Sixty-one Regulators were at once indicted, and Tryon raised troops to march into the dis-

affected counties. His progress was marked by the destruction of wheat-fields and orchards, the burning of every house which was found empty, and the plundering of all stock and produce. The terrified people fled like sheep before a wolf. At the Great Alamance, the Regulators had gathered, and chosen James Hunter as their general, a man universally esteemed. He did not wish to fight the Governor, and made proposals. The Governor required them to lay down their arms and submit absolutely. On their refusal, he opened with his cannon on the people. Many of the Regulators retired; the rest for two hours stood their ground, retiring after a time behind trees, till they had nearly expended their ammunition. Then, having lost twenty, they retired, leaving nine of the King's troops dead on the field, and sixty-one wounded. Some were taken in the pursuit, and one of these Tryon hanged the next day on a tree, without any form of trial.

This was the first regular battle between Americans and royal troops, led by a Royal Governor; and James Few was the first patriot martyr who laid down his life for the cause of self-government and freedom in America. Twelve others were soon after hanged, having undergone the mockery of a trial.

With this blood on his soul, Tryon confiscated the lands of the Regulators, and sailed to New York, of which he had been appointed Governor.

Foreign rule, extortion, fraud, and corruption had triumphed for a time in North Carolina. The insolent extortioners and officers taunted the Regulators, telling them that Alamance was their court of record!

Driven from their homes by such miseries, many of the people of North Carolina crossed the mountains, and settled in the valley of the Watauga. Here, in 1772, they founded a republic by a written associ-

ation, appointed James Robertson their Governor, and formed their own laws. Thus British misgovernment overshot itself. It led some Americans to set themselves up as a separate State, independent of the authority of the British King—a lesson all were soon to learn.

Thus, in the Republic of Watauga, began Tennessee. About the same time, a trader named Finley, who had crossed the mountains from Virginia, came back with such a glowing account of the country there that Daniel Boone caught his enthusiasm, and set out to explore with Finley and John Stuart. In May, 1769, they were in the valley of the Kentucky. They were surprised by Indians, who were already hostile, and looked with jealousy on any white intrusion. In spite of this, Boone returned to Virginia for a band of settlers. They were driven back, but a treaty was finally made, and, opening the first blazed-road through the woods, he founded Boonesborough, on the Kentucky River, in 1775.

Daniel Boone is the type of the American pioneer. He was the founder of Kentucky, the great hunter and Indian fighter of the early West. His perils, his adventures with the Indians, would fill a volume. Of them we shall speak more hereafter.

The hostilities of the Indians on the frontier at this time were such that Lord Dunmore, Governor of Virginia, called out the militia, and the little army moved in two divisions, one under the Governor, the other under General Andrew Lewis. The latter division reached Point Pleasant, on the Ohio. Here he was about to cross, when his active scouts came in announcing that a large Indian force was drawn up quite near them, consisting of Shawnees, Mingoes, Wyandots, and Cayugas, led by Cornstalk, a warrior of great renown. Colonels Lewis and Fleming were sent out to meet them. The troops advanced in two

lines, but had not proceeded a hundred yards before the Indians opened on them. Both colonels fell wounded, and their men retreated. They were rallied by the gallant Colonel Field, and a desperate battle ensued. The Indians had thrown up a breastwork of logs and trees, and from this they poured their deadly volleys into the Virginians, repelling their brave and repeated charges. The day was far spent, when three companies, under Captains Shelby, Matthews, and Stuart, ascended Crooked Creek, which there entered the Kanhawa, and stealing up quietly under cover of the high bank, suddenly opened on the Indian rear. Supposing that Colonel Christian had come up with expected reinforcements, the red men at last fled, having fought from morning to night, with a steadiness seldom shown by Indians.

In this bloody and hard-fought battle, seventy-five Virginians were killed, and a hundred and forty wounded, while the Indians lost about the same number.

Cornstalk, soon after this, induced his confederate Indians to make peace, and a treaty was concluded in 1774. He was an Indian possessing many noble qualities, and it is sad to have to state that he was shortly after murdered by some white men.

PART III.

THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

CHAPTER I.

George III. loses America—The Continental Congress—The Boston Port Bill—The Quebec Act—The Continental Congress meets—Provincial Congress—Battle of Lexington and Concord—Siege of Boston—Capture of Ticonderoga and Crown Point—Congress organizes an Army—George Washington Commander-in-Chief—Battle of Bunker Hill—The Invasion of Canada—Failure to take Quebec—Death of Montgomery.

THE news of the proceedings in Boston in regard to the tea, and the general opposition throughout the country, was received in England with great indignation, but there was no thought of an altered policy. The English Government has never seen any way except to put the people down.

Boston was to be punished. They resolved to deprive her of her trade as far as they could. A bill was brought into Parliament, and passed almost without opposition, closing the port of Boston. All the officers concerned in the collection of his Majesty's customs at Boston were removed, and no goods were to be landed or discharged, laded or shipped, from that rebellious port.

By another act, the Governor was authorized to appoint all officers, and these officers were to choose jurymen ; town meetings were prohibited by law. Another act authorized the Governor to send any one indicted for murder, or other capital offense, committed in aiding the authorities, to another colony, or even to England, to be tried there ; thus giving to Massachusetts the wicked plans pursued in North Caro-

lina. While these acts, and a new one for quartering troops, were intended to crush down the old English colonies, Parliament endeavored to conciliate Canada. That province, after the peace, had been really governed by the few British officials, and a few worthless men who had accompanied the British army—sutlers, bummers, and people of the lowest character. Every means was adopted to rob, insult, and oppress the Canadians in their civil and religious rights. At last, the Government, seeing so much trouble arising in the old colonies, began a new course, fearing lest France might step in to recover Canada. The Quebec Act, as it was called, left the Canadians under the French law, to which they had been so long accustomed; and created a legislative council for their Government. They were also restored to the full enjoyment of their religious rights, their clergy were left in possession of the church property and the tithes which had previously been paid them. At the same time, the boundaries of the province were extended to the Ohio.

While this toleration of the Canadians was just in itself, and secured their fidelity, it was regarded in the older colonies with great suspicion and indignation. The Catholic religion was very unpopular; the English Government had itself constantly inflamed the people against it; the colonies had for years contributed men and money to reduce Canada, with the avowed object of putting down the Catholic religion there, and now to have it established in that very colony by the power of England, was too much for them to bear. In this, and its extension to the Ohio, they saw only a scheme for their destruction.

The Boston Port Bill drew out the most eloquent protests of the statesmen of Massachusetts. The Assembly of Virginia, of which Washington was then a member, at once passed an order deploring the

act, and appointed a day of fasting to implore the Divine interposition to avert the civil war which they saw threatening the land. Lord Dunmore at once dissolved the Assembly.

The General Court of Massachusetts were as decided. The Governor, General Gage, adjourned the court to Salem, but they adopted resolutions encouraging the people of Boston, and when the Governor declined to appoint a day for public prayer, appointed one themselves. Their decisive act was that appointing delegates to the General Congress of the Colonies, which was to meet in Philadelphia, in September. Governor Gage, learning what was going on, sent his secretary to dissolve the House, but that functionary found the doors locked, so he bawled out the Governor's proclamation on the steps leading to the chamber in which the patriotic Assembly was in session.

It terminated their acts as a royal assembly, but they continued to sit till all their business was completed.

The closing of the port of Boston filled that town with distress, but none thought of yielding. From all parts, beginning with generous and patriotic South Carolina, contributions poured in to aid unfortunate Boston.

Throughout the country assemblies were held, and delegates chosen to the coming Continental Congress. In every village and town, men were drilling, and preparing for military service ; those who had acquired experience in the late wars with the French and Indians, were looked upon as leaders, and gave the influence of real soldiers. The boys and girls were busy casting bullets and making cartridges ; the men were putting in order the firearms in their hands, or securing new ones.

The English Government was also preparing for war. Looking on Boston as the centre of the trouble, they resolved to overawe it by a large

military force. Troops were ordered from Ireland, Halifax, Quebec, and New York. As these came in, Gage seized and prepared to fortify Boston Neck. When he proceeded to seize some powder in Cambridge, all New England was aroused, and, as the report spread that the British army and navy were firing on Boston, no less than thirty thousand men in arms began to march on the city. Gage was shut up in Boston. His power as Governor of Massachusetts was at an end; for it was not respected beyond the lines of his soldiers.

While things were in this state, the Continental Congress met in Philadelphia, on the 5th of September, 1774. With the delegates of North Carolina, who came in a few days later, they were in all fifty-three delegates, representing twelve colonies, Georgia not having as yet acted.

They met at Smith's tavern, and prepared to select a place for their permanent sessions. The carpenters of Philadelphia offered their plain but spacious hall, and from respect for the mechanics it was accepted by a large majority. This building became, as it were, the cradle of the American Republic. Peyton Randolph, late speaker of the Assembly of Virginia, was unanimously chosen president, really, though not in name, the first President of the United States. Among the members were Patrick Henry, George Washington, Richard Henry Lee, Samuel and John Adams, John Jay, Stephen Hopkins, the aged patriot of Rhode Island, Gadsden, and Rutledge, of South Carolina. The most eminent men of the various colonies were now brought together. They were known to each other by fame, but had hitherto been strangers. The meeting was awfully solemn. The object which had called them together was the liberties of three millions of people.

Patrick Henry opened the proceedings of this important body with one of his most eloquent and comprehensive discourses.

Then the Congress proceeded to lay the groundwork of their action; to make the last appeal to the rectitude of the people of England. They were no revolutionists; their earliest acts showed, that for the sake of peace they would yield even some of their cherished rights. But the case of Massachusetts required a distinct and plain statement. They resolved "That this Congress approve the opposition of the inhabitants of the Massachusetts Bay, to the execution of the late Acts of Parliament; and if the same shall be attempted to be carried into execution by force, in such case, all America ought to support them in their opposition.

The Quebec act, and ten others, were declared to be such infringements and violations of the rights of the colonies, that the repeal of them was essentially necessary, in order to restore harmony between the colonies and Great Britain.

They bound themselves to stop almost all commerce with England, and, while it refused to petition Parliament, the Continental Congress addressed the King, the people of Great Britain, and the people of the neighboring provinces who had not joined the movement, but who were now invited to make common cause with them.

"We ask," said this Congress to George III., "we ask but for peace, liberty, and safety. We wish not a diminution of the prerogative, nor the grant of any new right. Your royal authority over us, and our connection with Great Britain, we shall always support and maintain;" and they besought of the King, "as the loving father of his whole people, his interposition for their relief, and a gracious answer to their petition."

Then this famous body adjourned, to meet in May.

Parliament treated with scorn the temperate demands of the Ameri-

can colonies through their Congress. On Thursday, the 9th of February, 1775, the Chancellor of England, the speaker of the House of Commons, and most of the members of both Houses of Parliament, proceeded in state to the palace, and in presence of the representatives of the great powers of Europe, presented to George III. a sanguinary address, declaring "that a rebellion actually existed in the province of Massachusetts Bay," and they "besought his Majesty to adopt measures to enforce the authority of the Supreme Legislature, and solemnly assured him that it was their fixed resolution, at the hazard of their lives and properties, to stand by him against his rebellious subjects."

In reply, George III. pledged himself, speedily and effectually, to enforce obedience to the laws, and the authority of the Supreme Legislature.

Thus, with all the pomp of the Old World, George III., with his Parliament, in presence of the civilized world, threw away the scabbard, and declared war upon his own colonies, and his own people.

While Massachusetts, left without a Government, was reorganizing under a Provincial Congress and Committee of Safety, England was preparing to crush her. Gage was to be superseded. William Howe was to be sent over as Commander-in-Chief, and under him, as Major-Generals, Henry Clinton and John Burgoyne. Admiral Howe was to command the fleet that was to bear to the American shores the overpowering force, and to him were given powers as pacificator; but in case of failure, the English authorities made no secret of their intention to use the French Canadians, Indians, and negroes, to crush the people of America into submission.

When the Convention met in Virginia, some faint-hearted men looked at their weakness, their utter want of means to oppose the great

and powerful mother-country. This roused Patrick Henry, who saw that the day of conciliation was past.

"Are fleets and armies," he exclaimed, "necessary to a work of love and reconciliation? These are the implements of subjugation, sent over to rivet upon us the chains which the British ministry have been so long forging. And what have we to oppose to them? Shall we try argument? We have been trying that for the last ten years; have we anything new to offer? Shall we resort to entreaty and supplication? We have petitioned—we have remonstrated—we have supplicated—and we have been spurned from the foot of the throne. In vain may we indulge the fond hope of reconciliation. There is no longer room for hope. If we wish to be free, we must fight! I repeat it, Sir, we must fight! An appeal to arms, and to the God of Hosts, is all that is left us!

"They tell me that we are weak; but shall we gather strength by irresolution? We are not weak. Three millions of people, armed in the holy cause of Liberty, and in such a country, are invincible by any force which our enemy can send against us. We shall not fight alone. A just God presides over the destinies of nations; and will raise up friends for us. The battle is not to the strong alone; it is to the vigilant, the active, the brave. Besides, we have no election. If we were base enough to desire it, it is too late to retire from the contest. There is no retreat but in submission and slavery. The war is inevitable—and let it come! let it come!

"Is life so dear, or peace so sweet, as to be purchased at the price of chains and slavery? Forbid it, Almighty God! I know not what course others may take, but as for me, give me liberty or give me death!"

These words rang through the country, and for years were on the lips of all. They embodied the sentiments of a nation.

Dunmore, in alarm, seized the powder of the colony, stored at Williamsburg. Virginia rose in arms, as Massachusetts had done.

It was evident that the slightest thing would now precipitate actual hostilities.

The decisive act was not long delayed.

In the beautiful little town of Concord, near which Winthrop, the father of Massachusetts, had given counsel, and Eliot, the Indian apostle, spoken his words of Christian doctrine, the Massachusetts Provincial Congress had gathered the trifling store of ammunition and arms which they could raise to defend their soil. Gage resolved to seize and destroy the magazine. Eight hundred picked men, grenadiers and light infantry, were sent out stealthily from Boston, but their movements were watched. General Warren had already sent off one messenger to Lexington. Paul Revere, the other, rowed over Charles River, and stood by his horse watching the steeple of the Old South. There a friend stood, watching the movements of the troops, ready to show one light if they were to move by land, two if by water. Suddenly the signal flashed out—a single light. Revere read its meaning at a glance, and rode on hard and fast. Two British officers attempted to intercept him, but he led them into a mire, and dashed on over the flinty road. His voice rang out at every house, the minute-men were roused, the whole line of country, through which the British hoped to steal like thieves in the night, was on the alert. The ringing of bells and the firing of guns, told the troops that all their precautions were wasted. The alarm was spreading wide and fast. It was to be no holiday excursion.

The people, roused by Revere, everywhere turned out and removed

the stores and ammunition, in small quantities, to hiding-places in woods and thickets. At Lexington, on the village green, the militia of the place were drawn up, and John Parker, captain of the beat, ordered his hundred and twenty men to load with ball, but not to fire till the enemy commenced hostilities.

As Colonel Smith, the English commander, advanced, he felt that his task was one of difficulty. Sending on Major Pitcairn of the marines, to secure the bridges over Concord River, he sent back a hurried message to General Gage for reinforcements.

Captain Parker dismissed his men, as the enemy did not appear. An escaped prisoner at last announced the approach of the enemy. At the roll of the drum seventy men assembled on the green, not half of them armed. Leading thirty-eight armed men to the north end of the green he formed them, just as Pitcairn came up on that bright Spring morning, April 19th, 1775.

Brandishing his sword, the British officer advanced and shouted with an oath : "Lay down your arms, you rebels, or you are all dead men ;" but as the patriots did not flinch he gave the word to fire. A rattle of musketry followed ; Parker, seeing it useless to attempt to resist, ordered his men to disperse. In their retreat a second volley killed and wounded several.

Colonel Smith came up as the life-blood of these patriots dyed the green turf and cried to Heaven for vengeance.

He pushed on with his whole force to Concord, where the militia, seeing his numbers, retired. Smith cut down the Liberty-pole, and began to destroy the flour, cannon, and such other stores as they could find.

While they were scattered in this work, the Massachusetts minute-

men and militia were gathering around them. When these were in sufficient force, Colonel Barrett formed them and marched upon Concord bridge, Major Buttrick in the van. The English posted at the bridge opened fire; several of the Americans fell, but a volley from the whole of Buttrick's line cut up the English, three lieutenants being seen to fall. The English fell back till the grenadiers came up to their support. Colonel Smith was now alarmed. He had not accomplished his work, and if he attempted to remain would probably soon be a prisoner with his whole command. He collected his scattered parties and prepared for a hasty retreat. About noon he moved out of Concord; but though he had entered it without opposition, he now found the hills through which his road ran, held by excited patriots. A constant rattle of musketry told on his line. Many were shot down, others gave out exhausted, the rest hurried on, panic-stricken. Just as they were reaching Lexington, Captain Parker's company poured in a volley with hearty good-will. At Lexington, which he entered after two hours' fight, Smith, to his great joy, met Lord Percy at the head of a thousand men, with two field-pieces, sent to his rescue. The fresh troops opened to receive in their centre the remnant of Smith's command, who were utterly exhausted.

Then the retreat was resumed; but the Americans, now organized under General Heath, with troops constantly pouring in, hung on their rear, galling them by a rapid and deadly fire. At Bunker's Hill Percy formed his men into line and awaited an attack; but General Heath did not deem it wise. He posted his guard, and held the Neck with his little army.

The boasting British troops had become a defeated fugitive force, cooped up in the city, with an actual army at its very doors.

Such was the battle of Lexington, the first in the Revolutionary War, for war had now begun in earnest; there was no way but to fight it out. The American loss in this series of skirmishes was eighty-five killed, wounded, and missing. On the English side, Colonel Smith, Captain Lawrence, and sixty-four men were killed, one hundred and seventy-eight wounded, and twenty-six missing.

The night preceding the outrage at Lexington, there were not fifty people in the whole colony that ever expected any blood would be shed: the night following, the King's governor and the King's army found themselves closely beleaguered in Boston.

All was changed. Boston was the central point to which the citizen soldiery hastened from all parts of New England. Veterans of the old French war led on their townsmen. Stark, from New Hampshire, was on the march ten minutes after the news came in; Putnam, of Connecticut, though a man of sixty, hastened from his field to the camp.

The Massachusetts Provincial Congress, while sending to England proof that the troops were the aggressors, issued paper money, seized forts and arsenals, raised troops, and organized the army.

Boston was besieged by a force of twenty thousand men, who formed a line of encampment from Roxbury to the Mystic River. Of this army Artemas Ward was appointed Captain General, and he proceeded at once to organize and prepare it for active service.

Canada was always, in the eyes of the colonists, a point of danger, and Benedict Arnold proposed to the Massachusetts and Connecticut governments an expedition against it. Before he could gather a force for the purpose, the hardy men of Vermont were in the field for the same object, under Ethan Allen. Arnold joined them, and finding

them unwilling to recognize his authority, acted as a volunteer. They reached the lake, but for want of boats could transport over its placid waters only eighty-three of their men. These formed silently in the shadow of the fort, just as day was beginning to break, and, led by Allen and Arnold, pushed boldly up the height to the sally-port. The sentinel on duty, startled as if men had come up out of the lake, snapped his musket at the advancing force ; but as it missed fire, he retreated through a covered way. On pushed the Americans close upon him, and disarmed another sentinel, after he had wounded one of the officers. Reaching the parade they formed in two lines, facing the barracks on both sides, and gave three huzzas. The garrison, startled from their beds, rushed to the parade, and were at once seized. Allen and Arnold were already at the quarters of Captain Delaplaine, the commander of the fort, demanding his surrender. The astonished British officer, with his clothes in his hand, asked Allen, in his bewilderment, by what authority he demanded a surrender. "In the name of the Great Jehovah and the Continental Congress," replied Allen. Delaplaine, half dressed, with his frightened wife looking over his shoulder, surrendered, May 9th, 1775. The whole garrison became prisoners of war, but what was of more importance, this exploit gave America nearly two hundred cannon, and a large quantity of military stores of the utmost value to them.

The next day Colonel Seth Warner took possession of Crown Point, which contained more than a hundred pieces of artillery.

Arnold's troops had now come up, and capturing a small schooner he sailed down the lake, and took Fort St. John, with the King's sloop of war, George III., and a number of batteaux. With part of the stores thus obtained he returned to Fort Ticonderoga.

A few undisciplined men had thus, in a moment, captured the forts which the French had so long held against all the power of England. The effect was tremendous. It roused enthusiasm, gave the Americans war-material, and prevented English operations against New York.

On the day after the surrender of Ticonderoga, the Continental Congress met at Philadelphia. Peyton Randolph was chosen President, and for Secretary they elected Charles Thomson, who held the important office during the whole period of the Revolution. As Randolph's presence was necessary in Virginia, John Hancock, of Massachusetts, a merchant who had been prominent from the first on the side of Liberty, was chosen President.

All felt that the time for conciliation was past, yet once more addresses were framed. It was the last effort; a justification, as it were, of what they were now to do as a government.

Congress voted to put the colonies in a state of defense; it ordered the enlistment of troops, the erection of forts, the purchase of arms, ammunition, and supplies. To meet this, it authorized the issue of paper money to the amount of three millions of dollars, inscribed "The United Colonies." Massachusetts had already called upon Congress to assume direction over the forces before Boston, and the Continental Congress, as the national government, did not only this, but proceeded to select a commander-in-chief of the armies. From the outset George Washington, of Virginia, seemed most acceptable. He was nominated June 15th, and unanimously chosen. Never had choice been wiser.

The next day Washington returned thanks for the signal honor conferred upon him, and begged to decline receiving any pay for his services. All he asked was the payment of his expenses, and of these

he kept a strict account. Four Major Generals were chosen, Artemas Ward, Israel Putnam, Philip Schuyler, and Charles Lee, while Seth Pomeroy, Richard Montgomery, David Wooster, William Heath, Joseph Spencer, John Thomas, John Sullivan, and Nathaniel Greene, were chosen Brigadier Generals.

Washington hastened his preparations, and, on the 21st of June, left Philadelphia to take command of the army in the field.

An important battle had already been fought. Gage, shut up in Boston and unable to obtain any supplies from the country, resolved to occupy some of the hills around. The Americans, equally vigilant, resolved to defeat any such attempt. As the first rays of the morning lit up the bay and the adjacent shores, a sentry, pacing the deck of the Lively man-of-war, saw on Breed's Hill the lines of a redoubt, which had sprung up like magic in the night; while sturdy men were still plying pick and shovel, extending and strengthening these threatening works. The ship was at once all excitement, and the captain, sending a boat ashore to General Gage, opened fire.

This work had been thrown up by a small body of troops under Colonel Prescott, the veteran Gridley acting as engineer. It was now held by Prescott's regiment and a Connecticut detachment under Captain Knowlton, some of the force having already withdrawn. As the sun rose, every spot in the city from which the hill could be seen, was filled with eager spectators. From Copp's Hill and from the men-of-war came the occasional puffs of smoke and thunder of cannon, but there was no answer from the hill, where the work went steadily on. Then the English ships and batteries clustered together, and down through the streets of Boston to the Long Wharf, went, with steady tramp and all the glitter of burnished arms and regular equipments,

two regiments of British troops, with grenadiers and light infantry leading the line ; similar bodies were moving down to the Battery and North Battery.

They are at last all at the water's edge ; the barges are filled, Generals Howe and Pigot, with their brilliant staffs, at the head. Now from the Lively, and the Somerset, and Falcon, there rained on the hill a perfect hurricane of balls and shells ; while floating batteries, and a transport with a man-of-war, commanded the Neck, ready to open fire.

Amid the din and roar of this artillery, the troops land on the east side of the peninsula, near the mouth of the Mystic. Prescott whose tall and manly form had been seen from the city on the breastwork during the hottest fire, understands the plan. His diminished force, his imperfect works, make a defense of the hill hopeless ; to his joy, the English halt at the first rising ground, and begin to eat. His men have no food but what is in their knapsacks. The barges move back to Boston. Howe asks more troops. Prescott throws Gridley, with his few field-pieces and Knowlton's men, towards the enemy, with no defense but a fence, part of rails, and part of stone. A cheer tells his brave few that aid is at hand. Though General Ward thinks it only a feint, Colonel John Stark comes marching to the spot, with part of two regiments from his State. Where his practiced eye sees the greatest need, he draws up his men. Pomeroy and Warren came as volunteers ; Putnam was there too. Thus stood the brave fifteen hundred. Howe sees Pitcairn land with fresh troops, and orders the Copp's Hill battery to fire on Charlestown. The shells soon set it in a blaze, and the Somerset, ere long to lie a wreck on Cape Cod, sends men to complete its destruction. The large and noble town is in one huge blaze, the steeples towering as great pyramids of fire.

It is half-past two. The British line is all activity. Howe addresses his men. The ships and batteries keep up a tremendous cannonade, and up the hill-side, through the long grass, in the bright sunlight, move the three thousand veterans of England. Howe pushes toward the rail fence, Pigot moves on the breastwork. There all is silent. The enemy are within eight rods, when Prescott gives the word. A deadly volley bursts on the English line ; every shot was aimed and told ; nearly the whole front rank is down. For several minutes the irregular but deadly fire poured upon them. They break in dismay, and the splendid line rolls in disordered masses down the hill ; some to rush to the boats, others to halt at the word of command.

Howe fares no better. From the rail fence comes a fire that sweeps whole ranks before it. The King's troops recoil, and down, down the slope they reel in confusion.

The British officers prepare for another assault. More cautiously, the two bodies mount the deadly slopes. Again the silence is broken by a musket-fire as fatal as before ; but, nerved to it, the regulars press on till human nature can stand no more. Howe, almost alone, reaches the fence, with companies cut down to nine or ten men, and scarcely an officer by him. Again the British retreat ; Clinton hurries over from Copp's Hill ; Howe plants his cannon to rake the breastwork, and again a charge is made.

Within the American lines the exhausted heroes stand ; weary, spent with hunger, toil, and fighting, many with not a grain of powder left. The breastwork is abandoned. A stand is made at the redoubt. A deadly volley from it staggers the English line, but it moves on with fixed bayonets. Pitcairn falls as he enters the redoubt, which is now scaled on all sides, the Americans contesting the ground with the butt-

ends of their muskets, and even with stones. Prescott at last gives the order to retreat, and the little band, sadly thinned, cut their way through. Knowlton and Stark then follow. A fiery ordeal is before them. Bunker's Hill and Charlestown Neck are swept by the enemy's cannon, and as they hurry over the Neck the loss is deadly, worse than in the fight. But at last they are in the camp, and throw themselves down to rest.

England has won one little hill on American soil, at the cost of over a thousand killed and wounded—more than double the loss of the Americans. But the patriots mourned the death of General Warren, the head of the Provincial Government of Massachusetts, a man of energy, eloquence, and power.

Joseph Warren, whose name long stood next to that of Washington in the affections of America, was born at Roxbury in 1740, the son of a farmer, who died when Joseph was only fifteen. After graduating at Harvard, young Warren studied medicine and soon attained eminence. He was one of the earliest Sons of Liberty, and was one of the real leaders of the popular movement. He was President of the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts, and, four days before his death, was appointed Major General, although he never assumed any command. He was shot in the head just as he was leaving the trenches, and was buried on the field by the enemy.

Colonel William Prescott, the almost unnoticed hero of Bunker's Hill, was born in Groton in 1726, his father and grandfather having been members of the Council of Massachusetts. He served against Louisburg, and won the battle of Bunker's Hill. At a later date, he held General Howe in check for six days, at Throgg's Neck. His merit was overlooked, however, and he soon after retired to private life.

On the 3d of July, Washington, who had hastened forward, reached the forces and took command of the Continental Army. His first care was to organize and discipline it for actual service. It was posted on the heights around Boston, forming a line from Roxbury on the right, to the Mystic River on the left, a distance of twelve miles.

Gage held Boston, Bunker's Hill, and Charlestown Neck, with a fine army of eleven thousand men: but the city, cut off from all supplies from the country in midsummer, was very unhealthy.

Neither party for a time made any movement, Washington from want of powder and a wish to organize his army, Gage from inability to see where he could strike an effective blow.

Congress, which had now received delegates from Georgia, was trying to win the Canadians and Indians, and, but for the old religious animosity in the colonies to the faith of the Canadians, would have gained them. The Johnson family, who possessed great power with the Six Nations, induced that powerful body to take up the hatchet for the English.

Franklin, who had labored so earnestly in England for the colonies, now returned and became Postmaster General, aiding by his counsels the patriotic movement.

Canada was now, as in early days, a source of anxiety. The colonists had never felt safe while it was in the hands of France, so now they could not feel easy while it remained under the power of Great Britain. The liberties given by England to the French Canadians had excited the complaints of the older colonies, yet now they wished to win these Canadians. An address was prepared, offering them the same privileges they enjoyed, but this was too late; too much hostility had been shown to them, to induce the Canadians as a body

to join the American cause, although numbers actually took part with it. Congress therefore determined, as the first great movement of the war, to seize Canada. Two expeditions were prepared; one, under Generals Schuyler and Montgomery, was to move down Lake Champlain; the other could not go by sea as in colonial days, for America had no fleet to cope with the English navy. The expedition was therefore sent through the wilderness of Maine.

Schuyler falling sick, General Montgomery, with about two thousand men from New York and New England, laid siege to Fort St. John, the first British post in Canada. Fort Chambly was taken and some slight advantages gained, though Sir Guy Carleton, the British commander, captured Colonel Ethan Allen and a small party which was boldly advancing on Montreal.

Carleton raised a force to relieve Fort St. John, but Montgomery held the Sorel River, and the British commander, finding the defense hopeless, fled from Montreal. Major Preston, commander of Fort St. John, on hearing that no relief could be expected from Carleton, surrendered.

The British general fled down the St. Lawrence, but his party was stopped by an American force, and though Carleton managed to escape in the disguise of a Canadian *habitant*, the rest of his party surrendered.

Montgomery occupied Montreal, but his army was thinned by desertion. He could not, however, hesitate. His only course was to push on to Quebec, with a force of only three hundred men, hoping there to be joined by the force with which General Arnold was to march through the woods of Maine. That energetic commander took the field about the middle of September, and with an endurance and hardihood almost unparalleled in history, pushed on through every obstacle. By boats,

where possible ; crossing no less than seventeen portages at the frequent rapids ; marching through almost unbroken forest, Arnold pushed bravely on. Enos, his second in command, deserted him with part of the force, but the diminished party, enfeebled by sickness, with scanty food and little ammunition, kept on to attack the most powerful citadel in North America.

Though winter was fast closing around them, they went barefooted for days together, exposed frequently by day and night to drenching storms. Many sank down stiffening in cold and death. They ran out of provisions, and were kept from absolute starvation by eating their dogs, gnawing their leather shoes and belts. Yet, on the 8th of November, 1775, they reached Point Levi, and crossing at Wolfe's Cove, climbed to the Plains of Abraham. The little army, drawn up to attack that city of Quebec and its garrison of eighteen hundred men, was only some five hundred effective men. A flag sent to summon the city was fired upon, and Arnold had no alternative but to await the coming of Montgomery, to whom he sent dispatches. On the 1st day of December, in the midst of the bitter winter weather, the two little armies met. Through driving snow-storms, they marched on Quebec, and began the siege, rearing batteries of snow and ice. But their guns made no impression on the stout walls. At last it was determined to storm the lower town.

On the last day of the year, in the thick gloom of the early morning, while the snow was falling fast and drifting heavily, Montgomery, at the head of his New York troops, pushed on along the shore from Wolfe's Cove. Under Cape Diamond stood the first obstacle, a block-house commanded by Captain Barnsfare, with a few sailors and militia. A palisade checked Montgomery's approach. This removed, the gallant general led his men to the assault, when a volley of grape-shot

swept the pass. Montgomery fell dead, and his aides-de-camp were cut down, with many of his men. The rest retreated.

Arnold, on the other side, in assaulting the first barrier, was badly wounded, but Morgan, taking command, led his men on. At the second barrier a desperate fight ensued, but American valor triumphed. They did not long enjoy the advantage, for Carleton, relieved by the repulse of Montgomery, sent a force to take Morgan in the rear, and his whole force of four hundred and twenty-six men were compelled to surrender.

Arnold drew off the remains of the two forces, and for a time kept up a blockade of the river, but after a while, the urgent necessities of the States made it impossible to send any force to Canada, and the army fell back in a wretched condition to Crown Point.

Montgomery, the hero of the campaign, a noble-hearted Irish gentleman, was greatly regretted by the Americans, and even the enemy respected him. He was honorably buried by General Carleton, but in 1818, his remains were removed to New York city, where those who stop a moment in their busy walk along Broadway, may see his monument in the front wall of St. Paul's Church.

During the operations against Canada, Washington had held the British force in Boston, unable to take offensive measures for want of powder, and the coming and going of his troops.

American cruisers captured supplies intended for Boston, but the English fleet bombarded Falmouth, now Portland, Maine, reducing to ashes that fine town, with its four hundred houses and stores. Newport, and indeed every seaport, was threatened with a similar fate.

Some people in America still had hopes that England would now relent and prefer giving the colonies their just rights to embarking in

a long, and perhaps disastrous war. Little did they know the stubborn character of George III., or the men around him. The Parliament at its next session dissipated all such hopes. They resolved to send twenty-five thousand men to crush America. As England then could not well raise so large a force, they determined to hire them on the Continent. Russia had just been at war with Turkey, and it was proposed to hire her brutal soldiery, but the British Government finally concluded a bargain with the Grand Duke of Hesse Cassel, hiring nearly eighteen thousand men, at exorbitant rates. Though gathered from all parts these men were in America always called Hessians.

By a refined cruelty, a law was passed for seizing all American ships at sea, confiscating the cargoes, and forcing all on board to serve in the British navy.

In the colonies, English rule was virtually at an end. Lord Dunmore, Governor of Virginia, was a fugitive on board a man-of-war plundering and destroying the colony. Norfolk felt the full force of his wrath, and was utterly laid in ruins.

Governor Wright, of Georgia, was also a fugitive on an English ship as was Governor Tryon of New York. That colony abounded, however, in adherents to the British cause, who were now called Tories. The Johnsons, with the Highlanders settled in the Mohawk Valley, and the Six Nations were all on the English side, and soon openly took the field to co-operate with the British forces in Canada. Sir John Johnson raised two battalions of Royal Greens, and Brant, the famous Mohawk chief, rallied his savage braves to destroy his old white friends and neighbors.

Early in 1776, Washington resolved to occupy Dorchester Heights, and force Howe to evacuate Boston. On the night of the 4th of March,

a furious cannonade was kept up. Bombs fell into all parts of the city, and the British garrison were kept busy in extinguishing the flames. When day dawned, the English, to their dismay, found Dorchester Heights crowned by two forts, sufficiently advanced to shelter those within from musketry.

The English admiral scanned them, and declared that if the Americans were not dislodged he could no longer remain in the harbor without risking his whole fleet.

Howe saw no alternative but to attack the works. His recollection of Bunker Hill did not make him sanguine of success, yet he nerved himself to it. But a furious wind sprang up, and Lord Percy, who was to land on the flats near the Point, could not embark. Violent storms set in, which prevented Howe's operations, though they did not prevent Washington from strengthening his new works. Colonel Mifflin prepared a new weapon—hogsheads of sand and stones to roll down on the enemy, so as to break and disorder his lines in charging up the hill.

Howe was in a terrible dilemma. He had not transports enough to carry off his troops at once. If he embarked only a part the rest would be captured, so he resorted to threats of destroying the city if he were not allowed to retire peaceably. Washington, to save Boston, remained a quiet spectator of the retreat of the English. The city presented a melancholy sight. All was havoc and confusion, for the soldiery, in spite of orders, committed a great deal of ravage. Nor was it only the army that departed. Fifteen hundred Tories, with their families, and such valuables as they could carry, had no choice but to follow the soldiers of the crown whose cause they had espoused. Thus, the city was full of disorder, grief, and misery. At last, on the 17th of March, all were on board.

The rear guard was scarcely out of the city, when General Washington entered with colors displayed, drums beating, and every mark of victory and triumph, amid the shouts and cheers of the patriotic citizens, who had so long heroically suffered the grinding tyranny of a foreign army, the most hateful scourge of a free people.

Artillery, ammunition, and horses, were left by the English, and soon after British vessels, ignorant of the fall of the city, entered and were captured, giving many soldiers as prisoners, and, the best prize of all, fifteen hundred barrels of powder.

America was filled with exultation at this long desired result. She was free from the hated British troops. Nowhere in the thirteen colonies had the army of England a foot-hold. Congress caused a fine medal to be struck. It bears on one side a fine head of Washington, with the inscription, GEORGIO WASHINGTON, SUPREMO DVCI EXERCITVVM, ADSERTORI LIBERTATIS, COMITIA AMERICANA.—The American Congress to George Washington, Commander-in-chief of the Forces, Assertor of Liberty. The other side represented Washington and his staff on the heights overlooking the city and harbor of Boston. Below, troops are marching into the city, others marching out, or in boats, seeking the English fleet. The inscription is, HOSTIBUS PRIMO FUGATIS.—The enemy for the first time put to flight. BOSTONIUM RECUPERATUM, XVII. MARTII, MDCCLXXVI.—Boston recovered, March 17, 1776.

Washington was not, however, one to be deluded by false hopes. New York, with its strong Tory element, would welcome the British forces in spite of the devoted Sons of Liberty, and the English Government would make a strong effort to take and hold the city, which, by the Hudson River, commanded communication with Canada.

Washington had scarcely entered Boston, before he despatched the main body of his army to New York, leaving General Ward to fortify Boston, which the English might attempt to molest, but would not attempt to occupy again.

Though the evacuation of Boston left no organized British force on American soil, there were many sympathizers with the English Government, who were ready to take up arms.

The Highlanders of North Carolina were the first to take the field. Early in 1776 a large force assembled under Donald McDonald, whom Martin, the Royal Governor of the colony, had appointed a Brigadier General. He raised his standard at Cross Creek, now Fayetteville, and prepared to overrun the State. An English fleet was expected, and it was confidently hoped that all opposition would be crushed.

General James Moore, a true patriot and splendid officer, resolved to defeat this well-laid plan. By one stratagem and another, he held McDonald in inaction till he had assembled the militia. With these he occupied important points, so as to weave a complete web around McDonald.

Moore Creek Bridge was the only point where the Tory saw any prospect of breaking through Moore's line. Upon this his force marched on the 27th of February, commanded by Captain Macleod. The bagpipes played the tunes that had so long cheered on the Scotch rushing to battle, and they counted on an easy victory over the Americans. They came down in gallant style to the bridge, beyond which Colonel Lillington and Caswell had thrown up an intrenchment after removing most of the planking of the bridge.

In spite of this the Highlanders attempted to cross on the timbers, but, under the deadly fire of the Americans, Captains Macleod and

Campbell were cut down, and the whole force thrown into confusion. They retreated with the loss of thirty killed and wounded : but there was no escape. The North Carolina minute-men closed around them ; McDonald and eight hundred and fifty of his men were taken prisoners, disarmed, and discharged, while all their fine war material and fifteen thousand pounds sterling, in gold, fell into the hands of the patriots.

A few days before, the Cove of Cork was a scene of activity. A fleet had gathered there to take on board nearly seven full regiments of well-drilled troops, under command of Lord Cornwallis. The fleet was commanded by an able Admiral, Sir Peter Parker, and it was intended by this display of force to crush the patriots of the Southern States. When, in May, the fleet appeared off Cape Fear, and heard of the disastrous defeat of McDonald, General Clinton issued a proclamation urging the people to return to their duty ; but it was too late.

Congress, at Philadelphia, after a consultation with General Washington, had proceeded to vigorous measures. The colonies were urged to stop all acts in the King's name, and to organize suitable governments by their own authority. Rigorous measures were also adopted in regard to Tories, who were to be compelled to declare their sentiments openly and depart, or submit to the new government and remain.

The advice had been generally followed, and all signs of British power ceased.

Anxious to strike a blow in the South before proceeding to New York, where they were to join General Howe, Clinton resolved to attack Charleston.

On the 1st of June intelligence reached that city of the approach of the British naval and military force. Preparations were at once made

to defend the city. North Carolina had just crushed the first armed effort of British sympathizers; South Carolina was now to meet the first attack of England's veteran army and navy. The President of the Convention issued orders which were heartily carried out, and General Charles Lee, sent South for the defense of Charleston and the Southern department, gave order and system to the whole defense. On Sullivan's island a little fort of palmetto logs was thrown up to hold the channel. On one bastion floated the Union flag, on the other the crescent flag of South Carolina. Its little garrison was composed of some three hundred and fifty men, of the Second South Carolina regiment, and a company of artillery, all commanded by Colonel William Moultrie, who had done good service in Indian wars. Without the fort lay another little force under Colonel Thompson.

The splendid spectacle of an English fleet coming into action was soon presented to their eyes, as vessel after vessel came up and took position, while, from the transports, troops were landed on Long Island, which was separated from that occupied by the Americans only by a passage generally fordable. The thunders of cannon and mortar soon rang out, as a tremendous fire opened on the fort, but though shells came bursting within, the cannon balls sank harmlessly into the soft palmetto logs. Then the Sphynx, Acteon, and Syren, were ordered to run up between the island and the city. They ran on a shoal. Two got off, indeed, but the Acteon stuck fast, and finding it impossible to get off, or endure the fire of the fort, her officers and crew abandoned her the next day, after setting her on fire. She did not blow up, however, before the bold garrison sent off a detachment which secured much valuable property from her, and fired some of her guns on the English admiral's ship.

So fierce a fire did they return to the fleet, that their ammunition was nearly exhausted, when General Lee managed to send them a fresh supply. Then the firing on both sides was renewed, and kept up till nearly ten o'clock; the English troops that landed on Long Island had been mere spectators of the scene, unable to cross the deep passage to Sullivan's Island.

The English fleet slipped its cables, and quietly dropped down, leaving the Americans victorious.

In this glorious defense of Fort Moultrie, Sergeant Jasper made his name immortal. The South Carolina flag, riddled by the British fire, was at last shot away, and fell outside the works. Jasper jumped over amid the hottest fire, and securing the crescent flag of his State, coolly fastened it to a sponge-staff, and leisurely planted it in its old position.

The next day, Sir Peter Parker, considering the damage done his vessels, which were riddled by balls, with masts disabled and shot away, and rigging cut to pieces, and a large number of his officers and men killed and wounded, thought it his wisest course to give up the attempt.

The great question now engaging the public mind in America was their future government; the authority of England had been finally set aside; no longer were laws enacted or courts held in the name of George III., yet they had established no new government that other nations could recognize. Independence was now the cry of the patriots. They felt that they must announce to the world that they were an independent people, with a government of their own choice. In April, North Carolina instructed her delegates in Congress to concur with those of the other States in a declaration of Independence. The next month, the Virginia Convention instructed her delegates to propose the great measure. Massachusetts, by a formal election, direct-

ed her delegates to vote for it: Rhode Island did the same. With all this authority in favor of the step, the wise statesmen of the Continental Congress did not move hastily. At last, on the 7th of June, 1776, Richard Henry Lee, of Virginia, introduced a resolution declaring that the United Colonies are and ought to be free and independent States; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British crown, and that all political connection between them and the state of Great Britain is and ought to be totally dissolved.

All the members of that noble body were not yet prepared for this decisive step. Some still clung to hopes of reconciliation, and the ties which bound them to the country of their forefathers. The delegates of Pennsylvania and Maryland received formal instructions to oppose independence. A long and earnest debate followed. Lee, with John Adams, argued most eloquently in favor of independence, while Dickinson, a pure patriot, whose Farmer's Letters had stirred every American heart, spoke earnestly against it.

The resolution was finally postponed to the 1st day of July, and a committee appointed to prepare a Declaration of Independence. This committee consisted of Thomas Jefferson, John Adams, Benjamin Franklin, Roger Sherman, and Robert R. Livingston.

Meanwhile, New Hampshire, Connecticut, and New Jersey instructed their delegates to vote for the great measure; Maryland finally adopted the same course.

On the 1st of July, the resolution was adopted by Congress, all the colonies voting for it except Delaware and Pennsylvania.

The committee submitted the Declaration of Independence drawn up by Jefferson. It was discussed, and, with some amendments, was passed on the 4th of July, 1776, at two o'clock in the afternoon.

All day long, Philadelphia had been in a state of wild excitement, and a dense crowd had stood around Carpenters' Hall awaiting the result of the deliberations. All day long, a man had stood beside the bell in the steeple—the old bell, still preserved with its inscription, as if placed there by Providence. A boy stood below to tell him when to ring, but the hours went by, and the old man doubted. At last a shout told the result, and the boy, clapping his hands, cried out: "Ring! ring!" and the old bell rang out the birth of a nation.

Copies, which had been printed, were posted up, and crowds gathered to read them, while from the steps of the old hall John Nixon, in his stentorian voice, read it aloud, amid the cheers and plaudits of the people.

The night was lighted up by bonfires and illuminations, while the thunder of cannon rang out, and the quiet city of William Penn was wild with such an excitement as had never before been witnessed in its staid streets.

That day the Declaration was signed by John Hancock, President of the Continental Congress; but it was ordered to be engrossed, or carefully copied out, and signed by all the members. Every member except Dickinson affixed his name. Some, not present on that day, signed it subsequently, the last being Matthew Thornton of New Hampshire, who, in November, closed the list of signers, numbering in all fifty-six.

This great paper, the Magna Charta of America, should be known by every child of the republic, committed to memory in early youth, that its principles and spirit may guide him through life, teaching him to love liberty, and respect the liberty of others.

A DECLARATION OF THE REPRESENTATIVES OF THE UNITED STATES, IN CONGRESS ASSEMBLED.

When, in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another, and to assume, among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal station to which the laws of nature and of nature's God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation.

We hold these truths to be self-evident—that all men are created equal ; that they are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights ; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness. That, to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed ; that whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the right of the people to alter or abolish it, and to institute a new government, laying its foundations on such principles, and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their safety and happiness. Prudence, indeed, will dictate that governments long established should not be changed for light and transient causes ; and, accordingly, all experience hath shown, that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object, evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such government, and to provide new guards for their future security. Such has been the patient sufferance of these colonies, and such is now the necessity which constrains them to alter their former systems of government.

The history of the present King of Great Britain is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations, all having in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over these States. To prove this, let facts be submitted to a candid world.

He has refused his assent to laws the most wholesome and necessary for the public good.

He has forbidden his governors to pass laws of immediate and pressing importance, unless suspended in their operations till his assent should be obtained ; and, when so suspended, he has utterly neglected to attend to them.

He has refused to pass other laws for the accommodation of large districts of people, unless those people would relinquish the right of representation in the Legislature—a right inestimable to them, and formidable to tyrants only.

He has called together legislative bodies at places unusual, uncomfortable, and distant from the repository of their public records, for the sole purpose of fatiguing them into compliance with his measures.

He has dissolved representative houses repeatedly, for opposing, with manly firmness, his invasions on the rights of the people.

He has refused, for a long time after such dissolutions, to cause others to be elected, whereby the legislative powers, incapable of annihilation, have returned to the people at large for their exercise ; the State remaining, in the mean time, exposed to all the dangers of invasions from without, and convulsions within.

He has endeavored to prevent the population of these States ; for that purpose obstructing the laws for the naturalization of foreigners ; refusing to pass others to encourage their migration hither, and raising the conditions of new appropriations of lands.

He has obstructed the administration of justice, by refusing his assent to laws for establishing judiciary powers.

He has made judges dependent on his will alone for the tenure of their offices, and the amount and payment of their salaries.

He has erected a multitude of new offices, and sent hither swarms of officers to harass our people and eat out their substance.

He has kept among us, in times of peace, standing armies, without the consent of our Legislatures.

He has affected to render the military independent of, and superior to the civil power.

He has combined with others to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our constitutions, and unacknowledged by our laws; giving assent to their acts of pretended legislation:

For quartering large bodies of armed troops among us;

For protecting them, by a mock trial, from punishment for any murders which they should commit on the inhabitants of these States;

For cutting off our trade with all parts of the world;

For imposing taxes on us without our consent;

For depriving us, in many cases, of the benefits of trial by jury;

For transporting us beyond seas, to be tried for pretended offenses;

For abolishing the free system of English laws in a neighboring province, establishing therein an arbitrary government, and enlarging its boundaries, so as to render it at once an example and fit instrument for introducing the same absolute rule into these colonies;

For taking away our charters, abolishing our most valuable laws, and altering, fundamentally, the forms of our governments;

For suspending our own Legislatures, and declaring themselves invested with power to legislate for us in all cases whatsoever.

He has abdicated government here, by declaring us out of his protection, and waging war against us.

He has plundered our seas, ravaged our coasts, burned our towns, and destroyed the lives of our people.

He is at this time transporting large armies of foreign mercenaries, to complete the works of death, desolation, and tyranny already begun, with circumstances of cruelty and perfidy scarcely paralleled in the most barbarous ages, and totally unworthy the head of a civilized nation.

He has constrained our fellow-citizens, taken captive on the high seas, to bear arms against their country, to become the executioners of their friends and brethren, or to fall themselves by their hands.

He has excited domestic insurrection among us, and has endeavored to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers the merciless Indian savages, whose known rule of warfare is an undistinguished destruction of all ages, sexes, and conditions.

In every stage of these oppressions we have petitioned for redress in the most humble terms; our repeated petitions have been answered only by repeated injury. A prince whose character is thus marked by every act which may define a tyrant, is unfit to be the ruler of a free people.

Nor have we been wanting in our attentions to our British brethren. We have warned them, from time to time, of attempts by their legislature to extend an unwarrantable jurisdiction over us. We have reminded them of the circumstances of our emigration and settlement here. We have appealed to their native justice and magnanimity, and we have conjured them, by the ties of our common kindred, to disavow these usurpations, which would inevitably interrupt our connec-

tions and correspondence. They, too, have been deaf to the voice of justice and of consanguinity. We must, therefore, acquiesce in the necessity which denounces our separation, and hold them as we hold the rest of mankind—enemies in war—in peace, friends.

We, therefore, the representatives of the United States of America, in general Congress assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the name and by the authority of the good people of these colonies, solemnly publish and declare that these united colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent States; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British crown, and that all political connection between them and the state of Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved; and that, as free and independent States, they have full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, and do all other acts and things which independent States may of right do. And for the support of this Declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to each other our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honor.

Expresses carried the Declaration from town to town. Everywhere it was hailed with joy. It was read in churches and public gatherings; in the camp and at the fireside.

After the evacuation of Boston by the English forces under General Howe, and their departure to Halifax, Washington felt that New York would be attacked. After sending on a part of the army, under General Putnam, he followed with all his available force, and when he had laid his plans before Congress, began to prepare for the defense of that important city. Congress voted to reinforce his army with thirteen thousand militia from the northern colonies, and ten thousand

more from Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Delaware. The approaches to the city, by the North and East Rivers, were defended by strong intrenchments. Sunken vessels and other obstructions were placed in the river, and chains placed across where practicable. Troops, under Generals Greene and Sullivan, were placed on Long Island to prevent the enemy's approach in that way, and the army was protected by a series of works thrown up around Brooklyn.

Such was the position of affairs, when, on the 9th of July, Washington received at Head-Quarters, No. 1 Broadway, in the city of New York, the Declaration of Independence. At six o'clock that evening it was read by his order at the head of each brigade, and was welcomed by the loud huzzas of the troops. The people, led by the Sons of Liberty, received it with the wildest enthusiasm, and they rushed down to the Bowling Green, where stood a leaden equestrian statue of George III., richly gilt, and still bright, for it had been erected only six years before. Ropes were fastened to this effigy of the monarch, whose reign in America had ceased, and it was soon by sturdy hands leveled in the dust, and hacked in pieces, to be melted up and run into bullets for the use of the army.

The Declaration was read from the steps of Faneuil Hall, by Colonel Crafts, on the 17th, and at its close the immense crowd raised a loud hurrah, which was kept up till it was drowned in the thunders of cannon.

At Charleston, the people gathered under the branches of a wide-spreading live oak, the famous Liberty Tree, afterwards cut down by Sir Henry Clinton, and an expedition against Florida was immediately planned. From North to South, there was but one sentiment, one resolve.

Every sign of royal power, the King's arms, crowns, and emblems of

monarchy were at once demolished, and names were changed to bury them in oblivion.

The various States then proceeded to alter their old charters, or adopt new constitutions for their future government. The form of government in Connecticut and Rhode Island was so democratic, that it required no change. In this work of reorganization, New Hampshire and New Jersey led the way, having adopted constitutions before the Declaration of Independence, while Massachusetts, moving slowly, did not complete her work until 1779.

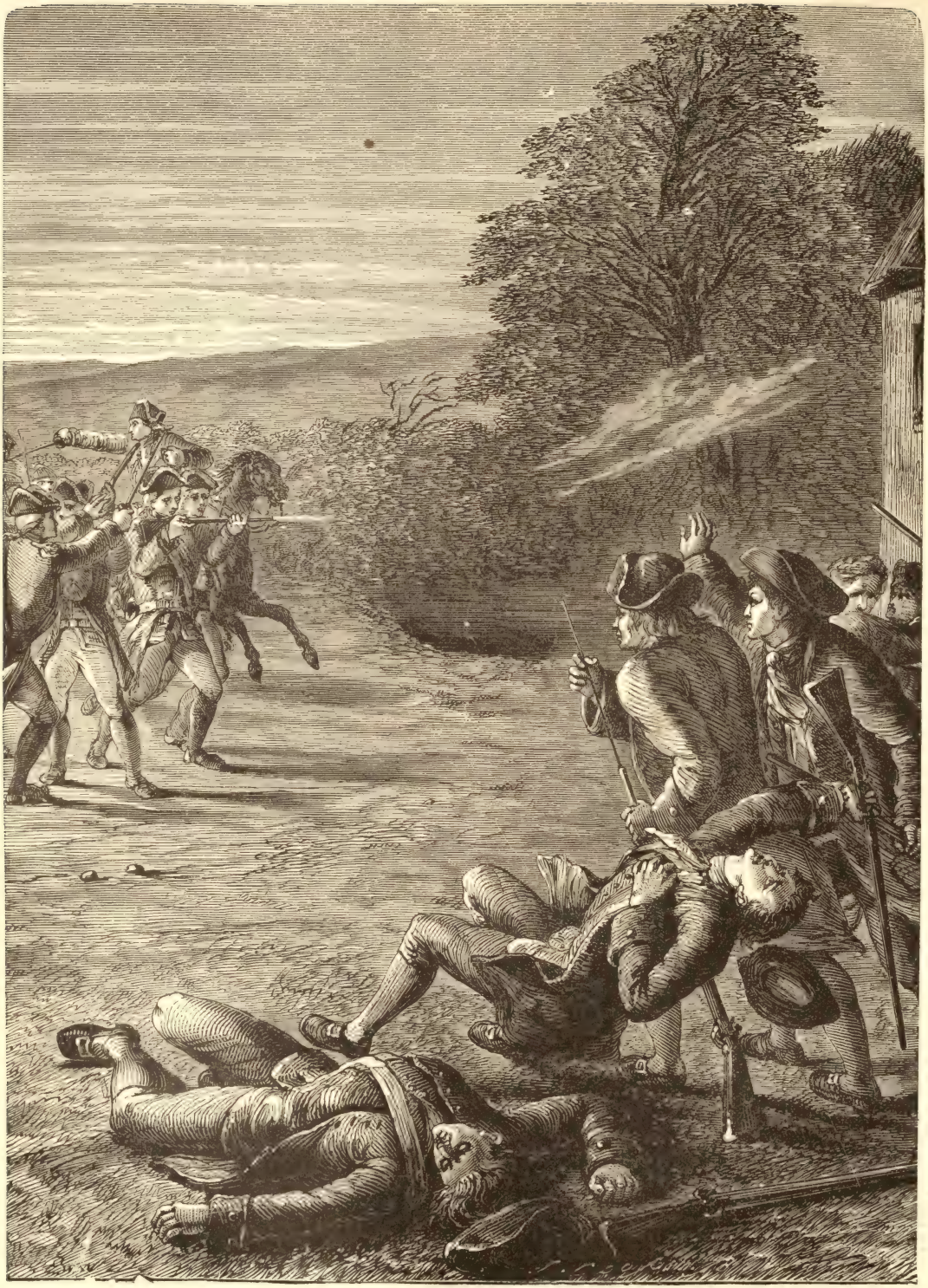
A great struggle was now to take place at New York. On the 29th of June, 1776, General Howe arrived at Sandy Hook, with ships and transports, bearing his army, strengthened in numbers, military stores, and material. The very day that New York was exulting in the Declaration of Independence, and demolishing the statue of the King, Howe landed nine thousand men at the Quarantine ground on Staten Island. They encamped on the heights, and the flag of England was raised again on our soil. Tories flocked to his standard from all parts. Those in New York city formed a plot to capture Washington, and give him up to General Howe. Some of Washington's guards were so base as to be bought up by British gold to betray their commander, but the plot was discovered, many arrested, and one of the most guilty hung.

In a few days after Howe's landing on Staten Island, another fleet entered New York Bay. It was Lord Howe, bringing another army and supplies. On the transports, and on Staten Island, were now thirty thousand British and Hessian troops.

On the 22d of August, four thousand men were thrown over to Long Island, and landed at Gravesend. The rest of the army and ar-



INDEPENDENCE HALL, PHILADELPHIA, WHERE THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE WAS SIGNED.



THE FIGHT AT LEXINGTON (Page 417)



DEATH OF MONTGOMERY AT QUEBEC. (Page 123)



SARATOGA AND STILLWATER—ENCAMPMENT OF BURGOYNE'S ARMY. (Page 470)



ABDUCTION OF JENNIE McRAE. (Page 475)



THE BATTLE OF THE KEGS.

(Page 478)



HANNAH ERWIN ISRAEL SAVING THE CATTLE. (Page 480)



MRS. BRATTON HEROICALLY DEFYING CAPTAIN HUCK. (Page 525)

tillery soon followed, the Americans having no fleet to command the bay.

The two armies were now face to face. Unfortunately, at this critical moment, General Greene, who commanded the American lines on Long Island, fell sick, and he was replaced by the aged but now incompetent General Putnam. In spite of Washington's orders, he neglected to guard important passes. Clinton perceived the negligence. On the 26th, de Heister and his Hessians pushed up to Flatbush, Cornwallis to Flatland. The post at Bedford, left entirely unguarded, was seized and occupied by Sir Henry Clinton, during the night, while Putnam, deluded by Grant, sent off General Sterling to oppose that British general, who was advancing from the Narrows, and Sullivan was ordered up to strengthen the force in front of the Hessians.

Clinton, securing the pass, soon scattered the American forces there, and gained the rear of Sullivan's line. While Heister was pressing them hard in front, Clinton suddenly assailed their rear. Hemmed in between the two divisions, the Americans fought desperately, continuing the unequal contest till noon, when the survivors, seeing the struggle hopeless, surrendered.

Lord Stirling had held Grant in check till Cornwallis approached. To secure his retreat he attacked Cornwallis so gallantly at Gowanus, that he would have effected his retreat had not de Heister appeared; and Stirling, with part of his force completely surrounded, was compelled to surrender, though the remainder of his troops, with considerable loss, crossed a creek and marsh and escaped.

The battle was a series of skirmishes of detached bodies fighting against an enemy three times their number, with no able general directing the whole movement of the army.

The army of the United States lost a thousand prisoners, and about two hundred in killed and wounded. The English loss was about four hundred.

This was a terrible disaster to the new country. Nearly twelve hundred of the flower of the army was lost, with two good generals, and the rest of the force on Long Island was in imminent danger.

Howe, encamped before the American works, prepared to attack them next day with the aid of the fleet.

Washington had hastened to the spot, and saw Howe's error in not attacking his lines at once. The morning of the 28th dawned, but a dense fog covered the scene. Washington brought up fresh troops and kept up a constant skirmishing, till he saw the English fleet preparing to move. Still protected by the fog, he gathered all the boats around Brooklyn and New York, and while the enemy, though so near, were utterly unsuspicious of the movement, Washington evacuated his lines. Regiment after regiment passed over ; Washington and his staff, in the saddle all night, remaining till the last company embarked. Then they too crossed, and the fog, which had in the hands of Providence so protected their retreat, lifted. The English entered the deserted American lines, then galloped down to the shore of the East River only to see the last American boats reaching the New York side.

Howe was thunderstruck at thus being deprived of the fruit of his victory, the certain capture of the whole force.

The effect of the battle of Long Island was disastrous and almost fatal to the cause of Liberty. Soldiers deserted by hundreds ; whole regiments vanished ; officers resigned in disgust.

It was a critical moment. Admiral and General Howe had come with power to treat with the Americans. They had already sought to open

negotiations with General Washington, but as their letter was addressed simply to George Washington, Esqr., and when this was refused, to George Washington, Esquire, etc., etc., etc., the Commander of the American Forces refused to receive it, or any other communication that did not recognize his rank. He gave Adjutant General Patterson clearly to understand that the effort of the Howes was useless; they had simply power to grant pardon; the Americans had done nothing for which they could accept any pardon.

After the battle of Long Island, Howe thought that Congress might not be as firm as General Washington, so he despatched General Sullivan, a prisoner in his hands, to offer to Congress a renewal of the overtures for peace. Congress appointed Franklin, John Adams, and Edward Rutledge a committee to wait upon the Howes. They met on Staten Island, but the Howes had no authority except to receive submission to the crown, while Congress would listen to no terms but independence.

Washington was now unable to hold New York city, and a retreat became imperative. To find out exactly the plans of the enemy, he sent the brave Connecticut patriot, Nathan Hale, inside the enemy's lines. As he was returning to Washington with the information he was captured, tried, and hung as a spy. Every brutality was shown to him by the Provost-marshal. He was not allowed a clergyman or even a Bible, and the letters which with his dying hand he penned to his mother and sisters were brutally destroyed. Hale, the martyr, met his fate with unflinching courage. His last words were, "I only regret that I have but one life to lose for my country." This wanton cruelty was long remembered by the Americans as a justification for the utmost severity toward the enemy under similar circumstances.

Howe, at last, with his ships in the North and East River sweeping

New York island with their fire, began to land his troops at Kip's Bay. The American troops posted there to oppose his landing, fled without striking a blow, and Washington, after a vain attempt to rally them, dashed his hat on the ground, exclaiming: "Are these the men with whom I am to defend America?" So reckless was he of his own safety that he would have been taken prisoner had not his aides seized the reins of his horse and hurried him away.

Washington now retreated up the island, and part of his army would have been captured had not the English halted at Murray Hill, where Mrs. Robert Murray purposely delayed the English officers.

General Howe occupied New York city, to his intense satisfaction, but that very night a fire broke out, which destroyed upwards of a thousand buildings, and nearly laid the whole city in ashes. Each party accused the other of having set the city on fire, and several persons were hung on the spot on suspicion.

As Washington fell back the English advanced, but a brisk action took place on Harlem plains, in which Colonel Knowlton drove an English detachment back to their lines with great spirit, losing his life in his gallant charge.

Washington then evacuated New York island except Fort Washington, where he left a garrison. Howe pursued him, held in check for a time at Throgg's Neck by Prescott, the hero of Bunker's Hill. At White Plains the two armies again came face to face; Chatterton's Hill, on Washington's extreme right, was held by General McDougall, with about sixteen hundred men. After some skirmishing Howe at last attacked this position with three columns of his best troops, comprising thirteen regiments. The American troops, except a body of militia, fought with steady valor, contesting the ground inch by inch, and more

than once repulsing the well-trained and numerous body of assailants. When at last they could no longer hold it they drew off in good order and joined Washington's main army.

The English army lost so severely in this preliminary movement, that Howe relinquished his idea of making a general attack on Washington's intrenched line. He had expected to find an army completely demoralized by the disaster on Long Island, but found that it was still determined and resolute.

Fort Washington was now completely isolated. The troops could not be removed in the face of the enemy : but the commander, Colonel Magaw, resolved to hold it to the last : although the English commander, when summoning him to surrender, threatened to put all to the sword if he refused. The English assailed his position with four columns, but their advance was steadily contested. General Knyphausen, however, with his Hessians, finally gained the height, and Magaw, perceiving further resistance useless, surrendered with his garrison prisoners of war. Nearly three thousand American soldiers were thus lost to Washington, with valuable supplies, but the occupation of the fort had been against his advice.

The cause of freedom looked desperate. Washington, with a little army of about three thousand men, was confronted by an English army of ten times his numbers, which daily received accessions of Tories.

Washington had meanwhile crossed to Hackensack and retreated through Newark, New Brunswick, and Princeton to Trenton, where he crossed into Pennsylvania.

General Cornwallis followed him step by step, and entered Trenton as Washington's last boats were crossing the Delaware.

A reinforcement of two thousand Pennsylvania troops under General

Mifflin, enabled Washington to guard the passes of the river, and collect all boats that could be useful to the enemy. General Lee, with a division of the army, was still in New Jersey, and while slowly moving to join Washington, he was captured in his quarters at some distance from his troops. General Sullivan, who had been exchanged, took command, and soon joined Washington; General Gates also came in with the remnant of the army of Canada. But all this made up an insignificant force to face the powerful and exultant army of England, which held New York and New Jersey completely in their hands. It was a period of deepest gloom for the cause of America.

Rhode Island, too, was occupied by Sir Henry Clinton and a force of British and Hessians, escorted by a squadron of men-of-war.

Congress, which had retired to Baltimore, endeavored to arouse the people to action, but all were disheartened. The glorious results they had expected were changed to disasters.

Still, such a crisis had been foreseen, and Congress had already sent envoys to France and Spain to urge those countries to acknowledge American independence and give them aid in war material. Benjamin Franklin, regarded in France as one of the first philosophers of the age, exercised by his popularity a most favorable influence. France agreed to supply arms indirectly. She allowed vessels to be fitted out in her ports to cruise against the English, and, without breaking with the neighboring kingdom, gave every evidence of her goodwill towards the Americans.

All this, however, was but matter for hope, and before relief came, the cause of America might be desperate. Congress had been raising troops for short terms. Washington showed the danger of this, and the necessity of raising and maintaining for the war, a large force of

regular troops, whose experience should not be lost to the country just as they became good soldiers. Seeing the perilous condition of affairs, Congress invested him with power to raise sixteen additional battalions of infantry, three thousand light horse, three regiments of artillery and engineers, appoint officers, call on the States for militia, appoint all army officers under the grade of Brigadier-General, and, by a stretch of power most unusual, to take supplies when needed for the army, if the inhabitants refused to sell, allowing them a reasonable price.

To carry on the war, Congress had issued paper money, of which some of our readers may have seen time-worn specimens. This was called Continental Currency. The patriotic portion took this readily at first, but the Tories and those indifferent to the cause refused it. Washington was invested with authority to arrest and confine any man that refused to take it.

With these powers in his hands Washington gave new life to the army. The soldiers felt confidence that their wants would be seen to, and that justice would be done to them in all cases. They felt that they were indeed an army gathered in a noble cause.

Washington needed now but one thing to give his army new life and courage. This was, to strike a blow at the enemy that would rouse the drooping energies of the country, and fill the army with confidence.

With the keen eye of an able general he watched his enemy. Howe, with an overpowering force, flushed with victory, looked with contempt on Washington and his handful of soldiers beyond the river. He feared nothing from them, and lay in perfect security.

Here was Washington's opportunity. He formed his available forces into three divisions; he prepared to re-cross the Delaware on Christ-

mas eve and attack the Hessians who held Trenton. The river was full of floating ice, a most perilous moment to attempt to carry over troops in the face of an enemy. He himself, with his main body, moved quietly up to McKonkey's Ferry, nine miles above Trenton; there he crossed in the intense cold, during a heavy storm of rain and hail that drove the Hessians in doors. The passage of the river was slow and dangerous, and it was not till four o'clock that he reached the Jersey shore.

General Cadwallader was to cross at Bristol, and move on the enemy at Bordentown and Mount Holly.

Washington formed his troops in two divisions. One, under General Sullivan, took the river road, and Washington himself, with Greene, took the Pennington road.

The gayeties and merry-makings in the German camp had been kept up till a late hour: then all was still in the little town, and naught was heard but the driving sleet and snow. Not an ear listened to the approach of the two American columns, plodding on over icy roads, while men actually froze to death on the march. Suddenly the alarm rang out. Greene is in the town; three minutes more and Sullivan's men, with a cheer, pour into the western side. The Hessian drums beat to arms; quick as thought the well-drilled soldiers form under the eye of Colonel Rahl. But he is hemmed in between the Americans and Assanpink Creek, while a battery of six guns under Washington's own eye opens on him. Rahl trains two guns to oppose him, but Captain Washington and Lieutenant James Monroe are down on the gunners, and though wounded in the charge, capture the pieces when ready to fire.

Rahl drew his men out of the town and, forming them in an orchard,

resolves to make a desperate effort to regain Trenton. "Forward, all who are grenadiers of mine," he cries, and leads a fierce charge on Washington's line. A rattling volley meets them; Rahl falls mortally wounded: his men turn and retreat along the Princeton road; but Hand's riflemen are in their front with their deadly weapons; other troops are on their flank. Bewildered, lost, the Hessians throw down their arms. The battle is over. Rahl, supported by sergeants, approaches General Washington and delivers up his sword, then is conveyed to his quarters to die.

Trenton was won. Two men frozen to death, two killed and a few wounded, was all the Americans lost, to purchase a victory that gave them a thousand prisoners, with their artillery, ammunition, wagons, and arms.

Cadwallader had been unable to effect a crossing, so Washington, unwilling to risk anything, retired again beyond the Delaware with his prisoners and spoils.

This brilliant victory filled his army with confidence, and in proportion mortified the enemy. The British drew back from the Delaware to Princeton. Cornwallis, about to return to England, was recalled to resume his command in New Jersey, and watch the troublesome American army.

On the 30th of December Washington took post at Trenton, where he was immediately joined by Generals Cadwalader and Mifflin, each with eighteen hundred Pennsylvania militia; and Washington, by promises of a bounty, induced the New England troops, whose time of service would be up in a few days, to remain for six weeks. He prepared to strike another blow, and formed his army for immediate action.

So ended the year 1776, the year of American independence.

CHAPTER II.

Campaign of 1777—The Operations in New Jersey—Cornwallis confronts Washington at Trenton—Washington's masterly Movement on Princeton—The Battle of Princeton—Death of General Mercer—British Attacks on Peekskill and Danbury—Death of General Wooster—Meigs at Sag Harbor—Washington in Winter-quarters at Morristown—The glorious Stars and Stripes—Movements of the Armies in New Jersey—The British evacuate the State—Lafayette comes to America—Howe lands his Army at the Head of Chesapeake Bay.—Washington meets him at Brandywine—A hard-fought Battle—Congress leaves Philadelphia—Howe takes Possession of the City—Washington attacks the British at Germantown—A Victory almost gained—Operations on the Delaware—The Battle of the Kegs—Washington in Winter-quarters at Valley Forge—Burgoyne, from Canada, invades New York—Ticonderoga lost—Schuyler and his Policy—Burgoyne begins to suffer from Want of Provisions—Defeat of Baume and his Hessians at Bennington—General Stark—St. Leger sent to attack Fort Schuyler—Battle of Oriskany—Death of General Herkimer—Arnold relieves the Fort—Sad Fate of Jane McCrea—Burgoyne defeated at Stillwater—Another Battle—Burgoyne attempts to retreat—His Surrender—Clinton ascends the Hudson.

The New Year opened strangely. The English officers, who had expected to pass a gay winter in comfortable quarters, with all the amusements in which army officers have so delighted, and which make them so popular with the ladies, were roused to good hard work, marching and fighting. The generals found that they had an enemy who was watchful and untiring. Howe despatched Cornwallis at once to New Jersey, to restore order, get the army in a strong position, and prevent Washington from doing any further harm.

Cornwallis, getting his troops well in hand at Princeton, where he overtook General Grant already on the march, pushed on to Trenton with a considerable force, leaving three regiments at Princeton under Colonel Mawhood. He was so much harassed by strong parties sent out by Washington to impede his progress, and obstruct the roads, that it was almost night when he finally reached Trenton, and came in view

of the American army. Washington's lines lay beyond the Assanpink, in a strong position, well fortified, and as the British advanced, the American skirmishers retired by the bridges and fords, which were all well defended. The critical moment had come. The two armies were face to face, but though Washington's force was made up chiefly of militia, and men whose services would expire in a few days, Cornwallis summoned up his remaining troops, to make sure of crushing the little American army.

Within those lines whose fires he could see gleaming along the creek, a council of war was held in the house of Miss Dagworthy. General St. Clair proposed a bold manœuvre, which all immediately adopted. His plan was to leave the fires burning, and men enough at work to keep up the appearance of occupation, while the army moved stealthily down to Princeton to surprise Colonel Mawhood in Cornwallis's rear.

The baggage was sent off to Burlington, and at midnight the march began. Taking the Quaker-road through the woods, as safer, their progress was slow, as the road was still full of stumps. It was daylight before they came in sight of Princeton, and Mawhood was already on the march to join Cornwallis with two regiments. Near the old Quaker meeting-house, General Mercer, with the advance of Washington's army, and Mawhood came in sight. A hill near at hand was at once the object of both. Mercer soon held it, and as Mawhood came up poured in volley after volley from the true rifles of his men ; but Mawhood was full of pluck. He led a charge of bayonets before which Mercer's men broke, leaving their general on the field. He surrendered, but was beaten down and bayoneted with wolfish cruelty by the Hessians.

Washington rallied the fugitives, and with his artillery checked Mawhood's pursuit. The British commander, however, charged bravely again to capture Washington's guns, but was driven back to the hill, from which the City Cavalry of Philadelphia, in a splendid charge, headed by Washington himself, finally drove him. Mawhood, with one regiment, then retreated towards Trenton; his other regiments, after a brief stand at the college-buildings, fled in disorder to New Brunswick.

Cornwallis, completely deceived, and supposing Washington still before him, was roused from his mistake by the booming of cannon in his rear. At once his camp was in motion. Forming his army, he marched in all haste towards Princeton; but Washington had destroyed the bridges; so that before he could come up, Washington, after pursuing the fugitive regiments of Mawhood's force, left the low country of Jersey, in which these operations had been carried on, and striking to the ranges of hills and mountains beyond, advanced to Morristown, where he established his winter-quarters.

In this brilliant action, where all his men showed great resolution, except the militia who deserted Mercer, Washington suffered slight loss, except in officers, while the English loss in killed, wounded, and missing, was nearly a thousand. Like the affair at Trenton, this achievement filled the country with hope, and gave the American commander a very great reputation in Europe as well as in America.

One of the good effects of Washington's victories was the exchange and release of a number of American prisoners who had been held at New York. Their sufferings had been fearful beyond description. And during the whole war, the treatment of the American prisoners was a

disgrace to England which can never be effaced. Churches, sugar-houses, prisons, were crowded with the unfortunate captives: then prison-ships were used; harsh treatment, decayed food, want of proper accommodations, and of all means for maintaining cleanliness, swept away these patriots by thousands. The martyrs were buried near Trinity Church, and at the Wallabout in Brooklyn, and they merit a higher glory in the eyes of their countrymen than if they had died on the field of battle. Such a death seems glorious to all, but it is over in a moment, while the lingering death of the martyrs of the prisons and prison-ships was prolonged by every device that malignant ingenuity could devise.

Howe lay inactive at New York, with his splendid army, awaiting reinforcements. He sent out one expedition to destroy some stores at Peekskill, and another to Danbury, Connecticut. The aged General Wooster engaged the latter force with a handful of brave men, but was mortally wounded. Arnold happened to be near, and he gathered a small force, but was wounded and repulsed in an attack on the English, who accomplished their object.

To retaliate for this predatory warfare, Colonel Meigs crossed over from Connecticut, and destroyed valuable English shipping and stores at Sag Harbor.

About this time Washington raised on his camp at Morristown the flag which had been formally adopted by Congress, with thirteen stripes, alternately red and white, and a blue union with thirteen stars, forming a new constellation—the glorious Stars and Stripes that have for nearly a century waved over the land, and floated on every sea, and under the skies of every clime.

Washington had been busily organizing the troops which Congress

had raised throughout the States. Those at the North were stationed at Ticonderoga and Peekskill. Those of the Middle and some Southern States were collected in New Jersey. He thus awaited Howe's movements. Twenty-four thousand muskets from France came seasonably to hand, and toward the end of May, Washington advanced to Middlebrook, near New Brunswick. Howe moved out, endeavoring to draw him from his strong position, and failing in this, evacuated New Jersey, and crossed over to Staten Island.

New Jersey had suffered terribly from the movements of the armies, and the plundering of the English, and especially the Hessian troops. Every county showed its pictures of desolation, its ruined homesteads, its slaughtered people, women stripped of everything wandering in the woods and mountains, houseless children, starving people.

While Washington was watching Howe, to see at what point he intended to strike, ready to hasten to thwart it, he met one who was to be closely associated with him throughout the war, the Marquis de Lafayette. At a dinner given by some French officers to one of the sons of George III., who happened to be in France, Lafayette heard of the American struggle. Though told by an enemy, there was enough to rouse the enthusiasm of the young and gallant officer. Leaving his wife in France, he hastened to America to offer his services to the new Republic. He asked no pay, and desired only active service. His example found followers; de Kalb, Steuben, Kosciusko, Pulaski—officers trained in the wars of Europe, came to give America their experience and discipline.

The summer wore away, and Howe's policy was still in doubt. At last, in August, Washington ascertained that the British had entered the Chesapeake, and landed at the head of Elk River, evidently with a

view to march on Philadelphia. He advanced and took post along the Brandywine, to contest the passage of the fords of that river, especially Chadd's Ford, where his main army was drawn up, while General Armstrong and the Pennsylvania militia formed his left wing, and General Sullivan, with Stephens and Stirling, held the upper ford on his right. Howe moved upon him in two columns; that on the right, only as a feint, moved on Chadd's Ford, while the left column, under Lord Cornwallis, moved up so as to cross the stream, and turn Washington's right flank. A dense fog concealed his movements. This movement was discovered late, and Sullivan moved down to attack Cornwallis. His left was on the Brandywine; both flanks were protected by woods, and his artillery well placed. As the day was declining, there was a glitter over Osborne's Hill, and down swept the English force in three columns. The cannon thundered along both lines, and the fiercest conflict yet seen in the war was soon raging. While the English came on to the charge again and again, with desperate courage, they were steadily hurled back from the American lines. For an hour they fought muzzle to muzzle. At last Stephens' brigade wavers and falls back, Sullivan's yields, but Lord Stirling and Conway hold their own against Cornwallis's whole force. General Sullivan and Lafayette gallop up after endeavoring to bring the other troops again into action. Sullivan's aids are killed by his side, Lafayette is wounded. Even they feel that they must draw off the brave fellows or lose them. Washington had been watching Knyphausen, expecting an attack at Chadd's Ford. Leaving General Wayne to hold the Hessians in check, he hastened to support Sullivan with all the force he could draw off under General Greene. He met his gallant men in full retreat, and, opening to receive them, General Greene formed his men in a strong position and kept Cornwallis at bay.

Knyphausen at last attacked Wayne and Maxwell. For a time the Americans here sustained the onset as bravely as men could wish, but tidings came of the rout of the right wing. Then a retreat was ordered. It became a flight, for, abandoning artillery and stores, they retreated to the rear of General Greene.

The battle of the Brandywine, fought to save Philadelphia, and fought under great disadvantages, cost Washington nearly thirteen hundred men in killed, wounded, and prisoners.

He fell back to Chester and Germantown. That he could save Philadelphia was now clearly impossible. Congress removed from that city all its stores and magazines, and prepared to hold its sessions elsewhere.

Howe, after sending the butcher Grey to surprise General Wayne at Paoli, which he did with the blood-thirsty spirit of a tiger, occupied Philadelphia, and proceeded to remove the obstructions with which the Americans had studded the Delaware, and which would prevent the fleet from coming up to Philadelphia. While his army was thus weakened by detachments, Washington, who was at Skippack Creek, moved on the 30th of October to attack the British forces at Germantown. A column under Sullivan and Wayne, entering by the main street, was to attack the British centre and left; another under Greene and Stephens, marching down the Lime-kiln road, was to attack their right, while two columns of militia turned their flanks. General Greene was unable to arrive in time, so that Wayne attacked the British right before he came up. Sullivan and Conway defeated the enemy's left, and drove it steadily through the village; and the enemy's right was utterly defeated by Generals Wayne and Greene; but the victorious army became confused in the fog, so that parties fired into each other. The English

colonel, Musgrave, who had occupied Chew's house in their rear, held out, and the firing of cannon there gave the impression that the English had gained their rear just as General Grey came up to them in front. A rapid retreat took place, but without disorder, Washington retiring with all his artillery. The battle was a sanguinary one, though productive of no decisive result, the loss on each side being nearly a thousand.

Washington then retired to Skippack Creek, and Howe, feeling that he could not risk any more such engagements, drew all his forces into the city of Philadelphia. The reduction of the forts below him on the Delaware was his great object, but it was no easy matter.

Colonel Donop, with twelve hundred Hessians, was sent to attack the Rhode Island Colonel Greene, at Red Bank, while five men-of-war were to aid in the operation. So ably did Greene defend his post, Fort Mercer, that the assailants, after a desperate conflict, retreated in disorder, leaving their commander, Donop, mortally wounded, a prisoner in the hands of the Americans, and losing nearly four hundred men. The men-of-war fared as badly, two, the Augusta and Merlin, grounded, and were set on fire and destroyed by the Americans.

Fort Mifflin, situated on Mud Island, a low reedy spot about seven miles below Philadelphia, was next attacked. It had a garrison of three hundred men, under Lieutenant-Colonel Smith of Baltimore. There were guard-boats and galleys in the channel, and Washington sent what relief he could spare.

On the 10th of November the English opened fire from batteries on land and floating ones, as well as from the men-of-war. A perfect storm of shells and balls rained on the devoted fort. Smith fell dangerously wounded. Fleury, the engineer, was struck down; the

commander of the artillery was killed. The garrison was thinned by the deadly fire. Towards midnight Major Thayer, the commander, set the ruins on fire and retired to Fort Mercer.

Two days after, Cornwallis marched against that post, and as nothing could be done to save it, the American forces withdrew.

The galleys and other vessels then endeavored to pass above Philadelphia. Some succeeded under cover of night, others were burned to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy.

The English were now complete masters of Philadelphia, and the Delaware down to the sea. This result had been purchased at a serious loss of men and time, and really was of little advantage, for Washington was encamped at Whitemarsh, fourteen miles from Philadelphia, in a strong position carefully fortified.

Howe felt that he could attempt no further operations till he brought Washington to an action. To draw the American general from his lines, he marched out of Philadelphia with his army on the night of the 4th of December, every precaution having been taken to make the movement a complete surprise on General Washington.

But the council of war had been held in the house of Lydia Darrah, a Quakeress, whose patriotism, though not evinced, was true and deep. Alarmed at this secret council of the British officers, she stole to the door of the room were they were deliberating on the night of the 2d, and heard enough to see Washington's danger; then crept back to bed. When the council broke up, they rapped at her door that she might let them out. She let them knock some minutes, and then came out as if roused from a deep sleep.

The next morning she asked leave to go to Frankford for flour for her family, and having reached the mill she left her bag, and then

hastened on with all her might towards the American outposts, quivering in every limb with anxiety. At last she saw an American officer approaching. She begged him to dismount and walk with her. Panting with her exertion she told him all she knew, and bade him hasten to General Washington, but not to betray her, as she was in the enemy's hands.

While, with a heart relieved and full of thankfulness, the good woman plodded homeward, Colonel Craig galloped to the camp. Washington at once prepared, and when Howe came up with his forces he found the American lines manned, the artillery ready to open upon him, all in fact ready to give him a warm reception. After a little skirmishing he returned to Philadelphia, unable to explain how his plan got wind. Lydia Darrah was not suspected, for, as one of the officers told her, "I know you were asleep, for I knocked three times at your door before I could rouse you." And she very truthfully declared that no other of her family was up that night.

Washington soon after broke up his encampment here, and fell back with his exhausted army to Valley Forge, twenty miles from Philadelphia, where he passed the winter with terrible privation and suffering, which have made the camp famous as the darkest hour in the struggle for American independence. His army reached Valley Forge on the 19th of December, and at once began felling trees to build log huts on the slopes where they were to encamp. Washington's headquarters were at the house of Mr. Potts, an old house still standing. Around him on regular streets, like a little city, were the huts of the Continental soldiers. Howe, in Philadelphia, enjoyed comfortable quarters and abundance of supplies. Washington, through the dilatory action of Congress and the frauds of those who had undertaken to furnish supplies, saw his army almost perish with hunger and cold. For want

of horses, the men had to yoke themselves to wagons. As winter advanced the suffering increased. For a week at a time the troops were without any kind of flesh-meat, and the farmers around, disaffected to the new government, refused to sell them grain or cattle. Sickness broke out among them and numbers died. Never did a cause look more gloomy, but Washington never despaired. Isaac Potts, in whose house he lodged, once came upon the general's horse tied to a sapling, and in a thicket near by he saw Washington on his knees in prayer, his cheeks wet with tears.

We turn now to the Northern department. After the disastrous invasion of Canada, the scanty American force, with a small body of Canadians who had joined them, fell back to Ticonderoga and Crown Point.

The English had meanwhile sent out German and English troops to Canada, and a large army now occupied that province under General Burgoyne. Canadians, with Indians and Tories from New York, brought by the influence of the Johnson family, swelled his ranks. He resolved to take the offensive and to sweep down to New York, annihilating the American forces on his way, and thus crushing out the rebellion in that colony.

Towards the latter part of June, 1777, he encamped near Crown Point and there gave a war banquet to his Indians, addressing them in a speech intended to inflame their zeal, although in words he enjoined on them humanity and all the usages of civilized men, denouncing all scalping or murder of those not engaged in hostilities.

At the approach of the enemy, the Americans posted at Crown Point retired to Ticonderoga; General St. Clair held that fort with about two thousand half-armed men and boys. He was not aware

of the large force under Burgoyne, or its reinforcements. He attempted to defend Ticonderoga, although he had not force enough to man his lines.

Burgoyne took possession of Mount Hope and Mount Defiance, planting batteries to command St. Clair's position. St. Clair by night sent off his stores in batteaux to Whitehall, and then marched for the same place. Burgoyne soon discovered the movement, although a fire had been kept up on his works to mislead him. He overtook the boats at Whitehall, and the Americans destroyed them, with the mills and stores there, to prevent their falling into his hands. General Frazer, with a force of Hessians and English, pursued St. Clair's rear, and overtook them at Hubbarton in Vermont. The Americans, about twelve hundred in number, under Colonels Seth Warner and Francis, faced the enemy : but at the first volleys the militia fled, leaving seven hundred men to bear the brunt. The battle raged furiously for some time, and the Americans, though Colonel Francis was killed while checking a retreat, held their ground till General Riedesel came dashing up with his Hessians. Then the remnant of the American force retreated to Rutland and Castleton, pursued by the Hessians. The English had won the day, but at the cost of two hundred men killed and wounded ; the American loss, including prisoners, being more than three hundred : but the heaviest disaster was the loss of Ticonderoga, a hundred and twenty-eight cannon, stores, and provisions.

At the same time Colonel St. Leger, with a force of English, Tories, and Indians, was moving by way of Oswego on Fort Schuyler, now Rome, where Colonel Gansevoort commanded a small garrison. To relieve this place, a force assembled under brave old General Herkimer, but they were rash and disregarded his calm advice. While

pushing on towards the fort they were suddenly attacked by a party in ambush, under command of Brant and Sir John Johnson. The Americans were at first thrown into confusion as the Indians burst on them from their coverts, with deadly volleys and yells of fury, but they speedily recovered and fought like veterans. Brave old Herkimer had his horse killed under him, by a ball which pierced his own leg. But he made his men seat him on his saddle at the foot of a large beech tree, and, lighting his pipe, he continued to give his orders with the utmost composure till the enemy retreated. For nearly an hour the woods resounded with the crack of rifles, the cheers of the Americans, the yells of the Indians and Tories. Both fought with the utmost desperation, most of the combatants being old friends and neighbors, with scarcely a stranger among them. It was almost a hand to hand fight, and was suspended only when a furious storm came on. The British then drew off, but Herkimer formed his men in a better position. He had seen the Indians rush on his men after firing, and cut them down. Now he put two men at a tree, one to fire at a time. When the British renewed the attack, and, after seeing the flash of an American's rifle, rushed up to despatch him before he could load again, they caught the rifle-ball or the hatchet of the second American. So severely did the Indians suffer by this new style that they drew off, and Major Watts rushed forward to the attack with his Royal Greens, a Tory regiment raised in the valley. The sight of these men stung the Americans to madness. As these traitors advanced, the Americans poured in a deadly volley, then burst from their coverts like so many furies, and attacked them with bayonets, knives, or with the butts of their muskets. Amid this came the thunder of cannon from the fort. Gansevoort was coming. The English, to deceive them,

sent a party with their coats turned ; the Americans were about to open and receive them when the fraud was detected. So fierce was the attack on his party, that they were all killed or driven back in panic ; and the Indians, terrorstruck, fled with them. The sortie from the fort, under Colonel Willett, completed the rout of St. Leger, who lost all his camp equipage, clothing, stores, private papers and baggage, with five British flags.

Yet St. Leger rallied his men and even sent an officer to demand the surrender of the fort. It was indignantly refused ; and Colonel Willett hastened in person to Albany for relief. General Arnold marched to relieve the fort, and using a half crazy fellow named Hon Yost Schuyler he filled St. Leger's Indians with such terrible ideas of his immense force, that St. Leger's besieging force, to the great astonishment of Colonel Gansevoort and his garrison, suddenly broke up their encampment and fled in haste, leaving tents, artillery, and baggage behind them.

Thus ended the siege of Fort Schuyler.

Brave General Herkimer was carried to his home, but his wound proved fatal. He died a few days after, revered to this day in the valley of the Oriskany, where he fought so nobly.

Burgoyne had now control of Lake Champlain and Lake George, but his further progress was delayed by want of provisions. He expected to live off the country, but was soon disappointed. The Americans had provisions stored at Bennington, in Vermont. That State, with the rich pastures in the valleys of the Green Mountains, abounded in horses, with which, too, he hoped to mount his dragoons.

A body of nearly five hundred men, Hessians, Tories, and Indians, sallied out from Fort Edward, under the command of Lieutenant-Colo-

nel Baume, guided by Governor Skene. All was gay as a holiday excursion, but when tidings came that the Americans had mustered, eighteen hundred strong, at Bennington to meet him, the matter began to look serious. Still Baume felt himself strong enough, and he pushed on over the dusty road in the hot August sun. At Van Schaick's Mill, near North Hoosick, he captured some flour, and was joined by a few Tories, who increased his hopes of success.

John Stark, at the call of the General Court of New Hampshire, left his farm to take command of the suddenly raised forces of the State. On the 13th of August, hearing of the enemy's approach, he sent out Colonel Gregg with two hundred men. As this party came upon Baume's force it fell back till Stark came up, and formed his men in line of battle ; Baume, seeing a considerable force thus checking his advance, halted on a high ground overlooking a bend of the Walloomscoick Creek. Stark, to draw him from this ground, as well as to obtain reinforcements, fell back. Militia came pouring in. The Rev. Mr. Allen of Pittsfield came at the head of his flock. "General," said he, "the people of Berkshire have often been summoned to the field without being allowed to fight, and if you do not give them a chance, they have resolved never to turn out again." "Well," said Stark, "do you wish to march now while it is dark and raining?" "No, not just this moment," was the reply. "Then," said the general, "if the Lord shall once more give us sunshine and I do not give you fighting enough, I'll never ask you to come out again."

During the night the rain ceased, the day dawned bright and clear, and both prepared for action.

Stark sent two parties, one under Colonel Nichols, the other under Colonel Herreck, to attack Baume's right and left wings from the rear.

About three o'clock, the rattle of musketry told that the attack had begun. Then Stark, in front, sprang to his saddle, and gave the word, "Forward." On to the hill-top swept his main body, full in view of the advance of Baume's force, a Tory party intrenched just over the river, while the Hessian intrenchment, now wreathed in smoke, lay beyond. "See there, men," cried Stark, "there are the red-coats: Before night they are ours, or Molly Stark will be a widow!" The militia answered with a shout that sent a thrill through every Tory heart, as Stark swept down, and the battle began in earnest. The Tories were driven from their intrenchment, and hurled back over the creek into the Hessian lines. The Indian allies of the British, disliking the look of affairs, fled with loud yells. Then the stubborn fight began. Baume's troops fought desperately, keeping their columns unbroken, till every charge of powder was gone. The Americans as bravely charging upon them, regardless of their cannon and defenses. For a time, the dragoons with their sabres endeavored to cut their way through, but at last were compelled to yield. Almost the whole party surrendered as prisoners of war.

Burgoyne, in his first instructions, had directed Baume to sweep through Vermont, and join him at Albany, bringing horses by the thousand. But Baume's letters led him to think there might be a little trouble, so he sent Lieutenant-Colonel Breyman, to reinforce him. Just as Stark, having secured his prisoners, was going to let his men plunder the camp of the vanquished, Breyman came upon the field. Stark recalled his men, and with Colonel Seth Warner, who came up with fresh troops, renewed the battle with the fresh foe. Both sides fought desperately, as long as daylight lasted. Then Breyman retreated towards Saratoga, pursued by the Americans.

With a loss of thirty killed and forty wounded, Stark had captured seven hundred and fifty prisoners, four cannon, ammunition-wagons, muskets, and killed more than two hundred of the enemy.

This deprived Burgoyne of a thousand men, and, with St. Leger's defeat, disheartened the Tories and Indians. America was filled with exultation. Stark, who had been so ill treated by Congress that he had left the army, was made a brigadier-general without the asking, and a new spirit was aroused in all.

Disappointed in his hopes of drawing relief from Vermont, or the Mohawk valley, Burgoyne saw no alternative but to push on. Yet, before him was a really great general ; not a showy, noisy man, but one clear of head, cool, careful, and practical. General Schuyler had collected the militia, and, while risking skirmishes, avoided a battle with Burgoyne's veterans, delaying his progress by destroying bridges, cutting up the roads, digging pit-falls, and creating every obstacle that ingenuity could devise. On the 13th and 14th of September, Burgoyne reached the plain of Saratoga, and encamped within nine miles of Schuyler's camp at Stillwater. Towards this Burgoyne advanced cautiously ; Arnold, who was sent out with fifteen hundred men, failing to check his advance.

On the 19th of September, Burgoyne made his first attack on the American lines, where Schuyler, sacrificed to the clamors of a few, had been succeeded by General Gates. The Americans lay around Bemis' tavern, their line well defended by breastworks and redoubts. General Gates commanded the right in person, between the river and the high ground, while General Arnold held the height with his left. Between the armies were two deep ravines closely wooded. Burgoyne's force moved through these obstacles to the attack. Down on his right

came Morgan's rifles, and General Arnold in support: but as Gates would not send reinforcements, they were unable to turn General Frazer's flank.

Arnold, ever ready in resource and boldness, marched across under cover of the woods, and suddenly burst down like a torrent on Burgoyne's centre. His left and right wings dared not leave their positions to aid their commander, and though General Phillips and General Riedesel did come up, the battle lasted furiously for four hours, until darkness put an end to the action. Then the Americans drew off, and the English remained in possession of the field, having lost about six hundred killed and wounded out of thirty-five hundred. The American loss was much less.

Yet Burgoyne had not reached, much less attacked, the American lines; his provisions were nearly exhausted; he heard nothing of Sir Henry Clinton, who was to have co-operated with him from New York; a retreat to Canada was almost impossible. Every day skirmishing was kept up, weakening his men, while it gave courage and experience to the American troops, whose numbers were constantly increasing. In vain Burgoyne despatched messengers to Sir Henry Clinton; in vain he looked with anxious eyes for the expected relief.

On the 7th of October, receiving no information, he resolved to make an attack on the American left. Phillips, Riedesel, and Frazer moved out in gallant style, with the Indians and Tories on their left. Again Morgan began the battle, and the Americans attacked Burgoyne's line simultaneously on both flanks and in the centre. Burgoyne ordered up fresh troops to cover the retreat, which he now saw to be inevitable. It was too late. The grenadiers and Germans, under Ackland and Riedesel, on the low ridge, had already given way before the onset of

the men of New Hampshire, New York, and Connecticut. The gallant General Frazer, bringing up the Twenty-fourth to cover their retreat, was killed by a ball from a tree, sent by Morgan's deadly rifles. Instead of menacing Gates' lines, Burgoyne began to fear for his own Back he hastened, leaving six cannon on the field, which was strewn with his dead and wounded.

Well might he fear, for Arnold, who had headed his men in the desperate attack on Burgoyne's centre and left, was determined to strike a blow to show how unjustly Gates had treated him. Encouraging his men to the wildest enthusiasm, he pushed on to the enemy's line, and when Patterson's brigade, caught in an abattis, was driven back, he led up Jackson's regiment and furiously attacked Lord Balcarras in his intrenchment, and, failing to carry it, stormed and held the part of Burgoyne's intrenchment held by Colonel Breyman—Arnold's horse being killed under him just as he was entering the works, by a ball which fractured the general's leg.

During the night Burgoyne abandoned his lines, and fell back to a new position. His retreat had begun, his doom was sealed; Gates sent off detachments to cut off his retreat, by demolishing bridges and impeding the roads.

Burgoyne halted at Fish Creek and called a council of war. There was no alternative. On the 16th of October a convention was signed, by which this once formidable army capitulated to General Gates. Two lieutenant-generals, two major-generals, three brigadier-generals, a long line of inferior officers and men, making up five thousand seven hundred and sixty-three men, with all their artillery, arms, and ammunitions, were surrendered on the plains of Saratoga.

The English forces left in Ticonderoga and Crown Point, retired in

all haste to Canada. The citizen soldiers, gathered to meet this well-appointed army, in spite of the pompous proclamations of its general menacing them with all the terrors of war, beheld regiment after regiment file out and lay down their arms, after a series of engagements in which the boasted superiority of English regulars had been proved a delusion.

Burgoyne had waited in vain for a movement from New York under Clinton. That general had not been utterly remiss. But all these British generals were beginning to find that America was a large country, and that to hold much territory, required very large armies. When Clinton should have moved from New York up the Hudson River, he found that he had not men enough to do so safely, and leave a force to hold New York. Every day he looked anxiously seaward for ships with fresh troops from England. There, as usual, delays took place, and it was not till October that Clinton could begin his campaign. On the Highlands, on the western bank of the beautiful Hudson, about fifty miles above New York, the Americans had planted Fort Clinton and Fort Montgomery, to prevent the enemy from passing up. Under the guns of the fort a boom was stretched across the river, with an immense iron chain in front, and a heavy wood-work called a chevaux-de-frise sunk behind it. Above this again lay a frigate and some galleys, to prevent any attempt to force a passage. Below, on the opposite site, frowned Fort Independence. General Putnam had his head-quarters at Peekskill, just below, and with a force of two thousand men commanded the river.

Clinton sailed up with three thousand men in the ships of war under Commodore Hotham, and landed near Peekskill. Putnam fell back to the heights in the rear of Peekskill, calling on Governor

Clinton for reinforcements, and utterly neglecting to strengthen his forts. Clinton, leaving part of his force to amuse the old general, threw his army across to Stony Point, and at once marched around behind the Dunderberg mountain to attack Fort Clinton and Fort Montgomery. He had nearly reached them before he was discovered. Parties which had been sent out were met and driven in by the British columns, which now moved simultaneously on the two forts. The little parties of Americans under Bruyn, McClaghrey, Fenno, fought desperately but in vain; in vain did the little garrisons of the forts keep up a cannonade and musketry fire from their works. They were too few. Sir Henry Clinton advanced on Fort Clinton through a long abattis, and under a severe fire. At his word, his men, with fixed bayonets, without firing a shot, charged and carried the works. So too, at Fort Montgomery, Lord Rawdon led on his grenadiers to the charge, and though Lieutenant-Colonel Campbell fell at the head of his division, they too, carried the works before them.

The English fleet was in the river, to aid if necessary, but by a single blow, the elaborate American defenses were swept away. The fleet destroyed the boom and chain; the American vessels endeavored to escape up the river, but, failing, were set on fire. The other forts were abandoned, and to heighten the panic and dismay, the English wantonly destroyed Continental Village and Esopus. The victory was complete. The British were masters of the Hudson.

In the action at the forts, the Americans lost about two hundred and fifty men, but the English did not secure many prisoners, as most of the garrisons escaped when the enemy entered the works. Had Clinton at once sailed up with his force and occupied Albany, the victory at Saratoga would have been useless, but he returned to New York.

General Burgoyne was received with great courtesy by General Schuyler, whose beautiful house he had recently destroyed. Struck with Schuyler's generosity the British general said: "You show me great kindness, though I have done you much injury." "That was the fate of war," nobly replied Schuyler, "let us say no more about it."

Burgoyne's troops were marched to Boston to be sent to England, but troubles arose and they were removed to Virginia, and there detained as prisoners till they were formally exchanged. Gates, instead of reporting his victory to Washington, as his Commander-in-chief, dispatched an officer to Congress. A vote of thanks was passed to him and his army, and a medal was struck to commemorate his success.

Among the incidents connected with Burgoyne's campaign is the fate of Jane McCrea, which excited universal commiseration. This beautiful young lady was the daughter of a Presbyterian clergyman at Jersey City, but on the death of her father there, went to reside with her brother near Fort Edward. Here her affections were won by a young man named David Jones, who sided with the English Government, and, proceeding to Canada, became a lieutenant in the division of Burgoyne's army commanded by the brave General Frazer. As the English army approached Fort Edward young McCrea prepared to retire to Albany, for he was a staunch Whig: but Jenny, with her Tory lover and many Tory friends, felt no alarm, and lingered with some friends, though her brother sent for her. She at last promised to join him next day. That morning some Indians stealthily approached the house. All fled to the cellar, but the Indians, dashing in, seized Mrs. McNeil and Jenny, and dragged them off towards Burgoyne's camp. A negro boy, seeing this, ran to Fort Edward to give the alarm; a party was sent out, which fired on the Indians, but they

escaped. When the pursuit ceased, the Indians stripped Mrs. McNeil to her chemise and led her to the camp, where she almost immediately met General Frazer, who was related to her. While reproaching him with sending Indians to attack innocent settlers, the other Indians came up, and to her horror she beheld Jane McCrea's scalp dangling from the belt of one. She charged him with having massacred her young friend, but the Indians denied it.

As it was long currently reported and believed, the Indians themselves quarreled about her at the pine-tree long pointed out to travelers, and finally murdered her, carrying off her scalp. They pretended that she was slain by a ball from the American party, but in such a case an Indian would scarcely carry off in triumph her scalp. Burgoyne summoned the Indians to council, and demanded the surrender of the man who bore off the scalp, to be punished as a murderer; but he finally pardoned him for fear of losing all his Indians.

Young Jones, horrified at this picture of war, and heart-broken, wished to throw up his commission, but was not permitted to do so. He purchased the scalp of his betrothed, and, with his brother, deserted from the English army soon after, and retired to Canada. There he lived many years, keeping up in sorrow and solitude the anniversary of the death of the beautiful Jane McCrea.

During all the period from the Declaration of Independence, and virtually before that act, the Continental Congress had governed the country, but without any definite understanding with the States, or document stating its powers. Wise men had been devising plans for this general government. In November, 1777, Articles of Confederation were adopted, and submitted to the States for their ratification.

These Articles of Confederation should be known. Under them,

each State was to have not less than two nor more than four members in Congress; the delegates from each State having together one vote in all deliberations: and these delegates were paid by the State which they represented.

This Congress had the sole right of determining peace and war, sending and receiving ambassadors, treating with foreign countries, establishing a post-office, coining money. They had the right to make requisitions on the States for their quota of troops: and to appoint all army officers except regimental ones, and all navy officers.

When Congress was not in session, a committee of the States, consisting of one delegate from each, controlled the affairs of government. Congress elected a president, who could not serve more than one year in three.

The Union was declared perpetual, and no alteration was to be made in any State unless agreed to in Congress, and confirmed by the legislature of every State. No two or more States were to make any treaty, confederation, or union among themselves, without consent of Congress. These articles were now submitted to the States.

We will close the history of this eventful year by an account of a curious panic which occurred among the British troops in Philadelphia. David Bushnell, of Connecticut, anxious like many of the patriots to rid his country of the British fleet in the Delaware, turned his ingenuity to the invention of a torpedo to effect this desirable object. He made kegs of powder to float down the stream, so arranged, by machinery, that on striking any hard substance, they would explode. He sent several down, but unfortunately, that very night, the English ships were hauled into docks to avoid the ice; but one of the kegs, meeting some obstacle, exploded. It filled all Philadelphia with alarm. For several days the

English soldiers and sailors watched the river with the most unwinking gaze. Everything that could excite suspicion was fired at. It so happened that a sudden rise of the river, occasioned by a thaw, flooded a cooper's yard above the city, and down the river went the casks, bobbing up and down. As this fleet was descried by a sentinel, he fired an alarm gun. Down to the docks poured the soldiers, who, seeing so many kegs, supposed them all Bushnell torpedoes sent down for their destruction. A fire was opened on them from every dock and ship, and kept up vigorously till the tide had borne them all down, or they had been so riddled that they sank.

"The cannons roar from shore to shore.
The small arms loud did rattle;
Since wars began I'm sure no man
E'er saw so strange a battle.
The rebel dales, the rebel vales
With rebel trees surrounded,
The distant woods, the hills and floods
With rebel echoes sounded:"

sung Francis Hopkinson in his ballad "The Battle of the Kegs," written on the occasion, and long immensely popular.

In March, 1776, Congress despatched Silas Deane, a commercial and political agent, to France, and at a later day sent commissioners to other countries of Europe, from whom aid might be expected. From France especially, an alliance was hoped; the supplies of arms indirectly given, the accession of a nobleman so illustrious as the Marquis de Lafayette, and the unconcealed friendship manifested by the French ministry, all filled America with hopes of direct aid, and especially with the hope that France would acknowledge the independence of the United States, setting an example that other countries would readily follow.

But though Dr. Franklin, Silas Deane, and Arthur Lee, as commissioners, met Vergennes in December, 1776, they could not induce the French government to take a step which must bring on a war with England.

America offered her a share in the cod fisheries, excluding all other nations, half of Newfoundland, and any islands in the West Indies that might be reduced, but still France hesitated, although she continued to aid the United States through a fictitious mercantile house in the West Indies.

When the reverses of war made the American cause look less hopeful, France was still less inclined to act rashly.

The surrender of Burgoyne gave a new aspect to affairs. Although Washington, on whom great hopes were founded, had as yet achieved no striking success, this victory of the northern army excited universal astonishment. England began to hope that the United States, disgusted with French delay, would accept terms which England might honorably offer ; while Louis XVI. felt that he must now act, if at all.

Lord North introduced into Parliament conciliatory bills about taxing the colonies ; allowing the colonies themselves to apply the proceeds of the tax, as though America would, for a moment, entertain any such proposals.

On the 16th of December, Gerard, secretary to the French Council of State, informed the American Commissioners that, after a long and mature deliberation, his majesty had determined to recognize the independence of, and to enter into a treaty of commerce and alliance with, the United States of America ; and that he would not only acknowledge their independence, but actually support it with all the means in his power.

France saw that if North, coming at last to understand the real state of the case, acknowledged the independence of the United States, and formed an alliance with her late colonies, France would be exposed to great danger. Her interest was to prevent any such alliance, and thus pursue the friendly course she had hitherto adopted.

Thus closed the year 1777, full of fresh hopes for American freedom, although this cheering intelligence did not for some months reach her shores.

We have seen how one Pennsylvania woman, Lydia Darrah, served her country, while the English occupied Philadelphia. Another, Hannah Erwin Israel, showed undaunted courage.

Soon after the fall of the city, the British seized her husband and brother on the information of Tory neighbors, who reported that Mr. Israel had declared openly that he would sooner drive his cattle as a present to General Washington, than receive thousands of dollars in British gold for them.

The two prisoners were conveyed on board the Roebuck frigate, lying in the Delaware, and orders were at once given to dispatch a squad of soldiers to drive off and slaughter all Mr. Israel's cattle, which were then in full sight, grazing in the meadows.

Mrs. Israel, a young and beautiful woman, only nineteen years of age, slight in person, and retiring in disposition, was roused by the wrongs of her country and her own. She was on the lookout, gazing towards the vessel in which those dear to her were confined, when she saw boats push towards the land, full of soldiers. In a moment she divined their purpose, and resolved to baffle it. Taking a boy eight years old, she started for the meadow, and began to drive the cattle towards the barnyard, some distance back, where she knew the sol-

diers would not dare to venture, for fear of being surrounded by the farmers. Before she got the herd well started, the soldiers reached the field, and called on her to stop, threatening to fire.

"Fire away!" cried the heroic woman, and the volley rattled around her, but providentially missing her, while it startled the cattle so that they dashed madly off.

Little Joe fell to the ground in terror, but Mrs. Israel, catching him up, ran on, and putting up the bars secured her cattle, leaving the soldiers to return empty-handed.

CHAPTER III.

Campaign of 1778—Alliance with France—North's Bills of Conciliation—Their Rejection—British Cruelty—Battle of Monmouth—Conduct of General Lee—Arrival of Admiral d'Estaing's Fleet—Operations in Rhode Island—D'Estaing engages the British and sails off—Retreat of Sullivan—Savage Cruelty of the English—Massacre at Wyoming—Massacre at Paoli—At Little Egg Harbor—The English capture Savannah—Clarke reduces Illinois.

On the 6th of February, 1778, a treaty of commerce between France and the United States of America was signed by Franklin, Deane, and Lee, representing the United States of America, and Gerard, representing the French Government; a treaty of defensive alliance was also signed, in case England should declare war against France for thus recognizing her colonies. France agreed to maintain the liberty, sovereignty, and independence, absolute and unlimited, of the United States, as well in matters of government as of commerce.

America thus took her place among the powers of the earth, by the acknowledgment of one of the greatest powers of Europe.

In March, France communicated to England the commercial treaty. By April, North's conciliatory bills reached America and were widely scattered. They were sent to Washington, who laid them before Congress, urging that nothing short of independence should be thought of for a moment. Congress did not delay to express the opinion of the country. On the 22d of April, less than a month after the bills reached America, Congress unanimously resolved that the offers of the British ministry could not be accepted.

How could they, indeed? Never had the British shown, on American soil, more bitter hatred, or more unrelenting and merciless cruelty. Washington and his little army lay at Valley Forge, enduring privations that make us shudder to read, while the English in Philadelphia received plentiful supplies from the farmers who thought less of patriotism than of a good market. At last Washington sent General Wayne into New Jersey, to obtain provisions and horses. One of Wayne's parties was surprised at Quentin's Bridge, and many killed on the spot, others driven into a creek and left to drown, while many, after surrendering, were bayoneted without mercy. The people of New Jersey, regarding the whole affair more as a murder than warfare, have always called it the massacre at Quentin's Bridge. Another party was surprised by night at Hancock's Bridge, and bayoneted in their beds, with the citizens of the place, no resistance being made, and no quarter given. In the little battle at Crooked Billet, where General Lacey, though surprised, gallantly drew off his men, with merely the loss of his baggage, the British soldiers not only bayoneted and hacked the wounded, but actually gathered buckwheat straw around them, and set them on fire, as they lay, too weak to try to extinguish the flames. The cruelties of the Indians at Coble's Hill, in Schoharie county, where Brant began

his work of blood, do not exceed in savage ferocity those of the civilized soldiers of the English army.

Such were the acts of the men who now offered what they called Conciliation Bills.

Ten days after Congress rejected the insidious proposals, news reached Congress of the final step taken by France. The treaties were immediately ratified, and the news, as it spread through the country, was received with the wildest enthusiasm. Louis XVI., and his minister Vergennes, were now regarded with an affection and respect that George III. and his ministers had so utterly failed to obtain.

Valley Forge put on a garb of joy. The event was celebrated with appropriate religious ceremonies, and the day closed with an entertainment, enlivened by music and patriotic toasts.

Congress, in an address to the people, warned them against the insidious offers of England, and roused their patriotism to new efforts and new sacrifices, worthy of the admiration of Europe, which would now watch them with a deeper interest than ever. In June, the Earl of Carlisle, with Eden and Johnstone, the English Commissioners, arrived, and sent their proposals to Congress. Its reply was prompt and firm. "The acts of the British Parliament, the commission from your sovereign, and your letter, suppose the people of these States to be subjects of the crown of Great Britain, and are founded on the idea of a dependence which is utterly inadmissible.

"Congress are inclined to peace, notwithstanding the unjust claims from which this war originated, and the savage manner in which it has been conducted. They will, therefore, be ready to enter upon the consideration of a treaty of peace and commerce, not inconsistent with treaties already subsisting, when the King of Great Britain shall dem-

onstrate a sincere disposition for that purpose." The baffled and disappointed commissioners, after endeavoring to buy some of the patriots, returned to England.

According to one of the actors in the Revolution, Johnstone, in an interview with Mrs. Ferguson, of Philadelphia, desired her to mention to Joseph Reed, a member of the Continental Congress, that if he would promote the object of their commission, he might have any office in the colonies in the gift of his Britannic Majesty, and ten thousand pounds in hand. Spurning the idea, Reed told Mrs. Ferguson that he was not worth purchasing, but such as he was, the King of England was not rich enough to do it.

The alliance between the United States and France might result at any moment in a war between England and the French king. If a French fleet blockaded the Delaware, the English army at Philadelphia would be captured as certainly as Burgoyne's had been.

Sir Henry Clinton succeeded Howe, at Philadelphia. All the merrymakings, festivities, mischianzas, and tournaments, with which the British officers had amused themselves and their Tory friends in that city, ceased. Anxiety became general.

Clinton resolved to retreat across New Jersey to New York, but kept his own counsels wisely, endeavoring to mislead Washington as to his plans. Unfortunately, General Lee, next in command to Washington, and long jealous of his chief, had, while a prisoner in the hands of the British, betrayed the cause of America, by recommending plans for its subjugation. He now continued the same treacherous course by thwarting Washington's plans. The American commander had at once divined Clinton's design, and proposed crossing at once into Jersey to prevent it. Lee argued against it, and so plausibly, that

most of the generals sided with him. However, Washington began to interrupt and break up the roads that Clinton must take. At last, the English general's course was seen. He sent off in ships, the provision-trains, heavy baggage, German troops, and loyalists.

A little before dawn, on the 18th of June, the British army left Philadelphia, and commenced crossing the Delaware river at Gloucester Point, three miles below. Steadily the boats plied to and fro, the muskets glittering in the sunlight, as detachment after detachment landed. By ten o'clock, Pennsylvania, to her joy, beheld the last of her oppressors reach the Jersey shore. In a few hours Clinton was encamped at Haddonfield with his force, and an immense baggage train stretching for miles.

Washington's forecast was justified. Although he had yielded to the opinion of his generals, he made every preparation for a rapid movement. Everything was ready. Eager for action, Wayne and Greene moved out of Valley Forge, and crossed the Delaware at Coryell's Ferry. Morgan, with his rifles, hastened on to reinforce Maxwell, who, with the sturdy Jersey militia, was disputing the road with Clinton, often compelling him to halt, and draw up in line.

Again Washington held a council of war. Lee earnestly opposed attacking the enemy, and again his influence prevailed. Clinton was pushing on to New Brunswick, his long line of troops and baggage-wagons stretching out for twelve miles, halting to build bridges and repair the roadways.

His first object was the Raritan, but Washington was in his path; so he struck towards Sandy Hook, by way of Monmouth.

In spite of the decision of a new council of war, Washington resolved on a general engagement. As Lee opposed it, he gave

Lafayette command of the advance: but Lee, soliciting the post, obtained it.

Clinton saw before him the Heights of Middletown. Gain this and he could defy Washington. On the night of Saturday, June 27, the American commander ordered Lee to attack Clinton as soon as he moved, and thus prevent his gaining the heights; he was instructed to send out parties to watch the enemy's movements. Success depended on celerity and vigilance, Lee showed neither.

Before he moved, Dickinson's New Jersey militia engaged the enemy, and reported to Washington. Again the aides-de-camp dashed down with orders to Lee, and Washington put his army in motion; the men prepared for hot work under the broiling sun, throwing off their packs and coats.

While Lee lay idle, or pushed on uncertainly, Clinton, sending Knyphausen ahead with the baggage, came down from the high ground on which he had encamped, and, to cover the baggage, attacked Wayne, who had advanced upon him. He prepared also for a general attack on Lee. That officer now found himself confronted by the best English troops, and, to the disgust of his men, ordered a retreat. This was done in great confusion and indignation, no one knowing why or whither.

Washington, pressing on, with his men full of ardor, came on retreating soldiers. Unable to believe their story, he threatened to have them whipped. He soon found it too true. He rode forward in a fury of passion never before witnessed. He halted the troops as they came up and formed them in line for action. At last, Lee rode up, and Washington demanded the meaning of his conduct. Quick, furious words passed.

Washington formed his advance again, and asked Lee whether he would retain command or not. "Your orders shall be obeyed," said Lee; "I shall not be the first to leave the ground."

Clinton, having driven in Lee, called back all the troops he could. Then the battle began. Lee endeavored now gallantly to hold his ground; but under a terrible cannonade the English moved steadily on. The Americans, after a stubborn fight, gave way; a stand was made at a hedgerow, and the American artillery sweeps their line. But the cavalry and a bayonet charge again break the Americans. Here a woman roused the patriots to still greater exertion. Mary Pitcher had accompanied her husband into action. He fell beside his cannon, killed by one of the enemy's balls. It was about to be abandoned, when Mary, who had come up with a pail of water for her husband, saw him dead. She seized the rammer and vowed to avenge his death. She handled her cannon all day with skill and courage, which won her a sergeantcy and half-pay for life. But no effort could hold the position. Lee fell back on the main army, and Washington formed in a woody height, Stirling on his left and Greene on his right. Wayne, posted in an orchard on a height behind a barn, met the first onset of the British veterans, as he had done in the morning. On came the grenadiers under Monckton, but, as they crossed the hedge, Wayne's deadly fire sent them back. Then Monckton roused his men for a bold decisive charge, and Wayne, telling his men to pick the officers, lay as silent as the foe who came so gallantly on. At last the sheet of fire bursts forth; Monckton is down, every officer is down, but the grenadiers rally around their commander. A furious struggle ensues; but the grenadiers are hurled back, and Monckton is borne to the rear of the American line to die.

Clinton's attack in all points failed. He threw his main body on Lord Stirling, but the American left stood like a rock, and Clinton, shattered by the artillery, fell back ; then he formed again and moved upon the American right. There Greene met him manfully, and du Plessis Mauduit with his artillery took him in the flank, so that Clinton gave up and fell back to a strong position, with woods and morasses on his flank and a narrow pass in front. Washington prepared to attack him, but night came on, and during the darkness Clinton stole rapidly away, leaving his wounded on the field, and hurried on to Sandy Hook.

With his men overcome by heat and exertion, Washington deemed it unwise to pursue the enemy and risk another action. Lee had deprived him of the opportunity of capturing the whole British force.

While the British ships bore Clinton's well-beaten force to New York, Washington marched northward, and, crossing the Hudson, encamped at White Plains.

Such was the hard-fought battle of Monmouth, on one of the hottest summer days, where men dropped dead from heat alone.

Lee demanded a trial, and was found guilty of misbehavior before the enemy, and disrespect to his Commander-in-chief. In consequence he was suspended from his command for a year, and never rejoined the army.

Clinton had moved none too soon. Early in July, at the very time that he reached New York, a fine French fleet, commanded by the Count d'Estaing, appeared off the coast of Virginia. He had sailed from Toulon in April, intending to prevent the English from escaping out of Philadelphia. Contrary winds had delayed him. Finding that the bird had flown, he sailed at once to Sandy Hook. Here, none but

Tory pilots could be found, and they persuaded him that a large British fleet lay inside, and that the bar was dangerous. Lord Howe drew up his little fleet inside Sandy Hook, and gathered all the vessels he could find in the bay so as to give the appearance of a large fleet, and d'Estaing, completely outwitted, sailed off.

The next operation was the reduction of Rhode Island, in which d'Estaing, by sea, and General Sullivan, with a detachment from General Washington's army, were to co-operate. D'Estaing with his fleet occupied all the channels, but Sullivan had been delayed. On the 9th of August, while fretting at this loss of time, sails were seen in the horizon, and ere long, Howe's fleet, which had received a considerable reinforcement, appeared in sight. The impatient French admiral, though Sullivan was just ready to begin the operations, and the English garrison, under General Pigot, was a certain prize, sailed out to meet Lord Howe. A great deal of manœuvring followed, and before they could come to action a violent storm came on which dispersed both fleets. Howe sailed back to New York and d'Estaing to Newport, both with fleets in a shattered condition. Sullivan had already begun the siege, but the storm did great damage to his tents, arms, and ammunition. When d'Estaing returned he was ready to attack the English lines, but to his dismay the French admiral announced his intention of proceeding to Boston. In vain General Greene and General Lafayette endeavored to alter his determination, but all was fruitless. He sailed off, and his conduct excited general indignation. Sullivan, deserted by the fleet, had to abandon the siege and commence a retreat. Pigot pursued him, and a very hard-fought battle ensued at Quaker Hill, in which the loss was severe on both sides. Sullivan at last repulsed his assailants, and was thus enabled to reach the main-land

just before Clinton arrived with four thousand men and a light fleet to the relief of Newport. Finding that Sullivan had escaped him, Clinton sent Grey with the fleet to ravage the coast; and in carrying out the savage order, this man of blood, as he had already shown himself, destroyed all the shipping in Acushnet River, burned Bedford and Fairhaven, and committed great ravages in Martha's Vineyard.

Washington, with the prudence and moderation which were so characteristic of him, did all in his power to smooth over the disagreement at Newport, and calm the general resentment. It was all the more necessary, as Gerard had just arrived as Minister Plenipotentiary from the French King, the first ambassador to the new republic.

And now ensued a series of bloody tragedies, far different from the battle-fields, where disciplined armies meet according to the usages of war between civilized nations. Indian massacres and massacres that rivaled those of the furious savage, were now to leave an ineffaceable stigma on the British name.

Wyoming, in the valley of the Susquehanna, was a spot whose beauties have been written in prose and verse, so that its name is familiar to all. Its fertile soil, its rich beauty, its adaptation to every want, had drawn to its bosom a band of industrious settlers, and nowhere in the land were there a finer set of American yeomen. As the Indians had shown some hostility, forts were thrown up, and in August, 1776, Congress ordered two companies to be raised for the defense of the valley. In 1778, tidings came of a British expedition intended to lay waste this beautiful tract. The people called in vain on Congress and Connecticut, to which State they were still reckoned to belong. Congress did at last make an effort, but so ill-managed that it was useless.

On the morning of the 30th of June, 1778, Colonel John Butler, with

four hundred Tories and six hundred Indians, chiefly Senecas, under Grengwatoh, entered the head of the valley and posted themselves in ambush.

The river was lined on both sides with little forts, to which the people retreated for safety. From Fort Jenkins, the first of these, issued forth this joyous morning seven men and a boy to their daily toil, utterly unsuspicious of danger.

Towards evening the work of death begun ; the little party were surrounded, but bravely defended their lives ; all were killed or taken but the boy, John Harding, who threw himself into the river, and lying under the willows that fringed the bank, with his mouth only above the water, escaped notice.

The rattle of musketry and the yells of the savage foe gave the alarm through the valley. The settlers rallied, and put themselves under the command of Colonel Zebulon Butler, a cousin of the Tory leader. Forty Fort became the post of the Americans. John Butler demanded its surrender, but it was sternly refused. Zebulon Butler would have held his post till aid came, but the younger men were eager to go out and meet the enemy, whom they could see plundering and ravaging. At last the gates were thrown open, and the little force of three hundred, old men and young, men of rank and plough-boys, all shouldering their muskets, marched out. Near the blazing Fort Wintermoor, which the Tories had fired, the two parties met. The Tories and Indians lay flat on the ground, awaiting the American approach. Addressing his men in words fitted to rouse their courage, Colonel Zebulon approached to within a hundred yards of the enemy. Here the firing began, and for an hour raged furiously. Then the Indians gained a swamp and threw the American left into disorder. In its endeavor to re-form

the confusion increased, and Grengwatoh rushing forward with his Senecas, the Americans met this hand to hand charge fighting desperately. But the right was also broken. There was no hope but in a prompt retreat, and the Indians gained their rear to prevent this. The only place of crossing the river was far below. Many fell in the attempt to reach it. In this bloody conflict Henry Pensil, a Tory, slew his own brother, who begged for mercy. Others were butchered by neighbors and men who had often received favors at their hands. Those who fell into the hands of the Indians underwent every form of cruelty that their ingenuity could devise. Esther, a woman chief, with her own hand tomahawked sixteen prisoners who were ranged in a circle, surrounded by Indians. Two others in the circle, Lebbeus Hammond and Joseph Elliott, burst through the warriors and escaped almost miraculously. When night put an end to the pursuit and massacre, two hundred and twenty-seven American scalps were dangling from the waists of the Tories and Indians, whom the English authorities had sent on this work of blood. Only five prisoners remained alive.

Many, seizing a little provisions from their homes, fled to the woods, in hopes of reaching other settlements, bearing everywhere the terrible tale of the Wyoming massacre.

Colonel Denison, with a small body of those who escaped, regained Forty Fort, but when Colonel John Butler demanded its surrender, he yielded, no longer able to hold out. Colonel Zebulon and his Continentals having retired, John Butler declared distinctly that they were to be given up to the Indians.

The Tory leader, after destroying the houses and driving off the live stock, retired from the valley.

This was not the only Indian raid on the American frontiers. Daniel Boone, with a party of twenty-seven, was captured, and carried off by the Indians to Chillicothe, and then to Detroit. He was finally adopted by the Shawnees, but in June, 1778, effected his escape, and making a journey of a hundred and sixty miles, with no provision except one meal, which he had concealed in his blanket, reached Boonesborough, just as the Indians were preparing to attack it. He found the fort utterly unfit for defense. His wife and children, whom he yearned to see, were no longer there. Thinking him dead, Mrs. Boone had gone back to her father's house in North Carolina. Boone at once called the people together and told them of their imminent danger. Every man sprang to work. The fort was put in repair, with new bastions, and stout gates; stock was brought in, provisions and ammunition obtained, a garrison formed, and parties sent out on a scout.

It was none too soon. On the 8th of August, a party of Canadians and Indians, commanded by Captain Duquesne, demanded their surrender. The answer came back: "We are determined to defend our fort as long as a man of us lives." Yet Duquesne lured out Boone and eight others under pretense of treating for peace, and basely endeavored to seize them after articles had been signed. Then the attack began in earnest, but so ill did the enemy manage that they soon lost courage, and on the 20th of August retired.

Then Boone plodded his solitary way to North Carolina, where his wife and children welcomed him as one risen from the dead. Somewhat later, Colonel Hartley led an American force into the Indian country on the Susquehanna, where he ravaged their towns, but this only drew the Indians down on Cherry Valley.

A small Continental force was there under Colonel Alden, a New

England officer, little used to Indian fighting. The post was surprised by Walter Butler, and his Indian and Tory demons. A general massacre took place. Whole families were swept away, the assailants sparing neither age nor sex. Thirty-two of the inhabitants, principally women and children, and eleven Continental soldiers were killed, and all the houses were burned, with their barns and stores of grain and hay, leaving nearly two hundred people to perish or starve, without food or shelter ; some of them families always zealous for the royal cause.

The English regulars were now jealous of their Indian allies, and soon showed that they could equal them in cruelty. A party of New Jersey Light Horse lay at Old Tappan, or Harrington, on the Hackensack River. Against them, Cornwallis sent the butcher General Grey, while other detachments assailed other parties. The dragoons were surprised in their beds, and while incapable of resistance, and begging for compassion, were butchered in cold blood. Similar cruelty was shown in the surprise of Count Pulaski's legion, at Little Egg Harbor, in October, where the English were led by a deserter.

The English Government approved and encouraged these atrocities, hoping to terrify the Americans into submission, but the result was just the reverse. It filled the whole country with a deep-seated hatred of the British nation ; and many who had still hesitated, and had hitherto clung to the British side, seeing that their lives and property were at the mercy of these cruel mercenaries, heartily joined their fellow countrymen. Congress formally announced its intention to retaliate for these cruelties if they were not stopped.

Admiral Byron, who had succeeded Lord Howe, attempted to bring d'Estaing to action, but the French admiral, escaping out of Boston, sailed to the West Indies. An English fleet, bearing a considerable

military force, followed him, and Sir Henry Clinton, seizing the opportunity of the absence of a French fleet, dispatched Lieutenant-Colonel Campbell with Commodore Hyde Parker to attack the Southern States, and on the 23d of December, Campbell occupied Tybee Island, and calling on Governor Prevost of Florida for aid, prepared to attack Savannah.

General Robert Howe, the American commander, could muster only seven hundred men, but he marched from Sunbury and took up a strong position to defend Savannah. Campbell amused him with a feigned attack in front, while a part of his force, under Sir James Baird, guided by a negro, turned his right flank and attacked him from the rear. Then Campbell began the attack in front with vigor. Howe's right wing was captured almost entire, while the centre managed to retreat with severe loss. The left wing, in attempting to retreat through a swamp, lost many, who perished in the treacherous ooze. The city, with all its stores and arms, and most of the American force, were thus captured.

In less than ten days the enemy was firmly established in Georgia, where the people, recent settlers, had not moved promptly with the other colonies in the struggle for freedom, and had of late shown little inclination to respect the orders of Congress; now they flocked by hundreds to the King's officers, and made their peace at the expense of their patriotism. Thus Georgia became, in a few months, one of King George's most loyal possessions.

Previous to this disaster, Washington had ordered General Lincoln to take charge of the Southern Department, and as the campaign for the year was clearly over, prepared to go into winter-quarters on both sides of the Hudson, his line extending from Danbury to the

Delaware, completely encircling New York, and so arranged, that each detachment could be easily supported.

We have mentioned the operations of the French fleet, but have said nothing hitherto of the efforts of America on the sea.

The Colonies had never maintained any navy, or possessed men-of-war. During the operations against Canada, New England had fitted out vessels, but such vessels were utterly unfitted to cope with the mighty navy of England.

What was done on the sea was the work of single vessels, either fitted out as men-of-war, under the authority of Congress, or privateers.

The first naval action of the Revolution took place off Machias, in May, 1775.

The Margaretta, an armed schooner in the King's service, lay there, protecting two sloops which were loading with lumber for Boston.

The news from Lexington had aroused the people, and such attempts were made to seize the captain of the Margaretta that he dropped down the river. Joseph Wheaton and Dennis O'Brien resolved to seize her. They surprised one of the sloops, and were joined by Jeremiah O'Brien, an athletic, gallant man, well known in the place. All present volunteered when he took command, and the sloop, with a gentle breeze from the northwest, sailed down on the schooner, her crew strangely armed with some twenty fowling-pieces, thirteen pitchforks, and a dozen axes.

Captain Moore saw danger in its approach, and at once hoisted sail; but, in rounding a bold point of land, the schooner carried away her boom. But he got a new one from a passing vessel and stood out to sea. The sloop kept up the chase and soon overhauled the Margaretta. Moore opened a heavy fire on the sloop, killing one man, but the

fire was returned, killing the Margaretta's helmsman and clearing her deck. The sloop now ran so close to the schooner that her bowsprit was fast in the shrouds, and the Maine marksmen were pouring in deadly volleys. Moore fought well, sending grenades into the sloop till he was shot down. With his fall the battle ended. The schooner surrendered, the English flag was lowered, and the first naval victory was gained for the United Colonies of America.

Thus was a well-equipped English vessel taken by a motley crew of men from the fields, with fowling-pieces and pitchforks.

During Arnold's operations on Lake Champlain, in October, 1776, quite a naval action took place between two little fleets on the lake. Arnold had three schooners, a sloop, and five gondolas, poorly armed, and equipped by men ignorant alike of seamanship and gunnery. General Carleton brought down seven hundred men from Montreal and also equipped a fleet.

Arnold anchored his little fleet across the narrow channel, between Valcour's Island and the shore south of Plattsburg. Early on the morning of the 11th of October the enemy appeared, and sweeping around the island, bore down on Arnold's fleet from the south. Their force consisted of a ship, a snow, three schooners, and smaller craft, well manned by sailors and marines from the royal vessels in the St. Lawrence.

The action began, and notwithstanding the odds against the Americans, was desperately contested till darkness closed the combat. In this battle the Royal Savage, one of Arnold's vessels, was so badly cut up that she was run ashore and fired, and a gondola sunk soon after.

Seeing it impossible to sustain another action, Arnold resolved to

escape with his vessels, all of them badly crippled. He passed unperceived through the English fleet and nearly reached Crown Point, when a southerly wind stopped his course. A sudden change enabled the British vessels to move first, and they bore down on Arnold's squadron. Near Split Rock the battle was renewed. The Washington soon struck, and General Waterbury and his men were captured. The Congress fought till she was a perfect wreck, when she was run up a creek and fired, with five gondolas. Of the little fleet only two schooners, a sloop, two galleys, and a gondola escaped.

The skill, bravery, and obstinate resistance of General Arnold and his men, in this new style of warfare, against a vastly superior force of experienced men, was hailed as a great achievement on the part of Americans. It was clear that they could become good sailors as well as good soldiers.

Congress, on the 13th of December, 1775, established a navy. The frigate Randolph, a fine new vessel of thirty-two guns, under Captain Biddle, was one of the first to take the sea with the flag of the United States.

After making many captures, he sailed from Charleston in February, 1778, with a squadron, comprising the Randolph, General Moultrie, Polly, Notre Dame, and Fair American. The object was, to engage the Carysfort, an English frigate, which, with two smaller vessels, had been cruising off Charleston. He failed to find the British squadron, but fell in with the Yarmouth, a sixty-four gun vessel commanded by Captain Vincent. The action opened, and the Randolph kept up a tremendous fire, pouring in three broadsides to the Yarmouth's one. and the smaller vessels doing their part well for about twenty minutes. when Captain Nicholas Biddle of the Randolph was wounded in the

thigh, and almost at the same instant the Randolph blew up. Of her whole crew none escaped but four men, whom the Yarmouth picked up five days after, floating on a piece of wreck. During this time they had managed to sustain life by some rain-water, which they caught in a blanket.

After this disaster, the rest of the American squadron made good their retreat.

Late in September, 1778, the United States frigate Raleigh, of thirty guns, commanded by the gallant Captain John Barry, sailed from Boston, convoying two vessels. She was soon chased by two English men-of-war, the Experiment, of fifty guns, and the Unicorn, of twenty-two. On Sunday afternoon, September 27th, the Unicorn overhauled Barry and the battle began. Barry kept up the fight till night-fall, gaining such advantages over the Unicorn that she would have struck had not the Experiment come up. Against this desperate odds Barry struggled for half an hour, when he resolved to make for land. He ran his ship aground on Fox Island, in Penobscot Bay, but before he could get off his sick and wounded and fire her, the English captured her, with a few men still in her. Barry's courage and ability were highly approved in this well-fought action.

Arnold was not the only New England officer who showed naval ability. During the operations in Narraganset Bay, the English, to close the East Passage, stationed there a fine stout schooner, the Pigot, well armed and equipped, and commanded by Lieutenant Dunlap of the Royal Navy. As she barred the entrance she proved a great annoyance to the American army, so that Major Talbot resolved to capture her. He fitted out the Hawk, a small sloop, and with sixty men drifted down at night past the forts, then hoisting sail stood for the

Pigot. Just as the sentries discovered her, the Hawk's jibboom tore away the boarding-netting of the schooner Lieutenant Helms and fifteen men of the Rhode Island line boarded the Pigot; at one point, the crew of the Hawk at another. The British crew fled below. Dunlap, roused from his berth, attempted to defend his vessel, but he was disarmed and secured. Without the loss of a man on either side the Pigot was captured, and on the 29th of October, 1778, the Hawk and her prize sailed into Stonington. Congress promoted the gallant Talbot to a Lieutenant-Colonelcy for his naval exploit.

While the main armies were contending on the Atlantic coast, an important blow had been struck in the West. Lieutenant-Colonel George Rogers Clark, under a commission from Patrick Henry, led an expedition to reduce the Illinois country. Recruiting a little army among the frontier men from Pittsburg to Carolina, he started down the Ohio as far as the Falls, where Louisville has since been built.

From this point he began his march on Kaskaskia, and by night on the 4th of July completely surprised it, bursting into the fort and securing the commander, Rocheblave, without losing a man or shedding a drop of blood. He at once convened the inhabitants, and by the influence of the Rev. Mr. Gibault, the priest of the place, won them all to his side, and thus was secure from Indian attack, as the red men still were greatly attached to the French. Many of the French settlers even entered his ranks, and he thus was able to take possession of Cahokia and Vincennes.

Many of the Indian tribes came in to treat of peace, although some gained to the English side showed hostility. Towards these Clark acted with great resolution and boldness. He opened friendly inter-

course with Leyba, the Spanish commander on the other side of the Mississippi, for that was then Spanish territory.

The English were thus completely baffled, but when an expedition from Pittsburg against Detroit, under General McIntosh, failed, Governor Hamilton, the English commander at Detroit, resolved to make an effort to regain the Illinois country.

He advanced on Vincennes, then held by Captain Helm and one man. Planting a cannon in the open gate of the fort, Helm called out, "Halt!" as Hamilton approached. The British commander demanded the surrender of the place. "No man shall enter until I know the terms," was Helm's firm reply. Hamilton answered, "You shall have the honors of war," and then the fort surrendered with its garrison of two.

Hamilton next advanced towards Kaskaskia, but did not dare to attack Clark, although he had eight hundred British and Indians. He even dismissed most of his Indians, sending some to ravage the frontier. Clark at once marched on Vincennes, and, after a vigorous fight, captured it, with Hamilton and all his remaining force. The British commander was sent to Virginia, where he was treated with great severity, in consequence of his cruelty to American prisoners and his instigation of Indian atrocities.

With a little reinforcement Clark would have reduced Detroit also, and completely annihilated English influence in the West. As it was, his coolness, bravery, and singular judgment in dealing with the French and Indians, made his campaign a complete success.

CHAPTER IV.

Campaign of 1779—Operations in the South—Georgia—Invasion of South Carolina—Battle of Stono Ferry—The British invade Connecticut—Storming of Stony Point—Sullivan's Expedition against the Six Nations—Penobscot—Paulus Hook—Commodore Paul Jones—The great Fight between the Bon Homme Richard and the Serapis—Siege of Savannah by d'Estaing and Lincoln—Spain joins France—Continental Money.

THE opening of the new year saw the British under General Prevost in full possession of Georgia. General Lincoln strained every nerve to save South Carolina. He appealed urgently to the patriotism of the citizens. He at last gathered, at Purysburg, on the Savannah, a force of three thousand men, equal in numbers to Prevost's force, but totally undisciplined men, most of them being raw levies.

With all his superiority Prevost hesitated to enter South Carolina, as the country was a dangerous one for military movements. At last, however, he sent Major Gardner to seize Port Royal. General Moultrie was at once sent to confront him. About four o'clock in the afternoon of the 3d of February, he came in sight of the enemy. With his men formed in a strong position across the road, he awaited Gardner's approach. For three quarters of an hour a sharp action ensued, the militia, utterly uncovered, standing their ground manfully. At last a well-directed ball dismounted Gardner's only field-piece, and the enemy began to move off, leaving part of their wounded, and losing in the pursuit several men and arms.

This little affair roused the courage of the Americans, but Prevost had agents actively at work among the Tories in South Carolina. Gained by his promises, a party of Tories under Colonel Boyd began their march towards Augusta to join the British, marking their pathway by robbery, violence, and devastation.

Colonel Andrew Pickens took the field to meet him, and also to intercept the Tory Colonel Hamilton of North Carolina. While watching the latter, Boyd managed to cross the Savannah. Pickens gave chase, and while Boyd's men were busy at Kettle Creek slaughtering a drove of cattle which they had just captured from the plantations, Pickens came down in perfect military order. The fire of the sentinels startled the Tories from their false security. Boyd was no coward. He rallied his men and retreated in tolerable order, but Pickens pressed steadily on. When, after an hour's struggle, Boyd fell dangerously wounded, his whole party, forty of whom were killed and many wounded, fled in all directions; a small party reached the British camp. Others surrendered and begged for mercy. Some of these were tried for treason, and five leaders among them were executed. This blow completely disheartened the Carolina Tories, who made no further attempts on any large scale to aid the British. The hopes raised by these successes were blasted by the utter defeat of General Ashe, with the North Carolina militia and Georgia Continentals. He allowed himself to be surprised and routed by Prevost at Briar Creek, on the 3d of March. This event deprived General Lincoln of one-fourth of his forces, secured the British the possession of Georgia, and opened communication between them and the Tories and Indians.

To cover Augusta, where the Georgia legislature were to meet, Lincoln moved up the river, leaving General Moultrie to watch Prevost, who he did not suppose would make any important move. Prevost, however resolved to capture Charleston before Lincoln could come to its relief. He drove Moultrie before him, that gallant officer in vain appealing for militia to enable him to engage the enemy.

On the 11th of May, Prevost, by rapid marches, crossed the Ashley

River, and summoned Charleston to surrender. Governor Rutledge gained time by negotiations, and meanwhile, Lincoln, convinced at last of Prevost's design, was hastening to relieve the capital of South Carolina. Prevost, who had intercepted a letter from General Lincoln, began his retreat, making his way to the islands on the coast, where vessels could reach him.

On the 20th of June, Lincoln attacked seven hundred British troops, well posted at Stono Ferry. The Highlanders, outside the enemy's works, met the American attack with great gallantry, and were almost annihilated. Then Lincoln attacked the strong English lines, but reinforcements, which Moultrie was too late to intercept, gave the British a superiority, and Lincoln withdrew.

This action, however, hastened the withdrawal of the British forces from South Carolina: but they bore with them plunder of all kinds, taken from the country through which they passed. They pillaged everything, and in this exceeded anything of the kind in the whole war. Slaves were carried off in droves, and then sent to the West Indies and sold.

This was now the policy of the British Government. They seemed to have felt that they must lose America, but they determined to leave it, if possible, a desert. The war was to be carried on by ravaging and plunder.

So in May, Sir George Collyer, commanding the British fleet, took on board eighteen hundred men under General Matthews, to ravage Virginia. Anchoring his vessels in Hampton Roads, Collyer landed General Matthews at Portsmouth. From this place, small parties were sent out to ravage and plunder naval and military stores; vessels of all kinds, and property of every kind were carried off or wantonly destroyed.

In a few days, a fertile country became one vast scene of smoking ruins. When the people remonstrated, they were told: "We are commanded to visit the same treatment upon all who refuse to obey the King."

Washington, meanwhile, had been unable to undertake any important movement. His army was small. Congress did little to increase the force, or even to clothe and pay the officers and men actually in service, many of whom were suffering greatly. People generally seemed to think that the French would do everything, and a general apathy prevailed. Not even militia organizations were kept up to prevent the constant English raids and incursions.

While things were in this condition, Sir Henry Clinton, on the 1st of June, moved up the Hudson, and attacking the unfinished American works at Stony Point, captured them, taking the whole garrison prisoners of war. He at once put Stony Point and Verplanck's Point in a strong state of defense. It was his intention to attack West Point, but Washington was on the alert to preserve that position, which commanded the river.

Unable to effect his object, Clinton resolved to ravage and plunder Connecticut, as he had done Virginia. Again Sir George Collyer's fleet sailed out of New York, this time bearing a force under Major-General Tryon, and General Garth.

On Monday, the 5th of July, these forces landed at East and West Haven, and prepared to attack the city of New Haven. Some Yale students and other young men drove back Garth's advance, but the British general advanced to West Bridge. There he met so stubborn an oppposition that he retired, and, crossing higher up, entered New Haven by another road. Tryon met a sturdy opposition to his landing,

but finally disembarked, and marched on New Haven. The British general threatened to burn the city, but after plundering the inhabitants of all their valuables, and destroying much furniture that they could not remove, and all the public stores, they marched down next day to Rockfort, and re-embarked.

On the 8th, they landed at Fairfield, and, meeting little opposition, entered the town, from which most of the people had fled. Those who remained were subjected to the worst brutalities, and then the town was set on fire. Two meeting-houses, eighty-three dwellings, forty-seven storehouses, with the schools and county-house, were all destroyed.

Norwalk was the next point of attack. As Tryon marched on this place, Captain Stephen Betts, with only fifty Continentals, met him, and handled him so roughly that he did not venture to cross the bridge and enter the place till Garth came up. Here the work of destruction was renewed. More than two hundred houses and stores, with barns, mills, and shipping, were ruthlessly destroyed.

Such was the notorious expedition against Connecticut, of which the people of America have ever retained the most intense indignation.

While the British were engaged in these disgraceful operations, Washington, after personally reconnoitering Stony Point, determined to wrest it from the hands of the enemy. He confided this important expedition to one of his best generals, Anthony Wayne.

That general made it one of the most memorable exploits in American wars, and as long as the history of the country is read, men will commemorate Wayne's capture of Stony Point.

The place which bears the name is a rough little promontory jutting out into the Hudson, about forty miles above New York. The river

washes nearly the whole rocky side, and a deep marsh covers the rest. Through this marsh there was but one passage-way, though, where it skirted the river, a sandy beach was seen at low tide.

Wayne cautiously approached the British position, and forming his men into two columns, moved on, with forlorn hopes of Pennsylvania troops at the head of each column. To distinguish his men in the night attack, each soldier stuck a piece of white paper in his hat. At half-past eleven o'clock at night, the two columns, in perfect silence, advanced. At a little stream they separated, one to take the eastern side, the other the western side of the works. Between them, Major Murfey, with some North Carolina light troops, made an open attack. The English, alarmed by an outpost at the water's edge, manned the works. Grape and musketry poured down on Murfey's advancing column, but from the American line not a sound was heard. Through the marsh and water, over abattis and obstructions of every kind, Wayne's grim, resolute men, with fixed bayonets, pushed steadily on. The darkness is lighted up by volley after volley, but they never stagger or waver. They reach the parapet, and creeping through or clambering over, are inside the works. Both columns at the same instant raised the appointed cry: "The fort's our own!" Colonel Fleury, the first to enter the fort, struck the British standard with his own hand. The garrison maintained a desperate hand-to-hand fight, but at last, seeing their numbers thinning, and the Americans in complete possession, they surrendered. General Wayne, wounded in the head, had fallen outside the works, and was now brought in bleeding, but victorious, to receive the submission of the British commander.

The guns were at once run out and pointed at Fort Lafayette, and the English vessels in the river. They were startled at this first notice

of a change of owners in Stony Point, and the ships made all haste to escape down the river.

Wayne's exploit deprived the enemy of nearly seven hundred men, besides ordnance and stores to an immense amount.

This achievement arrested Clinton in his devastation of Connecticut. He hastened back to New York, and dispatched troops to relieve Colonel Webster in Fort Lafayette; McDougal, when dispatched by Wayne to reduce that post, having moved too late. Washington, finding Stony Point alone of no importance to hold, evacuated it, when Clinton again posted a strong garrison there.

Not far off, on the 22d of July, a stubborn fight occurred between Brant with his savage warriors and a small force. Brant had plundered and burned Minisink: Colonel Hathorn, of Warwick, with others, rashly pursued him. The adroit Indian divided his antagonists by a stratagem. Eighty occupied the summit of a hill. These Brant now attacked. Sheltered behind trees and rocks, the Americans kept up a constant and telling fire, from ten in the morning till late in the afternoon. Then a brave fellow who held the key of the position fell. Brant saw his advantage and pushed in, attacking the little American party on all sides. They fled, and, pursued by the savage foe, were slaughtered without mercy, as were the wounded, who had been removed and placed under the care of a surgeon.

One only received quarter, who, it is said, made a Masonic signal of distress, which Brant, himself a Freemason, respected.

In the Northward again, the clang of battle resounded. Colonel Maclean, from Halifax, stationed himself on the Penobscot. A fleet was at once fitted out under Commodore Saltonstall, bearing four thousand militia, under Generals Lovell and Wadsworth, to dislodge

him. A British fleet impeded the landing, but Lovell at last began the siege of Maclean's works. He erected his battery, and for a fortnight kept up a most vigorous cannonade, and preparations were made to assault the fort. But suddenly intelligence came that Sir George Collyer was approaching, with a large naval force. Lovell abandoned the siege, and embarked all his troops. As he stood out to sea, Collyer's fleet hove in sight. Flight was no longer possible. The Warren, a fine new frigate, and fourteen other vessels, were either taken or blown up. The transports managed to land the troops on the wild, uncultivated coast, and many men perished, as without provisions they endeavored, through the dense woods of Maine, to reach the towns and villages.

Such was the disastrous result of a well-appointed expedition fitted out by Massachusetts.

A brilliant feat of arms, however, cheered the American heart. Wayne's exploit at Stony Point had aroused the emulation of officers and men.

The British in New York had a post at Paulus Hook, now Jersey City, which proved a great annoyance. Major Henry Lee, a dashing Virginia officer, popularly known as "Light Horse Harry," proposed to Washington to surprise it. The English position consisted of redoubts and block-houses well supplied with artillery, and protected by abattis and marshes. The ground was then far different from what the present city shows. The post could be approached by land only by way of the New Bridge over the Hackensack.

On the morning of the 18th of August, with the summer sun pouring down on the valley, Lee moved from Paramus with two hundred Maryland troops, and at New Bridge was joined by three hundred

Virginians and some dragoons. With these he advanced, but the Virginians, from various reasons, withdrew. With his remaining petty force he reached the enemy's works, through the marsh and under a brisk fire. But his rush was so impetuous, that before the British had time to fire a single piece of artillery he gained possession of the main work, while Captain Forsyth captured a house known as "Number Six," with several officers and soldiers quartered there.

Without discharging a single musket, Lee had taken the place and had the whole garrison prisoners, except a few Hessians who had thrown themselves into a small work.

Across the river he could see New York, roused by the alarm-guns, all in excitement. In a short time troops would pour in upon him. So, securing his prisoners he began his retreat, and though pursued, he repulsed the enemy at English Neighborhood Creek and returned in safety with all his prisoners, having lost only two men killed and three wounded, and deprived the enemy of two hundred.

Far more important was the expedition set on foot late in the summer against the Six Nations. These Indians had, from the settlement of New York by the Dutch, been friendly to the colonists, and had never made war upon them, till civilized England instigated them to deeds of blood and massacre on their old friends and neighbors.

We have seen how terribly they carried out the fearful work at Wyoming, Cherry Valley, Mohawk Valley, and Minisink. The whole country demanded their chastisement. Pennsylvania, New York, and Connecticut, the last as proprietors in a measure of Wyoming, called upon Congress to act. Washington had already decided upon a plan of action, and when Congress proposed it, at once offered the command of the expedition to General Gates, who declined: Sullivan

took his place. Two bodies of troops were to move upon the Indian country; Sullivan's corps, from Easton, by way of Wyoming, while New York troops, under General James Clinton, where to move from Canajoharie by way of Otsego Lake. Sullivan was delayed by various petty obstacles, but Clinton, damming up the outlet of Otsego Lake, was enabled to float down the Susquehanna the batteaux he had collected, and also to overflow and damage the Indian fields on the river.

The forces united on the 22d of August. On the 27th they ravaged the Indian fields at Chemung. Two days after they came upon the Indians, who had taken up a strong position near where Elmira now stands. They lay in a bend of the river; protected in front by a breastwork of logs. They concealed this by bushes, hoping to escape observation till Sullivan's army was passing, when they would make a sudden attack. They were discovered, however, and skirmishing was kept up till the whole army arrived. The hills on the flank of the Indians were the essential point to carry. General Poor charged up the hill on their left with great coolness and bravery. Every rock and tree and bush shielded its man, from behind which rang out the sharp crack of the deadly rifle. The Indians yielded only inch by inch, darting from tree to tree as they were pressed back, but keeping up their fire; Brant, in the thickest of the fight, rousing his men by word and example. As he saw Poor steadily pressing to his left flank, he made a desperate effort to rally his men and force Poor back. On they came, yelling and whooping like infuriate demons, but they could make no impression on the American line, which soon turned the left. Then from the Indian line rose the retreat halloo, and they fled precipitately, leaving their packs, scalping-knives, and tomahawks.

Many of the Indians fell in the deadly battle, more in the pursuit.

The nearest Indian village was destroyed, then Newtown, now Elmira, with all its crops. Through the Seneca country pressed the American army, resolved to punish their savage foe. French Catharine's, Appletown, Kandara, Ganundasaga, were all given to the flames. The last was the chief town of the Senecas, a place of some sixty houses, surrounded by thrifty orchards of apple and peach trees, and fine gardens, showing the progress of these Indians, whom England had called from their progress in civilization to replunge in barbarism.

After destroying other towns, Sullivan, when at Kanaghsa, sent out Lieutenant Boyd with twenty-six men on a scout. He was intercepted by a large body of Indians. With desperate energy he attempted to cut his way through, but twenty-two of the party were killed, Boyd and Sergeant Parker being made prisoners. Brant would have spared them, but Butler, the Tory chief, gave them to the Indians to torture, and they expired amid the most excruciating torments.

Having completely ravaged the Indian country, Sullivan marched back to Wyoming.

Colonel Van Schaick had already this year, with a small body of men, attacked Onondaga, killing and capturing some fifty men, and destroying fifty houses and great quantities of provisions. While Sullivan was in the Seneca country, Colonel Brodhead, from Pittsburg, ascended the Alleghany and ravaged the Indian villages and fields, although there the Indians made some attempt at resistance.

These severe blows, although they did not deprive the Indians of many warriors, left them nearly helpless, and convinced them of the power of the Americans. In this way they were attended with no

little advantage, and experience had shown, that it was the only way to produce an impression on these haughty warriors.

The little American navy, though unable to cope with the gigantic fleets of Great Britain, rendered, nevertheless, signal services, and continued to show the world, by exploits on sea as well as on land, that the people of America were in earnest and determined to be free. England was mistress of the seas, and few nations dared to cope with her on her own element. Yet here were the United States fearlessly confronting her. In 1776 the American cruisers, darting out from the numberless ports on the Atlantic seaboard, swept away more than three hundred English vessels. Roused by this, the King sent out the next year seventy-seven men-of-war to cruise along the coast, yet, in the face of this great naval force, the Americans captured four hundred and seventy-six English merchantmen, some of them of very great value. Occasionally, indeed, a privateer would be taken, to the great exultation of the British and Tories, but they could not, by all the cruelties of their prison-ships on the East River, or their Sugar-Houses in New York city, deter bold and patriotic men from sallying forth on the ocean to cripple the maritime strength of the oppressor.

Among the officers appointed to command in the navy was Captain John Paul Jones, a man of great naval experience, and devoted heart and soul to the cause of American independence.

Through the exertions of Dr. Franklin, a little fleet was fitted out in France in 1779, and put under command of Paul Jones. It consisted of the Bon Homme Richard, an old East Indiaman mounting thirty-four guns, the Alliance, a new American frigate carrying thirty-six guns, the Pallas, Vengeance, and Cerf. This fleet swept along the coast of Great Britain and spread terror throughout the country,

where the fate of South Carolina and Connecticut was, they supposed, to become that of many a thriving town and village. As they had robbed, plundered, burned, and desolated in America, so Americans might justly burn and plunder in England.

On the 23d of September, 1779, Commodore Paul Jones, cruising off Flamborough Head, England, discovered a large fleet of vessels. He instantly recognized it as the Baltic fleet, coming up convoyed by two British men-of-war; the Serapis, of forty-four guns, and the Countess of Scarborough, of twenty-two. Commodore Jones signalled his ships to form a line and bear down on the enemy, but Captain Landais, of the Alliance, disobeyed his orders. Then Jones went into action with the two English vessels.

It was now night, and the moon came out clear and bright, on a sea almost as smooth as glass. The cliffs of the English coast were full in view, lined with anxious spectators.

"What ship is that?" hailed Captain Pearson of the Serapis. "Come a little nearer and I will tell you," was Jones' reply. "What are you laden with?" asked the British commander. "Round, grape, and double-head shot," was the answer of the gallant American commander. The broadside of the Serapis then thundered out. Paul Jones replied, but two of what he considered his best guns burst, killing several. Abandoning these useless guns, he kept up the battle with those of less weight. The Serapis poured in her broadsides with the regularity of a British man-of-war; Jones, after one or two broadsides, ran ahead, but the Serapis luffed across his stern, pouring in a heavy broadside and passing around and ahead. The Richard ran into her, and in a moment threw out grappling-irons, but before the Americans could board the Serapis, the latter contrived to get

free. In the next manœuvre the two ships came side by side, and the Richard again threw out her grappling-irons, and the anchor of the Serapis hooked fast on the Richard.

With the muzzles of their guns fairly touching, the cannonade kept up furiously, the balls tearing through both hulls. They fought at the guns below, they fought from deck to deck, they fought from the tops and rigging. Seldom has history recorded such a fight. All working of the ships ceased, as they lay head and stern, and drifted slowly toward the land, till at last the Serapis cast out her anchor three miles from shore. With a rush the British seamen attempted to board. Back, bleeding and discomfited, they were repeatedly hurled, and from the tops came grenades and well-aimed shots that finally cleared the tops and deck of the Serapis. Below, the British had the advantage; they were tearing the Richard's lower deck to pieces and driving the Americans up.

The battle had lasted nearly an hour when the sails of the Serapis took fire, and soon the tops of the Richard were in a blaze. Both parties stopped the fight to extinguish the flames. Then the battle was renewed. The fire broke out anew, but they extinguished it only to renew the desperate fight. At last, one of the Richard's topsmen climbed over to the maintop of the Serapis with a bucket full of grenades, and began to light and drop them among the English sailors. One at last fell among the cartridges. A fearful explosion ensued. More than twenty were killed and forty wounded.

Just then the Alliance came up and poured in a broadside, doing as much damage to the Richard as to the Serapis, and filling the American vessel with such confusion that the English prisoners were released, and the gunner, supposing himself the highest officer left, called

out Quarter! The Commodore soon restored order, put the prisoners at the pumps, and filled his crew with new hope of victory. He trained new guns to bear on the Serapis, and at last, at half past one, Captain Pearson struck his colors with his own hand, no British tar, with all their reputed gallantry, daring to expose himself to the deadly fire of the American ship.

Lieutenant Dale passed on board and took possession, while Pearson and his officers went on board the Richard, and surrendered their swords to Commodore Paul Jones. But the haughty Englishman could not forbear to insult his conqueror: "It is with great reluctance," said he, "that I am obliged to resign my sword to a man who may be said to fight with a halter about his neck." Commodore Paul Jones showed his greatness of mind by replying: "Sir, you have fought like a hero, and I make no doubt your sovereign will reward you for it in the most ample manner."

While the Richard and Serapis were engaged, the Pallas had attacked and captured the Countess of Scarborough. The victory was won, but the Richard was on fire and sinking. With great difficulty her crew and the wounded were removed to the other vessels of the squadron. She was a complete wreck, much of her timbers being completely swept away by the cannon of the Serapis. The sun rose on the glorious ship settling down in the sea; at ten o'clock her bows sunk, and she disappeared.

Nearly three hundred men were killed and wounded on each of the ships, so desperate had been the action. Its fame rang through Europe and America. The King of France presented Commodore Jones with a splendid sword; the Empress of Russia invited him to her navy and made him Rear-Admiral. Congress showed its appreciation

of his gallantry by the thanks of the nation and by striking a gold medal.

Admiral d'Estaing, with the French fleet, after refitting at Boston, sailed to the West Indies, where Dominica, St. Vincent's, and Granada were captured, and all the English possessions thrown into great alarm. An English fleet was sent out to meet him, and a sharp but indecisive action followed. The French Admiral was about to sail home, when he received so strong an appeal from General Lincoln, and Governor Rutledge, of South Carolina, that he sailed once more for the United States, to co-operate with the American forces in reducing Savannah.

General Prevost, who held that city, was early warned of his danger, and sent to New York for aid. Experienced engineers strengthened the defenses of the city, and did all that was possible to make the approach to the city dangerous to a fleet.

D'Estaing landed Dillon's regiment of the Irish Brigade, and other troops, amounting in all to more than three thousand men. On the 15th of September, General Count Pulaski, with his legion, joined them. Then d'Estaing summoned the garrison to surrender.

Prevost asked time, and this enabled him to be reinforced by Colonel Maitland.

When General Lincoln arrived with his army from Charleston, the siege of Savannah was begun. The garrison made repeated sorties, but the mortars and siege-guns began their work, seriously damaging the town and burning many houses. The English fortifications were not, however, much injured. Finding that the siege would be long, d'Estaing, unwilling to remain longer on the coast, resolved to abandon the siege unless an assault could be made. On the 9th of October, the bombardment was opened from all the batteries, and under

cover of this fire, the two columns of attack were formed, one under General Dillon, to march along the foot of the bluff on the north side of the town, the other, commanded by Admiral d'Estaing and General Lincoln, to attack the Spring Hill redoubt, where the Augusta railroad station now stands.

At the same time, General Huger, with a body of militia, was to move on the south side of the town, to draw off the enemy, and, if possible, enter the town.

Dillon's column got entangled in the swamp, and lost severely by the enemy's fire without being able to come into action.

The column under the French Admiral and the American General moved splendidly on upon the Spring Hill redoubt, where Prevost had gathered his choice troops. Under a murderous fire they scaled the ramparts, and the French fleurs-de-lis, and the crescent of South Carolina, were planted on the redoubt. They are shot down ; but in a moment they are up again. Again a gallant Carolinian falls. Sergeant Jasper caught his State flag, and again reared it, but received his death-wound.

For nearly an hour a fearful struggle was kept up, but fresh English troops came up, and the gallant men were forced back, through ditch and abattis, down the bluff. Disheartened by the fearful slaughter of their men, the allied commanders ordered a retreat. While this assault was made, Count Pulaski had charged at the head of his legion in the rear of the enemy's line, when he was struck in the groin and fell mortally wounded. His Lieutenant seized his banner and continued to lead on the charge, but the English now turned all their force upon him, he too retreated, bearing off his dying commander.

General Huger's movement produced no result.

General Lincoln wished to continue the siege, but d'Estaing would not consent to remain. He had lost severely, and was less disposed than ever. Accordingly, the siege was raised, the French re-embarked, the Americans crossed the river, and returned to South Carolina. In loss of life, the attack on Savannah was one of the severest battles of the war. The French lost in killed and wounded seven hundred, and the Americans two hundred. The English loss was comparatively small.

During the siege of Savannah, Colonel John White, of Georgia, performed an exploit worth recording. Twenty-five miles from Savannah, on the Ogeechee, was an English post under a British captain, with more than a hundred men, and five armed vessels. Late at night, White, with six men, kindled fires, so as to look like a large encampment, and made noises to convey the same impression. Then he summoned the English officer to surrender instantly. The captain supposed that he was about to be attacked by an overwhelming force, laid down his arms, and Colonel White marched a hundred and forty-two British prisoners to Sunbury. General Washington had counted also on d'Estaing's co-operation in a great movement against New York, the key to the English position in America, as an attack upon it required a naval force. But the failure of the siege of Savannah, and the subsequent dispersion of the French fleet in a storm, put an end to all his hopes from that quarter.

The operations of the year were accordingly closed and Washington prepared to go into winter-quarters. He selected these so as to secure wood, water, and provisions, as well as to keep the enemy in check. The army formed two divisions; the northern, under General Heath, was to protect West Point and the adjacent country;

Washington himself, with the principal division, retired to Morristown, in New Jersey.

If in this campaign Washington had effected little, the English had accomplished nothing towards the subjugation of America. They had scattered their forces and ravaged without mercy defenseless towns: but, after this, they had never stepped out of their works or beyond their lines.

Washington's army was small. The people, after the first enthusiasm of the Revolution had subsided, had grown careless and indifferent; Congress was irresolute, and the Continental Currency issued by it had become almost worthless, and was largely counterfeited by the English Government.

It was a period of despondency for the best patriots in the land, and for none more than for the illustrious Washington.

CHAPTER V.

Campaign of 1780—Sir Henry Clinton sails south, besieges and takes Charleston—Tarleton begins his career of cruelty—Lord Cornwallis in the South—Sumter and Marion—Gates sent South by Congress—His rashness—Defeated at Camden—DeKalb—General Greene—King's Mountain—Patriotic women—Lord Stirling on Staten Island—Battle of Springfield

ELATED by the success of Prevost in repulsing the allied attack on his works at Savannah, Sir Henry Clinton resolved to seize the opportunity afforded by the absence of the French fleet from the coast, to attack South Carolina. Admiral Arbuthnot, with a powerful fleet, convoyed a number of transports, which now bore to Charleston a formidable force, with ample supplies of military stores and provisions. A

succession of storms nearly destroyed this armament, and actually caused great loss, but it finally reached Savannah. The British army then moved on Charleston. That city was held by General Lincoln, with about one thousand men. His call for militia and for reinforcements from the North was but slowly responded to, yet he resolutely prepared to defend the town with the troops at his command. He strengthened his works, planted cannon, sunk vessels in the channels, and in other ways made them dangerous for the enemy's ships. Meanwhile Sir Henry Clinton gradually surrounded the town and approached the lines. On the night of the 1st of April, he threw up two redoubts within eight hundred yards of the lines held by the Americans. In a few days his siege-line was complete, and the fleet passed Fort Moultrie to support the army, suffering great damage from the fire of the fort, and losing one transport.

Clinton and Arbuthnot then demanded the surrender of the city, but Lincoln had received reinforcements—Continentals, under General Woodford, and North Carolina militia. He rejected the summons.

Then the siege began, and a fierce fire was kept up on the town from the land batteries and shipping. On the 14th of April, an outpost of Americans, under General Huger, was surprised by Colonel Tarleton, whom a treacherous negro had guided.

A few days later, the already powerful force was swelled by a reinforcement; Cornwallis landed with three thousand fresh troops. Lincoln saw now no hope, except in escaping to the open country. The people of Charleston, fearful of the vengeance of the British General, begged him to defend the place to the last. On the 21st, Lincoln proposed to surrender the town and its dependencies, on condition that the garrison and such of the inhabitants as wished to retire,

might be permitted to withdraw, with their arms, field-artillery, ammunition, baggage, and such stores as they could carry, and that inhabitants unwilling to remain under British rule, should have a year to dispose of their property. The English commander at once rejected these terms.

So the siege went on, the English steadily pushing ahead their works, and on the 8th of May again summoned the city. Again Lincoln proposed terms, but Clinton demanded alterations, which Lincoln refused. That night the firing commenced once more, with greater fury than ever. The doomed city was like one vast conflagration. Shells streaming through the air in lightning curves, or bursting in the streets and houses ; the city on fire in five different places ; cannon-balls and shells hissing continually among the terrified people ; here an ammunition chest would blow up, and then, with a shock like an earthquake, some temporary magazine would explode.

Day brought no cessation to the terrible bombardment, and night was again made lurid by its deadly glare. At last the Americans were fairly driven from their guns, by the deadly fire through the embrasures.

Worn down with fatigue, Lincoln, at last, on the 11th of May, unconscious that a French fleet, under du Ternay, was rapidly approaching to his relief, and seeing no hope of aid, renewed negotiations. The English commanders, anxious to enter the place, agreed upon terms, and articles were signed the next day.

Fifteen hundred Continental soldiers, with a large militia force, became prisoners of war, and cannons, muskets, and military stores fell into the enemy's hands.

This terrible blow gave the British possession of all the country

from North Carolina to the Gulf. Clinton's first movements were an earnest of what the South had to expect. He at once planned three expeditions, one towards the Savannah ; another upon Ninety-Six, a place on the Saluda, to dislodge the American force and rouse the numerous Tories there ; while a third expedition, under the sanguinary Colonel Tarleton, was sent towards North Carolina, to overtake a small force under Colonel Buford, which had been marching to reinforce Lincoln. After a sharp fight at Waxhaws, Buford was defeated and his men slaughtered without mercy, quarter being refused, and the wounded fairly hacked to pieces. They learned to their sorrow what "Tarleton's quarter" was.

The other expeditions were no less successful. Sir Henry Clinton offered pardon to all who submitted and asked it. Many yielded ; the number of Tories increased. Even an address of congratulation to the King found many signers. Emboldened by this, Clinton threatened to treat as rebels all paroled prisoners not in the military service, who refused to renew their allegiance to Great Britain, and enroll themselves as militia under the King.

Then came a period of fearful agony. Many heroically refused, and appealed to the terms of capitulation. They were seized and carried off to St. Augustine and elsewhere, and confined in loathsome dungeons. Such was the fate of the venerable Christopher Gadsden. The soldiers were confined in prison-ships and in filthy quarters, where numbers of them perished.

In consequence of this cruelty and violation of faith on the part of the British commanders, many fled, and a partisan warfare sprang up. Sumter, among the hills that line the Catawba and Broad ; Marion, amid the swamps of the Pedee ; Pickens and Clarke on the Savannah, rallied

around them brave and daring men, who thirsted to avenge their country's wrong on the vile oppressor. Civil war raged in all its fury. Deadly as the strife with the Tories was at the North, in the Carolinas it was still more fearful. Assassination was of daily occurrence. No one was safe on the public roads; no planter secure in his home. The agents of the Government deluded the slaves by offers of emancipation, and stimulated their worst passions against their masters. Whole families were strangled by their slaves.

The sparsely settled condition of the country, which abounded in large plantations, made it an easy country to overrun with the force at the command of the enemy. It was, in this respect, far different from the more densely settled parts of New England, New York, and Pennsylvania.

Yet this very condition of affairs made the career of the patriot partisans possible. Colonel Locke, with only four hundred men, in June, after a fight showing more courage than discipline, dispersed a force of Tories at Ramsour's Mill, under Colonel John Moore, numbering thirteen hundred men.

Sumter was the next to take the field. On the 12th of July, Captain Christian Huck, an unprincipled Tory leader, whose name was belied by his whole godless life, encamped in a lane on the plantation of James Williamson, in what is now Bratonville. They had been ravaging far and wide, and thinking that the terror of their name had driven off all the patriots, they slept in perfect security. Midnight had scarcely struck when Captain Bratton cautiously approached, and before day dawned entered one end of the lane, and Captain McClure the other, with some of the very best and bravest of Sumter's little force. Like avenging furies, they sprang upon the sleeping desperadoes.

Huck fought with energy, but the surprise was complete. The Tories lost many, and were scattered to the winds ; a few, under Huck himself, escaping to Rocky Mount, pursued almost the whole distance by the patriots. This victory encouraged the Americans and disheartened the Tories.

Bratton's plantation was quite near the scene of this gallant action, and his own wife had just been visited by Huck, who demanded where her husband was. Disdaining any evasion, the noble woman promptly replied : "In Sumter's army." Huck endeavored to force her by threats of violence to disclose her husband's place of concealment, little dreaming that that gentleman was so soon to pay him an unceremonious and unwelcome visit. Mrs. Bratton firmly refused to comply or to express any submission to Great Britain ; she refused, even when a sharp reaping-hook was held to her throat by a brutal soldier, to force her to renounce her fidelity to her native State.

Encouraged by his first success, Sumter attacked the British position at Rocky Mount, and succeeding in firing their garrison-houses, compelled them to hoist the white flag ; but, as a storm came on, extinguishing the flames, they renewed the fight, and as his want of artillery made it impossible to reduce them, he withdrew.

In a deep, rocky valley, through which a stream runs roaring along, there juts on one side a hanging rock which gives name to the place. Here Lord Rawdon had posted five hundred regulars and Tories, under Major Carden. While Sumter was at Rocky Mount, Major Davie had approached Hanging Rock, and surprised a foraging party of three Tory companies, which he utterly defeated, killing and wounding nearly all, and capturing a large stock of horses and arms. Then Sumter came up, and in three columns moved on the enemy's position. He

fell in with a division of the British, about half a mile from their camp. With a cheer and rush he was on them; they did not wait to contest the ground. Flinging away guns and arms of all kinds they fled. A braver corps rallied, and made a stand in a wood, pouring a deadly volley into Sumter's advance, and gallantly charging with the bayonet; but the sharp-shooters in Sumter's corps soon brought down the officers. Then the British lost heart and fled. Sumter, supplying himself with ammunition, which he greatly needed, for he had gone into the fight with only ten rounds to each man, pressed on to complete his victory; but his men scattered to plunder the British camp. Thus precious time was lost, and before Sumter, charging in three columns on the British line, drawn up in a hollow square, and protected by cannon, could force them to surrender, reinforcements came up. The victorious partisan, to his mortification, had to withdraw.

Though his success had not been complete, he had inflicted severe loss, and checked the British career.

A few days before this, a scene occurred at Green Spring, which may here be related. A party of patriots halted for the night at Green Spring. Before daybreak, the clatter of a horse's hoofs put them on the alert; the vidette soon recognized Mrs. Dillard, at whose house they had received some refreshments the day before.

A Tory party, under Ferguson, had halted at her house soon after, and a spy informed the leader as to the patriot force. To warn them she slipped out of the house, bridled a colt, and, without a saddle, had galloped to warn her friends. She had scarcely disappeared on a different road homeward, when the dragoons and mounted riflemen dashed in, supposing that they had completely surprised the Americans, till a tremendous volley in front and on both flanks told them they must fight

desperately, as they did for twenty minutes, when they broke and retreated, leaving many dead on the field.

Francis Marion was as successful as Sumter in his operations, and, by hardihood and daring, no less than by the republican simplicity of his life, astonished the enemy and secured their respect.

Washington was not insensible to the condition of the Southern States. He sent Baron de Kalb from Maryland with such troops of the line as he could spare. This brave, upright officer advanced with caution, gathering and disciplining the militia from Virginia and North Carolina. He moved with caution, as he found difficulty in obtaining provisions, and did not wish to expose his raw troops rashly. Washington wished General Greene to take full command in the South, but Congress, led away by Gates' Saratoga renown, appointed him to the command. General Gates joined de Kalb's army late in July. Abandoning the cautious course adopted by de Kalb, he pushed on towards the English through a barren country.

On the 13th of August he reached Clermont, with an army of four thousand men. Lord Rawdon, who commanded the British force, was at Camden, and saw that he must strike a decisive blow or retreat. The latter step would be disastrous, as he would have to leave his stores and his sick, and might never reach Charleston at all, if there should be a general rising of the people.

Cornwallis hastened to join him, and resolved to fight. About ten o'clock on the night of the 15th, Gates moved out to attack Cornwallis, and Cornwallis marched out to attack Gates, neither of them aware of his opponent's movement. Suddenly, on a gentle slope in the midst of an open forest of pine, the heads of the two armies met about two o'clock. The American cavalry was driven back in some confusion,

and both armies prepared for a general action. Each army had its flanks protected by an impassable swamp. Gates placed de Kalb and his regulars on his right, the centre and left being militia. Against these Cornwallis threw his veterans. The militia gave one irregular volley, and then, throwing away their arms, fled from the field. One North Carolina regiment alone stood its ground beside de Kalb's brave men. That capable general held his ground, and even drove Lord Rawdon back: and when Gates fled from the field, he endeavored to hold the positions abandoned by the militia, against the whole British force. Ably supported by Generals Gist and Smallwood, he kept the enemy at bay for nearly an hour, with the Maryland and Delaware troops, who had won laurels on northern fields. Gathering up for a decisive charge, de Kalb put himself at the head of a regiment. On they swept, but de Kalb fell, pierced by eleven wounds. His Aide-de-camp, de Buysson, tried to save him from the brutal enemy, who continued to strike at him, and was wounded in the attempt. They then stripped the dying general even of his shirt.

No longer sustained by the presence of their general, the brave American corps gave way, and a small body, under Gist and Smallwood, effected their retreat. The Delaware regiment was nearly annihilated, the whole army was scattered to the winds; the whole artillery, military stores, and ammunition were lost, and the killed, wounded, and prisoners amounted to at least twelve hundred.

Thus, by the rashness and folly of Gates, the English were established in full possession of the Southern States.

Sumter, who had driven the enemy from the Wateree, was startled on the 18th by tidings of the rout of Gates' whole army. He at once retreated, but Tarleton was already on his trail, moving rapidly, and

preventing any tidings from reaching him. Spent with marching and the heat, Sumter's men threw themselves down to rest at Fishing Creek. While Sumter, without hat, coat, or waistcoat, was sleeping beside a wagon, and his men cooking or resting, Tarleton, who had crept up unobserved, killing the videttes, burst into the camp, and before the Americans realized their danger, their cannon and their stacked muskets were in the hands of the enemy. Flight was the only resource, and in the panic many were killed. With scarcely any loss, the British killed, wounded, or captured nearly five hundred of Sumter's men, and took all his artillery and arms, utterly breaking up his force.

Cornwallis, who had been in a critical position and in great perplexity, was now master of the situation. Gates' army routed, Sumter paralyzed, Marion closely pursued, he felt so sure of South Carolina, that he pressed on to occupy North Carolina, leaving orders to the officers in his various posts, to punish with severity all who, after accepting British protection or giving parole, had taken up arms. Numbers of persons were seized and put to death, multitudes imprisoned, while their families were driven penniless from their houses, which were seized as confiscated property. The land was filled with blood and misery.

Cornwallis met no opposition on his march into North Carolina, except from Colonel Davie, who not only checked his progress, but boldly surprised Tarleton's legion at Wahab's plantation. Dividing his men, he put his riflemen in a cornfield, and with his cavalry dashed up to the house. The enemy fled without a blow, but were met by a murderous fire from the rifles, which killed or wounded sixty of them. Then Davie, seizing nearly a hundred horses and more than as many stands of arms, rode off in safety.

At Charlotte this same able officer, with a handful of men, kept Cornwallis at bay for a considerable time, and again struck terror into Tarleton's legion, who at last refused to attack the Americans.

After occupying Charlotte and endeavoring to organize the Tories, Cornwallis moved on Salisbury, but was suddenly brought to a halt by a great disaster to the royal cause, which entirely changed his plans.

Major Patrick Ferguson, a brave and active officer, had been sent to the borders of the Carolinas, to encourage the Tories and check the movements of the American partisans. He was in command of a force of nearly fifteen hundred regulars and Tories.

The American partisan officers resolved to cut him off. Far and wide messengers went, and brave fellows prepared for the work. From Carolina and Tennessee they began to move towards the spot, under Colonels Shelby, Sevier, Campbell, McDowell, Cleaveland. Ferguson sent at once in haste to Cornwallis, and began to retreat. So rapidly, however, did the foe come on, that he saw any attempt at flight would be useless. Reaching King's Mountain, a range extending for several miles, he took post on a stony ridge rising about a hundred feet above the surrounding ravines. Here, in the scattered wood, he resolved to await the attack. The Americans came up on the 7th of October ; Shelby and Campbell in the centre began the attack, while the others enclosed the hill. Then all dismounted and at once pushed up the slopes. The American centre were met by Ferguson's regulars, and in a bayonet-charge forced back. At it they went again with desperate valor. Cleaveland, on the right of the enemy, reached the summit, when Ferguson, turning on him, forced him back. Then again meeting the centre, he held him at bay till Sevier, on the American right, gained the hill and drove the left wing before him.

Surrounded on all sides, Ferguson rushed from regiment to regiment, encouraging some, directing others, and showing the most undaunted valor, till a well-aimed rifleball brought him down. Then Captain Abraham de Peyster, a New York loyalist, took command, but soon found resistance hopeless. After an action of little more than an hour, the British commander raised a white flag.

Eleven hundred and twenty-five men were killed, wounded, or captured in this battle, one of the most obstinately contested in the war. The Americans, roused to fury by the cruelty and oppressions of the British and Tories, were determined to carry the day ; although they were comparatively untried troops, and fewer in number than the enemy.

This victory crushed all Tory influence in North Carolina. Cornwallis, who heard of Ferguson's defeat and death almost as soon as he received his call for aid, retreated in all haste to Winnsborough, and waited there for reinforcements, which he called for most earnestly.

Sumter was constantly hovering around the English forces, cutting off foraging parties, intercepting supplies, and keeping all in constant alarm. They felt that they must at any sacrifice punish his audacity. Major Wemyss was sent to surprise the daring American, but was himself received so warmly that his party was nearly cut to pieces, the British officer being left wounded and a prisoner in Sumter's hands.

Then Tarleton was again sent, and Sumter met him at Blackstock's plantation. Tarleton came on with his usual dash, but before he could charge, or even see Sumter's line, his rear was attacked and nearly captured. Wheeling to charge these assailants they fell back across a brook and up the slope of a hill, followed by Tarleton, who thought he

was sweeping all before him, when from fences and buildings came a murderous fire from unseen foes. He tried to dislodge the Americans, who were closing around him, and but for the gallantry of one of his officers, who by a brave charge opened a way for Tarleton to retreat, that officer would have been captured.

This closed the operations of the year in the South. That section had displayed courage, devotedness, and heroism in the highest degree; and had suffered in every way from the relentless foe

The previous winter had been so severe, that no operations of importance were undertaken on either side, at the North, for several months. Washington, awaiting the result of Lafayette's mission to France, to secure a land force to co-operate with the Americans, lay encamped at Morristown, in a strong mountain country.

The English had no foothold in New Jersey, yet they kept up a post on Staten Island, and though Lord Stirling, early in the year, attempted to break it up, his expedition effected nothing.

In June Sir Henry Clinton resolved to use Staten Island as the base of operations, and to push forward force enough to seize and hold the Short Hills, the key to Washington's position. It was to be one of the decisive movements of the war. New York Bay was alive with boats and crafts of all kinds, bearing to the island the Coldstream Guards and the flower of the British host.

General Knyphausen, with Generals Stirling, Mathew, and Tryon, were in command. By night the troops passed over to Elizabethtown Point. With day they advanced on the town, Simcoe's Queen's Rangers in the van, with drawn swords and glittering helms, followed by regiment after regiment, all in new uniforms, splendidly armed and equipped.

Colonel Dayton gave them a slight check, wounding General Stirling, but Knyphausen pressed on through Elizabeth. As soon as he took the Springfield road his object was seen. A beacon-fire was lighted at Prospect Hill and a signal cannon fired. Washington, at Morristown, at once put his army in motion, and far and wide the militia responded to the call, gathering at their appointed mustering-places. Beyond the village of Connecticut Farms, Dayton made a stand, and for three hours held the enemy in check, at the defile near the Farm Meeting-house, and even drove the enemy back.

The few Continentals and militia here engaged finally fell back to the heights toward Springfield. Again Knyphausen pressed on, and again the sturdy Americans charged rapidly, attacking the enemy simultaneously in the centre and both wings, but they were again forced back by the steady discipline of the mass of regulars. But they held the bridge over the Rahway, and drove the enemy from it.

Washington was now so near, that Knyphausen, seeing his plan defeated, began to retreat. He plundered all the houses in Connecticut Farms, and then wantonly set them on fire, although there had been no firing from any part of the village. The wife of the Rev. Mr. Caldwell, a Presbyterian clergyman, was murdered by one of the English soldiers, as she sat on the side of a bed surrounded by her children; and this fiendish act was perpetrated just after the unfortunate lady had given refreshments to some English officers. Her body was saved with difficulty from the burning house.

Pursued by the militia, the English retreated that night during a terrific thunder-storm, the darkness lit up by the flaming houses, and by the lightning. On reaching the Point, they crossed over to Staten Island, all except five hundred, who remained in an intrenched camp.

Here they were attacked by General Hand, in a brief, indecisive action.

The movement was, however, too important in Clinton's eyes to be readily abandoned. Making a feigned movement up the Hudson, he threw a still larger force over on Staten Island, and thence to Elizabethtown Point, taking command himself in person.

Again through the pleasant town of Elizabeth moved a well-appointed British force, with cavalry and fine artillery. At the ruined houses of Connecticut Farms they divided into two columns, one taking the road through Vauxhall and Milburn, the other the Springfield road. The former was checked at the bridge in front of Springfield, by Colonel Angell, the latter at another bridge by Major Lee. But these checks were only momentary. The British finally crossed the river, and the Americans fell back to the heights behind Springfield

The country was all aroused, and Washington was sending reinforcements, and a brigade to cut off the retreat of the enemy. Clinton saw the strong position of the Continentals, and the increasing militia. He was again baffled. The Short Hills were not to be captured but at a fearful cost of life. Foiled completely in his object, he prepared to retreat, but wreaked his vengeance on Springfield, giving to the flames nineteen dwellings, and the Presbyterian church.

During the action, the Rev. Mr. Caldwell, chaplain to Dayton's regiment, seeing that the men needed wadding, galloped to the church, and brought out an armful of psalm books, and as he handed them around, he shouted: "Now, boys, put Watts into them!" He could not bear to see the murderers of his poor wife triumph.

As Clinton retreated, a body of regulars and militia pursued and galled his force by constant attacks in the rear and flanks, till at last

the fugitive Britons escaped into their fortified lines at the Point, and by a bridge of boats reached Staten Island.

The American loss had been slight; the British lost a general, and at least five hundred men in killed and wounded.

Washington, supported by the gallantry of New Jersey, had thus baffled the generalship of Sir Henry Clinton, but he was full of anxiety. The power of Congress was declining, its requisitions on the States were disregarded, each State seemed to think only of itself, and seemed reluctant to obey the general government. So low had the public credit, and the Continental money fallen, that the army was kept together and clothed by subscriptions among the patriotic, and by the self-sacrifice and industry of the women, who formed societies, and all labored to supply the necessary garments.

Among those most prominent in this good work, was Mrs. Sarah Bache, daughter of Benjamin Franklin. She had taken an active part in organizing a society of ladies to furnish the soldiers with clothing, and, on the death of Mrs. Reed, Mrs. Bache and four other ladies formed a sort of Executive Committee. The house of her father, where she still resided, became a patriotic workshop. Here shirts and other garments were cut out and made up; money was also collected. She was ardent, patriotic, and eloquent, and in her applications she showed such perseverance and tact, that she wrung contributions from the most reluctant

PART IV.

THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION.

CHAPTER I.

Effective aid from France on Sea and Land—Zealous and successful Efforts of Lafayette in Favor of America—A Fleet under Admiral de Ternay brings over a French army under the Count de Rochambeau—It lands at Newport—Hopes of America—Washington calls earnestly for Troops to enable him to strike a Decisive Blow—A Traitor—General Arnold in Treaty with the Enemy to deliver up West Point—The Arrest of Major Andre reveals and Defeats the Treachery—Arnold escapes to the English—Andre tried and executed.

THE settlement of the country, and its rapid development and strength, were followed by acts of oppression on the part of the British Government. The struggle which began at Lexington, had now lasted several years. England had spent millions upon millions, and had achieved so little that she seemed to look only to the injury she could inflict on her once prosperous colonies, while America, exhausted by the struggle, with her cities and fields ravaged and laid waste, seemed unable to make the last effort for freedom.

In fact, all were despondent. Lafayette had studied the whole situ-

ation, and, risking capture by English cruisers, had gone to France, to plead at the throne of Louis XVI. the cause of the country whose interests were so dear to him.

There his enthusiasm and importunity overcame all obstacles. His private means were spent in obtaining suitable equipments for the officers in his own immediate corps, and articles of prime necessity to all.

With the King and his Ministers, he employed such cogent arguments that he finally induced the court to enter into his views. France resolved to send an army of her best soldiers across the Atlantic, to cooperate with Washington, while the fleets with the white-lilied flag of France held in check those that floated the Union Jack of England.

So much did Lafayette ask, and so much did he obtain, against the advice of prudent old statesmen, that the prime minister, the Count de Maurepas, said one day at the council-board : "How fortunate it is for his Majesty, that Lafayette has not taken it into his head to strip Versailles of its furniture to send to his dear Americans ; for the King would be unable to refuse it."

When the great step had been decided upon, Lafayette hastened back to cheer General Washington with the glad tidings.

The French officers had caught the enthusiasm of Lafayette ; every one was ready to take his place in the army sent to aid in securing liberty in the Western World, while many, still smarting under the loss of Canada, were eager to meet their old foes in America, and help to deprive England of a richer territory than she had wrested from France. The regiments for the American expedition were at last selected ; an experienced general chosen ; then the equipments were rapidly prepared.

On July 12, 1780, a French fleet of twelve vessels and thirty-two

transports, under the Chevalier de Ternay, entered the harbor of Newport. It bore a French army, commanded by the Count de Rochambeau, and numbering four thousand men. They had sailed from Brest, on the 2d of May, and passed around by the Azores, engaging on the way an English squadron, under Captain Cornwallis. An English fleet, under Admiral Graves, sailed from England on the same day, to intercept de Ternay, but was driven back by a storm and did not overtake him. Rochambeau, who was received by General Heath, landed his troops and military stores, and encamped so as to cover Newport. The long voyage had caused much sickness in his fleet, and many at once required medical care. The French were not, consequently, in a condition to make any important movement.

Washington had strained every nerve to have his army in a condition to compare favorably with that of his ally, before they began their campaign together. His great object was to take New York, where the English had so long been in undisturbed possession. A plan for the capture of the city was drawn up, and conveyed to General Rochambeau, by Lafayette, who had returned from France just before the sailing of the French corps. Rochambeau was to march to Westchester County, New York, and join Washington, while the French fleet engaged that of the enemy under Arbuthnot. Graves arrived, however, with his fleet, and the English were in this way far superior to the French on the water.

Clinton, with his usual energy, resolved to lose no time, and instead of waiting to be attacked, if de Guichen's fleet arrived from the West Indies to reinforce de Ternay, he resolved to attack Newport. The English fleet at once sailed to blockade that port, and Clinton embarked with eight thousand of his best men to operate on land. Tidings of

his movement moved faster than he did, and at the call of General Heath, the militia of Massachusetts, Connecticut, and Rhode Island, took the field. New England was in arms, and as Clinton sailed up the Sound, he saw evidences of active preparation. By the time he reached Huntington Bay, Long Island, he saw that his movement would prove disastrous, and he returned hastily to New York, full of disappointment and perplexity. If de Guichen arrived he would be taken in a trap at New York. So he prepared for the worst; but the French admiral had met Rodney in the West Indies, and in a furious naval battle with that English commander, had suffered so severely that he started back to France without stopping at Newport. This was a terrible disappointment to Washington, while to Clinton it was an unexpected release.

Yet Washington did not give up all hope. He met the French commanders at Hartford, and arranged a new plan, but the arrival on the coast of Admiral Rodney, with eleven men-of-war, baffled all their plans. The meeting of the great American general and the French commanders, at Hartford, was impressive. The French were eager to see the great patriot general, whom in early life they had regarded as so great an enemy, now their ally against the very power for which he then fought. Washington impressed them all. No French officer ever spoke of him but in terms of admiration.

While this cordial co-operation of the French gave Washington hope, the difficulties in the country made him despond. Half the time his army was without provisions, and he saw no hope of a permanent change. He had no magazines, and no money to form them. He saw that Congress must raise money by loan, and not depend on taxes alone: it must take plans to maintain a permanent army.

While his mind was thus burdened by great cares, on his return from the conference, a terrible surprise came upon him. He sent on word to General Arnold, at West Point, that he would breakfast with him, but on reaching the post, found Arnold absent. Soon after papers were placed in his hands. Arnold had fled to the British lines; a British officer who had come to arrange with him the treacherous deliverance of the post into Sir Henry Clinton's hands was a prisoner. Well might Washington be thunderstruck to find that one who had fought so bravely on many a field had proved a traitor. Providence had overruled the deep-laid schemes of treachery.

Arnold, a disappointed man, unable to bear as Washington did the slights put upon him, and led into extravagance by his wife, had long plotted treason to his country.

Sir Henry Clinton lured him to his evil work, by promises of rank in the English army, and a large payment of money. Arnold obtained the command at West Point only to deliver it up.

Washington's absence at Hartford afforded the opportunity he desired. Sir Henry Clinton dispatched his adjutant-general, Major André, to concert the necessary measures with the treacherous American general. André did not wish to enter the American lines, and asked to meet Arnold on the Vulture, an English man-of-war, then lying in the Hudson, but Arnold declined, and they met in the gloom of night, at the foot of a great hill, called Long Clove Mountain, just below Haverstraw. There and, a few hours later, at Smith's house, the whole plan was arranged.

André intended to proceed to the Vulture, and in her descend to New York; but, without Arnold's knowledge, a battery had opened on that vessel, and she dropped down. Unable to find any one to row

him to the Vulture, he crossed the river at King's Ferry, and in disguise endeavored to reach the British lines. Near Tarrytown, a small stream crosses the road, and runs through a deep ravine. André, who had been guided by Smith as far as Pine's Bridge, had reached this point, when he was stopped by John Paulding, Isaac Van Wart, and David Williams, three young Americans, out to arrest suspicious characters. "Gentlemen!" said André, "I hope you belong to our party." "What party?" said Paulding. "The Lower Party," replied André. On their telling him that they did, he said, "I am a British officer, out in the country on particular business, and I hope you will not detain me a minute." Pulling out Arnold's pass, he dismounted, and urged them to let him proceed, or they would bring themselves into trouble, by thwarting the General's business which he had in hand. The pass was all right, and they would have let him go had he not said that he was a British officer, and showed a gold watch, which at that time seems to have been proof positive that the owner was in British pay.

They took André into the bushes, and compelled him to strip to examine him. They found no papers, and began to think that they were wrong, when, on drawing off his boots, they found papers between his foot and stocking. They were documents from Arnold, giving the position of the force at West Point, its strength, artillery, etc. Now thoroughly alarmed, André endeavored to buy them off, but they sturdily refused. "No!" said Paulding, "if you would give us ten thousand guineas, you shall not stir one step."

They conducted their prisoner to North Castle, the nearest military post, and delivered him and the papers to Lieutenant-Colonel Jameson.

That officer, evidently bound to Arnold by some secret tie, attempted to send André and the papers to that discovered traitor. Major Tall-

madge coming in prevented this, but Jameson sent word to Arnold of André's arrest.

The traitor was at breakfast with his aides, when Jameson's letter was placed in his hands. Controlling himself, he apologized for leaving them, as urgent business required him to start at once. Hastening up stairs, he told his wife the failure of the plot, and leaving her in a swoon, he hastened to the river-side, and in a boat made his way to the Vulture.

Such was the astonishing intelligence placed in Washington's hands. The unfortunate André, detained by Tallmadge's wise resolution, wrote to Washington, acknowledging his real name and rank. He was by Washington's orders conveyed to West Point.

After making all the arrangements necessary for the safety of that post, Washington appointed a court-martial for the trial of André. It met in an old Dutch Church at Tappan. This court, composed of Generals Greene, Stirling, St. Clair, Lafayette, Steuben, Stark, and others of the noblest sentiments, decided that Major André ought to be considered a spy, and suffer death. He was executed on the 2d of October, 1780.

Young, brave, talented, a general favorite with all, Major André's fate excited the greatest sympathy in England. The fate of Captain Hale has never met any such sympathy, and many Americans, even, join in the English tide of opinion, forgetful of their own heroic Hale.

André now lies in Westminster Abbey, to which his body was removed by the British Government in 1821.

Clinton made every effort to save André, but nothing short of the surrender of Arnold would have availed him.

The desertion of Arnold, and the audacity with which he made re-

ligion a pretext for his treason, roused the indignation of every American. There was one thought in all minds, to capture and punish the traitor. A bold, and almost desperate attempt was made by Sergeant Champe, who, with Washington's knowledge, deserted to the enemy in such a way that officers and men believed him a fit companion for Arnold. The English did so, for he was rescued by them from the pursuit of American cavalry by some galleys in the river.

He enlisted in Arnold's legion, and formed a plan, by the aid of some patriots in the city, to seize Arnold in the garden back of his house, which he always entered about midnight. They were then to gag him and row him over to Hoboken. On the very day fixed for the execution of this bold plan Arnold changed his quarters, and the opportunity was lost.

The remarkable manner in which Arnold's treachery, so nearly carried out, was defeated and brought to nought, excited admiration on all sides. Washington himself said in a letter to a friend : "In no instance since the commencement of the war, has the interposition of Providence appeared more remarkably conspicuous, than in the rescue of the post and garrison at West Point."

Among the closing events of this year's campaign was the brilliant achievement of Major Benjamin Tallmadge, who, starting from Fairfield, Connecticut, with eight boats, with eighty men of Sheldon's dragoons, crossed Long Island Sound, and at dawn on the 23d of November, unperceived by the enemy, rushed in three columns on their works at Fort St. George, on the south side of Long Island. With the cry of "Washington and Glory," the three detachments scaled the palisade and entered, carrying the main work within at the point of the bayonet in less than ten minutes. After the British struck

their flag, some of them, from one of the houses, opened a fire on the Americans. The place was soon forced, and the violators of the rules of war punished on the spot.

An English vessel lying near attempted to escape, but the guns of the fort soon brought her to. After destroying a large quantity of forage collected by the enemy at Coram, as well as the works at Fort St. George, and much of the stores, Tallmadge loaded his prisoners with what was most valuable and portable, and, reaching his boats, sailed back in safety.

This exploit was all the more welcome to the patriots, as two little forts in Northern New York had just been forced to yield to Major Carleton, who invested them with a force of English, Tories, and Indians: while Sir John Johnson was spreading terror through the Mohawk valley, with Brant and Cornplanter to aid him in his work of desolation. The Middle Fort would have been surrendered by the cowardly Major Woolsey, the commandant, but for Timothy Murphy, a famous rifleman, who shot every Englishman who approached with a flag, and so deceived Johnson as to their forces that he drew off. During all the fight Woolsey was among the women and children, or crawling around inside the intrenchments on his hands and knees.

At the Lower Fort, Johnson was again repulsed; but many places were given to the flames. Near Fort Paris the gallant Colonel Brown, who had by order of General Van Rensselaer marched out to meet the enemy, was overpowered by numbers and slain with forty of his men. Van Rensselaer, after sacrificing this able officer, lost time in pursuing Johnson, but at last took the field and came up with the enemy at Klock's field. Johnson drew up to meet him, with regulars on his right, and his Greens in the centre, Brant and his In-

dians on the left. But so impetuous was the American charge, led by Morgan Lewis, Dubois, Cuyler, and the Oneidas under Colonel Louis, that the enemy gave way and fled, losing severely in the action and flight. But the inactive Van Rensselaer again allowed him to escape and reach Canada, after many ravages and captures that the American general should have prevented.

This closed the operations of the year. As winter approached Washington went into winter-quarters, stationing the Pennsylvania line near Morristown, the Jersey line at Pompton, near Paterson, the New England troops at West Point, those of New York at Albany, while the French remained in Rhode Island and Connecticut.

CHAPTER II.

Campaign of 1781—Aspect of Affairs—Arnold leads an Expedition to Virginia, and is joined by Phillips—Lafayette sent against him—The Campaign in Carolina—General Morgan's brilliant Victory at Cowpens—Greene's famous Retreat—Battle of Guilford Court House—Cornwallis, pursued by Greene, enters Virginia—Lord Rawdon in the Carolinas—Battle of Hobkirk's Hill—Siege of Ninety-Six—Death of Hayne—Lafayette and Cornwallis in Virginia—Cornwallis at Yorktown—Washington and De Grasse concert a Movement against him—Successful Co-operation—Cornwallis invested—Surrenders—Arnold ravages Connecticut.

WHEN the American Revolution began, it was considered in England as a trifle, a petty insurrection, to be put down at once: it had become a great and fearfully expensive war, and now the whole continent of Europe was arrayed against England. France and Spain were openly at war, and Holland, stung by England's arrogant assumption of a right to seize enemies' goods on neutral vessels, also became involved in the war, while Russia, Sweden, and Denmark formed an armed neutrality which resolved to submit to no British exactions. There was scarcely a

clime where English ships and English soldiers were not engaged. This made it all the more difficult to maintain their foothold in America. But while they could not send over new armies to crush the Americans, the latter were in a state of exhaustion. Their paper money was worthless, their army unpaid, and ready to mutiny. On the 1st day of January, 1781, fifteen hundred of the Pennsylvania Line, driven by want, paraded under arms and refused to obey orders. General Wayne rode out to meet them, but when he drew his pistols on the boldest he was encircled by a forest of bayonets pointed at his breast. "We respect you, General, we love you," said these men of his own State, "but you are a dead man if you fire. Do not mistake us, we are not going to the enemy; on the contrary, were they to come out you should see us fight under you with as much resolution and alacrity as ever: but we wish a redress of grievances and will no longer be trifled with." Congress finally made satisfactory arrangements with these neglected men. They showed that they were really patriots by their treatment of some emissaries whom Clinton sent to win them over to the English side. They gave them all up to the commanding general, and with great satisfaction saw them hanged.

General Arnold, who had sailed from Sandy Hook on the 19th of December, on the 30th entered Hampton Roads. No provision had been made by Virginia, to meet a sudden invasion. So Arnold sailed up the James, with twelve hundred men in boats, convoyed by the Hope and Swift, two small armed vessels. A battery at Hood's Point, checked them during the night of January 3, 1781. The next day, Arnold landed at Westover, and marched on Richmond. Governor Jefferson removed the archives and called out the militia, but only a few parties assembled, and these fled before Arnold without

making any resistance. The renegade entered the city, and after destroying the foundry, public stores, and some government papers at Westham, set fire to many of the public and private buildings in Richmond. He then retired as rapidly as he had come. As the forces could be organized, he was pursued, but Arnold succeeded in reaching Portsmouth, opposite Norfolk. Here he was nearly caught, for the Eveillé, a French man-of-war, with two large frigates, under de Tilly, from Newport, entered the Chesapeake, but they were not able to reach Portsmouth, one of the frigates having actually got aground in the attempt. Anxious to secure the traitor, Washington proceeded to Newport, and concerted with Rochambeau a movement of the French fleet and army against him. Admiral Destouches accordingly sailed, followed by the British admiral, Arbuthnot, who managed to intercept the French fleet at the entrance of Chesapeake Bay. A naval battle ensued, but without a victory on either side. Arbuthnot, however, effected his object, for Destouches sailed back to Newport, leaving Arnold safe at Portsmouth, to be watched by the Virginia militia, under Baron Steuben.

The English commander-in-chief, seeing the ease with which Arnold had reached Richmond, resolved to reinforce him, so as to scourge Virginia like the more southerly colonies.

In March, General Phillips was sent to the Chesapeake, with two thousand men, and being Arnold's superior in rank, took command of the whole English force in Virginia.

He at once began a course of plunder and destruction. He swept through the peninsula between the York and James, destroying all the public stores and tobacco. He then entered Petersburg, where he destroyed immense quantities of tobacco and all the vessels lying in the

river. Chesterfield Court-House and Manchester experienced the same fate.

To relieve the State from the destructive inroads, Washington detached General Lafayette, with part of the Northern army, and that commander entered Richmond just before Phillips entered Manchester, which lies opposite Richmond, on the James. The English general, finding that he had an army to confront, retreated down the river.

When General Greene took command of the Southern army, he sent Morgan to watch the enemy, while he himself strained every nerve to restore and reorganize the shattered army confided to him. Morgan had played his part well. By the sudden dash of his cavalry, under Colonel Washington, at the Tories, near Ninety-Six, whom he surprised and slaughtered almost to a man, he struck terror through the Tories, and gave hope to the patriots. Cornwallis, anxiously awaiting reinforcements, had resolved to make no movement till they came, but he saw the necessity of crushing Morgan. So Tarleton was soon in the saddle with a thousand men. He advanced with his usual rapidity, crossing the Ennoree and Tiger. Morgan fell back towards the Broad, but as Cornwallis was advancing on his rear, he resolved to make a stand at Cowpens, in Spartanburg District, about three miles south of the North Carolina line. Here, on some small ridges covered with heavy red-oak and hickory, Morgan drew up his army; the militia of the Carolinas, under General Andrew Pickens, were the first line. In the second stood John Eager Howard, with Virginia veterans and Continentals, completely concealed by the wood; Washington's cavalry, with some Carolina mounted men, being in reserve. Morgan renewed their courage and confidence by a stirring speech, and awaited the attack. Tarleton drove in the American light troops in order to recon-

noitre Morgan's position, then formed his line, with the light infantry on the right, his own legion in the centre, and the Seventh regiment on the left. Then, at the head of his first line, he dashed upon Pickens. The militia stood firm as a rock, and when the enemy were within forty or fifty yards, poured in a well-directed volley. Tarleton's line was staggered, but kept on; then Pickens fell back, firing steadily, and formed behind the second line.

Supposing the victory won, Tarleton, with his usual impetuosity rushed forward, hoping to make short work of the second line, directing his cavalry to attack the American left. But as the British horse advanced, a furious volley from Morgan's reserve emptied many a saddle and threw them into confusion, while Washington's cavalry swept down upon them, and the American sabre clashed on the legion helmets with a hearty good-will. The spell was broken, Tarleton's cavalry, so long a terror, were driven back with terrible loss in men and still greater in prestige.

Tarleton himself found his charge met by Howard's stern line. The fight was furious and deadly, but neither could move the other. Then Tarleton brought up his reserve, a regular regiment, the Seventy-First, and with them on one side and the cavalry on the other, again charged the stubborn American line, that gave him such trouble as he had never had before. Howard, perceiving that his flanks would be turned, formed to receive them; but as some confusion ensued, General Morgan ordered the whole line to fall back.

Seeing this movement, Tarleton thought they were giving way, and rushed forward in pursuit so madly that his lines were broken. Then Morgan's voice rang out. His line halted, faced about, and hurled into the disordered English masses such a withering volley that it was

staggered, confused, and began to retreat. Then Howard's Continentals, fixing bayonets, charged in a solid mass, and the British column was sent whirling back in utter disorder. In vain Tarleton's cavalry tried to cover the retreat; Washington was upon them, and again the British horse fled.

Tarleton escaped with forty of these cavalry, and some more subsequently reached Cornwallis' camp; his infantry was almost entirely killed or taken, with his cannon, arms, wagons, and colors. On this bloody day the English had almost as many officers killed as Morgan had men; Morgan's killed and wounded being only seventy-two, while Tarleton's loss was two hundred and thirty-nine killed and wounded, and five hundred prisoners. Cornwallis, dismayed at a result so utterly unexpected, acted with decision; he destroyed his baggage and heavy stores, retaining only what was absolutely necessary, and started in pursuit of Morgan.

That general, anticipating such a movement, left the wounded prisoners at Cowpens with surgeons, and that evening crossed the Broad, beginning a retreat which is one of the most famous in history.

The fords of the Catawba was the point that he must reach. Cornwallis, actually nearer to it, was pressing on to intercept him. On the evening of January 28th, Morgan reached Sherrard's Ford, and the next day the militia passed it with his prisoners, Morgan himself in the rear, with his Continentals and cavalry. Two hours later the British van reached the southern bank. It was too late to cross that night, but before morning heavy rains made the ford impassable, and there Cornwallis was forced to remain for three days, waiting for the waters to subside.

Morgan sent forward his prisoners and captured stores and arms,

and then, with the Mecklenburg and Rowan militia, under General Davidson, who had rallied to his aid, prepared to check Cornwallis. Greene himself, leaving his main army under the command of General Huger, hastened to Morgan's camp and took command. Cornwallis at last resolved to force a passage at McCowan's ford. Here General Davidson was posted. As the English column was approaching the militia gave them a volley, but the English, avoiding their position, moved farther up, and some, reaching land, formed and replied. Davidson kept up his fire on those in the water and on land, killing the highest English officer on the shore and unhorsing Lord Cornwallis, who was still crossing. But the militia could not alone hold out against the British force, and while retreating in a masterly manner, General Davidson was shot through the heart.

General Greene on this resumed the retreat, anxious and harassed as to his future plans, and in great distress for money. Alighting one day, wet with rain, at the door of a hotel kept by Mrs. Steele, Greene told Dr. Reed, who greeted him on the porch, that he was tired out, hungry, and penniless. He sat gloomily down by the table in a room to which he was shown, to await some refreshments. Instead of these the landlady, who had overheard his remark, came in bearing two small bags of specie, the savings of years, and handing them to the general, she exclaimed: "Take these, General, you need them; I can do without them." Such was the spirit of the undaunted women of the South, ready to sacrifice everything for the cause of freedom. Small as the offering was, it met a pressing want, and was thankfully received by the General. His retreat was another race, the English pushing on in close pursuit, so that their van was often in sight of the American rear. Greene, however, crossed the Yadkin, on the night

between the 2d and 3d of February, after a sharp skirmish in which he lost a few of his wagons. But he secured all the boats to prevent Cornwallis from using them. The British commander reached the river too late to cross in the darkness. Again the opportunity slipped from his grasp. A night of storm swelled the river, so that daylight showed him the Americans beyond, and no ford or boats to reach them. From the English artillery, a furious cannonade was opened on the American camp, and directed especially against a small cabin among the rocks, in which General Greene had established his head-quarters. Here the American general was busy writing orders, dispatches, reports, indifferent to the cannonade, although the balls tore off boards from the frail structure.

Baffled, but not disheartened, Cornwallis marched up the river to seek a ford, and General Greene, released from immediate pursuit, pressed on.

On the 7th of February he formed a junction with the forces under Generals Huger and Williams, at Guilford Court-House, thus uniting all the army: but, till he received reinforcements, he did not wish to risk a battle with Cornwallis. So he still kept on towards the Dan. Cornwallis struck for the same point, both armies making daily most extraordinary marches, tasking the endurance of their men to the very utmost, without tents, with scant provisions, over wretched roads, and through heavy rains; the Americans, ragged and barefoot, marking their route by their blood.

Greene passed the Dan on the 14th, with his army, baggage, and stores, having safely effected his masterly retreat of more than two hundred miles.

Cornwallis, abandoning the pursuit, resolved to rouse the Tory spirit

in North Carolina, and sent Tarleton to the country between the Haw and Deep rivers, to encourage the adherents of the English cause.

To thwart these plans of Cornwallis, Greene detached Lieutenant-Colonel Lee and General Pickens, to gain the British front, and check any Tory movement. Getting on Tarleton's track, Lee pretended his party to be a reinforcement sent to that officer. Two scouts of a Tory party fell into the trap, and the whole body, some four hundred in number, under Colonel Pyle, were suddenly confronted by Lee and his men. They opened fire on the Americans, however, but the superior discipline of Lee's command made the struggle a short though bloody one. Nearly a hundred of the Tories were slain on the spot, and almost every survivor wounded, without the loss of an American on Lee's side. Tarleton was only a mile off, but when some of the survivors of Pyle's party came dashing into his line wild with terror, their exaggerated accounts so alarmed him that he recrossed the Haw in hot haste, and did not draw bridle till he reached Hillsborough, cutting down on the way a Tory party hastening to join him, as nothing could convince him that they were not Lee's troopers in disguise.

In a few days after this blow, Greene, who did not believe in letting things stagnate, moved on the enemy, recrossing the Dan into North Carolina. Cornwallis at once retreated from Hillsborough. Greene followed him up, and hovering around Troublesome Creek, made himself very troublesome to his Lordship, moving in one direction one day, in another the next, scouring the country with his light troops, and perplexing him beyond measure, while it gave his own men confidence and courage, and lessened their respect for their antagonists. So high had Greene brought up the spirit of his men, that a small detachment at Wetzell's mill held at bay for a considerable time the very flower

of the British force. At last Cornwallis took post on the Alamance, and here Greene, who had received reinforcements from Virginia and North Carolina, resolved to give him battle, and advanced to Guilford Court-House. Cornwallis, seeing his object, sent off his baggage and stores under a strong guard, and moved out to meet General Greene on the way, or attack him in his encampment.

Tarleton, supported by a brigade of the Guards, led the British line, but had not gone far before they were confronted by Lee, who opened by some irregular skirmishing, then suddenly made a furious dash, cut to pieces a section of the British dragoons, and drove the remainder in upon the Guards, whom Lee next attacked, inflicting severe loss, sweeping all before him, till Cornwallis ordered up a fresh regiment, the Welsh Fusileers. Then Lee fell back, and Cornwallis pushed on till he came in sight of Greene. The American general was drawn up on a large hill surrounded by other hills, most of them still covered by woods, with dense undergrowth. His first line, occupying the edge of the wood and two cleared fields, consisted of North Carolina militia, under Generals Eaton and Butler. The second line in the wood comprised Stevens' and Lawson's Virginia militia, while in a third, on a hill, were stationed the Continental troops of the Maryland and Virginia line.

Cornwallis drew up his army, and about one o'clock moved forward with steadiness and composure upon the American forces. Greene's first line opened an irregular fire, but when the British replied with a steady volley, and charged with fixed bayonets, the militia turned and fled through the second line. There the Virginia militia stood firm, while Lee on their left, and Colonel Washington on the right, so galled the enemy that he had to call up his reserves. For a time this brave

body of militia contended for victory with the best troops and ablest officers in the British service, but at last it was forced to yield, and, retiring, formed again behind the Continentals; though Campbell's rifles and the Legion infantry still held their ground.

The first attack of the enemy was steadily repulsed by the sturdy Continentals, but when other English troops came up, the second Maryland broke before the charge of the guards and grenadiers who pursued them, till Colonel Gurley, with his veteran Marylanders, whom the English had not seen, wheeled, and taking the British in the flank, opened a destructive fire. The British, surprised at this unexpected attack, met it with great resolution. A fierce conflict ensued. Smallwood's veteran Marylanders, who had met the English at Brooklyn, Chatterton Hill, Germantown, Camden, and Cowpens, were full of ardor to achieve honor and fame. The English Lieutenant-Colonel Stewart fell by the hand of Captain Smith, of the Maryland line. The fall of their brave commander disheartened the Guards, they began to waver, when Colonel Washington's horse dashed down on them, and, Colonel Howard ordering a charge of bayonets, the Guards were almost annihilated. Americans and fugitives, in almost an inextricable mass, came rolling towards Lord Cornwallis, who, massing his artillery, opened a furious fire on friend and foe.

Howard's own regiment, meanwhile, was again attacked by Webster and O'Hara with all the troops they could gather: and still farther off, Campbell's militia was holding the Hessians at bay.

Greene felt that he had done enough, and ordered a retreat, which he effected without loss, though pursued by the British reserve.

The battle of Guilford Court-House was well fought, and creditable alike to both generals. It was a victory to Cornwallis, but a victory

that cost him one-third of his army, and such a victory that another like it would sweep his whole army away. From pursuers the English became a retreating force, Cornwallis retiring so rapidly from the field he had just won, that he left nearly a hundred wounded on the field.

Among his trophies were two six-pounders, captured from Burgoyne at Saratoga, recovered by Cornwallis from Gates at Camden, recaptured by Morgan at Cowpens, and now again fallen into English hands.

This battle was the first step in the movements which terminated in the overthrow of English power. Greene, beaten in the field, was now pursuing the triumphant victor.

Cornwallis, retreating rapidly, reached Wilmington. Greene on the 5th of April resolved on a new course, and instead of following up Cornwallis, resolved to attack Lord Rawdon at Camden. This left Cornwallis in perplexity. Should he pursue Greene, or make his way to Virginia and leave Rawdon to fight it out? He settled the question by marching to Petersburg in Virginia, where, on the 25th of May, he took command of all the British forces in that State.

Greene moved rapidly down on Camden, but found Rawdon too strongly posted to justify an attack. Learning, however, that Colonel Watson was approaching the English general with reinforcements, he resolved to intercept him. Sending off his heavy artillery and baggage, he moved with celerity, and taking a good position awaited Watson. Finding that he did not come, he returned to Hobkirk's Hill. There Rawdon suddenly attacked him. Greene drew up his army skillfully, and had flanked Rawdon on both sides and was crushing him with his main body, when a panic arose in one of his best regiments, the 1st Maryland. It spread to others, and Greene saw the victory he had all but won slip from his grasp. He retreated to Saunder's



PAULDING, VAN WART, AND WILLIAMS CAPTURING MAJOR ANDRÉ (Page 541)

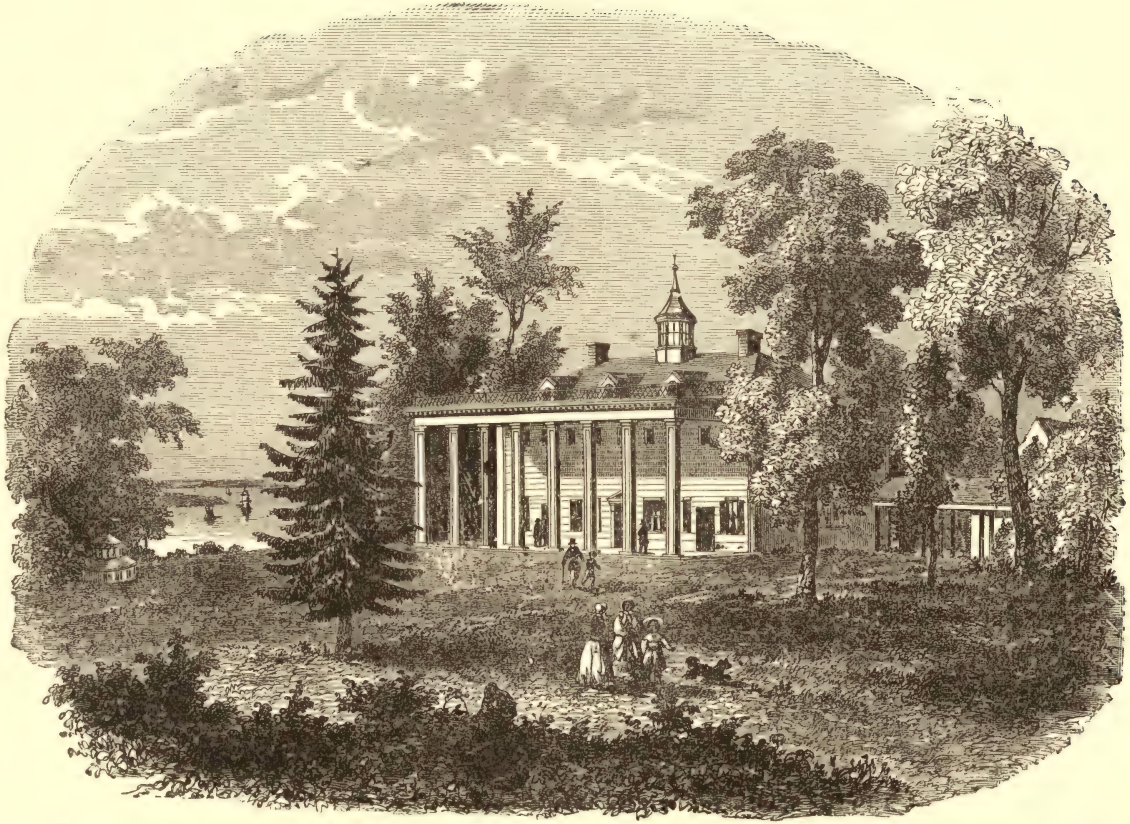


GRACE AND RACHEL MARTIN ARRESTING TWO ENGLISH OFFICERS.

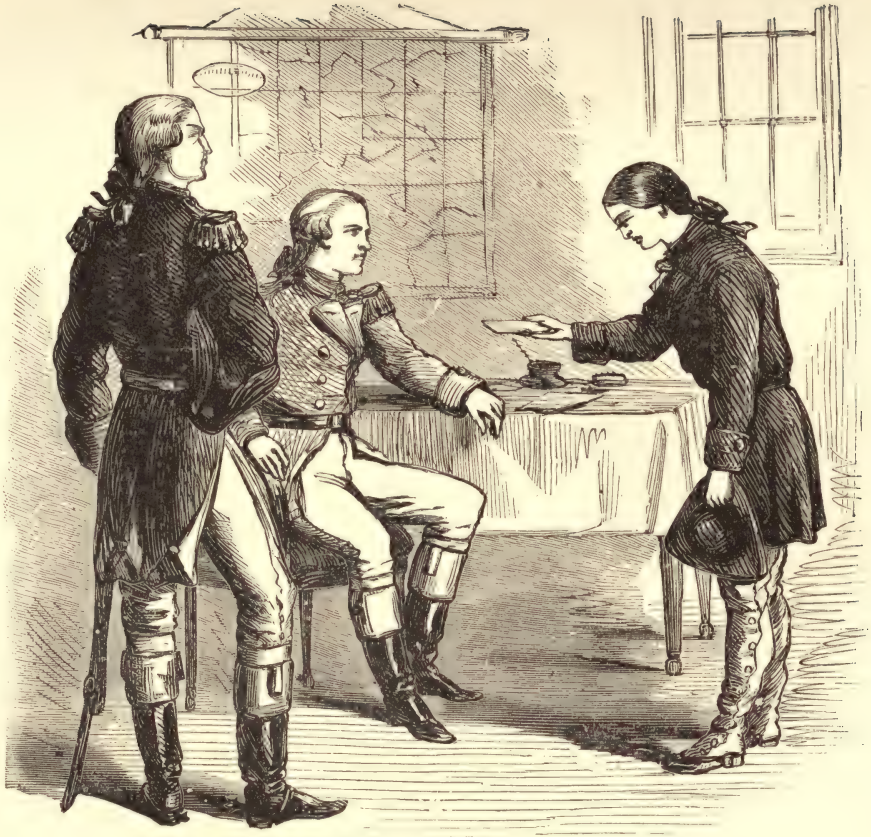
(Page 557)



REJOICINGS AT FANEUIL HALL, BOSTON, AT THE CLOSE OF THE REVOLUTION.

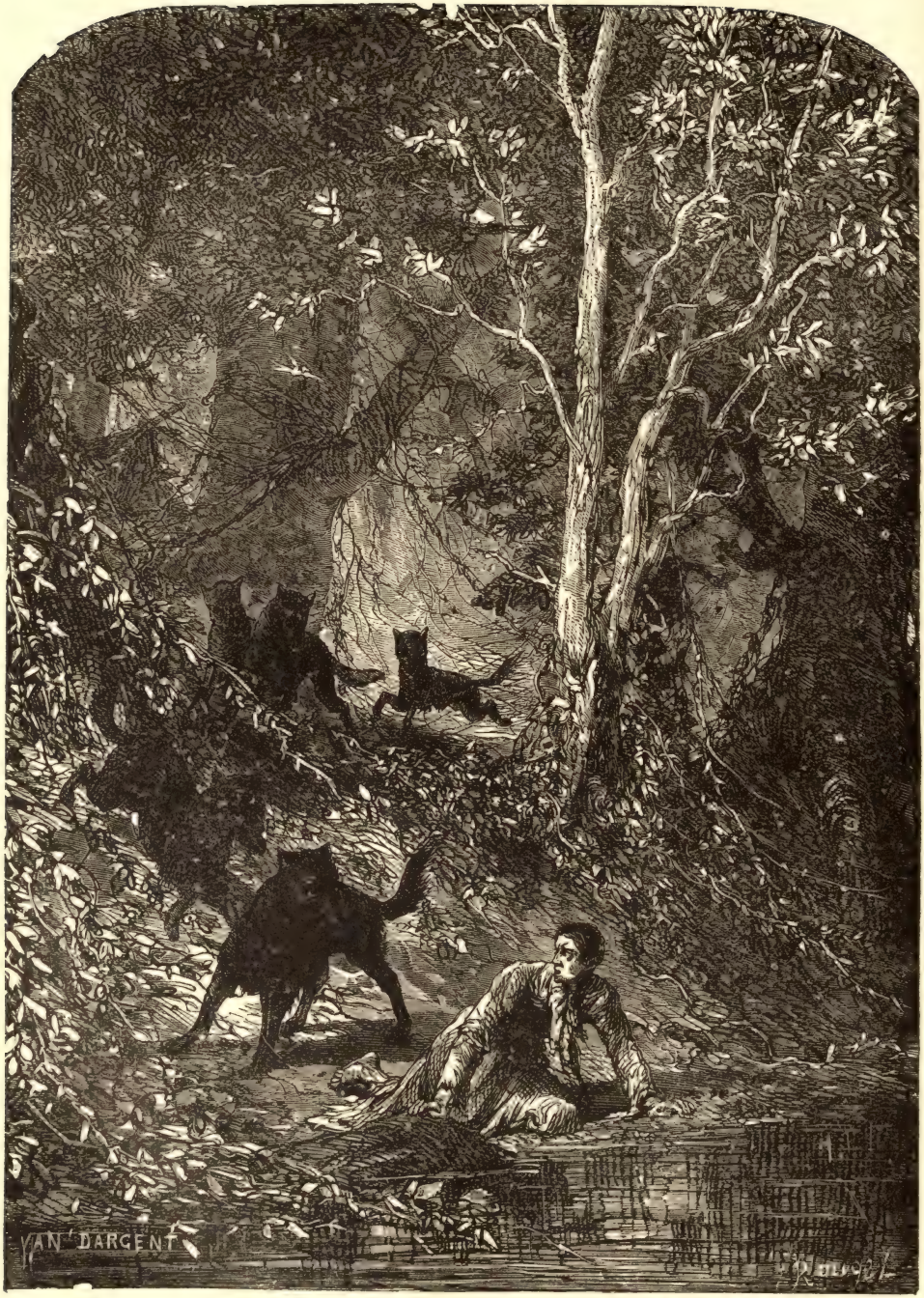


MOUNT VERNON, THE RESIDENCE OF GENERAL WASHINGTON (Page 570)



DEBORAH SIMPSON PRESENTING THE LETTER TO GENERAL WASHINGTON.

(Page 571)



AN ESCAPE FROM INDIANS DURING THE MIAMI WAR. (Page 587)



CAPTURE OF AN ALGERINE CORSAIR.

(Page 591)



COMMODORE PERRY AT THE BATTLE OF LAKE ERIE.—FROM THE PAINTING BY POWELL.

(Page 632)

Creek, Colonel Washington covering his march, and finally driving the enemy's pursuing corps back to Camden.

Lord Rawdon had won the day after a hard fight, but that was all. He had lost more than a fourth of his men, and reaped no benefit. Watson did at last reach Rawdon, after being constantly harassed and attacked by Marion, who, with Lee, on April 23d, captured Fort Watson, a strong stockade, with its garrison of a hundred and fourteen men. When Watson finally reached Camden, Rawdon marched out to attack Greene ; but the position of the American general looked too strong, and remembering Hobkirk's Hill he fell back to Camden, and, setting fire to all the public buildings in the place, he retreated towards Charleston, to the terror and dismay of the Tories who had joined him, but now beheld themselves left to the vengeance of the patriots whom they had oppressed.

The English posts were everywhere assailed, and a general alarm prevailed. Augusta was besieged, and General Pickens was soon there to command the operations ; Marion was hammering away at Georgetown, Sumter menaced Orangeburg, and Greene himself was assailing Ninety-Six, a place so called in early times because it was ninety-six miles from there to the Cherokee country.

Everywhere the patriots were exulting, and even women felt eager to show their love of country. Grace and Rachel Martin, two young married ladies whose husbands were in the field, heard that an English courier, escorted by two British officers, would pass near their place with important dispatches. Arrayed in their husbands' clothes and fully armed, they lay in wait in the woods, and as the three horsemen came galloping on they sprang from the bushes, and presenting their pistols, demanded the surrender of the party and their dispatch-

es. Taken utterly by surprise the officers submitted, gave up the papers, but were allowed to depart on parole. Their captors vanished at once in the woods, and reaching their home resumed their own dresses, after dispatching the documents to General Greene. They had scarcely done so when a knock sounded at the door; the English officers, returning to their starting-point, had stopped at this house to ask accommodation for the night. The ladies, whom the officers did not at all suspect, drew the story out of them, and then rallied them on being captured by a couple of lads. "Had you no arms?" asked one of the ladies with a merry laugh. "Yes!" they replied, "but we were taken off our guard and had no time to draw them." It was all the daring heroines could do to play the part of hostesses without betraying themselves; but the two officers rode off next day, without the least idea that the two fair ladies who had entertained them had been the daring rebels in the wood.

Fort Motte, the house of the patriotic Mrs. Rebecca Motte, which the British had seized and surrounded by a stockade and other works, was now an important point in the English line of forts. It was garrisoned by a hundred and fifty infantry, and some cavalry, under Lieutenant McPherson. Marion and Lee, after their movements against Watson, invested Fort Motte. They pushed on the works vigorously and demanded a surrender. McPherson refused, and news soon came that Rawdon was approaching on his retreat from Camden.

There seemed no way to reduce them in time except by firing the house. This the American commanders were reluctant to do, as Mrs. Motte was a widow who had suffered greatly for the cause. When she heard of their hesitation, she at once told them she was gratified with the opportunity of contributing to her country's good, and herself

brought a fine bow and arrow which had come from India, to enable them to send fiery shafts into the roof of her own home. When the English again refused to surrender, the arrows were discharged. The roof was soon in a blaze, and the garrison prevented by a field-piece from all attempts to extinguish the fire. Then McPherson hung out the white flag and surrendered.

Augusta was besieged by General Pickens and Colonel Lee, after the latter had by a splendid dash captured Fort Galphin, where the English had all their presents for the Indians in their interest—blankets, ammunition, and other articles greatly needed by the Americans. Of the two forts at Augusta, one, Fort Grierson, manned by a small body of Georgia Tory militia, was soon attacked, and the men, abandoning the works, were nearly all killed or taken in the attempt to reach Fort Cornwallis. That was a larger and stronger work, held by nearly six hundred men, Tories, Creeks, and Cherokees, under Lieutenant-Colonel Browne, an officer of great ability. A long and obstinate siege followed. The Americans had to construct towers to command the enemy's works, while Browne, by sorties, mines, and every artifice skill could command endeavored to baffle them. He was ever on the alert, and no sooner did he detect a weak point in the American line than he hurled a mass of men upon it. But his assailants were sturdy men. In this siege occurred a rare scene in war, a charge of bayonets met and repulsed. At last, on the 6th of June, Browne surrendered, after having sustained very heavy loss.

One English post after another was thus swept away, and Lord Rawdon, who had fallen back to Monk's Corner, was utterly unable to save them. His only hope was that reinforcements might arrive in time to enable him to regain lost ground. But on the 21st of May,

Ninety-Six was invested by General Greene. It had been fortified by the best English engineers, and was garrisoned by the very pick of Northern and Southern Tories. Kosciusko, as engineer, directed the works of the besiegers, which were steadily pushed forward, as the Tory commander, Cruger, refused to surrender. Lord Rawdon had received the reinforcements he had been looking for so wistfully, and early in June marched to raise the siege of Ninety-Six. Greene sent off Marion, Pickens, and Sumter, to hold him in check, and redoubled his exertions to reduce the place. He cut off the garrison from water, set fire to the buildings, and at last, on the 18th, made a general assault. One of his columns entered the fort, but another was repulsed with severe loss. He therefore abandoned the siege and drew off, as Rawdon, who had eluded Generals Sumter and Marion, was rapidly approaching. The English general pursued him, but soon after, falling back to Ninety-Six, evacuated that post and, followed by a herd of Tories with their families and property, marched toward the Congaree to meet detachments from Charleston. General Greene at once turned back to cut him off, and Lord Rawdon retreated to Orangeburg. Greene, who had been joined by Sumter and Marion, marched on that place, but finding it too strong to assail safely, contented himself with cutting off Rawdon's communications, by means of the partisan officers and cavalry.

Greene's activity, skill, and perseverance gave the English no rest. Rawdon's health failed and he returned to England, leaving Colonel Stewart in command. It was a great advantage to General Greene to have no longer before him the able general who had watched and baffled him. After resting his troops on the high hills of the Santee, he moved down late in August to attack the enemy, who were posted

at Eutaw Springs, about sixty miles from Charleston. Stewart, utterly unaware of Greene's approach, had sent out a large detachment to dig sweet potatoes in the plantations, and these were all captured. When a party of his cavalry were driven in, he drew up his army to receive the attack. The Americans cautiously approached, but attacked with vigor. The battle soon became warm, and the Americans were pressing the enemy steadily, when Stewart, bringing up his reserve, charged furiously, and Malmedy's North Carolina regiment was forced back. Fresh troops of that State were promptly pushed forward. Fiercer than ever raged the battle; Stewart fought with skill and valor, and gathering all his strength charged so furiously that again the American line was broken. Then General Greene moved up the Virginia and Maryland brigades. With a hearty shout they charged with fixed bayonets, while the Legion and State troops on the wings, who had steadily held their own, pressed forward, and, Lee turning the enemy's flank, Stewart was driven from the field. Major Majoribanks on the English left alone held his ground, and he repulsed and captured Colonel Washington, who attempted to cut him off.

Greene's army now poured into the English camp, and broke into disorder to plunder the tents, which were all standing. Liquor passed freely around, and a scene of revelry ensued. While a party of Tories held the other troops in check at a large brick mansion, Major Coffin repulsed the American cavalry, and dashed into the camp, cutting down the drunken rabble. Colonel Hampton, of South Carolina, however, came up, and a desperate cavalry fight ensued in the camp, till the English horse at last broke and fled, pursued by the Americans. At the stone house they were compelled to fall back, and Majoribanks wrested their cannon from them.

Thus, in this strange battle, the success seemed to waver, but Stewart was utterly beaten. Leaving his wounded, he retreated as rapidly as possible to Charleston, with Marion and Lee hanging on his rear, cutting off every small party that left the main body.

General Greene returned to the High Hills of the Santee. This important victory crowned the glory of General Greene. The people looked up to him as, next to Washington, their greatest general. Congress voted its thanks and a gold medal to the hero of Eutaw Springs.

Among the gallant men who fell on that well-fought field, Lieutenant-Colonel Campbell, of Virginia, deserves to be remembered. While leading the charge that won the day, he fell mortally wounded, and as he was borne off, asked who gave way. When told that the British were fleeing at all points, he replied: "I die contented!" and immediately expired.

The retreat of Stewart filled the British and their adherents with such alarm that many posts were abandoned, and the public stores burnt. At Charleston, the gates were closed, and negroes were driven out in gangs to fell trees, and impede progress by the road on the Neck.

The battle of Eutaw Springs, crowning the cautious policy of Greene, closed the war in South Carolina. At the commencement of the year, that State lay at the mercy of the invaders, completely overrun by their troops, who held it in a grasp of iron by their series of strong posts. At its close, the English were cooped up in Charleston, and durst not venture twenty miles from the city. In November, Greene moved down, and completely hemmed them in. Then General Pickens marched to chastise the Cherokees, for having taken up arms for the King. They were vanquished, and compelled to purchase a peace by the cession of lands.

Cornwallis, never dreaming of any such result, but sure that Rawdon would be able to hold his own, had entered Virginia, and with reinforcements sent by Sir Henry Clinton, and the troops already there, whose command also devolved on him by the death of General Phillips, felt that he could ravage Virginia, as he had the more southerly States. Lafayette had an army of one thousand Continentals, twice as many militia, and a cavalry force of sixty dragoons. Lord Cornwallis laughed at this army, and in high glee wrote to England: "The boy cannot escape me!" He found, however, that Lafayette, young as he was, was a shrewd and cautious general, and avoided an action, yet hung near him so that he could not divide his force. He once attempted to surprise Lafayette, but the Marquis, by getting a bold Jersey soldier, Charley Morgan, to desert to the enemy, contrived so to mislead and outwit Lord Cornwallis, that he escaped the danger.

Cornwallis entered Richmond in June, but, according to orders from Sir Henry Clinton, moved down to Williamsburg. From that point he sent out parties to drive in cattle, but Lafayette was on the watch, and one party got a pretty rough handling at Spencer's Ordinary. Tarleton, however, dispatched against Charlotteville, moved with his usual celerity, seized a number of the principal men of Virginia, assembled there in convention, as well as a considerable quantity of military stores and provisions. The great object of the raid was to secure the person of the author of the Declaration of Independence, Thomas Jefferson; he not only escaped, but saved a large part of the arms and ammunition. Simcoe, sent against Baron Steuben, forced that general to retreat in haste.

Cornwallis now crossed the James, and Lafayette, intending to attack his rear, came upon him at Jamestown Ford, on the 6th of July. His

cavalry, supported by the rifles, made a vigorous onset, but Cornwallis, prepared for such a movement, faced about, and his brigade of veterans, with Hessians, light troops, and artillery, moved in splendid array upon the American light troops. But the little corps held their own, and received the English veterans with perfect coolness, keeping up a steady fire till they were crowded back by overwhelming numbers towards a dense wood. There, unknown to the English, stood Wayne of Stony Point, with a small body of Continentals. Allowing the light troops to fall past his corps, pursued by part of the British force, he gave the word. Without firing a shot he charged with fixed bayonets on Cornwallis's line. The English, astonished at this sudden attack, attempted to hold their ground, but Wayne, after forcing them back slightly, coolly withdrew his men, and retired half a mile. Here Lafayette rallied his somewhat scattered force ; and Cornwallis, supposing from the boldness of the whole movement that it was a feint to draw him into a trap, made no attempt to pursue him, but crossed over to Jamestown Island before morning, with evident haste.

Clinton had called for part of his men, and Cornwallis was hastening to Portsmouth, to ship them to New York, when new orders came. Clinton had just received three thousand Hessians from Europe, so that Cornwallis was to hold what he had. A proper place for a permanent camp was the next consideration. Portsmouth did not suit, Point Comfort was talked of, but Cornwallis finally decided on Yorktown, on the York river, with the village of Gloucester opposite. The water was deep, so that the vessels of the royal navy could reach it safely. It was a place easily defended, open to the sea, so that the troops could easily embark for any further operations or to retreat.

Meanwhile, Washington was again concerting with the French naval

and military commanders, a grand movement by land and sea. He had set his heart on the capture of New York, the centre of the British power. De Grasse, the best of the French admirals yet seen in American waters, was in the West Indies with a very large fleet, and would soon be on the coast of the United States. So Rochambeau marched from Rhode Island with the French army, and joined Washington on the Hudson, while the advance of the American army, under General Lincoln, began to move down that river, and a vast number of flat-bottomed boats came down from Albany to convey the troops. Clinton called in all his outposts, and began to fortify his position on New York Island, to sustain a vigorous siege.

Washington's call for troops had been, as usual, disregarded. He had not actually men enough to besiege New York, and worst of all, tidings came that De Grasse was sailing to the Chesapeake, not to New York.

To make the best of the case, Washington now resolved to move rapidly down, and by the aid of the French fleet capture Lord Cornwallis. Sir Henry Clinton saw his movement, but thought it merely a trick to draw him out of New York, so he kept on fortifying his position. All Washington's movements confirmed his delusion. A bold push was made at Kingsbridge, men were busy at boats and ovens, till the combined armies were beyond his reach. On the 30th of August they entered Philadelphia. The Count de Grasse was the same day at the mouth of the Chesapeake, and at once in communication with Lafayette and Washington. His light vessels ran up the Chesapeake to the Head of Elk, to which Washington and Rochambeau pressed on with all speed. Everything worked like a charm. On the 25th of September the last division reached Williamsburg, and Lafayette's

force encamped there was united to that under Washington and Rochambeau.

Sir Henry Clinton was now awakened to a sense of danger. He had kept Admiral Graves to resist the French fleet at New York. Now that Graves was joined by Hood, from the West Indies, he sailed down to attack de Grasse. As he came in sight, the French admiral, covering the entrance to the Chesapeake, so that Graves should not slip in, formed to receive him. A sharp action ensued. De Grasse, well supported by Vaudreuil, a Canadian, and Bougainville, an old aide-de-camp of Montcalm, handled the British admiral so roughly that he gave up all hopes of reaching Cornwallis, or injuring the French fleet, and sailed back to New York. French troops were landed from the fleet, and de Barras came up with his squadron from Newport, bearing the heavy French siege guns.

On the 28th of September the allied army was in motion, and took up a position within two miles of Cornwallis's line. The Americans were on the left, the French on the right; across the river, the British, at Gloucester, were surrounded on the land side by a French force under de Choisy and General Weedon's Virginia militia.

Cornwallis, cheered by encouraging letters from Sir Henry Clinton promising speedy relief with a force of five thousand men, prepared to hold out.

The besiegers pushed on their operations, narrowing in their lines around Yorktown. Continual skirmishes went on, till, on the night of October 6th, General Lincoln opened his trenches within six hundred yards of the English works. Cornwallis, on discovering it the next day, made a desperate attack on the French troops holding the trenches, but the Baron Viosmenil repulsed the English attack.

On the 9th, the siege guns were all in position, and Washington in

person fired the first cannon from the American line. The French also opened fire. So fiercely did this artillery play on the English works, that they withdrew their cannon from the embrasures, and scarcely fired a shot in reply. Nor was it the enemy's works only that suffered. Their shipping was cut up, the frigate Charon and three transports were set on fire, and totally destroyed.

The English resumed their fire with vigor, and two redoubts in front of their left gave so much annoyance that on the evening of the 14th they were both attacked. A column of American light infantry, under General Lafayette, moved upon the redoubt on the right; a column under Baron de Viosmenil, of French grenadiers and chasseurs, assaulted that on the left.

By the pale light, the assaulting parties moved gallantly up without firing a shot; over the abattis and palisades they poured, without wavering under the steady English fire. Both redoubts were carried almost simultaneously, the French losing nearly a hundred men, and capturing a larger English body. These works were at once used by the besiegers, and Cornwallis was completely covered by the heavy cannon directed from all sides.

Yet he did not despair. Clinton's promised aid did not appear, but he resolved to leave his sick and wounded in his camp, cross over to Gloucester, and cut his way through to New York. He actually began to carry out his scheme. Two divisions of his army had reached Gloucester, when a terrible storm arose. Day revealed his project. Under a heavy fire, he fell back to his works at Yorktown. All hope was gone. On the 17th, he opened negotiations. Two days after, the posts of Yorktown and Gloucester were surrendered to the allied French and American forces.

This English army, which had destroyed fifteen millions of dollars worth of property in Virginia, and which numbered seven thousand men, became prisoners of war. General Lincoln, who had surrendered to Cornwallis at Charleston, was appointed to receive his sword.

As rapidly as news could spread, the tidings of this great success ran through the country. It reached Philadelphia by night, and the watchmen, calling out the hour, as was the custom, shouted out: "Cornwallis has surrendered."

The great blow of the war had been struck. Clinton sailed from New York the very day Cornwallis surrendered. He returned in all haste, and Washington, after dispatching two thousand men to reinforce General Greene, moved up to watch Clinton, and prevent any further barbarous expeditions like that just conducted by Arnold against New London. At that place, Fort Griswold was ably defended by Colonel Ledyard. When at last overpowered, he surrendered; the British officer on entering cried: "Who commands this fort?" "I did," replied Colonel Ledyard, "but you do now," at the same time presenting his sword. The brutal officer seized it and plunged it into his heart. Then followed an indiscriminate massacre of the Americans. The bloodthirsty marauders, after pillaging and firing the town, retired.

Some minor hostilities occurred, but it was evident that the war was over. Parliament soon declared for peace. Negotiations were opened, and Sir Guy Carleton, who succeeded Sir Henry Clinton, in letters to Washington, announced that he had virtually suspended hostilities.

In the South, when General St. Clair joined General Greene, Wayne was sent to protect Georgia. The British general Clarke concentrated his forces at Savannah, but as Wayne was advancing to invest him, he was suddenly attacked by a strong force of Creeks, who showed

that they had acquired skill and discipline from the English. Wayne repulsed his savage assailants, and this closed the war in Georgia. Savannah surrendered in July, 1782.

Charleston alone remained in the hands of the enemy.

In December, Rochambeau's army, which had been in America two years and a half, and had contributed so well to the great result, embarked at Boston.

Washington took up his head-quarters at Newburg, New York, awaiting the termination of the long negotiations in Europe. At last, on the 30th of November, 1782, a provisional treaty of peace was signed at Paris, which was approved and ratified by Congress the next year.

The war of the Revolution was ended. America had declared her Independence, and in a seven years' war had established it.

The army, which had fought so nobly and patriotically, was in a state of suffering, with long arrears of pay due them ; with no homes, it might be said, to welcome them. There were even projects of making Washington a king, but he nobly repulsed all such offers, and by his temperate and wise counsels induced them to trust to the justice of Congress.

On the 19th of April, the cessation of hostilities was proclaimed in the camp.

On the 30th of November, after the final treaty of peace was signed (Sept. 3), the British evacuated New York city. Washington entered, as it were, in triumph, and on the 4th of December he took leave of his companions in arms, the generals who had been so closely connected with him during the long struggle. His emotions were too strong to be concealed. Filling a glass of wine, he turned to them and said : "With a heart full of love and gratitude I now take leave

of you. I most devoutly wish that your latter days may be as prosperous and happy as your former ones have been glorious and honorable." Each one then grasped in turn the hand of the Father of his Country, and in silence Washington and his generals parted.

The commander who had swayed the destinies of a continent, now modestly repaired to Congress, resigned his commission, and returned to private life at Mount Vernon, astonishing the world by this unwonted spectacle.

PART V.

THE REPUBLIC UNDER THE ARTICLES OF CONFEDERATION AND UNDER THE CONSTITUTION.

CHAPTER I.

The return to Peace—Articles of Confederation—Treaties with Foreign Countries—Indian Nations—Northwest Territory organized—A desire for a better Union—A Convention called—The new Constitution—It is accepted by eleven States—Close of the Continental Congress.

THE great struggle was over, peace once more reigned throughout America. The army which had so gallantly struggled on through every adversity was disbanded, and the soldiers had returned to their homes to engage once more in cultivating the soil, or exercising the various industries which contribute to a country's wealth. Washington, crowned with glory, regarded with admiration, not only by his own country, but in Europe, was in retirement at Mount Vernon, retaining none of the power he had so long wielded.

There was much to do, to enable the country to recover from the desolation of war.

Among the curious anecdotes of the struggle which now became public, one of the strangest was that of Deborah Sampson, a young woman of Plymouth, Massachusetts, who, disguised as a man, enlisted

in the army, in October, 1778. By her courage and fidelity as a soldier, she gained the approbation of the officers, and was always ready for the post of danger. She thus had many adventures, and did not escape unharmed, having received several wounds. At last a severe wound in the shoulder compelled her removal to an hospital, where a brain fever set in, and she was soon supposed to be dead. It was then for the first time seen that she was a woman. The physician in charge took her to his house, and gradually restored her to health. When she recovered, her commanding officer sent the young soldier to General Washington with a letter. The soldier feared that her secret had been discovered, and that the letter revealed it to the General-in-Chief. When she presented the letter, she trembled as she had never done on the field of battle. Washington allowed her to retire while he read the letter. He then recalled her, and without a word, handed her a discharge from the army, and a note containing some words of advice, and money enough to enable her to reach some place where she might make her home.

The United States, as recognized by the treaty of peace, embraced thirteen States, New Hampshire, Massachusetts, to which the District of Maine then belonged, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, which claimed Vermont, as New Hampshire did also, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, of which Kentucky formed part, North Carolina, which then included Tennessee, South Carolina, and Georgia, of which Alabama and Mississippi were then part. The Mississippi River was, except near the mouth, the western boundary, separating the new republic from the Spanish territory of Louisiana on the west. It was separated on the north from the British provinces, by the great lakes and the St. Lawrence, as far as St. Regis, from

which a line ran east to the bounds of Maine. Florida was still held by England, though it was soon after restored to Spain. The country northwest of the Ohio was the great Indian country, the only whites being a few of the old French settlers.

The country was governed by the Articles of Confederation, ratified in 1781, all the powers being vested in Congress, composed of delegates chosen by the various State governments. The President of Congress was the virtual head of the republic, the personal representative of the sovereignty of the Union, and the ceremonial of his household was regulated on that footing, those being days of great dignity in men holding high office. The Presidents of Congress from the commencement were Peyton Randolph, of Virginia, John Hancock, of Massachusetts, Henry Laurens, of South Carolina, John Jay, of New York, Samuel Huntington, of Connecticut, Thomas McKean, of Delaware, John Hanson, of Maryland, Elias Boudinot, of New Jersey, Thomas Mifflin, of Pennsylvania, Richard Henry Lee, of Virginia, Nathaniel Gorham, of Massachusetts, Arthur St. Clair, of Pennsylvania, and Cyrus Griffin, of Virginia.

But the government under the Articles of Confederation was found difficult. Congress could lay no tax or duty. On all important points it was necessary for a bill to have the votes of nine States before it could pass, and then at least two members from each State were required to vote. The heavy debt contracted during the war was still unsettled, and Congress could not induce the States to pay their several proportions. The army and the creditors of government were clamorous for money. The question of new States was urgent. Kentucky and Tennessee wished to be admitted as States, denying the authority of Virginia and North Carolina; Vermont was ready to join Canada,

if she was not recognized as a State. Still, with all its weakness, the new government made some progress. It concluded treaties with France, Russia, and Morocco, regulated the currency by adopting the silver dollar of Spain as a standard, dividing it into a hundred parts, called cents, thus establishing what is known as the decimal system, much easier to calculate than the old pounds, shillings, and pence. A mint was established in 1786, and copper coin were struck. The greatest act of this period, was the success of Congress in inducing the various States to give up all claim to the territory northwest of the Ohio, for which Congress, July 13, 1787, by a celebrated ordinance, established a regular government.

The poverty of the country was great. The States, urged by Congress, endeavored to raise means to pay off the army and other debts. The attempt to lay taxes caused great dissatisfaction. New England showed the greatest discontent. In December, 1786, a body of insurgents in Massachusetts, took the field to obtain a redress of grievances, and were led by Daniel Shays, who had been a captain in the Continental army. The Governor of Massachusetts issued a proclamation, calling on the insurgents to disband, and urging the officers and citizens of the commonwealth to suppress the treasonable work. But the insurgents stood firm, and held several counties. Massachusetts then applied to Congress, which raised a little army of one thousand three hundred and forty men, but Massachusetts herself called out the militia, and General Lincoln, at their head, marched against Shays, who was threatening Springfield, then, as now, a great arsenal. It had hardly been occupied by a part of the militia under General Shepard, before the insurgents attacked it. Lincoln acted with great energy and judgment, and without a battle, and very slight skir-

mishing, dispersed the insurgents, and drove their leaders from the State.

This, more perhaps than anything else, induced the States to yield to the advice of Congress, recommending a Federal Convention to prepare amendments to the Articles of Confederation. Virginia, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Georgia, North Carolina, New York, Massachusetts, South Carolina, Connecticut, New Jersey, Maryland, and New Hampshire, in succession appointed delegates to the Convention. On Friday, the 25th of May, twenty-nine delegates, representing nine States, organized the Convention at the State-House in Philadelphia. George Washington, who was present as a delegate from Virginia, was at once appointed President of the Convention. The delegates were, in general, men of the clearest mind and purest patriotism. All seemed to feel that it was necessary to remodel entirely the general government. On the 29th of May, Edward Randolph, of Virginia, laid before the Convention a scheme embracing a national legislature in two houses, a national executive to be chosen by the legislature, and a judiciary. This scheme led to violent debates, the smaller States insisting on equal representation in both Houses, while the larger States wished the representation to be in proportion to the population. The slave population was another difficulty. The small States wished whites only counted as population, while the larger States, with many slaves, wished all to be counted. The debates and discussion led to compromises on various points. At last, on the 6th of August, 1787, the committee appointed to embody the various points decided, reported, not any amendment of the old Articles, but a new Constitution. This was put into shape by Gouverneur Morris. By this Constitution, the national legislature preserved the name of Congress, so justly hon-

ored in America. The upper house was to be called a Senate, and composed of two members elected from each State, the lower house was to be called the House of Representatives, and to be composed of members elected by the people of the several States, each State to have one representative for every forty thousand inhabitants, or as it was finally made, at Washington's suggestion, thirty thousand ; a President was to be chosen every four years, by electors selected by the people ; Federal courts were to be established, with a judiciary, and the powers of each branch of the government were laid down with remarkable clearness.

The Constitution, as proposed by the Convention, was then submitted to Congress, to be laid before the States. By its terms, it provided that when ratified by nine States it should be put into force.

When the new Constitution was made public, it aroused a strong feeling of opposition. There was much in it that excited alarm, and seemed to menace that liberty which had just been purchased by the greatest sacrifices. Able papers were written in favor of the Constitution and against it. A series of articles called the Federalist, written by Hamilton, Madison, and Jay, earnestly supporting the Constitution, produced a great impression, and are still regarded as the best exposition of the Constitution, and as such are used in colleges as a text-book.

Gradually the soundest patriots prevailed. Delaware adopted the Constitution in December. Her course was followed by more important States, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Georgia, Connecticut, Massachusetts, Maryland, South Carolina, and New Hampshire. By the close of June, 1788, all these States had ratified it, making the nine required by the terms of the Constitution to establish it as the law of the land. These States did not, however, lie together ; the three great States of New York, Virginia, and North Carolina, broke the

other States into three groups. Virginia and New York were strongly opposed to it, unless certain amendments were made; but as it was now necessary to accept or reject it, enter the Union, or set up as independent republics, they at last reluctantly joined the rest. Of the thirteen States which had stood side by side from the commencement of the Revolutionary struggle, two only, North Carolina and Rhode Island, stood aloof. North Carolina gave only a conditional approval, while Rhode Island would not even call a convention to consider it.

The great work now before the country was to put the new scheme of government in operation. Preparations were at once made for elections in conformity with its provisions, for Representatives chosen by the people directly, for Senators chosen by the legislature of each State, and for presidential electors. All passed off with great harmony.

The Continental Congress now closed its labors, leaving all great questions for the action of the new government. It had organized Northwest Territory, which was governed by General St. Clair, who published a code of laws, and wisely encouraged immigration and colonization. Under the impulse thus given, Marietta arose, with settlements at the mouth of the Miami, and Losantiville was started, where Cincinnati now so proudly rears her head. Western New York was rapidly filling up with emigrants from the Eastern States. The Virginia emigrants in Kentucky felt that they needed a separate government, and applied for admission as a State, while the people of Western Carolina, in what is now Tennessee, set up the State of Frankland, which North Carolina, however, soon suppressed.

Such was the state of the country when the Continental Congress, having achieved its great work, the Independence of America, dissolved of itself.

CHAPTER II.

GEORGE WASHINGTON PRESIDENT 1789-1797—His Cabinet—Peace made with the Creeks and Cherokees—North Carolina and Rhode Island yield when treated as Foreign Countries—The National Debt—War with the Miamies and Western Tribes—Defeat of General Harmar—Bank of North America—Vermont and Kentucky admitted—St. Clair defeated by the Western Indians—Washington's Re-election—The French and their Ambassador, Genet—The Algerine Corsairs—Wayne overthrows the Indians and concludes a Peace—The Whisky Insurrection—Indian Boundaries—Treaty with Spain—Tennessee admitted—Washington's Farewell Address—He returns to Mount Vernon.

THE American people in adopting the Constitution looked to one man as alone capable of putting the government in operation. It seems a simple thing now, but it is one of the few cases in history where a government was set up and carried on successfully by the will of the people, and the only one where distinctions of rank did not exist, and a body of nobles control the destinies of the people. In our happy land all were equal, but all recognized the purity of character and rare abilities of George Washington.

The people felt the necessity of wise and prudent men, and the members of the first Congress included most of the eminent men of the time.

The new Congress was to meet on the 4th of March, but owing to the wretched state of the roads, and other delays, it was not until a month later that the two houses organized. Meanwhile, the electors chosen in the different States had met and transmitted to Congress, in New York, their votes for President. These were opened on the 6th of April. Sixty-nine votes had been given, and every one bore first the name of George Washington. He was thus unanimously elected President of the United States. Of the second vote cast by the electors, thirty-four were given for John Adams, who thus became

Vice-President. Official information was at once dispatched to the President and Vice-President elect, and preparations at once begun to inaugurate the new government with all possible solemnity. At the corner of Wall and Nassau streets stands a white marble building erected for a custom-house, but now used by the Treasury Department. Here in 1789 stood Federal Hall, which had been selected as the capitol. The merchants of New York city, with commendable public spirit, raised a large sum of money to put the building into such a state as to fit it for the reception of Congress.

Mr. Adams, escorted by a troop of horse, came on and, having been sworn into office, took his seat as President of the Senate. All now awaited the coming of Washington. The President elect felt great diffidence as to the step he was to take. He wrote to a friend in confidence, "I tell you that my movements to the chair of government will be accompanied by feelings not unlike those of a culprit who is going to the place of his execution ; so unwilling am I, in the evening of life, nearly consumed in public cares, to quit a peaceful abode for an ocean of difficulties, without that competency of political skill, abilities, and inclination, which are necessary to manage the helm."

But the confidence of the people in his wisdom and integrity reassured him. His journey from Mount Vernon to New York was like a triumphal procession. Every village, town, and city through which he passed, showed, by applause, by military honors, by addresses, by triumphal arches, their desire to do him honor. As he passed the bridge over the Schuylkill, a boy placed above dropped a civic crown of laurel on his head. But the celebration at Trenton was the most beautiful of all, and has never been forgotten. The ladies of that city, which he had so gallantly rescued from the Hessians, had erected

over the stream near the city, a beautiful triumphal arch. Amid flowers and laurels at the top were the words: DECEMBER 26th, 1776. On the curve of the arch stood out in bold gilt letters: "THE DEFENDER OF THE MOTHERS WILL BE THE PROTECTOR OF THE DAUGHTERS."

North of this were ranged thirteen beautiful girls, arrayed in white, with coronets of flowers, to represent the thirteen States. Behind stood all the ladies of the town. As soon as Washington arrived beneath the arch, the girls began to sing a beautiful ode composed for the occasion, and with the last lines:

"Strew, ye fair, his way with flowers,
Strew your hero's way with flowers,"

they scattered flowers from baskets in their hands, upon the path where the Father of his Country was to pass.

Washington was deeply moved by this beautiful and touching expression of gratitude.

The Governor of New Jersey escorted him to Elizabethtown Point, where a Committee of Congress was in waiting to receive him. Here, on the 23d of April, he embarked in an elegant barge of nineteen oars, manned by thirteen pilots, all dressed in white. New York Bay was alive with crafts of all kinds, decorated in the most holiday style; many with bands of music or singers. Amid all this pageantry, the thunder of cannon, and the welcome shouts of the people, he reached Murray's Wharf. There the Governor of the State, the foreign ministers, the clergy of the city, with a large military force, met Washington, and conducted him in procession to the residence prepared for his reception. The whole city was illuminated at night, and a general joy prevailed.

On the 30th all places of business were closed. Public service was performed in all the churches. After that, about noon, Committees of

Congress waited on Washington, who went in procession to Federal Hall. On the balcony in front of that building, Chancellor Livingston administered the oath of office, which Washington reverently repeated, adding, as he kissed the Bible, "So help me God." Then the Chancellor turning to the people exclaimed in a loud voice: "Long live George Washington, President of the United States." The shouts that rose from the dense crowd below was like the roar of the ocean, and the thunder of the artillery hardly rose above it.

The whole country felt a sense of relief. If the country was to prosper, it would in the hands of such a President and Congress.

Washington then entered the Senate Chamber and delivered his inaugural address to the two houses. He next, with the Vice-President, and the Senators and Representatives, proceeded to St. Paul's Church, where prayers were offered by Bishop Provost. Thus was God recognized in the whole ceremony of organizing the Government under the Constitution.

The first important duty was to select a cabinet. For the time, Washington selected John Jay as Foreign Secretary, and General Knox as Secretary of War, and placed the Treasury in the hands of a Board of Commissioners.

The United States had border and other difficulties with England and Spain which required to be adjusted, the more especially as England, maintaining military posts in the West, really influenced the Indians to commit hostilities. In the southwest the Creeks, relying on Spain, were at war with Georgia. The corsairs of the Barbary States were plundering our ships. The treasury was empty, and all the machinery of the new government was to be set working.

Congress now organized the Departments of Foreign Affairs, War,

and the Treasury, as well as the Supreme Court of the United States; fixed the salaries of the President and other officers, Washington asking that his salary should be limited to his actual expenses. For his permanent Cabinet Washington chose Thomas Jefferson as Secretary of Foreign Affairs, or of State; Alexander Hamilton, Secretary of the Treasury; General Knox, Secretary of War; Edmund Randolph, Attorney-General; and he appointed John Jay Chief Justice of the Supreme Court.

Congress passed in this session the laws most urgently needed, and by its wisdom and harmony tended to confirm the general confidence. During its recess Washington visited the Eastern States, everywhere welcomed in the heartiest manner.

The next session took up the great question of the National Debt. Hamilton, whose ability was remarkable, proposed that the United States should adopt the war-debt of the States, fund the whole debt, amounting to about seventy millions of dollars, and pay it off gradually. This was finally adopted, with some modification as to the State debts.

It was also decided to make Philadelphia the seat of government for ten years, after which it was to remove to some place on the Potomac. The selection of this spot was finally left to Washington, who fixed upon the District of Columbia, a tract ten miles square lying on both sides of the Potomac.

North Carolina and Rhode Island, finding that they must either enter the Union, or be treated as foreign countries, and have custom-houses established all along their frontiers, adopted the Constitution, Rhode Island acting on the 29th of May, 1790.

North Carolina, moreover, ceded to Congress the western territory

which she had hitherto claimed, and which was now organized as "The Territory of the United States south of the river Ohio."

The Indian question was the next difficulty to be met. Washington sent to the Creek country Colonel Willett, a brave officer, cautious and politic. In conference with Alexander McGillivray, a half-breed who was the head chief of the Creeks, he paved the way for peace. The chief was the son of a Tory whose property had been confiscated; and he felt bitter on that account. However, McGillivray, with other chiefs, were induced by Willett to accompany him to New York, where, in August, 1790, a treaty was finally concluded, which for a time gave peace to the South.

In the northwest, the Indians showed a determined spirit of hostility, and there was no choice except to send an army to reduce and overawe them. They had such a low idea of the American power, that it was necessary to make an impression. As the year 1789 was drawing to a close, General Harmar arrived at Fort Washington, a fortification erected on what is now Broadway, Cincinnati. He marched in with a body of three hundred soldiers, to the great joy of the scattered settlers of Ohio. It was not, however, till September, 1791, that preparations for a regular campaign were completed. Then militia from Pennsylvania and Kentucky came up, and taking the van, marched into the interior. Harmar joined them with three hundred and twenty-five regulars, making the whole force under his command nearly fifteen hundred men. The Indians did not wait to engage so large a force, they fired their villages, and fled, as Colonel Hardin approached at the head of his Kentuckians. The latter detached a part of his men in pursuit. but the Indians turned, and throwing the militia into disorder, killed twenty-three, and scattered the whole party, so that only seven reached

Hardin's camp. Colonel Hardin, however, pushed on, and destroyed the rest of their towns, ravaging their fields. The army then returned to Fort Washington, but as public opinion censured Harmar, he again took the field. Near Chillicothe, he sent Hardin forward to meet the enemy. Early in the morning this detachment reached the enemy, and a severe engagement ensued. The Indians fought with desperate valor, and the militia gave way in spite of their gallant officers, many of whom perished. The American loss was more than a hundred and fifty. The Indians were, however, so severely handled that Harmar drew back to Fort Washington unpursued.

A deep feeling of dissatisfaction prevailed as the news of this defeat spread through the country.

Congress at its next session had important matters under consideration. England showed an unfriendly disposition, and all Europe was evidently about to be involved in war, which would expose the United States to difficulties. At home it organized a new territory south of the Ohio, and prepared to select a district in which to establish the permanent capital of the United States. It was also necessary to raise a revenue to meet the public debt. In January, 1791, an act was passed laying a duty on spirituous liquors distilled in the United States. The tax was light, but it caused great discontent. To regulate the financial affairs of the country, the Bank of the United States was established, on a plan proposed by Alexander Hamilton. This bank was from the first a matter on which opinions were greatly divided both in Congress and among the people, and ultimately became the question between the two great parties in the country.

Washington, in a tour through the Southern States, received the same warm welcome that always hailed him; and as Congress had left

it to him to select the site for the capital, he finally decided on a spot on the banks of the Potomac, partly in Maryland, and partly in Virginia, the district to be ten miles square, the new city to lie on the Maryland side.

Though party spirit began to run high, no doubts were any longer felt as to the success of the new government. The States still solicited admission into the Union. Early in January, 1791, a Convention at Bennington, Vermont, adopted the Constitution of the United States, and applied for admission as a State. New York and New Hampshire yielded, and Vermont was admitted by Act of Congress, February 18, 1791.

The repulse of Harmar had made the Indians only the bolder. Two expeditions against the Miamis, on the Wabash, proved ineffectual. General Arthur St. Clair, a veteran of the Revolution, and at one time President of the Continental Congress, was now Governor of the Territory northwest of the Ohio. To him was confided a general and decisive campaign against the Indians. The frontiers, with their hardy and industrious settlers, so long exposed to the midnight horrors of Indian warfare, now began to breathe freely, and the whole country felt that the work of pacification would be sharp and prompt.

In October, 1791, he took the field at the head of an army of nearly two thousand men. But so slowly did he advance towards the Wabash, that his militia and the friendly Indians who had joined him abandoned him in great numbers, and when, in November, he reached the Wabash, and encamped on the banks of the St. Mary's, within a few miles of the Miami villages, he had to wait for reinforcements, as his force was reduced to fourteen hundred men. The Indians were not so blind as to allow their opportunity to escape them. Meshecunnaqua, or, as

the whites called him, The Little Turtle, was the chief of the Miamis, and a man of great ability. He had watched and studied the policy of the Americans, and had been in both battles against Harmar. With Buckongehelas, he planned an attack on St. Clair's ill-guarded camp. On the 4th of November, half an hour before sunrise, the war-whoop rang out as they burst suddenly in full force on St. Clair's camp, their main attack being on a part held by militia and raw troops, who fled in utter terror across a creek into the camp of the regulars. On rushed the Indians in pursuit, till St. Clair's first and second lines, hastily drawn up, met them with a steady fire of artillery and musketry. For a moment the Indian line halted, but roused by their chiefs, one of them in British uniform, they charged with a yell, while an incessant fire was kept up from the ground, from among the grass, and from every log and tree. The artillerymen in the centre were shot down at their guns, the shrewd chiefs having picked out men to look to this, and deprive St. Clair of the use of his cannon. The braves fairly tomahawked men at the guns. Two pieces were lost. In vain the regulars charged; the Indians fell back a few hundred yards, but advanced again as soon as the troops retired. Another charge was as fruitless. Twice were the cannon retaken, but it was impossible to use them. The Indians swarmed on all sides; the troops, who had lost nearly all their officers, were totally demoralized. More than half the rank and file were killed, and there seemed little hope of escape for the rest. The ground was covered with the dead and dying, the freshly scalped heads reeking with smoke; the little ravine that led to the creek actually ran with human blood. It was now nine o'clock, when St. Clair, who had three horses shot under him, rallied his men for a desperate charge on the Indian line in his rear. The American army gained the

road, and abandoning the camp with all its equipments, artillery, and baggage, began a retreat which soon became a flight as the militia flung away their arms and accoutrements. The remnant of the force, in disorder and panic, reached Fort Jefferson.

Never since Braddock's defeat had the whites suffered so disastrous a defeat.

The whole frontier was again left exposed to the ravages of the Indians, now elated by victory, and full of contempt for the Americans.

In Congress, where so much depended on harmony, party spirit was violent, and delayed public business. A bill for fixing the ratio of the representation in Congress led to fierce debates, and as first passed seemed to Washington so injudicious that he could not sign it, and returned it with his *veto*. The act to increase the army met with no opposition, for all felt the necessity of organizing an army to reduce the western Indians. The coinage of money, however, led to violent debates. A pattern piece had been struck, having on the reverse or tail, ONE CENT, in a laurel wreath, with $\frac{1}{100}$ below, and UNITY STATES OF AMERICA around, and on the obverse or head, a head of Washington. The republican party stigmatized this as favoring a monarchy, and to please them, the head of a pagan goddess, Liberty, was substituted for the head of Washington. The reverse was retained; and in this way the first regular American coin, the Cent, was struck in 1793. The cents of that year are now very scarce and much prized.

For a time these discussions and party differences had not affected General Washington, but gradually he was attacked with great virulence. That illustrious man, who had so reluctantly accepted office, now weary of his painful position, with opposition even in his cabinet,

wished to retire to private life at Mount Vernon. The true patriots, however, looked with dread on this step, and the leading men of all parties urged him so earnestly to become again a candidate that he yielded. When the election came off Washington was again chosen President, and Adams Vice-President.

The Indian affairs at the west were still a great source of care. General Wayne had been appointed to command the forces, but a strong party in the country were opposed to war, and clamored for a peaceable settlement of the difficulties with the red men, although, between 1780 and 1790, fifteen hundred inhabitants of Kentucky had been massacred in their homes, or carried off to endure the rigors and tortures of Indian captivity. Nor had the frontiers of Virginia and Pennsylvania suffered less. Yielding to the clamors of the peace party, envoys were dispatched. Two officers, Colonel Harden and Major Trueman, who were sent to negotiate with them, were barbarously murdered. It was evident that nothing but a thorough campaign against them would have any effect, especially as the English, in spite of the treaty of 1783, still held several posts in the West, where they supplied the Indians with arms, gave them hopes of English aid, and filled their minds with hatred and contempt for the Americans.

While this Indian difficulty, and the national debt, which Hamilton was devising plans to meet, occupied the public mind, alarming news arrived from Europe. France was in the midst of a bloody revolution. Louis XVI., whom America had reason to respect, had perished on the scaffold, soon to be followed by his queen, Marie Antoinette. A general war in Europe was imminent, the new republic having already begun hostilities with England. Counting on the alliance and support

of the United States, the French republic sent out as ambassador to Washington, Genet, a bold and enterprising man. Of the two parties which had arisen in the United States, the republicans, headed by Jefferson, sympathized with France, while the Federalists, who supported Washington and Adams, could not approve the excesses committed in France, and looked with alarm at the mad course on which that country had entered. On his arrival at Charleston, in South Carolina, Genet was warmly received by the Democratic clubs, which had been formed in various parts of the United States, in connection with the Jacobin club of Paris. Intoxicated by the honors thus done him, Genet began a bold course; he issued commissions, and fitted out privateers in the United States, to sail against English commerce. Vessels captured by these cruisers were brought into Charleston, and sold under the authority of French consuls. All thoughtful men were alarmed. Washington issued a proclamation, warning people against being misled by such foreign agents, but Genet, backed by the more ardent opponents of Washington's administration, and its temperate policy, openly set government at defiance. A vessel fitted out under Genet's authority, eluded the authorities, and sailed out of the Delaware. Washington, unwilling to come to an open rupture with France, at last requested the government of that country to recall M. Genet, and Congress passed an act prohibiting enlistment for the service of any foreign power, or the fitting out of privateers, except by the authority of the United states.

Our affairs were at the same time in so difficult a position with England, that this affair was most unfortunate. It exasperated the English government, which was already complaining of the United States, alleging that they had violated the late treaty, by preventing English

merchants from recovering debts due them by Americans before the Revolution. The new cause of complaint arising from the seizure of English ships by French privateers, fitted out in the ports of the United States, made the feeling still more bitter. On our side, the government complained that in violation of the treaty, England maintained posts in the West, in territory clearly belonging to the United States, and had even established new military posts among the Indian tribes, aiding and supporting them by agents in their midst to carry on a savage warfare upon our frontiers. Another cause of complaint, and one long maintained, arose from the arrogant claim made, and enforced by English men-of-war, which constantly boarded American vessels, and impressed men as sailors under the pretence, often totally unfounded, that they were British subjects. They also, by their privateers and men-of-war, seized many American ships on their way to France, violating all the right of the United States as a neutral power.

For a time there was no intercourse between the two governments, but in 1791, England made the first step, by sending out Mr. George Hammond as Minister Plenipotentiary to the United States.

Now that matters looked so much like war, Congress prepared to lay an embargo on all ships and vessels bound to any foreign port, and to sequestrate all debts due to British subjects, to make good all damages caused by British vessels. But tidings came that England had modified her orders in council. Washington then nominated Chief Justice Jay, as envoy extraordinary, to negotiate a new treaty, giving redress for the past, and security for the future. In spite of this, however, Congress would have passed an act prohibiting all intercourse with Great Britain, had not the Vice-President, by his casting vote, defeated it in the Senate.

Laws were passed to make active preparations for the war which seemed so near, by raising an army and navy.

Mr. Monroe was sent as minister to France, to endeavor to prevent any action there that might increase our difficulties.

Portugal, which had long been at war with Algiers, and in a manner protected other nations, by preventing the corsairs from coming out through the Straits of Gibraltar, had now made peace, it was said, at English suggestion, and several American vessels were soon after captured by those pirates, and their crews condemned to a life of slavery. To redeem them was an object of solicitude to the American government. A naval force would soon have effected this, but the opposition resisted it, and it was finally resolved to purchase their freedom by the payment of a million of dollars.

The Indian affairs in the West were, however, at last brought to a settlement by the decision and energy of General Anthony Wayne. Taking command too late in the year for an effective campaign, he pushed on with his army to St. Clair's battle-field, and there erected Fort Recovery, which he made his camp for the winter. In 1794, he advanced cautiously. The regulars were a new organization called "The Legion of the United States," specially enrolled, and whom Wayne had waited to drill, and form into good soldiers, and expert Indian fighters, before he exposed them to action. Every precaution was taken to prevent surprise or panic.

Now that he was advancing into the heart of the enemy's country, skirmishes took place, which gave experience and confidence. In August, he erected Fort Defiance, at the junction of the Auglaize and Miami. Leaving a garrison here, the army pushed on in high spirits, the two thousand legion troops, with eleven hundred mounted Ken-

tuckians, under General Scott. These were on the flanks in the march, and between them and the main body were riflemen. On the 20th, Price's battalion, in the van, received a warm fire from an unseen foe, and was driven back. The enemy, comprising the Miamis and many other tribes, were upon them in force, eager to contest the soil with the Americans. They had selected their battle-ground wisely. They were in a dense wood which lay in front of a recently erected British fort, and they were protected by a quantity of trees thrown down by a tornado, which formed an intrenchment almost impassable by horsemen. They were drawn up in three lines with their left on the Maumee.

Their first movement was an attempt to turn the left flank of the Americans, but as soon as the firing began, Wayne formed the legion in two lines, and the first charged with trailed arms, to rouse the Indians with the bayonet from their coverts, behind logs, and in the grass, and when they had dislodged them, to pour in a steady volley, and press them so rapidly that they should not have time to load. The second line was ordered to check the Indians who were endeavoring to turn his left, and the cavalry skirting the river, and wheeling around on the other wing, were to take them in flank. With one tremendous shout, the legion sprang forward. The startled Indians sprang from their ambush, and with a scattering fire fled, pursued by the terrible volleys of the legion. Forty fell dead, others were carried off. Away through the wood rolled the tide of battle, the Indians being driven for an hour, with constant loss, for more than two miles, till the routed, crestfallen braves at last sought shelter under the guns of the British fort. So impetuous was this charge of Wayne's first line that the second and the cavalry hardly got into the fight at all.

The victorious general halted to give his troops time to take some re-

freshments, then he marched down the river, and encamped within half a mile of the British Fort Miami. Here he remained three days, burning and ravaging the houses and cornfields all around the fort, and within pistol-shot of it, and though the English commander attempted to take a high tone, General Wayne was so decided that he cooled down. The houses of English and Canadians among the Indians, fared like the wigwams.

His complete victory cost Wayne about a hundred men. It was supposed that it would bring the Indians to ask peace, but as they held out Wayne laid waste their whole country, and built forts in the very heart of their settlements to prevent their return.

The spirit of the Indians was broken, and a general war all along the frontiers was happily avoided.

The Miamis at last made overtures of peace, and on the 3d of August, 1795, Wayne concluded a treaty at Fort Grenville, with the Wyandots, Delawares, Shawnees, Ottawas, Chippewas, Pottawatamies, Miamis, Kikapoos, and Illinois. A boundary line was assigned to them, and annual presents agreed upon in return for the lands which they gave up forever.

This triumph over the savage foe was complete: but while war was thus banished from the frontiers, where the hardy backwoodsman was pushing on as the pioneer of civilization, a dangerous insurrection broke out in western Pennsylvania. The tax laid on spirituous liquors was very unpopular, and excited discontent, which at last resulted in acts of violence. In July, 1794, the marshal was shot at, and the next day, a body of five hundred insurgents attacked the house of the inspector, who had obtained a detachment of eleven men from Fort Pitt for his protection. They were summoned to sur-

render, and finally did so, when the buildings had been set on fire, and all escape was cut off. The insurgents seized the mails, and opened all letters, to discover those in favor of enforcing the law. President Washington saw the danger. If insurgents could thus defy the laws of the United States all government was at an end. Governor Mifflin, of Pennsylvania, did not believe the State militia able to quell the insurrection. Washington, thereupon, by proclamation, called upon all the insurgents to disperse and retire before the 1st of September. He also made a requisition on the Governors of New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia, for militia to form an army of fifteen thousand men. The States responded to the call; the militia turned out with uncommon alacrity. The army, under the control of Governor Lee, of Virginia, marched into the country of the insurgents, but found no body of men in arms to oppose them. Overawed by this display of force, the insurgents lost all hope, their leaders were arrested or fled, and the people whom they had led into the rebellion submitted to the government.

The government acquired new popularity by its exhibition of power, and still more by the leniency with which it treated the misguided men.

The arrival of the news of Jay's treaty was another source of discontent, and some riotous displays took place, designing leaders inducing the people to believe that the honor and interests of the country had been betrayed. But the people generally sustained Washington, and refused to believe that he could have become a traitor to his country. Now, when we look back at those times, with the reverence for Washington which time has given, we can scarcely believe that any American could have been so unjust towards him.

Congress showed also its support of Washington's policy ; the House of Representatives voted money to carry out the treaty. By its terms, England finally withdrew her troops from the western posts which she had so long held to the annoyance and injury of our growing settlements. She also made compensation for the illegal captures of American vessels by her cruisers. On our side the government of the United States secured to British creditors proper means for collecting debts due them when the Revolution broke out.

As soon as British influence was removed from the West, Congress passed an act regulating intercourse with the Indian tribes, and establishing a boundary along the western frontier, beyond which no white man was to be allowed to go, either for hunting or pasturage, without a pass. This vast Indian territory was separated into two parts by Kentucky, but it comprised nearly one-half the whole territory of the United States, which, our readers will remember, then extended only to the Mississippi, and did not include Florida. Special provision was made for the punishment of offenses committed by either whites or Indians. Another step was taken for the improvement of the Indians, by appropriating money to supply them with agricultural implements, so that they might be induced to rely less on hunting, and cultivate the ground like the whites. A great difficulty has always been, that wicked and unprincipled traders corrupt the Indians, lead them into intoxication, and then rob them in various ways. Laws were passed to prevent this as far as possible.

All these steps produced a good feeling among the various Indian tribes, and a general and secure peace enabled the hardy pioneers to extend the settlements in all directions.

On the west and south, the United States was bounded by Spanish

colonies. The western bank of the Mississippi, whatever of Louisiana lay east of that river, and Florida, were held by Spain, so that many questions arose between the two countries. On the 27th of October, 1795, a treaty was concluded with Spain, and ratified in the following year, by which the bounds of Florida were fixed at the limits set out in the treaty between the United States and Great Britain, that is, from the Mississippi at 31° North, to the junction of the Flint and Apalachicola, and thence to the head of the St. Mary's. On the west, the boundary was to be the middle of the channel of the Mississippi to the thirty-first degree of north latitude, the navigation of the river remaining forever free to the citizens of both nations. For purposes of trade, Americans were to have the right to store goods for three months at New Orleans. Both parties also pledged themselves to use their best endeavors to restrain their Indians from committing any hostilities beyond their lines, and to refrain from tampering in any way with the Indian tribes of the neighboring State. Another State was now ready to enter the Union. Tennessee had already endeavored ineffectually to set up an independent government. They went to work again in 1796, and, acting on their own responsibility, declared themselves a State, adopted a constitution, and elected senators and representatives to Congress. These proceedings, as being utterly irregular, were condemned, as Congress had not fixed the territory of the new State, or directed the election. The want of due formality was, however, overlooked, and Tennessee became the sixteenth State in the Union.

Such were the chief acts of Washington's second administration. It was now drawing to a close. He had organized the government under the new constitution, and the United States had entered on a

career of peace and prosperity. With England and Spain, the countries whose colonies bordered on our land, we were at peace. France, our old ally, showed a spirit of reckless hostility which might lead to some trouble, but this afforded no grounds for alarm. At home, all was prosperous; industry, agriculture, manufactures were thriving; the public debt was gradually decreasing, without any severe burdens being imposed on the people; the happiness and security enjoyed here invited many from the Old World, and a large emigration began from Ireland and France. Educational establishments were multiplied, and New York adopted a system of common schools, to extend to all the benefits of education. Pennsylvania hesitated to follow in the same course only from a fear that education without a religious basis may prove a curse and not a blessing.

Washington felt that his labor was complete. He had most reluctantly accepted a second term; it had been one of pain and anxiety. It is sad to think how so great and good a man was assailed and maligned. He longed to return once more to his peaceful retreat at Mount Vernon. He announced his intention of retiring in a Farewell Address, which is one of the greatest monuments of his wisdom and patriotism.

He implored them to hold the Union between the States inviolable. "It is of infinite moment," says the Father of his Country, "that you should properly estimate the immense value of your national union to your collective and individual happiness; that you should cherish a cordial, habitual, and immovable attachment to it, accustoming yourselves to think and speak of it as of the palladium of your political safety and prosperity; watching for its preservation with jealous anxiety; discountenancing whatever may suggest even a suspicion

that it can in any event be abandoned; and indignantly frowning upon the first dawning of every attempt to alienate any portion of our country from the rest, or to enfeeble the sacred ties which now link together the various parts. For this you have every inducement of sympathy and interest. Citizens, by birth or choice, of a common country, that country has a right to concentrate your affections. The name of AMERICANS, which belongs to you in your national capacity, must always exalt the just pride of patriotism, more than any appellation derived from local discriminations."

"This government, the offspring of our own choice, uninfluenced and unawed; adopted upon full investigation and mature deliberation, completely free in its principles, in the distribution of its powers uniting security with energy, and containing within itself a provision for its own amendments, has a just claim to your confidence and support. Respect for its authority, compliance with its laws, acquiescence in its measures, are duties enjoined by the fundamental maxims of true liberty."

He warned them against the violence of party spirit, and against the danger of one department of government encroaching on another. He urged the establishment of institutions for the diffusing of knowledge as the best security.

In regard to foreign nations, this wise man urged peace and justice, avoiding excessive fondness, or antipathy, towards any; avoiding all occasions of being drawn into the disputes between foreign nations, and, still more, preventing all interference of foreign governments in our national affairs.

This address was everywhere received with profound reverence.

The various States, through their legislatures, responded to his patriotic and wise address.

The third presidential election saw two great parties arrayed. The Federalists, who supported the policy hitherto followed by Washington, nominated John Adams for President, and Thomas Pinckney for Vice-President. The Republicans, or antifederalists, took up Thomas Jefferson as their strongest candidate. The election was an exciting one, but it was soon evident that Adams was elected. Washington's message to Congress was touching, as he stood for the last time in the hall of Congress, addressing the Senate and House of Representatives—for his messages were always spoken by him ; not sent in writing, as is now the custom. He closed with the wish that the Union which they had formed for their protection might be perpetual.

The answer of the Senate was cordial ; but, in the House, some impulsive Republicans wished to strike out all words that expressed attachment to Washington's character and person, all approbation of his administration, or regret at his retiring from office.

When the electoral vote was counted in the House, John Adams had seventy-one votes, and Thomas Pinckney only fifty-nine, some Federalists having voted for other candidates. Thomas Jefferson received sixty-eight votes, and became, as the law was then, Vice-President, although he had run for the presidency. This seems strange ; but under the Constitution, each elector voted for two persons for President, and the one getting the highest number became President, the one getting the next highest number became Vice-President.

Washington's administration closed ; he retired from office, and set out for his own home at Mount Vernon. Everywhere on the road he was welcomed with enthusiasm and reverence.

CHAPTER III.

JOHN ADAMS, SECOND PRESIDENT.—1797–1801.

Affairs with France—Mississippi Territory organized—War with France on the Ocean—The Alien and Sedition Acts—Death of General Washington—Seat of Government removed to Washington—Indiana Territory organized—Close of the War with France—Adams defeated in the next Election.

On the 4th of March, 1797, John Adams was inaugurated as President, and after delivering his address, took the oath of office. He was a patriot of the most incorruptible principles, calm, able, laborious, but not always consistent or firm in pursuing a course which he had adopted. He formed a cabinet which was not in harmony with his own views or with itself. Pickering was Secretary of State, Wolcott, of the Treasury ; the other members were McHenry and Lee.

The first object that claimed the attention of the new President, was the relations of America with France. General Pinckney, Minister Plenipotentiary to France, had been virtually expelled from the country by the Directory, which then ruled in that republic. French ships still continued to plunder American vessels.

On the 25th of March, President Adams, by proclamation, convened an extraordinary session of Congress. He recommended them to provide effectual measures of defense in case war became necessary.

As a last effort for peace, General Pinckney, John Marshall, and Elbridge Gerry, were appointed envoys to France. They set out, but on reaching Paris, were met with insulting propositions from Talleyrand, the French minister for Foreign Affairs. If the United States

would pay Talleyrand a quarter of a million of dollars, and loan to France thirteen millions, they would be restored to favor. When they declined absolutely to consider any such proposal, Pinckney and Marshall were ordered to leave France, while Gerry, a republican, was ordered to remain, under a threat of immediate war, if he retired. It was in this correspondence that Pinckney used a phrase which has become a motto for the country: "Millions for defense, not one cent for tribute."

Congress met before news of this arrived in America, for ships did not cross the ocean rapidly in those days. When, however, the correspondence reached the President, he laid it before Congress, and it was at once published. It speedily roused the spirit of the whole people. The land rung with preparations for war. Hopkinson composed a patriotic song that has not yet been forgotten: "Hail Columbia."

Congress passed an act for retaliation, and by another increased the army, and authorized the President to raise additional regiments, and organized a provisional army.

When Marshall arrived, and reported in full the treatment to which he had been subjected, Adams sent a message to Congress in which he said: "I will never send another minister to France, without assurance that he will be received, respected, and honored, as the representative of a great, free, powerful, and independent nation."

As soon as it was clear that a resort to arms would be necessary, all eyes turned upon Washington, as the only man to be placed at the head of the army. On the 3d of July, 1798, President Adams nominated him Commander-in-Chief of the armies of the United States, and the Senate confirmed his choice. The illustrious man accepted

the high office, and again, relinquishing his domestic retirement, assumed the direction of the army.

The Navy Department was now organized, and Benjamin Stoddart, of Maryland, became first Secretary of the Navy. Thirty active cruisers were ordered, and the treaties with France declared to be no longer binding. Among other preparations for war, two acts were passed which drew great odium on Adams, these were the Alien and Sedition Acts.

Although war was not declared against France, vessels were authorized to resist French cruisers; privateers were fitted out, and three frigates, the United States, commanded by Captain Barry, the Constitution, Captain Nicholson, and the Constellation, Captain Truxtun, with a number of smaller vessels, sailed out to meet the French.

The sudden appearance of so many American vessels astonished not only the French, but also the English, who could not conceal their chagrin to see the United States manifest such power on the ocean. They even let their ill-temper carry them to violence, as in the case of the attack of the British frigate Carnatic on a little American sloop-of-war, the Baltimore.

In June, 1798, the French privateer Le Croyable was captured, and under the name of the Retaliation, was sent to sea under Lieutenant Bainbridge, but only to be recaptured by a French frigate.

On the 9th of February, 1799, the Constellation, Commodore Truxtun, fell in with a large ship which showed the Stars and Stripes, but soon raised the tricolor. She was the Insurgente, Captain Barreault, one of the fastest ships known. She returned the Constellation's fire vigorously, injuring her masts and rigging, so that the fore-topmast was saved only by the gallantry of midshipman David Porter, who cut

away the yards. Thus relieved, the Constellation poured into her antagonist two or three raking broadsides, then shooting out of the smoke of the combat, she wore round, and getting across the Insurgente's stern was about to rake her when she struck. The French vessel was much cut up, having lost seventy men killed and wounded. A few other collisions took place. Merchant vessels were captured on both sides, but France recoiled from her hostile attitude, asked indirectly for a renewal of intercourse, and a minister was sent.

But while this was going on, the country continued to grow. Congress organized the country between Georgia and Louisiana into a new territory, under the name of Mississippi. A strong effort was made to exclude slavery from the new territory, and Jefferson so planned it; but this was finally defeated, and it became slave territory. A Governor was appointed, and the territory organized.

In spite of the firm position which he had assumed in regard to France, President Adams suddenly resolved to renew negotiations, and to the surprise of all, nominated William Vans Murray minister to that country. This led to dissensions between him and his cabinet, and to the breaking up of the Federal party; while the Republican party, under the leadership of Jefferson, was daily gaining strength. At his suggestion, Kentucky and Virginia adopted resolutions denouncing the Alien and Sedition laws as violations of the Constitution of the United States, and claiming the right in the States to nullify all such acts. It is somewhat strange that Andrew Jackson, then an opponent of the Federalists, was subsequently, as President, to put down with a hand of iron these nullification doctrines, when set up by his native State, South Carolina.

The country now experienced a terrible loss in the death of George

Washington. That noble patriot, so much of whose life had been given to his country's service, but now deprived of the consolation attendant on public favor, had organized the army for any emergency. On Thursday, December 12th, he spent several hours riding around his estate, directing operations on various parts. The day was stormy, and on his return, he was seized by a violent cold, accompanied with sore throat. During the night he became rapidly worse, and inflammation, with fever, set in. He would not, however, allow a physician to be summoned till morning. When Doctor Craik arrived, he was alarmed at the symptoms, and at once called in consulting physicians. Various remedies were resorted to, but in vain ; Washington's sufferings were acute, and it was evident that the illustrious patient was rapidly sinking. From the first, Washington was convinced that it was his last sickness. Towards evening, on the 14th, he said to Doctor Craik : "I die hard, Doctor, but I am not afraid to die. My breath cannot last long." Thanking his physicians for their efforts to save him, he asked them to resign him to the hands of Providence. Nothing further was attempted. His agonized family and friends watched the moment of departure. He expired between ten and eleven o'clock at night, in the sixty-eighth year of his age, maintaining his faculties to the last. He was quietly interred on the Wednesday following.

Thus passed away the father of his country, one of the few immortal names that were not born to die. There is no tarnish to the lustre of Washington's glory. He was a patriot, pure and disinterested, seeking only the good of his country, with no ambition except to serve it, no desire to enrich himself from the taxes drawn from his fellow-citizens. After holding the highest positions, military and civil, he went back to his quiet home, no richer than he left it.

Congress was then in session at Philadelphia. The news of his death and of his illness arrived together, so that the sad tidings came unheralded. As soon as it became known, a motion was made in the House to adjourn. The next day, John Marshall announced that the information was but too true. After a brief but comprehensive view of Washington's career and services, he moved that a joint committee should be appointed "to devise the most suitable manner of paying honor to the memory of the man, first in war, first in peace, first in the hearts of his countrymen." The Senate addressed a letter to the President, to which President Adams replied in a touching eulogy on the hero who had passed away.

The joint committee appointed by the two Houses resolved that a marble monument should be erected in Washington, under which his body, if the family consented, was to be placed; and that a funeral oration should be delivered in the Lutheran Church before both Houses; that the President should recommend the people of the whole country to wear crape on their arm for thirty days.

On the 26th of December, Henry Lee pronounced the eulogy on Washington, before both Houses of Congress. Similar orations were delivered throughout the country, by Hamilton, Ames, Carroll, and other eminent men. The anniversary of his birthday, February 22d, arriving soon after, called forth fresh tributes to his memory.

Amid this general grief and respect, a few political fanatics ventured to cast slurs upon his illustrious name, but they were frowned down by an indignant people. They have long since been consigned to merited oblivion, while Washington has constantly risen higher and higher in the esteem and respect of his countrymen.

Washington was not one of those dazzling meteors which have as-

tonished and terrified the world by a brilliant but destructive course. A warrior, he sought not conquest, but liberty; a ruler, he had no aim but the happiness of the people; in all, he had no wish but justice. Calm and unruffled in temper, prudent and steadfast in his resolutions, prompt and decisive in action, he was never elated by success, nor dejected by failure. Though oftener defeated than victorious in the field, he was never routed, and thus, ever formidable to his antagonists, never periling the cause by rashness, he brought the Revolutionary War to a triumphant close. As President of the Convention, he was one of the founders of the Constitution, showing great ability as a statesman. On the establishment of a new government, he organized it amid difficulties and opposition of various kinds. His full confidence in that form of government has been justified by its triumphant career of nearly a century; but in our thankfulness for its blessings, and our prayers for its future maintenance in its purity and integrity, we should remember that Washington established it on a firm footing only at the loss of his own popularity.

The death of Washington quickened the movement for the permanent establishment of the National Capital. The site of a Federal district had been selected by Washington. One of the acts of the Congress, on meeting in 1799, was to provide by law for the removal of the United States Government to the city of Washington, henceforth to be the permanent capital of the United States.

The new settlements had grown, so that new territorial governments were needed to prepare for the gradual admission of new States. The territory northwest of the Ohio was divided into two, and the western part became Indiana Territory; at the South, a government was established for Mississippi Territory. So rapid was the increase of set-

tlements by emigrants, from the coast and abroad, that the sale of public lands became an important source of revenue. New laws were passed to enable industrious settlers to buy land and pay for it gradually.

Although Mr. Adams had renewed negotiations with France, hostilities were still carried on at sea, chiefly in the West Indies, where France still held, though heaving with revolution, part of St. Domingo, and ruled in peace several of the smaller islands. In the waters surrounding these islands, our navy officers sought to win glory by meeting the French navy, and profit by meeting her merchantmen. The new century opened with a naval victory. On the first day of February, 1800, Captain Truxtun, in the Constellation, of thirty-eight guns, while cruising off the island of Guadeloupe, discovered a vessel to the southeast, steering west. Taking her for a large English merchant vessel, Truxtun hoisted English colors, but the other vessel did not regard it. Then Truxtun gave chase, crowding all sail. When near enough to distinguish her, Truxtun found her to be a French frigate. He at once hauled down the Union Jack, and running up the Stars and Stripes, prepared for action. The Vengeance, his antagonist, was a French frigate of fifty-two guns. As the Constellation, having overtaken her, was doubling the weather quarter of the Vengeance, the French opened fire from her stern and quarter guns. As soon as he could bear full on her, Truxtun gave her a broadside, and through the night, from half past eight till nearly one, the two vessels, running free side by side, sent broadsides into each other, till the Vengeance, with fifty men killed and a hundred and ten wounded, and the hull cut up by Truxtun's balls, drew out of the fight. The Constellation gave chase, sure now of capturing her, but just then, all the shrouds having been

cut by the Frenchman's fire, the Constellation's mainmast went by the board, carrying a gallant young midshipman, named Jarvis, and several men with it. This enabled the Vengeance to reach Curaçoa, though in a sinking condition. Truxtun bore up for Jamaica. It was a well-fought battle. The French vessel was heavier, carried sixteen more guns, and nearly a hundred men more than the Constellation, yet she would in a few minutes more have been compelled to strike. Congress showed its appreciation of Truxtun's gallantry by striking a gold medal.

Napoleon Bonaparte had now risen to the head of the government in France. With him a treaty was negotiated, but some of the articles displeased the Senate, who refused to confirm them. Mr. Adams ratified it as finally, and nominated a Minister Plenipotentiary.

In June, 1800, the public offices of government, with all its archives and officials, were removed from Philadelphia to Washington; and somewhat later, Mr. Adams and his family took up their residence in the President's house. In these days of railroads and rapid traveling through our more densely settled States, it is amusing to look back to that time and read of the President getting lost in the woods with his family while on their journey from Baltimore to Washington. They wandered around for hours, till a straggling negro at last came lounging along that way, and guided the presidential party to the capital.

The public buildings were by no means ready, the place was a wilderness, and it was for a long time a wretched place of residence.

The census, at the beginning of the century, showed a population of five million three hundred and six thousand, being an increase of nearly a million and a half in ten years, due in some measure to emigration from abroad; France sent her exiled clergy and nobility; Saint Do-

mingo, her planters flying from the infuriated negroes; Ireland, her sturdy sons, whose rising for freedom had been crushed in blood. Mr. Adams' term of service was drawing to a close, and party spirit ran high. Mr. Adams looked to a re-election, but among his own party, the Federalists, he had made many enemies, and alienated many of his friends. Hamilton, one of the leaders of the Federal party, who had carried on a vigorous contest with Burr in New York, had become hostile to Mr. Adams, and Burr adroitly used this to injure both. The election was an exciting one, and when the votes of the electors came to be counted, Thomas Jefferson and Aaron Burr received each seventy-three votes, Adams sixty-five, and General Pinckney sixty-four. The votes given for Burr and Pinckney were really given them for the position of Vice-President, but as the Constitution then stood, each elector voted for two persons, and the one who received the highest number of votes became President, and the one who received the next highest became Vice-President. One of the electors should have voted for Jefferson without casting a vote for Burr. As it stood, there was no election. Jefferson had seventy-three votes, and so had Burr. By the Constitution, it had to go to the House of Representatives. There the members voted by States, and the candidate who received the vote of nine States would be President. Burr was a man full of plot and schemes. He had been put forward only as a candidate for the Vice-Presidency; but as he saw a chance to become President, he used all his ability to secure his election in place of Jefferson. The Federals, defeated as they were, were ready to defeat Jefferson. For days they continued balloting without being able to effect an election. General anxiety prevailed, and fears were entertained that they might not be able to make a choice, but at last, on the 17th of February, 1801, six

representatives agreed to vote blank, and Jefferson received the vote of ten States, Burr of four, two not voting.

The few remaining weeks of his administration were uneventful. Congress reorganized the United States Courts, and Mr. Adams, on the 3d of March, appointed judges under the new Act; a step which called forth strong censure.

Without waiting for the inauguration of his successor, Mr. Adams, early on the morning of the 4th of March, bid adieu to the Capital and public life.

During this short administration, the yellow fever, which had been very destructive in 1793, renewed its ravages. Steps were taken in New York and Pennsylvania for the gradual extinction of slavery. Albany became the capital of New York.

The French Revolution, which abolished monarchy and aristocracy in France, had done away with much of the old style finery of dress. Its influence was felt in America. Short hair took the place of the long powdered hair or wigs; loose trowsers were worn instead of the tight knee-breeches; dark or black cloth was adopted for men's wear instead of gayer colors. In all social concerns, there was less formality and display, and more simplicity was everywhere introduced.

CHAPTER IV.

THOMAS JEFFERSON, THIRD PRESIDENT—1801-1809.

War against Tripoli—Purchase of Louisiana—Lewis and Clarke's Expedition to Oregon—Troubles with Florida—Burr's Conspiracy—English Outrages—Attack on the Chesapeake—New States and Territories.

JEFFERSON came into power as representing a new policy. All was at peace, except that the Barbary States continued to plunder American ships, and carry off passengers and crews to be sold as slaves. Under previous administrations, the party now in power had urged the payment of money to redeem the captives rather than fit out a navy to punish them. But the French war had brought a navy into existence, and there was now no talk of paying money to those pirates.

One of Jefferson's first acts was to send out Commodore Dale, with a squadron, to the Mediterranean Sea, to chastise Tripoli, the last offender. Finding a Tripolitan frigate and brig near Gibraltar, he blockaded them so that they could not get to sea. Then the little Enterprise, a twelve-gun schooner, under Lieutenant Sterrett, overtook a Tripolitan fourteen-gun ship, and in a running fight of three hours captured her, after killing or wounding fifty of the corsairs, without losing one of his own men. He then threw her cannon and ammunition overboard, and sent her adrift with one old sail. When the pirate captain at last got back to Tripoli, he was paraded around on an ass.

Ohio had now gained so much in population, that she solicited admission as a State. Accordingly, Congress authorized the holding of a Convention, which in 1802 adopted a very liberal Constitution. Under

this it became a State on the 1st of March, 1803. Then the growth of settlements on the Mississippi, in the Territory of that name, gave promise of a new State. But suddenly news came that Spain had, by a secret treaty, on the 1st of October, 1800, ceded back to France the colony of Louisiana, which she had held for nearly forty years. There was at once a change of system. The authorities at New Orleans refused to carry out the treaty of 1783, so as to allow American vessels to land their cargoes at New Orleans. All the American settlements in the Mississippi valley were aroused, and many were in favor of raising an army and taking possession of Louisiana by force. Congress acted more prudently, but the free navigation of the Mississippi was so essential to the West, that a law passed authorizing the President to call out an army of eighty thousand men, and two millions of dollars were put at his disposal to purchase, if possible, the island of Orleans, and the free navigation of the river. The navy was also increased; and as another war with France seemed possible, some who had been strongly in favor of that country, now looked to England for aid.

Livingston, the American minister at the court of France, had in vain endeavored to baffle the negotiations, and prevent the cession of Louisiana to France. Failing in this, he opened a negotiation for the purchase of New Orleans, and the adjacent territory on the Mississippi. Bonaparte did not give the project a favorable consideration, till it was evident that France must again plunge into war. Then Bonaparte asked Livingston to make an offer for all Louisiana. The American minister's instructions did not anticipate this, nor did those of Monroe, who arrived to succeed him. But there was no time to ask instructions. The American envoys offered ten millions of dollars; the French government at first asked sixteen millions, but having

agreed that four millions should go to pay American claims, the bargain was closed, and a treaty was signed on the last day of April, 1803. The treaty secured to the inhabitants their liberty, property, and religious rights, and provided for their early admission as citizens, and the organization of part of the territory as a State.

The treaty came as a surprise to the whole country, and was too satisfactory a solution of the difficulty to allow much dispute. The amount to be paid was trifling to a great and growing country, and it gave the United States not only complete and exclusive control of the Mississippi, from its source to the sea, but carried the American boundary to the shores of the Pacific, for no limits west were fixed.

When Congress met the treaty was confirmed, and money voted to carry it out; so that on the 20th December, 1803, Lausat, as commissioner for France, formally transferred New Orleans to the American commissioners, Wilkinson and Claiborne. The latter was appointed by Congress to govern the new province for the time being. This was not, however, intended to last. The next year, Louisiana was divided into two parts; the portion south of the thirty-third degree of latitude became the District of Orleans. This was to be under a governor and council appointed by the President. Courts were established, and preparations made for its admission as a State, as soon as the inhabitants had become sufficiently accustomed to our government. The northern part, called the District of Louisiana, was for the time made dependent on Indiana Territory. It was even supposed to be so remote, that it was proposed to remove all the Indians to it from the States east of the Mississippi river. Most of it was an almost unknown wilderness, but an expedition under Lewis and Clarke pene-

trated to the Rocky Mountains, and crossing that ridge, reached the head waters of the Columbia, to which they gave their names, and then descended the Columbia to the Pacific, carrying the United States flag across the continent.

The war with Tripoli was maintained, and in 1803, Commodore Preble sailed with a squadron of seven vessels. While chasing a Tripolitan ship, the Philadelphia, Captain Bainbridge, ran ashore and was captured with all on board. The Pacha got her off, but Preble resolved to destroy her. Decatur, with a small vessel, ran in, captured her, and set her on fire. As all her guns were loaded ready for action, the vessel, as she lighted up the city with her blazing hull and masts, poured her deadly broadsides into Tripoli, till her magazine was reached, when, with a terrible explosion, she disappeared. Preble, with his inferior force, kept up a constant series of attacks on the place, and tried by torpedoes to destroy the Tripolitan gunboats. Youssouf, dey of Tripoli, had expelled his brother Hamet, and usurped his throne. Hamet, having won the friendship of Eaton, the United States consul at Tunis, formed a plan to recover his throne. Eaton and Hamet, with seventy men from Preble's fleet, captured Derne by assault, and defeated Youssouf in two battles. This brought him to terms of peace, by which the American prisoners were given up, but Hamet was abandoned most unjustly. Tunis was then menaced, and thought it best to send an ambassador to the United States. An American squadron was kept in the Mediterranean, and for the first time, those piratical nations began to see that their trade was at an end.

Another presidential election was now at hand. Jefferson was again chosen President, and George Clinton, of New York, Vice-President, by a large majority. Aaron Burr, who was set aside, smarting

under disappointed ambition, during the campaign challenged Alexander Hamilton, and killed him in a duel at Weehawken.

Some troubles occurred on the Florida frontier, the Indians in that province, aided by Englishmen, committing ravages. Steps were taken to purchase that province from Spain. England showed her hostility also by continuing to impress American seamen. The British naval commanders even carried their insolence so far as to attempt to take men by force from vessels belonging to the American navy. A new war seemed probable. In Europe, England and France were issuing decrees in regard to neutral vessels, which made it almost impossible for American ships to be at sea. This led Congress to pass, in 1806, an act to prohibit the importation of English manufactured goods.

While the country was in this critical position with regard to England, Colonel Burr well nigh involved it in a war with Spain. Desperate as a politician, he formed a plan for separating the Western States and territories from the United States, and forming a new Republic, which was at once to wrest Mexico from Spain. He tried to win over General Wilkinson, who commanded the United States troops on the Mississippi, but Wilkinson not only posted his troops so as to check Burr's movements, but reported all he knew to the President. Burr did not even then give up all hopes of success, but being at last surrounded, he surrendered to the governor of Mississippi Territory. His trial was an event of great importance. It was a strange sight to see a man, who had so recently, as Vice-President, acted as President of the Senate, now brought to trial for high treason. He was defended with great skill, and acquitted.

The Berlin Decree of Napoleon, and the British orders in council

were now in full operation, both condemning neutral ships to forfeiture. Mr. Pinckney negotiated a new treaty with England, in which that country yielded some points, but not the right of impressment. This was so unsatisfactory to Mr. Jefferson, that he resolved not to send the treaty to the Senate for confirmation. While attempts were on foot to renew negotiations, an event occurred which justified Jefferson. The Chesapeake, a thirty-eight-gun frigate, left the Chesapeake for the Mediterranean; just outside the Capes of Virginia, the Leopard, a British vessel of fifty guns, came up and demanded several men as deserters, and quietly prepared for action. On the refusal of Commodore Barron, she opened fire, pouring a broadside into the Chesapeake, and for a quarter of an hour kept up a steady fire; the Chesapeake, unable to return her fire, at last struck, having had three men killed and eighteen wounded, and the vessel, masts, and rigging greatly cut up. The men taken from her were tried, and one of them hung in cold blood. This outrage roused the indignation of the whole country. The President, by a proclamation, forbade all English armed vessels from entering any port of the United States, and prohibited under penalties all intercourse with them. The English government endeavored to allay the storm by recalling the Admiral, removing the Captain of the Leopard, and restoring the pretended deserters; for in almost every case the claim was a falsehood got up for the occasion, and the men taken Americans.

On the 22d of December, 1806, Congress laid an embargo, prohibiting all American vessels from sailing to foreign ports, and excluding all foreign vessels from taking out cargoes. This step caused great distress in the country, and roused a strong feeling of opposition, especially in New England. England and France were not affected by

it, so that it did not produce the expected result, and it was finally repealed in 1809.

Illinois Territory was organized about this time, embracing not only the present State, but also Wisconsin. Thus terminated Jefferson's presidential career. He long continued to be regarded as the head of his party, and is still looked up to with reverence, as the most thoroughly democratic expounder of national policy. As Washington had declined to serve more than two terms, Mr. Jefferson did not become a candidate; but prepared to retire to private life, having, from the opening of the Continental Congress, devoted himself almost entirely to the cause of his country. As one of the greatest American statesmen, his influence still remains. In the election which took place, there was scarcely any opposition. James Madison, of Virginia, put forward as candidate for the presidency, and George Clinton, of New York, nominated for the vice-presidency, were elected almost unanimously.

Among the important events which marked the administration of Jefferson, was the successful operation of a steamboat, by Robert Fulton, in 1807. Many, from the time of Fitch and Rumsey, had endeavored to apply steam to navigation, but Fulton was the first who so far succeeded as to run a steamboat on the Hudson to Albany.

His triumph revolutionized the whole navigation of the world.

CHAPTER V.

JAMES MADISON, FOURTH PRESIDENT—1809-1817.

Trouble in Pennsylvania—The President and Little Belt—Indian Troubles in the West—War with England—Hull's Surrender—Operations on the New York Frontiers—Queenstown, La Colle—Victories at Sea—Proctor's Victories in the West—Repulsed at Fort Meigs—Toronto—The Niagara—Perry's Victory—Battle of the Thames—Tecumseh slain—The Creek War—General Jackson—Battle of the Chippewa—Invasion of Maryland—Capture of Washington—English repulsed at Baltimore—Macomb and McDonough at Plattsburg—Jackson in Florida—Battle of New Orleans—Peace proclaimed—Final battles at Sea.

Mr. Madison selected for his cabinet, Robert Smith, of Maryland, Secretary of State; Albert Gallatin, Secretary of the Treasury; William Eustis, Secretary of War; and Paul Hamilton, of South Carolina, Secretary of the Navy.

The great question was the relation of America to England. England had never forgiven the Revolutionary War, and, as we have seen, had done many unfriendly acts. Still Mr. Madison, sustained by the voice of the country, was reluctant to resort to hostilities. Anxious to escape the embarrassment of the embargo and non-importation Acts, he began secret negotiations with David M. Erskine, then British minister at Washington. Erskine engaged himself to obtain a repeal of the orders in council, so far as they related to the United States. But the English Government disavowed Erskine's acts, and matters remained in the same uncertain position, non-intercourse being rigidly enforced.

France made some overtures, but soon fell back, and both powers continued to intercept American merchantmen.

At home, some troubles arose in 1809. A case at law, arising out of the capture of a vessel during the Revolutionary War, involved the Government of the United States in a contest with the State of Pennsylvania. The Governor of the State ordered out the militia, and placed a guard under the command of Captain Bright, to prevent the United States marshal from serving any process of the United States court; the marshal on his side called for two thousand men to aid him, and the Governor of Pennsylvania, finding matters serious, yielded, but this did not end the matter. Bright and his militiamen were arrested, and tried for resisting the marshal, and after a long trial, convicted. The whole affair thus resulted in confirming the powers of the General Government.

In 1811, the Territory of Orleans was at last made into a State, under the name of Louisiana, although not without great opposition on the part of the Federalists, who denied that Congress had any power to create States out of the newly-acquired territory, so jealously did our ancestors watch every movement of the new government, for fear it might, in an unguarded moment, deprive them of the liberty they prized so highly. After this time what had been called the District of Louisiana was called Missouri.

Application was also made to erect Mississippi into a State, but it was deferred, owing to the necessity of satisfying the State of Georgia, in regard to her claims over its territory.

The negotiations with France and England had failed to obtain a repeal of the obnoxious decrees and orders in council. The American navy was too small to defend the immense number of American ships

from all English cruisers, for even then American ships were found in every sea. A lesson was, however, taught them on the 16th of May, 1811. The frigate President, Commodore Rogers, was pursued for a time by the English sloop-of-war Little Belt, Captain Bingham. When the President hailed the Little Belt, she replied with a cannon-ball. The American vessel, zealous for the national honor, prepared for action. In a moment the vessels were engaged; but after one or two broadsides, the Little Belt had all her guns silenced, and her decks strewed with the dead and wounded, no less than eleven men having been killed and twenty-one wounded in this brief action, which left the Little Belt little better than a wreck. The President then hailed again, and this time received an answer. In the morning, Captain Rogers sent down to offer assistance, which the Little Belt declined, and sailed off as best she could. This affair excited both countries, and each nation justified its own vessel.

It was evident that war might break out at any moment. Great Britain had never ceased to tamper with the Western Indians, who saw, with hatred and alarm, the rapid increase of the States. There was at this time a Shawnee chief, famous alike for bravery in battle and eloquence in council. This was Tecumseh. With his brother, a noted medicine-man, commonly known as the Prophet, he went from tribe to tribe, urging the Indians to cast away the deadly firewater of the whites, and all European goods, and to set their faces sternly against Christianity and civilization, all alike being but devices for the destruction of the red race. The Wyandots, of Sandusky, a turbulent and powerful tribe, were the first to join him. Then Tecumseh prepared for actual war. His operations had not been unwatched. General William Henry Harrison, then governor of Indiana Territory, invited

Tecumseh to a conference at Vincennes. The chieftain came, but behaved with so much haughtiness that General Harrison broke off the conference, and prepared to meet him in the field. In November, with a small force of regulars, Indiana and Kentucky militia, he advanced upon the Prophet's town, at the junction of the Tippecanoe and Wabash. When he came within a few miles of the town, the principal chief came out with proffers of peace. General Harrison was too cautious to be deceived, and prepared for action. When, at four the next morning (Nov. 7), the gloom of night was deepened by the fierce yells of the savages rushing furiously on his camp, Harrison was ready to receive them. He maintained order, and met the assault with steady courage. The bloody battle raged till the sun rose; then the baffled savages withdrew utterly repulsed; the Americans lost sixty-two killed and about twice as many wounded. The loss of the Indians, who were more exposed, was much greater. The battle of Tippecanoe was one of the fiercest and hardest battles ever fought with the red men, and it gave Harrison great and deserved renown. Tecumseh was not present in the action, and the Prophet was on a hill going through his incantations, while the warriors were battling fiercely below. Harrison's loss had, however, weakened him, so that after burning the Prophet's town, and establishing forts, he returned to Vincennes.

The West, roused by this Indian trouble, which they ascribed to English influence, were eager for war. The South also desired it, but New England still advocated peace, exciting the contempt of the English, who said that the United States could not be kicked into a war. On the 4th of April, 1812, Congress laid another embargo on all vessels in American waters; and on the 18th of June, President Madison, by the authority of Congress, declared war against Great Britain.

Justified as the act was, it was rash, for the country was utterly unprepared, and communication through the country was very slow. The President had authority to enlist twenty-five thousand men, to accept fifty thousand volunteers, and to call out a hundred thousand militia for the defense of the sea coast and the frontiers. Henry Dearborn, of New Hampshire, an officer of the Revolution, was appointed commander-in-chief, with the rank of Major-General, with Wilkinson, Hampton, Hull, and Bloomfield, as brigadiers.

General Hull was Governor of Michigan, and when war was declared, he was marching against the Indians. He was ordered to invade Canada, but before he was aware that war had been declared, the British knew it, and seized his military stores. Undeterred by this, he crossed the Detroit river, and advanced on Fort Malden, but by delay he lost the opportunity of carrying the place. More active, the English took Mackinac, with the help of the Indians, who now rallied in force to the British standard, led by Tecumseh. Hull found himself cut off from supplies, and a detachment under Van Horn, sent out by him, was cut off near Raisin river, by Tecumseh. The American general resolved to fall back to Detroit, and sent Colonel Miller to open a road for his convoy. General Proctor had joined Tecumseh, and taken up a strong post at Maguazo. Colonel Miller attacked them with great skill, and after an obstinate struggle, forced their position. But his victory was fruitless. Hull was completely encircled. Meanwhile, General Brock, Governor of Upper Canada, reached Malden with reinforcements. Hull then retreated to Detroit, followed by Brock, at the head of the whole British and Indian force, numbering thirteen hundred. He summoned Hull to surrender, threatening, as usual with English commanders, to give the men up to every species of Indian cruelty if he refused. Hull

called in all his troops, and hung out a white flag. On the 16th of August, 1812, he surrendered the fort, garrison, stores, and the Territory of Michigan. As the tidings of this terrible reverse spread, the country was filled with indignation. Hull was tried, and having been found guilty of cowardice, was sentenced to be shot, but was pardoned by the President.

Though hostilities had begun, negotiations were still kept up, and an armistice was soon agreed to. England, however, still insisted on her right to stop American vessels, and impress all whom any English officer might suspect to be British subjects. How terribly American shipping was injured by this wanton and cruel practice, may be seen by the fact that, as Lord Castlereagh, an English minister, admitted, there were no less than seventeen hundred bona fide American citizens, who had thus been kidnapped, and were now compelled to serve against their will in the British navy. The real number was three thousand, and twenty-five hundred refusing to fight against their own country, were confined with every ill-treatment in Dartmoor prison, England.

The American vessels on the ocean were scattered. The Nautilus was soon taken by a British fleet, and the Constitution escaped capture only by the wonderful skill and seamanship of Captain Hull. The first naval action occurred off the Great Banks of Newfoundland. The British sloop-of-war Alert, of thirty-two guns, falling in, on the 13th of August, with the Essex, Captain Porter, attacked her, thinking her to be a merchantman. But when the Essex had for eight minutes showed her metal, the Alert struck.

On the afternoon of the 19th of the same month, the Constitution, Captain Hull, discovered the English frigate Guerriere, and gave chase. Her Captain, Dacres, had boasted of his desire to meet an American

man-of-war. As the Constitution bore down, the Guerriere opened fire, but the Constitution came on grim and silent, till Hull got into the position he wished; then he opened. By the light of the moon the battle went on. Broadside after broadside poured in upon the Guerriere, as fast as mortal men could send them. In half an hour's time, the Guerriere was little better than a wreck, and Captain Dacres, having lost more than a hundred in killed and wounded, surrendered to Hull, who had lost only fourteen killed and wounded. The Guerriere could not be taken into port, she was set on fire and blown up. All America rung with exultation over this victory. Congress voted Captain Hull their thanks, and gave him and his gallant crew $50,000 as prize money. In England, the news caused the utmost mortification. That a British frigate had been taken in a fair fight, was the terrible fact which they could not deny. America at once took her place in naval history, as one to compete with England for supremacy. Other victories followed. The British sloop-of-war Frolic, of eighteen guns, fell in with the United States sloop-of-war Wasp, of the same number of guns. After a fierce and bloody fight, Captain Jones boarded the Frolic, to find her deck covered with the dead and wounded. He lowered the English flag himself, but such are the chances of war, before he could get his own ship and his prize into order after the action, the Poictiers, a British seventy-four, bore down and captured them. Then Captain Decatur, in the United States, forty-four guns, met the Macedonian, carrying forty-nine. The action began, the vessels passing each other for an hour, keeping up their fire; the American firing like a sharp-shooter, true to aim. Just as the Macedonian supposed the United States had given up, she took up a raking position across the stern of the Macedonian. Then the British frigate struck her colors, having received a

hundred balls in her hull, and had a hundred and four of her crew killed and wounded, though, on the United States, there were only twelve. Before the close of the year, the Constitution, now under Commodore Bainbridge, engaged the Java, of thirty-eight guns, and by his true and rapid fire absolutely cut her up so that when she attempted to run down and board the Constitution, her foremast fell, her main-opmast came down, and her bowsprit was sent flying by the American guns. Spar after spar was cut away ; her Captain killed, but her Lieutenant kept up the fight manfully for a time, then struck. Bainbridge had to blow her up, there was nothing left to take to port.

On land, the Government, by the utmost exertions, had collected troops on the frontier at various points. General Dearborn stationed on Lake Champlain an army of three thousand regulars, and two thousand militia ; two thousand militia were posted at Sackett's Harbor, and six thousand more, under General Van Rensselaer, were at Buffalo. The New York frontier was thus protected from invasion. Besides this, Commodore Chauncey had been sent to Lake Ontario, to fit out a flotilla, and check the operations of the British fleet in those waters. He was soon in force on the Lake, and drove the British fleet into Kingston. He then endeavored to make his little squadron a fleet ready for any emergency. Commodore Elliot was equally busy on Lake Erie.

It was evident that the real work of the war must soon come off. The English opened the campaign by attacking Ogdensburg, New York, in October, 1812, but after a short and decisive action, they were repulsed by General Brown and his militia, and fell back.

On the 13th of October, General Van Rensselaer attempted to cross the Niagara. His first detachment of two hundred and twenty-

five men, under Colonel Van Rensselaer, crossed to attack the British posted at Queenstown. After much loss from a shower of musketry and grape, they effected a landing, and, led up the rocks by Captains Wool and Ogilvie, after the Colonel had fallen, they drove the English behind a stone house, and silenced all their batteries. Then the roll of the drum was heard, and General Brock came up with the Forty-ninth British regiment, and forced the little American detachment to the very verge of the precipice. One officer actually hoisted the white flag, but Wool tore it away, and by a desperate charge drove the British back, and when their general, Van Rensselaer, was in vain endeavoring to send over fresh troops, the militia declined to leave the State, and only a thousand, under General Wadsworth, crossed. At three o'clock in the afternoon the enemy rallied, and, aided by several hundred Indians, attacked the American lines. With severe loss, the little force, under Lieutenant-Colonel Scott, repulsed them. But the English were constantly bringing up fresh troops. An hour later, reinforced by eight hundred men under General Sheaffe, they again advanced. General Wadsworth, with men exhausted by a day's constant fighting, without food, and no hope of reinforcement or relief, had no alternative. He made a gallant fight for a time, but as he could not retreat for want of boats, he at last surrendered, many, after laying down their arms, to be butchered by the savages whom England was not ashamed to array against civilized men. This gallant but unfortunate day cost America eleven hundred in killed, wounded, or taken; while the English loss was comparatively small.

Disgusted at this reverse, and the miserable inefficiency and incapacity manifested in all departments, Van Rensselaer resigned, and was succeeded by General Smythe, of Virginia.

The conduct of the Administration was far from creditable. The War Department planned no campaign, and raised no army. It invested the generals in command of the several divisions with discretionary powers, and left everything to them, and the militia were called out without any object, or any orders to guide them. The whole year was spent in fruitless marches and countermarches, or in unimportant skirmishes.

In October, Dearborn occupied the Indian town of St. Regis, which lies partly in New York and partly in Canada, but advancing, he was defeated in a movement against La Colle, and a month later, lost a detachment in an action at Salmon river.

At Niagara, General Smythe issued a pompous address, and finally sent a detachment under General Winder across the river. One detachment under King gallantly carried a British battery, but being unsupported, at last retreated, leaving a part to surrender to the English. In the West, Zachary Taylor, at Fort Harrison, on the Wabash, found himself and his little garrison of fifty invested, in September, by several hundred Indians, who attacked with great fury. Steadiness and intrepidity disconcerted the savage foe, who drew off after heavy loss.

Some expeditions took the field against the Indians, but beyond destroying some of their towns near Peoria, no good was effected.

This virtually closed the campaign of 1812. Amid the excitement of war, a presidential election had taken place. Mr. Madison was again put forward as President, with Elbridge Gerry as Vice-President. The candidates of the opposition, with whom the Federalists operated, were De Witt Clinton, of New York, and Jared Ingersoll. Madison was re-elected by a large majority.

CAMPAIGN OF 1813.

THE operations in the following year began in the West. The army of the West, under General Harrison, was near the head of Lake Erie, acquiring the discipline and skill necessary for action. The great object was to recover Michigan, and wipe out the disgrace of Hull's surrender. Kentucky, Ohio, and other States, sent their brave, though inexperienced soldiers. On the 10th of January, General Winchester, with eight hundred men, reached the Maumee Rapids. Hearing that a British and Indian party had taken post on the river Raisin, twenty-five miles south of Detroit, he sent forward a detachment which dislodged the enemy, and held the place till he came up.

The English general in that department was the active Proctor, acting under Sir George Prevost, now commander of the British forces in Canada. Proctor, hearing, at Malden, of Winchester's success, and of his unguarded camp, gathered a force of fifteen hundred whites and Indians, and crossing on the ice, suddenly attacked the American camp at sunrise, on the morning of the 22d. Though previously warned, Winchester took no precautions. Proctor approached by night, in the most profound silence, and at daybreak opened from artillery that he had planted on Winchester's right, then charged with his regulars, Indians at the same time assailing both American flanks. Though taken so unawares, Winchester fought bravely, but with severe loss, till, falling a prisoner into the hands of the Indians, he agreed to surrender his whole force, on Proctor's promise that they should be protected from the Indians; but the English commander, fearful of Harrison's approach, marched back to Malden, leaving the sick and wounded Amer-

icans without a guard. His Indians at once returned, and falling upon the Americans, slaughtered and scalped many, hurrying others off to Detroit, to be held for ransom, or into the woods, to be the sport of their savage cruelty.

Harrison, marching up to join Winchester, heard of this disaster, and falling back, erected Fort Meigs, and resolved to hold that position at all hazards, despairing of being able to assume the offensive, as the terms of many of the men were just out.

Madison, now re-elected for another term, reorganized his cabinet, and endeavored to infuse more energy into the War Department. It was not to be merely a war with Canada, and on the sea. English fleets blockaded New York, Delaware, and Chesapeake Bays, and ravaged the whole coast.

Harrison had foreseen an English attack on Fort Meigs. It came on the 28th of April. On that day, Proctor invested it with two thousand English and Indians, throwing up batteries on both sides of the river. On the fifth day of the siege, the beleaguered force were cheered by the approach of General Greene Clay of Kentucky, with twelve hundred men, whose impetuous charge scattered the English, leaving a battery in their hands as a trophy. But Clay's inexperienced soldiers forgot to spike the guns, and while scattered in pursuit of the flying foe, were suddenly surrounded and captured by the rest of Proctor's force. That general then attempted to resume the siege, but his Indians, content, as usual, with one battle, wished to return home, and soon withdrew in such numbers that Proctor abandoned the siege and returned to Malden.

The army in New York also took the field to invade Canada. Early in May, Dearborn resolved to attempt the capture of York, now

Toronto, Canada, the principal depot of supplies for the British posts in the West. Commodore Chauncey took the troops on board a Sackett's Harbor, and on the 27th of April, they landed on the beach at York, under a heavy fire from British and Indians, under Colonel Sheaffe. Led by the brave General Pike, the Americans drove the English before them. After destroying one of the enemy's batteries, they were pressing on the main works, when a terrific explosion took place. A magazine blew up, hurling fragments of stone and wood in all directions. Numbers were killed on both sides, and General Pike was mortally wounded. In the confusion, Sheaffe escaped towards Kingston. The Americans captured York, with all the stores laid up there by the British, and found a fresh American scalp suspended over the speaker's chair in the Parliament House. Commodore Chauncey burned the Parliament House, and destroyed much war material that could not be removed, and some vessels on the stocks. The victorious forces then returned to Sackett's Harbor, with a large quantity of captured ammunition and stores.

Having obtained reinforcements, Chauncey sailed to the Niagara river, to invest Fort George. On the 27th of May, the advance, under Colonel Scott and Major Forsythe, landed, followed by Boyd, Winder, and Chandler's brigades. The enemy abandoned their works without waiting to fire a shot, but treacherously laid trains to blow up the magazine. Fortunately, the Americans entered in time to extinguish the match before it reached the powder. General Vincent, the English commander, deeming Fort George untenable, retreated to Burlington heights, pursued by the Americans. Instead of advancing in person with all his force, General Dearborn sent on General Winder,

with one brigade, and soon after detached General Chandler to support him. The latter, taking command, resolved to attack the enemy in the morning, and encamped without sufficient precautions on the banks of Stony Creek.

Vincent saw his opportunity, and, as soon as it was dark, made a sudden attack on the American camp. The sentinels were bayoneted, the guards passed, but the British Indians gave a yell that roused the Americans, who were sleeping on their arms. A strange irregular fight took place, in which Generals Chandler and Winder, getting by mistake among British soldiers, were carried off by them as prisoners in their precipitate retreat, their general, Vincent, being lost in the darkness, and found next day at a distance without sword or hat.

In this rather curious battle, about a hundred men were lost on each side.

As soon as it became known in Canada that Chauncey had sailed from Sackett's Harbor, General Sir George Prevost sailed from Kingston, to attack that centre of American operations. His force consisted of seven hundred men. A body of militia under Colonel Mills, were stationed on the shore to dispute the landing of the enemy; but they fled in spite of their commander, who was killed while trying to rally them. Some block-houses held by Colonel Backus, and a small body of regulars, held Prevost in check, and poured in deadly volleys on his exposed men, so that when General Brown, who had gathered a few of the militia, attacked Prevost in the rear, the British general retreated in all haste to his ships, with no consolation except that of seeing the American store-houses in flames, an over-zealous officer having set them on fire on a false report of Brown's total defeat.

The English had not given up their operations in the West. On

the 21st of July, Proctor, aided by Tecumseh, appeared before Fort Meigs, at the head of a force of British and Indians amounting to four thousand. General Clay was in command, and he made so vigorous a defense, that Proctor, leaving his Indian ally to watch the fort, attempted, with thirteen hundred British and Indians, to carry Fort Stephenson, at Lower Sandusky, a slight work held by only a hundred and fifty men, under the command of Major Croghan. Proctor demanded an instant surrender, threatening, in case of refusal, to give the garrison up to all the savage barbarities of his Indians. Croghan rejected the summons with scorn. Prevost opened with his heavy guns, and having made a breach, attempted to take the fort by assault, but Croghan planted his only cannon to sweep the gap, and the English column was met by such a shower of grape, and volley of rifles, that they fled panic-stricken, leaving a hundred and fifty dead or wounded. This gallant defense made young Croghan illustrious—he was but twenty-one—and damped the zeal of the Indians in the English interest.

Lake Erie was now to be the scene of naval operations. Commodore Perry had been sent to fit out an American squadron on that lake. During the summer of 1813, he launched on those inland waters a squadron of nine vessels, mounting fifty-four guns, to hold in check the British naval force, and co-operate with the American army in any operations near the shores of the lake. On the 4th of August, 1813, he sailed out to seek the British fleet, under Commodore Barclay, consisting of six vessels, but carrying more guns than Perry's flotilla. Not finding Barclay, Perry retired to Put-in Bay. To his joy, Barclay at last appeared. Perry stood out to meet him, and obtained the weather gage, the advantage of the wind in his favor. Then hoisting

his flag with Lawrence's dying words for a motto, "Don't give up the ship," he bore down on the enemy. The Lawrence, Perry's flag-ship, was attacked by two of the enemy, and so cut up that she was a mere wreck. Then Perry, leaving her in an open boat, through a hot fire from every part of the enemy's line, carried his flag to the Niagara. The battle went on furiously, the smaller American vessels coming up at last. Perry managed with singular skill, and kept up such a continued and deadly fire, that at four o'clock every one of the British flags struck, without their having been able to take possession of the Lawrence, which actually lay at their mercy. Then Perry sent to General Harrison the famous dispatch beginning with the words, "We have met the enemy, and they are ours."

The influence of this victory, the Battle of Lake Erie, was tremendous. The capture of a whole British flotilla, after a severe action, was in itself a triumph that raised the American fame throughout the world. Its effect on the military operations was decisive. It gave the Americans complete control of Lake Erie. It cut off Prevost from Canada, and he accordingly retreated in all haste, crossed over the Detroit, dismantled Malden, and endeavored to reach a strong position, where reinforcements could reach him. General Harrison, aided by Perry's fleet, was in hot pursuit. Detroit was recovered after having been in the enemy's hands from the outset of the war. On the 4th of October, General Harrison came up with the British rear, near the Moravian town, on the Thames, eighty miles from Detroit. Prevost found that he must fight. He drew up his force of British and Indians, across a narrow strip of land, between a swamp and the river. The next day the battle began. Proctor poured in a volley on Harrison's advance, but Johnson's mounted rifles swept through the

British line like a tornado, routing it so completely that no attempt was ever made to rally, and Proctor himself fled with a few followers, to be seen no more on the field. Tecumseh, with his Indians, made a better stand. Posted in a marshy spot, they were not so easily routed. Johnson dismounted his men, and broke through to their rear; even then they would not yield, but hurled themselves on the infantry, till checked by old General Shelby. Amid the din of battle rose the voice of Tecumseh, encouraging his braves, till he fell, surrounded by the flower of his warriors.

This battle of the Thames, the glory of Harrison and Colonel Richard M. Johnson, by whose hand Tecumseh is supposed to have fallen, completely broke the power of the English in the West. Michigan was recovered, the Indians completely crushed, and Upper Canada menaced from the South and West. All that Hull had lost was now regained, and even the cannon he surrendered, trophies of Saratoga and Yorktown, were again restored to American custody.

But if the Indian enemy at the North was checked, the influence of Tecumseh and the Prophet had worked mischief at the South. That chief had, in 1812, visited the Creeks, Cherokees, and Choctaws. The young Creek braves rallied to his call. The settlements in Tennessee, Georgia, and Mississippi, were ravaged by the savage foe, who obtained arms and ammunition from the British. Emboldened by success, they next attacked Fort Mimms, in August, 1813, taking it by surprise, and putting the garrison to death, only seventeen out of three hundred and fifty escaping. The threatened States then put forces in the field; Tennessee in the van, with her brave sons, under General Jackson. The Choctaws joined the Americans, and did good service. On the 2d of November, General Coffee advanced on the Creek town,

Tallushatchee. They did not wait to be attacked, but went out to meet him with such fury, that they were with difficulty repulsed. Even then they kept up the battle, refusing quarter till they were almost all killed. A few days after, Jackson, protecting the friendly Creeks of Talladega, fought another desperate battle. At the close of November, General Floyd, of Georgia, obtained another signal victory at Autossee, the Creek metropolis, on the Tallapoosa. The Indians were utterly defeated, the King and two hundred of his braves slain, and the town given to the flames.

Thus far, the inhuman English policy of arming savages against the American frontiers, so as to weaken and divide the national forces, had utterly failed. It brought destruction only on those who had been lured on by the English envoys.

Meanwhile, the American commander-in-chief, General Dearborn, lay inactive in Canada. But the English were not disposed to allow an invader to hold a position on their soil undisturbed. Colonel Bishop, with a small force, determined to operate in the American rear, and cut off Dearborn's supplies. He encircled his camp, occupied Fort Erie, and crossing over to Black Rock, on the American side, on the 11th of June, dispersed the militia, and destroyed all the cannon and provisions stored there. A body of regulars, militia, and Indians, however, hurried up from Buffalo, and a second engagement took place, in which Colonel Bishop was killed, and his troops compelled to retreat.

Other minor operations were carried on by both sides, but Dearborn was not relieved. To open communications, he sent Colonel Boerstler, to attack a British force at Beaver Dams, collect provisions, and encourage friendly Canadians. That officer, attacked in the woods by a few regu-

lars under Lieutenant Fitzgibbon, and some Indians, Boerstler supposed that he was surrounded by a British army, and surrendered with his whole force.

Colonel Winfield Scott, convoyed by Chauncey, made another dash at York, in July, destroyed more British stores, and rescued some American prisoners.

General Dearborn, inefficient from age, was recalled in June, and General Wilkinson appointed to command the army of the centre.

A new and more vigorous plan of action was projected by General Armstrong, Secretary of War. It was resolved to capture Montreal. Early in November, seven thousand men under Wilkinson moved down the St. Lawrence in boats from French Mills. The British were on the alert, and annoyed him so much from the shore, and from gunboats in his rear, that he was compelled to land and come to action. The battle of Chrysler's Field was severely contested—the Americans losing General Covington and three hundred men—but enabled him to advance to St. Regis. There he learned that the army under Hampton, which was to co-operate with him, had fallen back; it had been checked in its advance by a small Canadian force under Salaberry, at Chateaugay, on the 21st of October. Wilkinson, finding Hampton indisposed to co-operate with him, retired to winter quarters, nothing at all having been effected.

General Harrison, dissatisfied with the state of affairs on the New York frontier, returned to the West, leaving the command on the Niagara frontier to General McClure. The American forces there were chiefly militia, and when the time of service for which they had been called out expired, they left, refusing to stay even for the large bounty offered. Unable to hold his ground in Canada, General McClure de-

stroyed Fort George, and returned to New York State, having first wantonly set fire to the town of Newark. Provoked at this, Prevost, the English commander, crossed the river, took Fort Niagara, put the garrison to the sword, and burned every village up to Niagara Falls, while another detachment of his army gave Black Rock and Buffalo to the flames, and destroyed a part of Perry's fleet. Prevost then, in a proclamation, justified his conduct, but offered to conduct the war on more humane principles, if the Americans would pursue a similar course. And for all the pillaging and incendiary expeditions of the English against the American towns and cities, England always gave this same excuse.

Thus ended the campaign of 1813 on land.

On the ocean there were many engagements, some of them severe naval battles between the cruisers of the rival powers. But the chief service of the British fleet was the blockade of American ports ; and on the Southern coast, where Admiral Cockburn, known as the Henroost Admiral, commanded, they plundered the country in a most unheard-of fashion.

The American shipping in the Delaware River was destroyed by this buccaneering admiral, in March, 1813, and the next month he cannonaded the town of Lewiston. Entering the Chesapeake, he plundered and burned Frenchtown, Havre de Grace, Georgetown, and Fredericktown. While attempting to reach Norfolk, his fleet was repulsed by the Americans upon Craney Island, under the command of Major Faulkner.

Few of the American frigates could get to sea. One of these, the Hornet, Captain Lawrence, in February, discovered the Peacock, an English brig-of-war, at anchor near Demerara. Although of superior

force, Lawrence cleared for action, and ordered his men to quarters. The two vessels exchanged broadsides, but Lawrence soon ran him close on board on the starboard quarter, and kept up such a telling fire, that in fifteen minutes the British commander struck, hoisting a signal of distress, for she was actually cut to pieces: her mainmast went by the board as she struck, and before all her crew could be got off she went down, carrying three of the Hornet's men with her.

The success of the American navy in the previous engagements had elated them greatly, and led to rashness. The Shannon, a British vessel, had been cruising for some time off Boston Harbor, defying any American vessel in port to come out and meet her. Captain Lawrence, just appointed to the Chesapeake, stung at this challenge, resolved to accept it. The equipment of his vessel was not complete, he had not his full complement of officers, his crew had just been shipped, and had received little drilling, but he resolved to meet the Shannon, and sailed out, June 1st, 1813. The Shannon opened, doing fearful execution, but the Chesapeake answered with terrible broadsides. At last, however, she got locked to the Shannon by one of her anchors, so that she was exposed to a raking fire. Captain Lawrence was mortally wounded just as he was about to board. There were no officers left to lead on the men, and in the confusion, Captain Brooke boarded the Chesapeake, which struck, in spite of Captain Lawrence's dying words: "Don't give up the ship." This sea-fight is one of the bloodiest on record. It lasted only fifteen minutes, yet in that brief space, a hundred and forty-six were killed and wounded on the Chesapeake, and eighty-three on the Shannon.

CAMPAIGN OF 1814.

THE first operations on land, in 1814, were in the Creek Territory. The movements in the previous year had been in a manner independent and without concert, two from Tennessee, one from Georgia, and one from Mississippi. The war had not, therefore, been brought to a decisive point.

As these columns after gaining victory retired, the Creeks rallied, and very soon began to assume the offensive. They resolved to attack Floyd and the Georgia troops, and took the field against them; but the resolute Jackson was again approaching Emuckfau, where they were posted. The Creeks at once changed their plans, and on the 21st of January, at dawn, attacked Jackson on his left flank. A warm action ensued, but in half an hour the Creeks were repulsed and driven back two miles. There they took up a position too strong to be rashly assailed. Finding that Jackson would not attack, they again advanced upon him, but General Coffee turned their left flank, and by a splendid piece of strategy cut off a large body of them. Their main attack on Jackson's line was stubborn and persistent; but a general charge again routed them. Jackson's army was, however, so weakened that he fell back to Fort Strother, keeping up a running fight almost all the way.

No sooner were the Creeks relieved from fear of further movements on Jackson's part than they turned their whole force on Floyd, attacking him on the 27th with great spirit. After heavy loss on both sides they were routed.

Jackson was soon ready to make a decisive campaign. The Creeks had intrenched themselves for their last stand at the Great Bend of

the Tallapoosa. Their position was defended by a breastwork thrown up with great care and judgment.

On the 27th of March, Jackson, with about three thousand men, drew up in view of the enemy for a final struggle. Having dispatched General Coffee to encircle the Bend on the river-side with his mounted men and friendly Indians, he moved to the charge of the breastwork. The regulars, led by Major Montgomery, scaled the rampart, and though he fell, they poured over the intrenchment and drove the Indians to the shelter of the bushes. Routed from this, they fled to the river, to be met by Coffee's withering fire. But they would not yield, and even fired on a flag sent to offer them terms of surrender. Then Jackson fired the brushwood, and amid the glare and blaze most of them perished, few escaping the trap into which they had thrown themselves.

This victory gave a death-blow to the power and hopes of the Creeks. They had fought bravely; four hundred and fifty-seven warriors lay dead on the ground—only four were taken.

After recruiting his army, Jackson, effecting a junction with the Georgia troops, moved upon the Hickory Ground, where the remnant of the warriors had gathered. But their spirit was broken. As the army approached a deputation of chiefs came out to treat of peace. Weathersford, the most cruel and relentless, who commanded in the massacre at Fort Mimms, addressed Jackson with the greatest eloquence:

"I am in your power," said the chief; "do with me as you please. I am a soldier. I have done the white people all the harm I could. I have fought them, and fought them bravely. There was a time when I had a choice and could have answered you; I have none now—even

hope is ended. Once I could animate my warriors; but I cannot animate the dead. My warriors can no longer hear my voice; their bones are at Talladega, Tallushatchee, Emuckfau, and Tohopeka. Whilst there was a chance of success I never left my post, nor supplicated peace. But my people are gone; and I now ask it for my nation and myself."

Jackson had determined not to spare this man; but his noble attitude disarmed his resentment. Peace was made; the Creeks retired beyond the Coosa, and a line of posts secured their fidelity.

The Indian allies whom England had roused against American homes at the North and South were crushed. The war was to be carried on by civilized men. England now made overtures of peace, led less by any effect of the American operations than by the state of affairs in Europe. Madison sent out commissioners to negotiate, but before a treaty was signed Napoleon was overthrown and sent to Elba. England, thus relieved of her great enemy in Europe, abandoned all ideas of peace with the United States. Instead of appointing commissioners to meet those sent by the American Government, she sent over large bodies of her veteran troops, who were not immediately needed in Europe. The American navy was scattered or broken up, or shut up in the harbors by the British fleets, which blockaded the whole coast. Everything served to announce that the real fighting of the war was about to commence.

Although a large party in the United States opposed the war, and crippled the power of the Government, preparations were made for the great struggle. The army on the Niagara frontier was reorganized and placed under the command of Major-General Brown, under whom Scott and Ripley served as brigadiers. The earlier months of the

year had not been marked by any important action. Wilkinson was repulsed in an action with the enemy at La Colle, on the 30th of March, and in consequence lost his command.

On the 5th of May, a British force of three thousand men landed from a squadron before Oswego, which had none to defend it but Colonel Mitchell, with three hundred men. The object of the expedition was to destroy the naval and military stores deposited at Oswego Falls; but Mitchell held them at bay for two days, and so discouraged them that they were afraid to push in land. They finally withdrew on the 7th, having lost two hundred and thirty-five men.

When General Brown took command, he marched from Sackett's Harbor to the Niagara. On the morning of the 3d of July, his advance, under Scott and Ripley, crossed the river and carried Fort Erie. The garrison fell back to General Riall's entrenched camp at Chippewa. On the 5th, Scott drove in the British outposts, and Riall, who had crossed the Chippewa and dispersed the American volunteers before him, was driven back by Scott over the river at the point of the bayonet. In this sanguinary battle, Riall lost five hundred men. He then retreated to Burlington Heights, where he was joined by General Drummond, who at once assumed command.

Now greatly outnumbering Brown, Drummond advanced to meet the Americans. To prevent the loss of his magazines, Brown sent forward Scott with his brigade and some artillery. About a mile from Chippewa, Scott came upon Riall's whole army. It was near sunset, but the armies engaged within sight and hearing of Niagara Falls. From sunset to midnight the battle raged. Scott suffered severely, but he maintained his ground, awaiting aid, till by a diversion he routed the Canadian militia, and captured Riall himself. At nightfall

Brown came up with Ripley's brigade, and threw himself in front of Scott. A British park of artillery had galled Scott terribly. Brown ordered Colonel Miller to storm it. With the simple answer, "We will try," Miller pushed up the hill, and drove the men from the guns at the point of the bayonet, exposed the whole time to a terrible fire.

That night the English advanced stealthily to recover their guns, but soon recoiled before the American musketry. In half an hour they again advanced, but after a severe conflict, in which Scott took them in flank, they were again driven back. Rallying with desperate energy, they made a third attempt, in which bayonets were frequently crossed, but it was all in vain. Drummond, after losing nearly nine hundred men, at last drew off, leaving the Americans in quiet possession of the field, but with nearly as heavy a loss. Generals Brown and Scott, who had both been wounded in this desperate battle, left the field, and the command devolved on Ripley. That general, after awaiting for half an hour any further movement of the enemy, returned to his camp. The cannon so gallantly captured were left on the field, as he had no means of removing them.

The American army then fell back to Fort Erie, where General Gaines assumed command. Drummond was not yet discouraged. With a force of five thousand men, he again advanced, and on the 4th of August invested Fort Erie. At midnight, on the 15th of August, he assaulted it in three columns. Gaines repulsed two of these columns, but the third, with daring intrepidity, effected a lodgment in one bastion, and held their position till a quantity of cartridges exploded. Fearing that a mine was about to be sprung on them they retreated. This assault cost Drummond nearly another thousand men, but he kept

up the siege, till Brown, in a sortie, destroyed his advanced works, blew up the magazines, spiked the guns, took four hundred prisoners, and drove Drummond towards Chippewa. Then learning that General Izard was on his way with reinforcements, Drummond retreated to Fort George.

Fort Erie was, however, too exposed to hold safely; it was accordingly dismantled and destroyed in November, and the American forces, crossing the Niagara, took up their winter quarters at Buffalo, Black Rock, and Batavia.

These were not the only operations on the northern frontier. When Izard marched to relieve General Brown, Plattsburg was left quite exposed, General Macomb having only fifteen hundred men to defend the important line of Lake Champlain. General Prevost seized the opportunity to strike a decisive blow. He at once marched down with fourteen thousand men, chiefly veterans, who had won distinction under Wellington in Europe. His advance was covered by a fleet under Commodore Downie. General Macomb at once called for militia, and Commodore McDonough, a most efficient commander, prepared to meet Downie on his element.

Prevost, on reaching Plattsburg, on the 6th of September, found Macomb's little army, with a strong body of militia, drawn up in a strong position beyond the Saranac, ready to dispute its passage. Commodore McDonough drew up his little fleet across the harbor to receive the English fleet, which bore down upon him on the 11th. A desperate naval engagement ensued, on the waters of that beautiful lake; but after a contest of two hours and twenty minutes, Downie's flagship struck, several others of his vessels did the same, a few escaped, but the whole fleet was dispersed, and nearly all captured. Though

disheartened at this unexpected result, Prevost fought fiercely all day long to cross the Saranac, but was bravely resisted. During the evening, he retreated in haste, leaving his sick and wounded, with most of his baggage and stores.

The evident intention of the British, to attack some city on the Atlantic seaboard, kept the Administration in great alarm, but little was done to meet the emergency, and the measures of defense taken were tardy and ill-concerted. At last, on the 18th of August, Admiral Cochrane entered the Chesapeake with a fleet of nearly sixty vessels, bearing a division of Wellington's army, numbering four thousand men, under the command of General Ross. To oppose this force, there were in the waters of the bay only a small flotilla, commanded by Commodore Barney. The army under Ross, accordingly, landed on the 20th, at Benedict, on the Patuxent, and at once moved on Washington, guided by negroes.

Armstrong, the Secretary of War, now made some hasty attempts to defend the capital, and after great exertion, a motley host gathered at Bladensburg, to check Ross. There were Maryland militia, under Stansbury, a few of General Winder's regulars, sailors and marines from Barney's flotilla, now abandoned and burned. The English came up, exhausted and doubtful, but as their only chance lay in a bold dash, they charged like veterans that they were. The militia broke and fled. Barney and Miller, with their artillery, for a time checked the British advance, but as the Annapolis regiment, and regulars supporting them, at last gave way, the sailors and marines drew off, leaving their wounded commanders on the field.

The ground was but a few miles from Washington, and the President and his cabinet had been on the field. They were swept away

by the tide of fugitives. At Washington, all was panic and alarm.

After a brief rest, Ross pushed on, and occupied Washington the same day. With the vandalism characteristic of his nation, he burned the Capitol and other public buildings, destroying the library of Congress, and much of the national archives. Other public and private property was destroyed. Europe had just seen capital after capital captured, but had witnessed in no case such barbarous destruction as disgraced the English in America. Ross felt this, and felt his danger: fearing to be treated as a midnight incendiary if taken, he rapidly retired, leaving his wounded to the mercy of the Americans. The British fleet then advanced to Alexandria, and carried off an immense quantity of flour, tobacco, and other merchandise.

While one crew of English marauders was thus ravaging and plundering the shores of the Chesapeake, another was committing similar acts on the coast of Maine and Massachusetts; and the British commanders officially announced in dispatches their intention to destroy and lay waste every town they could reach. When Paul Jones, in the Revolution, plundered Lord Selkirk's place, the English could not find words to condemn it as an act that made him a pirate. Yet that was a mere sudden act of private vengeance, while their course in America was premeditated and planned. America was roused to make a vigorous defense, so that when Cockburn landed Ross at North Point, on the Patapsco, on the 12th of September, in order to attack and sack Baltimore, they found more formidable preparations to receive them. The fleet bombarded Fort McHenry, while Ross attempted to push forward toward the city. They were soon checked by the advance of the militia, under General Stricker. A skirmish at once ensued, in which the

incendiary Ross was killed. Colonel Brooke, his successor, driving on the American advance, the action became general. The artillery did great execution on both sides; but the militia, fighting for their homes, held in check a superior force of English veterans for an hour and a half. Forced back after killing and wounding nearly twice as many of their opponents as they lost, they retired in order, till General Winder came up. Both parties slept on their arms. In the morning, Brooke reconnoitred the American lines, and hesitated. He conferred with Cochrane, who had been pouring into Fort McHenry a perfect tornado of shells, but the brave commander, Major Armistead, showed no signs of yielding. The English commanders were disconcerted. Discomfited, the army retired to the shipping and withdrew.

Baltimore was saved. The song, "The Star-spangled Banner," was composed at this time by Francis S. Key, who had been watching from Cochrane's ship, where he was detained, the flag at Fort McHenry.

The ravages of the coast were not ended. For four days Commodore Hardy bombarded Stonington, Connecticut, although every attempt to land was repulsed by the militia.

There seemed to be no violation of the laws of war to which the English would not stoop. Pensacola was in Florida, then a Spanish province. An English squadron took possession of the forts, with the connivance or consent of the Spanish authorities, and from it fitted out an expedition of British and Indians against Fort Bowyer, at the entrance of Mobile Bay. But this violation of neutral territory did not avail them. Fort Bowyer made a vigorous defense: the British were repulsed by the gallant Major Lawrence, who, with only one hun-

dred and thirty-two men, killed two hundred and thirty-two of the British, and deprived them of a man-of-war.

General Jackson was not one to brook such action on the part of the Spaniards. He demanded guarantees that they would not permit any further hostilities from their territory, and as the Spaniards gave no satisfaction, Jackson, with two thousand Tennessee militia and some Choctaws, marched on Pensacola, took it by storm, November 7th, 1814, drove the British to their shipping, and compelled the Spaniards to surrender the town and forts unconditionally. The fleet sailed off, leaving their Spanish friends in the lurch.

Returning to Mobile, Jackson heard that New Orleans was menaced. It was then a city of twenty thousand inhabitants, chiefly of French and Spanish origin, with little attachment yet to the new Government, to which they were comparative strangers. Jackson could not count here on any vigorous militia. Still he assembled his forces, and endeavored to protect the city. His preparations were rapid, but on the 12th of December, 1814, the British fleet anchored off Lake Borgne, with one of the most imposing British armies yet seen on the continent. Twelve thousand men, under Generals Pakenham, Keene, Lambert, and Gibbs, landed after the American flotilla had been dispersed. Jackson proclaimed martial law, and called on Tennessee and Mississippi for aid. It came slowly. By the 21st, he had five thousand men at his command. The next day, twenty-four hundred of the enemy reached the Mississippi, nine miles below New Orleans. Jackson, alive to every advantage, at once led a part of his force to attack them the following night, and, with the loss of a hundred, cut off four times that number of the enemy. This roused the spirit of his men. They had attacked these veterans, and caused them heavy loss.

Four miles below the city, Jackson had thrown up a line of intrenchments. Here he now concentrated his troops, strengthening his hasty fortifications with cotton bales, and anchoring a vessel in the stream to cover his flank. On the 28th, Pakenham began the attack. He drove in the American outposts, but after a seven-hours' cannonade, was compelled to retire with loss. On the 1st of January, 1815, Pakenham renewed the bombardment, but his guns were silenced and dismounted. Three thousand Kentucky volunteers now came pouring into Jackson's camp, so that all along his line of intrenchments he had the keen-eyed marksmen of the West. He threw up works beyond the river, and confidently awaited the attack. On the 8th, the final assault was made by Pakenham and his three subordinate generals on the one bank of the river, while Thornton, on the other, engaged the new American works, and soon carried them. But Pakenham, as he came up, was met by a tremendous cannonade; yet he pushed bravely on, till he came within rifle-range, when a sheet of flame belched out, and the sharpshooters poured in volley after volley, aimed as at a target, by men who rarely missed. With the instinct of soldiers, the British pressed on, but their line wavered. Pakenham, attempting to restore order, was killed; Gibbs was mortally wounded, and Lambert, who took command, at last retreated, leaving two thousand dead and wounded on the field. Their retreat soon became a flight. Their encampment was reached to be abandoned, and the fugitives escaped to their ships. This repulse and fearful slaughter of the British cost the lives of only seven killed and as many wounded on the American side.

So signal a victory made the country ring with joy. It was so decisive, so complete a triumph of volunteers over regular European troops, that it filled all with new hopes, and made Jackson the hero of the hour.

Yet this battle was fought after peace had been signed. England, while negotiating for peace, had been carrying on this savage war on the American shores, hoping to inflict injury to the last moment. Close on the tidings of the victory at New Orleans, news arrived at New York that the commissioners sent out by the United States had actually negotiated a peace with England, and that Parliament had already ratified the treaty. On its ratification by Congress, all hostilities were to cease. This took place on the 17th of February, and the treaty of Ghent thus put an end to this unfortunate war, in which the last battle alone shed luster on American arms.

The news did not reach the vessels at sea for some time, and several naval actions occurred. On the 20th of February, 1815, the Constitution, "Old Ironsides," as the sailors called her, discovered two war vessels of English trim near Lisbon. Captain Stewart at once gave chase, and at sunset, having overhauled them, he ranged ahead and opened. His broadsides were answered; then the battle went on hot and heavy, till the combatants were fairly hidden in the smoke. When it cleared, Stewart again opened, pouring in broadsides right and left, till the Constitution reeled. One of the enemy, the Cyane, a 34-gun ship, was soon unmanageable, and she fired a gun to show that she surrendered. Then the Constitution pursued the other, the Levant, which soon struck, having five feet of water in her hold. The gallant old Constitution had thus captured two vessels, killing and wounding nearly eighty men, with very little loss to herself in men or otherwise.

Away off by the Cape of Good Hope, in March, the sloop-of-war, Hornet fell in with the British brig-of-war Penguin. The vessels were about equally matched, and the battle was a desperate one. The

captain of the Penguin was killed in a daring attempt to board the Hornet, and not only were the English tars beaten back, but they were forced to strike, when their vessel was so cut up that the Americans had to scuttle her. In June, the Peacock compelled the Nautilus to strike to her in the Straits of Funda. This was the last action of the war, which closed, as it had begun, in the naval glory of America. During the war on the ocean the English had captured sixteen hundred and eighty-three American vessels of all sizes, but lost seventeen hundred and fifty.

Peace having been restored with Great Britain, and the fall of Napoleon having led to a general pacification in Europe, commerce revived, and with it came general prosperity. The revenue from imports rose in one year from four millions to thirty-seven millions of dollars. Emigration, which had been checked, now increased, gaining steadily from year to year, as people suffering from the effects of war and oppression in the Old World heard of the land where all men were free, and every man enjoyed the fruit of his labor.

With the peace the army was reduced to a small force of ten thousand men, employed in garrisoning the forts and watching the Indian frontier. The navy, however, was maintained, and proposals even made for increasing it. As the Barbary States had resumed their old insolence, Decatur was sent out to chastise Algiers, which had declared war. He made short work of it. He captured the two largest vessels in the Algerine fleet, and in June compelled the Dey to sign a treaty on his quarter-deck. There were complaints also against the Bashaws of Tunis and Tripoli, who had allowed English cruisers to capture American vessels under their guns. For this, Decatur compelled them to make indemnity, Tunis paying forty-six thousand dol-

lars, and Tripoli twenty-five thousand. The Barbary States had never been so humiliated. It was reserved for the young republic of America to chastise those foes of civilization, and give a decisive blow to their system of piracy, which had endured for centuries. As every one of the Barbary States had learned to respect the American flag, their power was broken, and Europeans soon found courage to follow the example of the United States.

There were few important events during the remainder of Madison's administration. Indiana and Mississippi were admitted as States in 1816, and Alabama Territory organized. About the same time Church and State were separated in Massachusetts. The Government at this period began a plan for removing the Indians where possible beyond the Mississippi River. By treaties with the Cherokees, Chickasaws, and Choctaws, the Government acquired a vast territory, and many of the Indians, preferring a hunter's life, moved over beyond the Mississippi, where game was plentiful.

The administration of James Madison was now drawing to a close. It had been one of difficulty and war, which he was obliged to carry on without preparation, and under great obstacles. At the new election, which took place this year, James Monroe, of Virginia, a Revolutionary officer, who had served his country in many high and important positions, was elected President, and Daniel D. Tompkins, of New York, Vice-President.

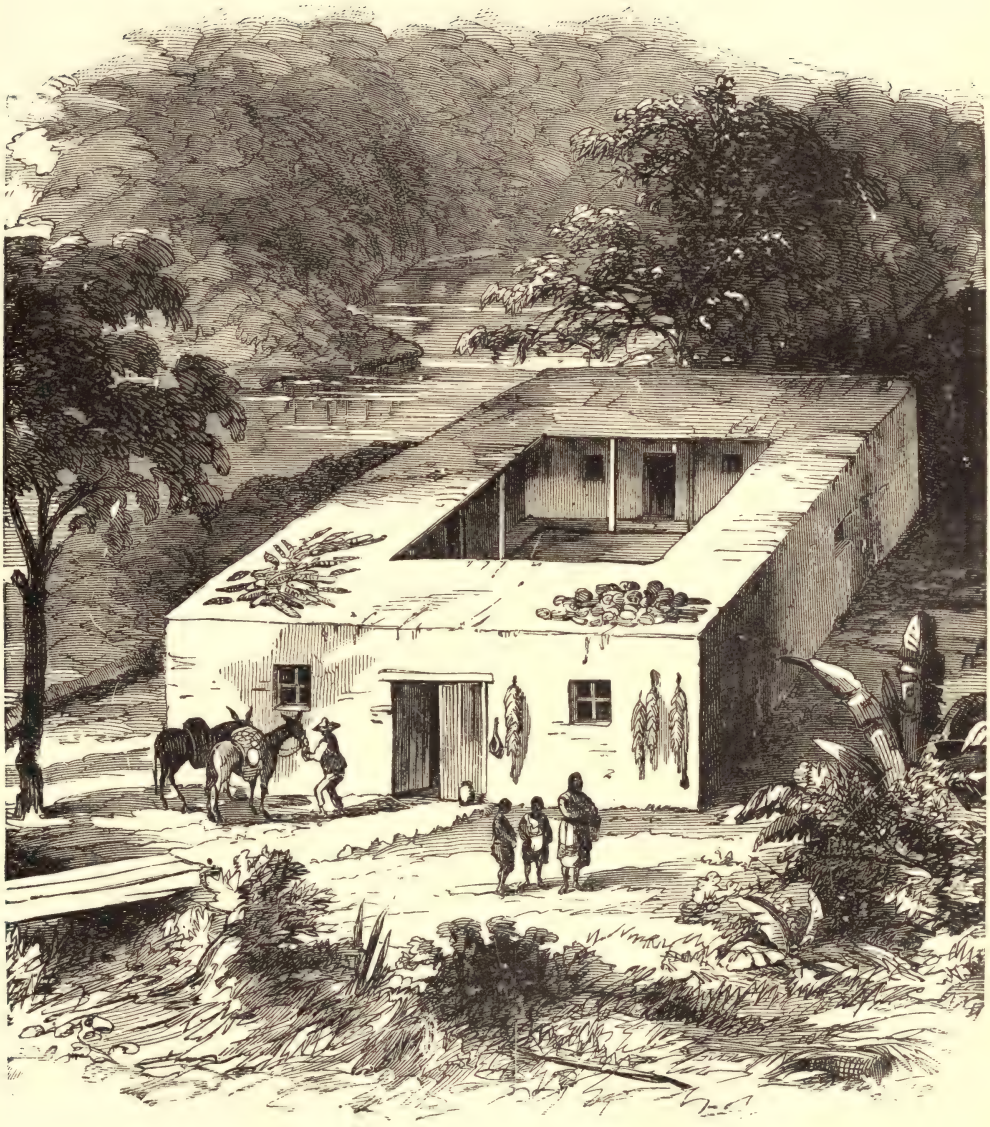


THE CONSTITUTION CAPTURING THE CYANE AND LEVANT.

(Page 650)



INHABITANTS OF THE COAST, MEXICO. (Page 687)



A MEXICAN HOUSE.



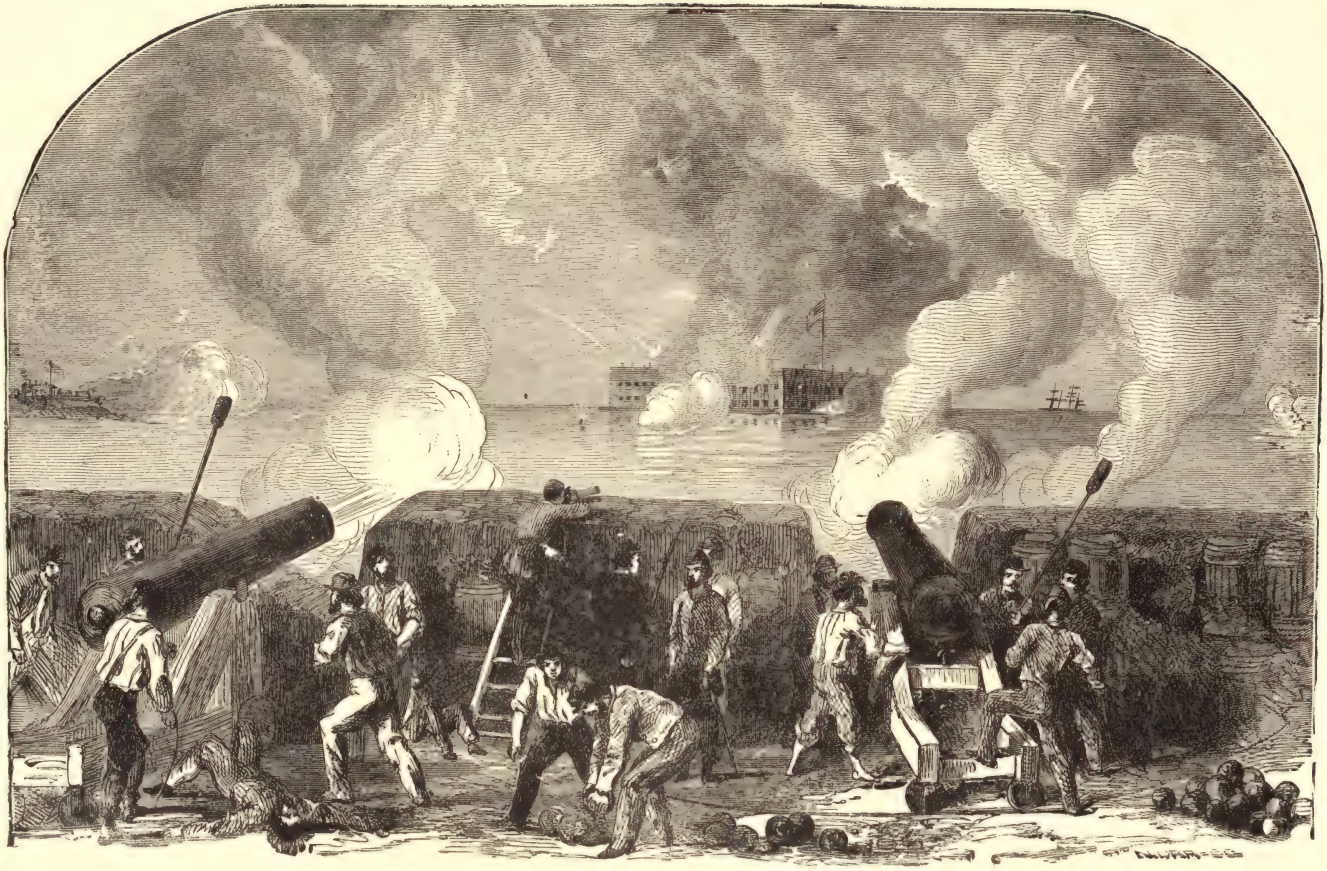
THE AQUEDUCT NEAR THE BATTLE-FIELD OF CHAPULTEPEC. (Page 698)



CIVIL WAR.



PALMETTO TREE, CHARLESTON, S. C.



BOMBARDMENT OF FORT SUMTER, APRIL 12, 1861.

(Page 729)



DURYEA'S ZOUAVES AT BIG BETHEL BRINGING OFF GREBLE'S BODY.

(Page 735)

CHAPTER VI.

JAMES MONROE, FIFTH PRESIDENT—1817-1825.

Indian Troubles—The Seminoles—Seizure of Spanish Forts—Florida Ceded to the United States — The Treaty of Ghent — Alabama — Arkansas, Maine — The Missouri Compromise—Lafayette Revisits the United States—The Monroe Doctrine—West India Pirates Broken up.

Mr. Monroe was inaugurated at Washington in the Capitol, which had begun to rise from its ashes. He began his administration with happy auspices. There was no bitter political feeling; it was indeed a time of harmony, peace, and tranquillity. The only embarrassment was the distress caused by the stoppage of various manufactories which had grown up during the war, but which could not now compete with European goods. This threw many out of employment, and would have caused great suffering had not the general activity carried numbers of natives and emigrants westward to settle the new States and Territories.

Monroe selected for his Cabinet, John Quincy Adams, as Secretary of State; William H. Crawford, Secretary of the Treasury; John C. Calhoun, Secretary of War; Benjamin Crowninshield, Secretary of the Navy, and William Wirt, Attorney General.

The Spanish Colonies in America were at this time almost all in a revolution against Spain, and two piratical establishments grew up in the disorder near the United States, one in Florida, the other in Texas. These were broken up soon after the commencement of Monroe's administration.

A more serious trouble, and one that was to annoy the country for years, arose in Florida. A fort of Seminoles, negroes, and Indians, on the Apalachicola River, in the province of Florida, which then belonged to the Spaniards, gave shelter to the runaway slaves of Georgia. Some troops under General Clinch, and Creeks under McIntosh, a half-breed, invested the fort in September, 1816. They blew up the magazine, killing three hundred and fifty men, women, and children. On this the fort surrendered; but Clinch, with a cruelty happily not often to be met with in American generals, put the commanders to death in cold blood.

This led to a new war. In November, 1817, General Gaines marched against them, and burned an Indian town; but the Seminoles at once took the field with so brave a spirit, that General Gaines had to call on the militia of Georgia to aid him. The War Department ordered General Jackson to march with his Tennessee militia to the seat of war. That active general built Fort Gadsden on the site of that destroyed by Clinch. Then he marched east against the Seminole village, which he burned without incurring any loss, and then, under the pretext that the people there had aided the Indians, he seized the Spanish fort at St. Mark's, April 7, 1818. After this he attacked another Indian fort at the mouth of the Suwanee, where the Indians under Ambrister, an Englishman, in two considerable skirmishes, checked him for a time; but Jackson at last burned the town, took Ambrister, and hanged him as well as another Englishman found at St. Mark's, and two Indian chiefs. Pensacola was the only remaining Spanish post, and on this Jackson at once advanced. The governor and garrison retired from the town to Fort Barrancas, on Santa Rosa Island, at the entrance to the bay. The American general compelled him, how-

ever, to surrender, and sent him to Havana with all the Spanish officials and troops. He even ordered General Gaines to march upon St. Augustine.

As there was no war with Spain, this whole course was contrary to right and law, and was severely censured ; but many people, deeming the Spanish authorities responsible for the Indian hostilities, sustained him. Spain was then almost powerless in America, nearly all her colonies having revolted. Florida was not a rich province, and had ceased to be important to her. She protested against the invasion by General Jackson, but now at last showed a disposition to sell this whole territory to the United States. After considerable discussion a treaty was signed February 22, 1819, by which the United States agreed to pay claims of her citizens against Spain amounting to five millions of dollars, and in return Spain ceded Florida, and fixed the boundary line between Louisiana and Mexico on the Gulf at the River Sabine. It followed that river to the thirty-third degree, and then ran to the source of the Arkansas. Thence westward the forty-second degree was the boundary line.

The King of Spain at first refused to confirm this treaty, but, finding that there was no alternative, as the Americans were actually in possession of the country, finally ratified it in October, 1820, and formal possession of St. Augustine was immediately given. That little city came into the United States to rank as its oldest settlement. The Spanish settlers, although secured by the treaty in all their rights, generally emigrated to Cuba, and as few emigrants went southward, Florida increased in importance very slowly.

There were still some matters to be adjusted with England, so as to prevent future difficulties. Under the treaty of Ghent a commission

of citizens of the two countries was appointed to settle the boundary line between the United States and the British possessions in America. The country in the interior was not well known when previous treaties were made, and it was impossible to run the lines as there laid down from incorrect maps. After long examination this commission, in 1819, fixed the northern boundary by running a line through the St. Lawrence and the great lakes, and making the forty-ninth degree the boundary line between the United States and the British possessions, from the Lake of the Woods to the Rocky Mountains. Beyond that nothing was decided, Oregon being left open to both parties for ten years.

The western territory was filling up with settlements, where before all had been a wilderness, dotted here and there by an Indian village, and traversed only by the red hunter and warrior, or the adventurous white trapper. Many of the Indian tribes, the Chippewas, Ottawas, Pottawatomies, Miamis, Delawares, Shawnees, Wyandots, sold to Government their rights in extensive tracts which they claimed as hunting grounds, and agreed to remove beyond the Mississippi. Kentucky and Tennessee also induced the Chickasaws to give up their claim to much of the valuable territory of those two States. The lands thus acquired were thrown open to settlers, and the backwoodsmen were soon clearing, planting, and building, and the clatter of mills and forges, the church-going bell, and the sounds of the village school began to be heard.

In 1819 the southern part of Missouri Territory was organized as a separate government, under the name of Arkansas Territory. The remaining portion at the north solicited admission as a State, and the District of Maine, heretofore held by Massachusetts, also asked the same right. Alabama was admitted in 1819; but a violent discussion arose as to Missouri. The North had now generally abandoned sla-

very, and most of the States were passing laws to abolish it entirely. In fact, the great emigration from Europe to America supplied those States with labor which was cheaper than slave labor, so that those who had refused to listen to arguments while it was profitable, were now very quick to see that slavery was wrong. The great question came up whether slavery should be permitted in the territory west of the Mississippi. The North wished it free; the men of the South wished to have the right to emigrate there with their slaves when they saw fit.

Here began a struggle which was not ended till nearly fifty years from this time, and then only, as we shall see, after one of the bloodiest wars in history.

The bill for the admission of Missouri, as introduced, had a clause excluding slavery: the matter was debated in Congress and discussed throughout the country for two years, when a compromise was finally agreed to on the last day of February, 1821. By this it was agreed that slavery should be admitted in Missouri, and in all territory south of Missouri and of a line running west from its southern boundary line. This Missouri Compromise settled for a time this important question, and Missouri was admitted as the twenty-fourth State of the Union, August 21, 1821.

Mr. Monroe had already, in 1820, been re-elected President, and Mr. Tompkins Vice-President, with scarcely a dissenting voice. The second term was not marked by any great events. Provision was made by Congress for the relief of the surviving soldiers of the Revolution, a pension being allowed to each. Year by year they dropped away, until at last, toward the close of the century from the time of the Stamp Act troubles, the last of them passed away.

During Monroe's administration, a very favorable arrangement was

made with Great Britain in regard to the right of American fishermen to take cod on the Great Bank of Newfoundland.

An event which excited general interest and joy was the visit at this time paid to the United States by General Lafayette. This visit of the illustrious man to the country which he had served so nobly in his youth, and where he was now welcomed as one of the founders of the republic, was pleasing alike to the country and its guest. The Government and the citizens vied with each other in doing him honor, and when, after visiting a considerable portion of the United States, wondering and gratified at its progress since the days when he suffered and fought at the side of Washington—when, with a thankful heart, he prepared to return to France, the Government prepared a fine frigate, the Brandywine, for his accommodation. Lafayette never again visited America. He died in France soon after he had by his influence raised to the throne, in 1830, Louis Philippe, Duke of Orleans. As a gallant officer of our Revolutionary army, and the man whose zeal, energy, and perseverance, undaunted by obstacles, enabled us to win the alliance of France in our hour of need, Lafayette will ever be an object of the nation's gratitude.

A doctrine put forward by President Monroe, and often spoken of, had reference to European settlements in America. When Spain found herself unable to reduce her revolted American colonies, she, in December, 1823, addressed a formal invitation to the Courts of Russia, Prussia, Austria, and France, to send plenipotentiaries to Paris, to adopt plans for assisting her. Such a concert of European powers combining to interpose in American affairs, was fraught with danger, and Monroe, in his message of Congress, declared that our Government would regard as directed against it, and would resist, any combination of European Powers for colonization or any other purpose.

During the latter years of Monroe's second term, expeditions were sent out to break up the nests of pirates who had been for years constantly engaged in plundering the commerce of America in the West Indies. The efforts were crowned with perfect success, although it was difficult to pursue the pirates amid the small islands in which they had their haunts. But Commodore Porter, in 1822 and 1823, with a small fleet broke up their various rendezvous, and taught them such a lesson that the bands scattered, and these depredations on our commerce were arrested.

As the administration of Mr. Monroe approached its close, it was evident that the "era of good feeling," as it was called, had passed away. Party violence again seized the public mind. The nominations for the Presidency had on former occasions been made by the members of Congress, acting as a convention for the purpose. In this case they nominated John Quincy Adams, but several independent candidates appeared—General Andrew Jackson of Tennessee, Henry Clay of Kentucky, and William H. Crawford of Georgia. Each candidate received the support of his own section of the country, and the result was that no one of the four received enough votes to secure his election. Jackson received more votes than any of the others, but as he did not obtain more than them all, it was not sufficient.

In such cases the Constitution provided that the House of Representatives should select the President. After a great deal of intrigue and bargaining, such as had never yet been seen in America, Henry Clay gave way, and his friends supporting Mr. Adams, he was elected President of the United States. John C. Calhoun, of South Carolina, had received in the election votes which made him Vice-President.

CHAPTER VII.

JOHN QUINCY ADAMS, SIXTH PRESIDENT—1825-1829.

Internal Improvements—Death of Adams and Jefferson—Indian Troubles—Masonic Excitement.

THE administration of John Quincy Adams was marked by few important events. There was undisturbed peace, and a season of great prosperity. By this time the fruits of Fulton's invention were evident: without it the people of so vast a country would have been long strangers to each other; steam allowed ships to ascend the navigable rivers with rapidity, and this brought the produce of all parts to the great centres of trade. New York, anxious to secure the trade of the West, which would evidently be the great grain-district of America, as well as its best pasturage, began, under the auspices of De Witt Clinton, the Erie Canal, to connect the Hudson River with the waters of Lake Erie above the Falls. The great work was ridiculed by many, and termed "Clinton's big ditch," but it was completed at a cost of five millions of dollars. When, in November, 1825, a canal-boat from Buffalo reached New York, there was an enthusiastic celebration, and all joined in exulting over this new avenue for trade.

During this administration, the first railroad was opened in the United States.

It was the pioneer of that vast system of railways that now traverse the country in all directions, uniting the Atlantic to the Pacific.

A still greater improvement was to be brought about by railroads, on which cars were drawn by locomotives, which are steam engines on wheels. A horse railroad was begun at Quincy, Massachusetts, in 1825; but in 1829 the Delaware and Hudson Canal Company imported two locomotives of Stevenson's invention, and began the first railroad

for steam cars. The success of the experiment led to the formation of companies in all parts, and railroads soon began to connect all the great cities.

A strange coincidence marked the 4th of July, 1826, the fiftieth anniversary of the Declaration of Independence. On that day, within a few hours of each other, two signers of the Declaration, who had successively filled the Presidential chair, Thomas Jefferson and John Adams, both expired, each in his own State. Jefferson, almost with his last breath, said, "Adams still lives," little supposing that he, too, was passing away. The disputes of their political career had been forgotten; both had long been regarded with reverence and respect, and their death on so remarkable a day was an object of public mourning.

The same year witnessed the celebrated Morgan excitement in New York, which led to the formation of an Anti-masonic party in that State, which was long in power.

The election which took place in the autumn of 1828, and in which Adams and Jackson were again opposed, was one of greater popular excitement than had ever yet been seen in the United States. Popular gatherings were held, speeches made, and the newspapers entered violently into the advocacy of their favorite candidate. It opened that series of eagerly contested elections, so fraught with corruption, fraud, intrigue, and violence, which had done so much to lower the national character, and made the elections an affair of politicians by driving away the quiet citizens.

Jackson, now supported by Crawford, was chosen by a large majority, and John C. Calhoun was again elected Vice-President.

President Adams retiring, left a country at peace, the public debt greatly diminished, and a large surplus in the treasury.

CHAPTER VIII.

ANDREW JACKSON, SEVENTH PRESIDENT—1829–1837.

Striking Inauguration—A Bad Policy—Cherokee Difficulties—The United States Bank—Black Hawk War—Nullification in South Carolina—Seminole War—Texas becomes an Independent Republic—Arkansas and Michigan Admitted—The Specie Circular.

THE inauguration of General Jackson was marked by a new and striking feature. He took the oath surrounded by several of the surviving officers and soldiers of the Revolutionary War, in which he himself, as a spirited boy, had received a sabre-wound from a British soldier.

His Cabinet was composed of Martin Van Buren, Secretary of State; Samuel D. Ingham, Secretary of the Treasury; John H. Eaton, Secretary of War; John Branch, Secretary of the Navy; and John McPherson Berrian, Attorney General.

Jackson was honest and patriotic, but he was intolerant of opposition, and wished all to bend to his firm will; and his administration was one of stormy contention.

He initiated a system which has been most injurious to the country. Using the military maxim, "To the victors belong the spoils," he gave every office in his gift to his partisans in the late election, and men were removed from office on no charge of unfitness or neglect in the discharge of their duties, but simply on political grounds.

The condition of the Indian tribes led to the first trouble. The United States had by several treaties guaranteed to the Cherokees the territory held by them, and in which they had sole jurisdiction as

an independent tribe. The State of Georgia resolved to extend the State laws over it, and subject the Cherokees to them, without, however, giving them any of the rights of citizens. The Cherokees appealed to the Supreme Court, which at last gave a decision in their favor on some points; but even on these Georgia refused to yield, and Jackson really sustained Georgia. His great wish was to remove all the Indians beyond the Mississippi. Finding that there was no alternative, a part of the Cherokees agreed to remove; and in 1838, General Scott was sent to their lands with a large body of troops to remove the tribe, using force if necessary. Fortunately, the Cherokees submitted, and were placed west of Arkansas.

An opposition to the United States Bank, which was then the depository of the moneys belonging to the Government, was one of the great principles of the Jackson party. As the charter was about to expire, the bank solicited its renewal, and after a long debate in Congress, an act was passed in 1832; but President Jackson, on the 10th of July, vetoed the bill, and subsequently removed the deposits and placed them in various State banks.

Dreadful scourges, war and pestilence, also afflicted the country in the year 1832. In the summer, the Asiatic cholera, which had ravaged Europe, appeared simultaneously at Quebec and New York, and spread over the whole country, sweeping off thousands, especially in the large cities.

During the spring of that year, the Sacs, Foxes, and Winnebagoes, in Wisconsin, under Black Hawk, a Sac chief, began to ravage the frontiers of Illinois, destroying many new villages, slaughtering families, and giving all to the flames. United States troops under Colonel Taylor, and Illinois militia under General Atkinson, were sent

against them; and though this body of white troops was thinned by cholera and desertion, Colonel Taylor, by forced marches, overtook the enemy on the 2d of August, at the mouth of the Iowa, and routing the Indian braves, captured Black Hawk, and put an end to the war.

This Indian outbreak had scarcely been suppressed when a new danger appeared, greater than any that yet threatened the Goverment—the danger of a dissolution of the Union. A tariff act, passed in 1832, imposed duties which the Southern States deemed unjust and partial: most of the States merely murmured, but South Carolina, refusing to submit, threatened to withdraw from the Union and set up an independent government, for the first time claiming the right to secede. Similar threats had been made during the war by some Northern States, but they had never gone as far as in this case. South Carolina prepared to resist by force of arms. Electing the eloquent Hayne Governor, they began to organize troops, while Calhoun, resigning his position as Vice-President of the United States, entered the Senate Chamber as Senator from South Carolina, in order to make a final effort there. The President, however, was too stern and peremptory a man to brook opposition even in case of doubt: he issued a proclamation, declaring his resolution to enforce obedience, and, if necessary, at the point of the bayonet. His previous career gave proof that such a threat would not be an idle one. Congress, in a long and able debate, in which Daniel Webster delivered a famous exposition of the Constitution, sustained the President, and South Carolina submitted, protesting against the injustice done her. At this juncture, Henry Clay introduced his plan of compromise, which was adopted, and the difficulty was avoided for the time. Yet it was clear that the time for compromise was nearly gone. Amid all this excitement a Presidential election

came off. The country at large sustained Jackson, who was re-elected, with Martin Van Buren, of New York, as Vice-President.

About this time, Charles Carroll of Carrollton, the last of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, expired, at a moment when the work of the Continental Congress and the Constitutional Convention seemed about to be destroyed.

A more serious Indian war than Black Hawk's now engaged attention, and for years cost blood and treasure without stint. This was the Seminole War in Florida. The trouble with them began at the time that General Jackson attacked their fort in Florida. They had then become imbittered against the Americans. "Seminoles" means Wanderers, and the tribe that bears the name belongs to the Creek Nation, and was formed chiefly of the fragments of tribes converted by the Spanish missionaries, but almost exterminated by Georgia and South Carolina. The proposal to remove them beyond the Mississippi excited the strongest opposition, but the Government made a treaty in 1832, with a few inferior chiefs, who pretended to act for the tribe. The Seminole Nation, however, with Micanopy, their king, disavowed the acts of these chiefs, and refused to depart. General Thompson, the Government agent, hoping to overawe them, seized one chief, the gallant Osceola, and put him in irons. The Seminole chief, in order to secure his liberty, signed a treaty, but secretly laid plans for a bitter war on the whites. He at once organized all the braves of the nation, and prepared for a simultaneous attack on the various posts, and a general ravaging of the country. The day before Christmas, 1835, was fixed for the execution of his design. That day, Major Dade, with a hundred and ten men, moved forward from Fort Brooke, on Tampa Bay, to reinforce General Clinch, then at Fort Drane, near Orange Lake.

That day, General Thompson was dining with some friends in a house outside Fort King, where he was stationed. While the wine passed briskly around, amid laughter and merriment, Osceola and a small war-party burst in upon them. Thompson fell, riddled by fifteen bullets: nearly every one of the party shared his fate; and Osceola, scalping the man who had so wronged him, drew off to the woods before the garrison of the fort were aware of what had occurred. As Dade rode along by Wahoo Swamp, amid the rank vegetation of the Florida Everglades, flashes from every side announced the attack. Dade and most of his men fell at the first volley. Thirty escaped, and throwing up an intrenchment of logs, prepared to sell their lives dearly. But Osceola, fresh from his exploit, bounded in among his braves, and led them in a furious charge. Every soldier was slain but one, who, wounded unto death, managed to reach the whites and tell the story of Dade's detachment.

General Clinch collected all his forces, and marched to the Withlacoochee; but he too was suddenly attacked on the last day of the year, and though he repulsed the Indians, his loss amounted to a hundred killed and wounded, weakening his force so that he had to retreat. General Gaines, who penetrated to the same spot in February, 1836, was also attacked, and lost several men. Roused by the success of the Seminoles, the Creeks took up arms, and Georgia and Alabama, like Florida, were exposed to all the horrors of Indian war. Steamboats were taken, villages burned, and thousands were fleeing in all directions from the homes which they had built up. General Scott, however, took command, and, having speedily reduced the Creeks, the Government immediately transported several thousands of them to the territory assigned to them beyond the Mississippi.

Georgia also moved. Governor Call, of that State, took command of the forces, numbering two thousand men, and marching into Florida, encountered the Seminoles at Wahoo Swamp, near the scene of Dade's defeat, and twice repulsed them with loss, after a long and terrible contest. The Seminoles then, for a time, discontinued all active hostilities.

The rancor of political agitation about this time extended to religious matters, and, for the first time, America was menaced with religious strife between its citizens. Violent publications kept up the excitement, and a convent at Charlestown, Massachusetts, was burned by a mob ; but the people at large showed a disapproval of such acts, and the excitement died away, though it was renewed in after years, and led to the formation of a political party.

Toward the close of the administration of General Jackson a strange revolution was taking place near the borders of the United States. Texas, one of the States of the Mexican Republic, had been first occupied by the French, under La Salle, who, missing the mouth of the Mississippi, entered by mistake Matagorda Bay, and threw up a fort there. This was soon after taken by the Indians, who massacred all but a few. The Spaniards, who claimed the territory, sent a force to occupy the country. The commander found only the victims of Indian fury, and buried them. Spain then planted forts and missions in various parts, and held the country till Mexico became free. Then Texas, with Coahuila, formed one of the States of Mexico. Many Americans gradually entered Texas, some of them taking slaves with them, although slavery had been abolished in Mexico. These new settlers, being strangers to the language, religion, and government of Mexico, became greatly discontented, and much trouble ensued. When, in

1835, the Federal Government at Mexico crushed down the State governments, and renounced the federal system, the Texans took up arms to resist this act, which they declared subversive of the original Constitution of Mexico. They called on their countrymen in the United States to join them. The United States offered no obstacles, and such numbers crossed the frontiers into Texas, that on the 2d of March, 1838, the people of Texas declared it an independent republic.

Santa Anna, President of Mexico, resolved to crush the rebellion, and advanced into Texas at the head of an army. Having been defeated and taken prisoner by General Houston at the battle of San Jacinto, on the 21st of April, he made a treaty with the Texans, which the republic of Mexico disavowed. Still Texas had virtually established her independence, and was recognized as a republic by foreign powers.

Mexico made no further attempt to reduce it, and, under a separate government, Texas, increasing by emigration from the United States, became thoroughly American, and it was evident that it would soon become part of the United States.

The intercourse between this country and foreign nations during the whole period of Jackson's administration had been one of peace. The only exception was a momentary difficulty with France, owing to old claims connected with Napoleon's decrees, under which American ships had been seized. To compensate the owners, France had agreed to pay five millions of dollars, but neglected to do so. Jackson threatened war, but by the intervention of England the affair was amicably arranged.

In June, 1836, Arkansas became a State, and in January following, Michigan, a Northern State, was also admitted.

As Jackson's second term was drawing to a close, the great political

parties prepared for a new election. The Democrats put forward Martin Van Buren as their candidate, while William Henry Harrison was the choice of the Whigs. Van Buren was elected, but there was no choice of Vice-President, no one of the candidates for that office receiving a sufficient number of votes. The Senate, under the Constitution, then proceeded to elect one, and Richard M. Johnson was chosen.

Jackson's last act was to refuse his sanction to an act passed to repeal his Specie Circular, which required all collectors of the public revenue to take only gold and silver in payment. The whole country was affected at the time by a spirit of wild speculation, and the country was flooded with paper issued by banks, much of which ultimately proved worthless. The Specie Circular caused much difficulty, but has been adhered to as a wise rule.

After his stormy administration, Jackson retired to private life, highly esteemed for his uprightness, integrity, and firmness, even by those who questioned some of his acts.

CHAPTER IX.

MARTIN VAN BUREN, EIGHTH PRESIDENT—1837-1841.

Bankruptcy caused by Speculation—The Independent Treasury—The Seminole War—Death of Osceola—Troubles in Canada—Wilkes's Exploring Expedition—The Maine Boundary.

THE spirit of speculation which had invaded the country, soon brought about its natural result. The banks, which had increased the amount of their loans day by day, at last took alarm. When men could no longer get money freely from the banks, many were unable to meet their obligations, and the consequence was a series of failures.

In the city of New York, the failures amounted to a hundred millions of dollars, and a similar state of affairs prevailed throughout the country. Factories were stopped, and property of all kinds declined in value, for there were few able to buy. The banks suspended specie payment, and Government, which had placed its moneys in various banks, was unable to obtain gold and silver to pay the demands on the treasury.

The President, in his message to Congress, proposed that in future the Government money should no longer be placed in banks for safe keeping, but retained by the Government in its own treasury. This excited great opposition, for people had come to look upon the public money as something that could be used in the trade of the country; but the wisdom of the plan was evident, and the independent treasury has always been maintained.

The Seminole war still continued, the Indians from time to time making fresh attacks. A treaty was made in March, 1837, by several chiefs who came into General Jesup's camp at Fort Dade. By its terms peace was restored, and the Seminoles agreed to remove beyond the Mississippi. Still this was not the act of the whole tribe: a war party still remained, weak in number, but full of resolution. Although without skillful chiefs, and with an organized army of nine thousand men against them, they continued the war. In the operations that followed through the summer, Osceola was the leading spirit; and when, in October, he and some other chiefs, with a band of seventy warriors, entered Jesup's camp under the protection of a flag, Jesup seized and confined them. Osceola was sent to Charleston, and died in Fort Moultrie, where his grave is still shown. Many blamed Jesup's course, but he considered himself not bound to keep the rules of war with one

who was ignorant of them and never shrank from treachery. He deemed it better to close the war. Notwithstanding this severe blow, the Indians kept the field ; but in December, Colonel Zachary Taylor penetrated to the haunt of the Mickasuckies, and forced them to an action on the northern border of Macaco or Okeechobee Lake. These Indians, who had stubbornly refused all offers of pacification, were drawn up, under their chief Aviaka, in a strong position near the lake. Taylor, who, besides his regulars, had a corps of Mississippi volunteers under Colonel Gentry, immediately attacked their camp. The battle lasted over three hours, and so desperately did the Indians fight, that they routed the volunteers, who left their colonel dead on the field. Taylor rallied the regulars ; a part finally repulsed the Mickasuckies, but those Indians drew off unpursued. Taylor's loss was nearly a hundred and fifty killed and wounded, including several of his most valuable officers.

This reverse broke the spirit of the Indians : many submitted, and were removed, so that in May, 1839, General Macomb induced the remainder to treat of peace. Yet again hostilities began, and Colonels Harney and Worth finally reduced them in 1841, by penetrating to their fastnesses, cutting down their crops, and sweeping off their cattle. Peace was finally secured in 1842, after a seven-years war, which cost America many millions of dollars and the lives of thousands.

In one point of view, this long and expensive war had been of actual service ; it proved an excellent school for our army, and gradually prepared officers for more important service.

Previous to the closing of this war, the United States was involved in a trouble of another character on its northern frontier. Canada, though its earlier privileges had provoked the Americans before the

Revolution, was now itself discontented with the British Government. In 1837, the popular feeling rose so high that an insurrection broke out, and as any cry for liberty finds a ready response in American bosoms, many persons in the United States, and especially in the State of New York, hastened to aid the cause of revolution by sympathy, and by contributions of men, arms, and money. This sympathy became so general on the northern frontier, that Government was unable to repress it, and peace between the United States and Great Britain was in great jeopardy. This state of things continued to the close of Van Buren's administration.

Although the President by proclamation forbade all citizens of the United States to interfere, and ordered troops to the frontier, many continued to cross and take part in the struggle. Some of these were killed in the actions which took place with the British forces; more were taken prisoners, tried, and, on conviction, either hung or transported to Van Diemen's Land.

The English were exasperated at the conduct of the American sympathizers, and retaliated by a violation of American soil. A party of the insurgents on Navy Island, in Niagara River, kept up communication with the American shore by means of the steamer Caroline. The English in vain endeavored to capture this little steamer during her trips to and from the island. Failing in this, they sent over a detachment to the American side, on the 20th of December, 1837. The party cut the Caroline loose, after killing an American on the dock. They then towed the steamer out into the stream, set her on fire, and sent her over Niagara Falls with all on board of her, and she plunged down that cataract with her unfortunate crew. This outrage excited the public mind in the United States to the highest degree, but the in-

fringement of our national rights was never disavowed by the English Government.

The United States had in many ways shown an interest in the advancement of science, and had given all the encouragement that the Constitution permitted to the General Government. Some of the States began to collect in Europe documents relating to the early history of the country, and at the same time caused accurate surveys to be made of their territory, under competent men, who studied the geology, mineralogy, zoology, and botany, as well as the geographical position. So admirably was this carried out, especially in New York, that no country can show a more noble monument than the Natural History of that State.

The United States Government, to aid in this general movement, sent out in 1838 an exploring expedition under Captain Wilkes, which visited much of the Southern and Pacific Oceans, and after making several important discoveries returned. Wilkes' report was full of interest and value.

The ill-feeling which had been excited against Great Britain showed itself in Maine, in 1839. The treaty of 1783, which fixed the boundary between Maine and the adjacent English provinces, was based on incorrect maps, and when they attempted to run the line, difficulties arose, each side construing it so as to give them most territory. The King of the Belgians was appointed an umpire between the two parties, but his decision pleased neither of them. As the disputed tract was valued for its timber, the people of Maine attempted to drive off the New Brunswick lumbermen, and some on both sides were taken into custody as trespassers by the opposite Governments. Some excitement prevailed, but as the Governors of Maine and New Brunswick soon

came to an understanding, further collisions were prevented, and the whole affair was left to higher authorities.

Van Buren's administration had not met general approval. The people, oppressed by the results of the revulsion of 1837, clamored for a general bankrupt act.

Van Buren was again nominated by the Democratic party, while the Whigs put up General William H. Harrison, with John Tyler for Vice-President. The election was the most exciting and enthusiastic ever yet seen in America. Log cabins were raised in all parts in honor of Harrison, and the campaign was carried by violent speeches and songs in favor of their candidate, and against the opposing one. President Van Buren was defeated by a large vote, receiving only sixty electoral votes, while his antagonist received no less than two hundred and thirty-four. William Henry Harrison became President, with John Tyler as Vice-President.

CHAPTER X.

WILLIAM HENRY HARRISON, NINTH PRESIDENT—1841. JOHN TYLER, TENTH PRESIDENT—1841–1845.

Mr. Tyler vetoes the United States Bank—The Maine Boundary—Rhode Island Troubles—Patroon Troubles—Native American Party—The Mormons—Annexation of Texas.

General William Henry Harrison, born in Charles County, Virginia, in February, 1773, was the son of a signer of the Declaration of Independence. He entered the army at an early age. As Governor of Indiana Territory, he had won fame and distinction by his skillful

management of public affairs, and by his ability as a military commander. Great expectations were entertained of reforms and changes, under his Presidency, as a new political party now came into power. To fulfill the wishes of the people, he issued a proclamation on the 17th of March, calling an extra Session of Congress to meet in May. But his administration was destined to close suddenly. His health was broken, and the exertions attending his inauguration and the assumption of the duties of his arduous office hurried him to the grave. Before he had accomplished any public act, he died after a short illness on the 4th of April, 1841, at the age of sixty-eight, to the universal regret of the nation. The Cabinet formed by President Harrison consisted of the able and eloquent Daniel Webster as Secretary of State; Thomas Ewing, Secretary of the Treasury; John Bell, Secretary of War; George Badger, Secretary of the Navy; Francis Granger, Postmaster General, and John J. Crittenden, Attorney General.

By the provisions of the Constitution of the United States, John Tyler, the Vice-President, now became President of the United States. Like his predecessor, he was a native of Virginia, in which he had always resided. Although not altogether in harmony with the views of the late President, Mr. Tyler retained the same Cabinet; and when Congress met on the last day of May under the call of President Harrison, his message recommended many of the projects already agreed upon by the party. The Sub-Treasury Act was repealed; and a general bankrupt law passed with his approval. One of the great objects of the Whig party was to restore the United States Bank, which had been overthrown by Jackson. Accordingly, Congress passed an act to revive it; but, to the great chagrin of those by whose votes he had been raised to the Presidency, President Tyler vetoed the bill,

seeing in it dangers to the country. For this he was warmly censured by his party, and all the members of his Cabinet except Mr. Webster resigned. He then appointed Walter Forward, Secretary of the Treasury; John C. Spencer, Secretary of War; Abel P. Upshur, Secretary of the Navy; Charles A. Wickliffe, Postmaster General, and Hugh S. Legare, Attorney General. The last of these soon after died at Boston.

The boundary between Maine and the British Provinces—the Aroostook difficulty—still excited trouble. Negotiations were now in progress to solve the difficulty. Webster, as Secretary of State, conducted the discussion with Lord Ashburton, the English envoy, and in July, 1842, a treaty was signed at Washington, and soon after ratified by both countries, by which the line was fixed, and described with so much certainty as to remove all doubt as to its construction. This treaty also settled the northern limit of New York, New Hampshire, and Vermont, obviating all difficulty in that quarter.

Rhode Island had, down to this time, been governed under the charter granted by Charles II., the last relic of the reign of the Stuarts. This charter contained, however, great restrictions on the right of suffrage, and a large party in that little State had long sought a more liberal government. This the charter party refused, and, in consequence, a convention of the people assembled, which drew up a constitution, and submitted it to the people. As it received the approval of a majority of the voters, a new government was organized in May, 1842, with Thomas W. Dorr as Governor. The charter government treated all these proceedings as illegal, and made the exercise of any powers under the new constitution treason against the State. The suffrage party then attempted to obtain control of the State by force;

but their efforts were defeated, and Dorr was compelled to leave the State. He soon after returned, thinking that the excitement had blown ever; but he was arrested, tried for treason, and, on his conviction, sentenced to imprisonment for life. This was a strange result for America to witness. Dorr was soon released, and this ended the struggle. The charter party had triumphed, but were forced to call a new and more regular convention in 1844, which drew up a new constitution suited to the wants of the people.

In New York, troubles occurred also between a party clinging to old colonial ideas, and a party of reform. In several parts of the State large tracts were held under old Dutch grants to a kind of lords of the manor, called Patroons, who leased them out to those who cultivated the land. These leases had many feudal obligations; rent was paid in produce; farmers had to send their grain to particular mills; and whenever a lease was transferred from one to another, a kind of tax was levied.

All these conditions were so distasteful to Americans, that many of the tenants objected; and forming a party called Anti-renters, they determined to resist the landlords, and any officer of the law who attempted to serve any legal process on them. This disturbance spread over most of Columbia, Rensselaer, and Delaware Counties, and for a time set the State authorities at defiance. A deputy sheriff and some others were killed in broad day, and many others brutally treated; but the Government at last crushed the insurrection, and brought the murderers to trial. To avoid a renewal of the difficulties, most of the landlords abolished the obnoxious features of their leases, and made the rent payable in money.

A new political party appeared about this time, called the Native

American party, formed to check the rapid increase and power of the foreign element and the Catholic religion. It acquired considerable strength in all the large cities of the North and East, where foreign labor competed with native. Much was done to inflame the public mind to a dangerous pitch, and serious riots broke out in Philadelphia, in May, 1844, in which many lives were lost, and many churches and institutions burned and destroyed, the authorities showing great inefficiency. When, however, the riots were renewed in July, the State Government acted vigorously, and suppressed it at once, with the help of militia drawn from adjacent counties.

The West, too, had its troubles. About the year 1830, a man named Joseph Smith, living at Palmyra, in the western part of the State of New York, pretended to have received a new revelation from God, written in mystical characters on a series of plates which he claimed to be pure gold. He pretended to decipher these characters, and published the rhapsody under the name of the Book of Mormon. Assuming to be a prophet, he founded a new religion; but as his character became known, he was driven from place to place; but everywhere managed to gain some proselytes. He and his followers at last settled in Kirtland, Ohio; but as the hostility to them was renewed, the Mormons, now numbering several thousands, set out for the West, and settled in Jackson County, Missouri. The people in that part of the country rose in arms against them, and the Governor ordered their expulsion. The State militia was called out, and in the excitement they attacked the Mormons, killed many, and forced the rest to leave the State. The fugitives now attracted the sympathy of many who regarded them as deluded, but as most unjustly treated. Settling in Illinois, in 1831, they founded the city of Nauvoo, where,

on the banks of the Mississippi, they laid the foundations of an immense temple. Here they were at first welcomed by the people, and Smith, sending missionaries through the country, and even to Europe, saw his believers increase with wonderful rapidity. He obtained from the Illinois Legislature a favorable charter for his city ; but, in a short time, the public mind in Illinois became strongly excited against the Mormons, who were accused of very heinous crimes. The country rose in arms. Nauvoo was besieged, and several were killed on both sides. A charge of murder was then brought against Joseph Smith, and that leader, anxious to disarm the public hostility against him, surrendered to the authorities to undergo a legal trial. But the mob were unwilling to trust to the law ; they surrounded the place where Joseph Smith and his brother Hiram were confined, and, bursting in, murdered them with great brutality. The troubles were kept up : the Mormons, so far from being disheartened by the death of their prophet, looked up to Brigham Young as their head, and stood their ground. Yielding at last to the storm, they resolved to emigrate to a part of the country where they would be far from all neighbors, and set out in a body for a long journey over the Plains, with all their cattle and property, to the interior of California.

All these things showed that changes were coming over the American people, who had long been so quiet and tolerant with each other. Public excitements were increasing, and people were more easily led to acts of violence.

As yet, however, this spirit of turbulence had not gained sufficient strength to check the general prosperity of the country. The continued tide of emigration enabled the Territories to fill up rapidly ; and in March, 1845, an act of Congress was passed admitting two

new States, one in the North, Iowa, the other in the South, Florida.

Just previous to this, Texas, having come to an understanding with the United States, ceased to be an independent republic. Resolutions were adopted by the Congress of the United States for its annexation. After the battle of San Jacinto, Texas had maintained its independence, but, owing to many difficulties, was not in a state of prosperity. The Mexican Government had never relinquished the hope of again reconquering Texas, and as soon as the act of annexation to the UnitedStates was accomplished, Almonte, the Mexican Minister, protested, but, the resolution of the United States Congress having been ratified by Texas on the 5th of July, Texas, with undefined limits, came into the Union as a State. The question of slavery arose in regard. to it, and by a compromise it was agreed that Congress should have the power to form the territory into four States, and that, on such division, all north of 36° 30′ should be free States, while slavery might exist south of that line.

While the public mind was occupied with the now imminent war with Mexico, and with troubles in regard to the Oregon boundary with Great Britain, a new election took place. Henry Clay, the candidate of the Whig party, who was in favor of negotiation, was defeated, and James K. Polk, of Tennessee, was elected President, and George M. Dallas, of Pennsylvania, Vice-President.

CHAPTER XI.

JAMES K. POLK, ELEVENTH PRESIDENT—1845-1849.

The Mexican War—Battles of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma—Battle of Monterey—Conquest of California and New Mexico—Santa Anna—Scott at Vera Cruz—Battle of Buena Vista—Capture of Vera Cruz—Battle of Cerro Gordo—Puebla taken—Contreras and Churubusco—Battle of Chapultepec—Mexico taken—Last Struggles of the Mexicans—Peace of Guadalupe Hidalgo—Close of Polk's Administration.

We have not in our sketch of the history had occasion to mention James K. Polk, who was now raised to the Presidency. The great men of the rival parties excited too much jealousy to be safely put forward as candidates, and hence, men who were little known were sometimes nominated. James K. Polk, born in North Carolina in 1796, had from childhood resided in Tennesee, and had served in the Legislature of that State and in Congress for many years.

Mr. Polk, on the day of his inauguration, appointed as his Cabinet, James Buchanan, Secretary of State ; Robert J. Walker, Secretary of the Treasury ; William L. Marcy, Secretary of War ; George Bancroft, the historian, Secretary of the Navy ; Cave Johnson, Postmaster General ; and John Y. Mason, Attorney General. The subject requiring immediate action was the position of our affairs with Mexico. The late President had already prepared for any emergency. When Texas, in July, 1845, ratifying the resolution, became a State in the Union, General Zachary Taylor entered it with an army of occupation, numbering fifteen hundred men. The frontier between Texas and the adjoining Mexican States had never been settled. The Texans claimed to the Rio Grande, while, in fact, they had no settlements, and were never

able to exercise any authority beyond the Nueces. The United States and Mexico might easily have adjusted a boundary, but Mexico felt aggrieved and refused to treat, and the United States were eager for war. Herrera, President of Mexico, was indeed anxious to avoid hostilities, but he was forced to retire, and Paredes, a war candidate, became President. In September, General Taylor encamped at Corpus Christi, between the Nueces and the Rio Grande. His instructions were "that the appearance of any considerable body of Mexican troops in this territory would be regarded by the executive as an invasion of the United States and the commencement of hostilities," although it had always been held by Mexican and never by Texan troops. In January, 1846 Taylor was ordered to advance to the Rio Grande. After encamping and leaving his stores at Point Isabel on the 25th of March, he moved to the mouth of the Rio Grande, and began to erect Fort Brown, opposite the Mexican city of Matamoras.

The Mexican settlers fled across the Rio Grande, and General Ampudia arrived at Matamoras with a large force to drive the Americans beyond the Nueces. He at once summoned Taylor to withdraw within twenty-four hours; but, before he could commence operations, was succeeded by General Arista. That commander at once sent a party of dragoons across the river. Taylor detached Thornton with sixty dragoons to reconnoitre, but they were nearly all killed or taken on the 24th of April by the Mexicans under Torrejon. This was the first bloodshed in the war. The Mexicans then crossed in force, and gained Taylor's rear, menacing Point Isabel. Having completed his fort, Taylor marched on the 1st of May to the relief of that post. No sooner was he lost in the distance, than Arista began a bombardment of Fort Brown, while he himself, with a considerable force, crossed the

river to assail it in the rear. The garrison made a vigorous defense, and silenced the Mexican batteries ; but when siege cannon were planted in the rear, and Major Brown, the commander, was mortally wounded, signals were sent up for relief. Taylor at once marched from Point Isabel, and on the 8th of May, at noon, came up with Arista, who had taken post at Palo Alto. Taylor drew up his little army, and opened with his artillery. A fierce cannonade followed, the Mexicans replying with spirit. Then their cavalry, in splendid style, swept down on the American right. Taylor's troops received them without flinching, and the artillery and infantry drove them back. But this was all. The Mexican line was unbroken by our cannonade and musketry. Arista, massing his batteries, endeavored to silence the American guns, and, by a perfect tempest of balls, for a time checked our fire, cutting down Major Ringgold and Captain Page at their guns. Again and again his splendid cavalry swept down in the vain endeavor to break the American lines. At last, despairing of the attempt, Arista drew off his whole force, leaving Taylor in possession of the field. In this first battle of the war, which lasted five hours, Taylor lost about fifty in killed and wounded. Arista six times as many.

Early the next morning, Taylor resumed the march for Fort Brown. At Resaca de la Palma he came upon Arista's army, well posted and drawn up to receive him. Here the second battle was fought. The Mexicans again endeavored to silence the American guns with their well-handled artillery ; but the American dragoons, under May, drove the Mexican gunners from their pieces, and the American infantry, by a bayonet charge, carried their best battery. Taylor's main body, almost at the same instant, forced Arista's center from the ravine, which they held. An irregular combat ensued, but the Americans

pushed steadily forward, and drove the Mexicans from their intrenchments, capturing all their camp equipage. General La Vega and a hundred men were made prisoners; eight cannons, three stand of colors, and a quantity of military stores were captured. The Mexican army was completely broken up, and Arista fled in disorder to Matamoras.

After this signal victory, Taylor pressed on to Fort Brown, and relieved that post from its long bombardment. Then, in concert with Commodore Connor, he took Barita, at the mouth of the Rio Grande, and prepared to attack Matamoras; but that city surrendered on the 18th of May.

Before these operations were known in Washington, Polk had sent a violent message to Congress, announcing that American blood had been shed on American soil, and that war existed by the act of Mexico. Congress immediately acted on this message, and on the 13th of May passed an act authorizing the President to raise fifty thousand volunteers, and appropriating ten millions of dollars to carry on the war. As the motive of the war was conquest, and not the possession of the disputed strip, a plan of campaign was formed for attacking Mexico in various parts, and occupying her most valuable frontier States. A fleet bearing an army was to sweep around South America, to take possession of California, a State already explored by Fremont and other American officers, and known to contain great mineral wealth; an "Army of the West" was to assemble at Fort Leavenworth, march to Santa Fé, take possession of New Mexico, and invade the State of Coahuila; while an army of the Center was to operate from Texas upon the heart of Mexico. Immediate steps were taken to organize these armies and carry on the war.

On her side, Mexico formally declared war on the 23d of May, and nerved herself for a deadly struggle with her powerful sister republic, whose resources seemed inexhaustible. General Taylor in the mean time received reinforcements, chiefly of the newly raised volunteers, and, finding himself in September at the head of six thousand men, resolved to advance upon Monterey, an important place in Northern Mexico, the route to which had been opened by General Worth with the first division. On the 19th of September, the whole American army encamped within three miles of Monterey, which was held by General Ampudia with an army of nine thousand men. Although a strongly fortified town in a position protected by great natural defenses, Taylor prepared to attack it. Cutting off Ampudia's supplies by the Saltillo road, he began the siege on the 21st. An old palace of the bishops, now a strong work, was the chief fortification. General Worth was dispatched to turn this, and attack the heights in the rear. To cover his attack, Lieutenant-Colonel Garland, with another division, attacked the lower town ; Butler and Quitman, with a third division, carried the enemy's advanced battery, and secured a position in the town. Meanwhile General Worth had encountered the enemy in force, repulsed him with heavy loss, and carried two of the heights. The next day Worth carried the palace itself, and entered the town, while Quitman, in spite of all the efforts of the enemy to dislodge him, fought his way in from house to house, and reached the plaza or great public square found in all Spanish cities.

Ampudia then drew in his troops for a last struggle, but finding resistance hopeless after the dreadful carnage, he offered to capitulate, and on the 24th surrendered the city, marching out with all his troops. In this sanguinary battle both regulars and volunteers dis-

played the greatest skill and courage. The American loss was one hundred and twenty killed, and three hundred and sixty-eight wounded, while that of the enemy was at least a thousand.

General Taylor placed Worth in command of Monterey, and encamped himself at Walnut Springs, three miles distant.

Another change was now to take place in Mexican affairs, which seemed at first to promise the Americans a satisfactory solution of the war question, but which proved a delusion. The Mexican Government had thus far been in the hands of Paredes, an advocate of war. General Santa Anna, then in Cuba, professed a desire for peace, so that the administration at Washington came to an understanding with him, and enabled him to pass through the fleet then lying before Vera Cruz. No sooner, however, was that able man in his own country, than he threw himself into the hands of the war party, assumed the direction of affairs, and prepared to carry on the war with vigor. This compelled the United States to adopt another series of plans.

The other operations of this campaign had meanwhile succeeded, though not as intended. When Texas was annexed, Commodore Sloat was off the coast of California. Believing that war actually existed, he took Monterey, August 7, 1846. San Francisco soon followed its fate; and the best port on the Pacific fell into the hands of the Americans to begin a new career. Colonel Fremont, who had explored the passes of the mountains, was also in California with a small force, and he raised the American flag at San Juan. The Mexican authorities did not yield without a blow.

Meanwhile, General Kearney, in command of the Army of the West, had marched across the Western plains and through the mountain passes, a distance of nine hundred miles, from Fort Leavenworth to

Santa Fé, following the well-known track of the traders. The Mexicans had anticipated no attack. Kearney met with no resistance : he took possession of the country, and, having made Charles Bent governor, continued his march toward California, which he was also instructed to reduce. On the way he was met by a courier from Commodore Stockton and Colonel Fremont, informing him that California was already in the hands of the United States. Sending back his main army, he marched on with a hundred men, and with Stockton and Fremont completed the subjugation of the province. Fremont had been proclaimed governor, but Kearney proceeded to Monterey, and there assumed the office of governor, and proclaimed that California was annexed to the United States

Before proceeding to California, General Kearney had detached Colonel Doniphan against the Navajo Indians. He compelled that tribe to make peace, and then marched toward Chihuahua to join General Wool. On the 22d of December he encountered a Mexican force at Bracitos, whom he dispersed, and, pushing on through the hostile country, on the last day of February found the Sacramento Pass, eighteen miles from Chihuahua, held by four thousand Mexicans, under General Trias. After a short but decisive struggle, in which the Mexicans were completely routed, Doniphan pushed on, and on the 2d of March took possession of that large city, and the province of the same name. After giving his soldiers a short rest here after their march of many thousand miles, he advanced to Saltillo, where General Wool was encamped.

The authority of the United States in these conquered parts was firmly established, and, though some outbreaks occurred, the Mexicans were never able to regain possession of any part.

But the war was not yet ended. Though the Mexicans had been defeated in the field, and many of their provinces occupied, their spirit was unbroken, and the Americans found that they must strike at the capital, if they wished to conquer a peace.

There, Santa Anna, after outwitting them, was now preparing all the resources of the republic for the ultimate struggle of the war.

The Government of the United States now formed a new plan of operations, the first step in which was to attack and occupy Vera Cruz, the chief Mexican port on the Gulf, and from that point move upon Mexico itself. The plan was arduous and surrounded with difficulties. Vera Cruz was defended by the strong fortress of San Juan de Ulua, which had defied the French arms. The road from that port to Mexico was a gradual ascent, abounding in narrow mountain-passes, where a small force could hold an army at bay.

Preparations were, however, made to carry out this plan of campaign. General Scott was directed to raise a new army, drawing such forces as he could safely from General Taylor. This army he was to lead in person. After making all necessary arrangements at Washington, he proceeded to Texas late in the year, to form his troops for service as they arrived. In March, 1847, he concentrated all his troops at Lobos Island, about a hundred and twenty-five miles north of Vera Cruz, and on the 7th embarked from that point for Vera Cruz, on a squadron commanded by Commodore Connor. Two days later he appeared before that city with an army of thirteen thousand men.

Santa Anna, who felt that he could depend on a vigorous if not successful resistance to the Americans, when they should appear before Vera Cruz, had resolved to act with vigor against Taylor, whose army

was much weakened. By unparalleled exertions he assembled an army of twenty-two thousand men, and at the opening of the year lay with these at San Luis Potosi, waiting his opportunity to strike an effective blow. At last he resolved to hurl his whole force on Taylor and crush him, before he marched to check Scott's advance.

In February, Taylor, with gloomy forebodings, heard of Santa Anna's approach, and, calling in his various divisions, effected a junction with Wool at Agua Nueva. Then he fell back to a position of remarkable strength near Buena Vista, eleven miles from Saltillo, and there drew up his force, about six thousand strong, with his left on a high mountain, and his right and front so covered by a series of ravines as to be impracticable even for infantry.

Santa Anna, who believed the American general to be flying before him, pushed on with his whole force, well equipped, but suffering sadly for want of provisions. About noon on the 22d of February, Santa Anna was within two miles of the American lines, and, assuring Taylor that he was surrounded so that escape was impossible, called on him to surrender.

A stern refusal showed Santa Anna that he must attack the American general in his strong position. Skirmishing began that day. Santa Anna, finding the American left the only feasible point, detached General Ampudia with light troops to occupy the mountain. These were attacked by the American left, under Colonel Marshall, and an active skirmishing was kept up till night closed on the scene. At the same time a detachment of Mexican cavalry, under General Miñon, was operating against General Taylor's rear. In the morning, Santa Anna again attacked Taylor's extreme left, and then threw himself on the centre. Repulsed here, he accumulated his forces, under

Generals Lombardini and Pacheco, to force the left, then held by Lane. The charge was a terrible one. In vain O'Brien's artillery hurled its shot and shell into the advancing corps of Mexicans. It swept steadily on. An Indiana regiment fled in confusion: the left wing gave way. General Wool, in command in front, called in the light troops on the mountain, and drew in his left. Santa Anna endeavored to follow up his advantage; but Taylor, hurrying up from the rear, threw fresh troops on the left. The battle was renewed with fury. Again and again Santa Anna swept down with foot and horse to break the line, but always with increasing loss. One of his detachments, reaching the American rear, attacked the trains and baggage at Buena Vista, but were checked and cut off from their main body by Colonels Marshall and Yell.

Then Santa Anna, calling on his left and all his reserves, led the last attack in person, sustained by General Perez and Pacheco. Again the well-handled batteries of O'Brien and Bragg poured death into the advancing columns; but Santa Anna pushed on, and made a fearful charge. The level portion between the ravines became the scene of furious encounter, of alternate attack and defense. The American troops fought with desperate courage, conscious that retreat was impossible—that they must conquer or perish. However, the Kentucky and Illinois regiments, after losing Colonels Clay, Hardin of the First Illinois, and McKee, were driven back.

Once more Santa Anna endeavored to follow up the slight advantage gained so dearly, but the terrible American artillery and the difficulties of the ground checked him. He finally drew back; and when night closed over the fearful day's battle, the two armies lay as they had at daybreak.

In the morning, General Taylor prepared to renew the battle, but he soon found that the work was done. The Mexicans had retreated during the night, leaving their dead and wounded on the field. Such was the eventful battle of Buena Vista, in which an American army of five thousand men sustained for a whole day the repeated attacks of an army four times its number. Taylor's loss was about three hundred killed, and five hundred wounded, while Santa Anna's loss was estimated at two thousand.

This glorious victory confirmed the American supremacy, and overthrew the Mexican power in that portion of the country. General Taylor centered his army at Monterey, and soon after returned to the United States in consequence of difficulties with the War Department. General Wool then assumed command of the army at Monterey.

Taylor's campaign had been most creditable to him as a commander. There was nothing to dim the lustre of his army but occasional lawless acts by some of the volunteers, among whom it was not easy to enforce strict discipline.

His campaign from Palo Alto to Buena Vista had been a school where many officers were trained, who at a later day fought against each other in the terrible civil war. Here Mansfield distinguished himself as an engineer; Bragg, with his artillery; Halleck, Lowe, Wallace, Richardson, and many others, in both the regular and volunteer service.

The victory at Buena Vista closed the campaign of General Taylor in that part of Mexico. He had not an army large enough to advance, and he had already effected more than had been expected. He was, however, too brave a man and too able a general to remain idle when there was real service to be done. His victories made him extremely popular, and at last raised him to the presidential chair.

Scott meanwhile was investing Vera Cruz and its renowned fortress. He summoned the city to surrender, and on its refusal prepared to bombard it. The fleet took up a position to give the most efficient aid, and batteries were planted on land in the best positions the engineers could reach. On the 22d, the bombardment of the fortress and the city began. The destruction in Vera Cruz was fearful, as nearly seven thousand shot and shell were hurled into the devoted city. The loss of life among the citizens, their wives and children, was terrible, one of the sad barbarities of modern warfare. The Mexican commander, General Landero, asked for a truce to allow non-combatants and neutrals to withdraw ; but Scott would not consent, and the fearful bombardment went on till the 26th, when Landero made proposals for a capitulation. Three days after, the garrison of five thousand men marched out and laid down their arms, giving their parole not to serve in the war until exchanged.

General Scott immediately occupied the city of Vera Cruz and the castle of San Juan de Ulua, with two smaller forts, Santiago and Concepcion, five hundred pieces of artillery falling into his hands.

This capture was effected with very slight loss, the Americans not losing in all a hundred men, while the Mexicans are said to have had nearly a thousand killed, and many more wounded. The reverse was unexpected, and gave a terrible blow to the plans of Santa Anna, as it was his strongest post, and was full of artillery and supplies.

He saw that his action must be prompt and vigorous. His bloody repulse at Buena Vista had taught him that he was engaged with an enemy most difficult to cope with. But he must now meet a victorious army with comparatively raw troops. Gathering what forces he could at the instant, he marched to check Scott's advance. It was

time. Scott had lost no time in landing wagons and other necessaries for transportation. On the 8th of April, Twiggs's division moved forward to the interior, like Cortez of old. Santa Anna was approaching rapidly with his new army. Near the coast the territory of Mexico is low, flat, and unhealthy. This is the Tierra Caliente ; then it begins to rise gradually till in the interior it spreads out in one vast table-land. When General Twiggs reached the little village of Plen del Rio, on the limit of the Tierra Caliente, he found himself confronted by the Mexican army under Santa Anna, drawn up in a very strong position at the pass of Cerro Gordo, and numbering nearly twelve thousand men, with artillery well planted. Before Twiggs could attack, General Scott came up with the main body, making his force in the field about eight thousand five hundred men.

Early on the 17th, Twiggs began to cut a road through the brushwood, to reach Cerro Gordo without being exposed to a heavy Mexican battery between that point and the American camp. Here the battle began. Santa Anna hurried up to cheer on his men ; but the Americans, under Colonel Childs, drove him back, and occupied the heights of Atalaya. The next day the American troops, under General Harney and Colonel Riley, from this point stormed the heights of Cerro Gordo on different sides, and killing the Mexican commander, General Vasquez, drove his force from the hill with terrible loss. The victorious troops now found themselves within range of another Mexican battery, and Colonel Riley, with General Shields, were detached to take it. Shields fell severely wounded, but Baker gallantly led on his men and drove the Mexicans from their guns.

All was now confusion. Santa Anna in vain endeavored to rally his men to check the progress of the Americans. His army was totally

routed. The heavy Mexican battery nearest the American camp had gallantly repulsed an assault led by General Pillow ; but seeing Santa Anna routed, they hoisted a white flag, and surrendered, to the number of three thousand men. Scott's loss was sixty-three killed and three hundred and sixty-seven wounded, while Santa Anna lost a thousand killed and wounded, and three times as many remained as prisoners of war in the hands of the American general. Santa Anna himself with difficulty escaped from the field. Scott, having thus gained the Eastern Cordilleras, pushed on to Jalapa, and having occupied the strong castles of La Hoya and Perote, advanced upon the important city Puebla de los Angeles. Perote was the strongest fortress in Mexico after San Juan de Ulua, but it surrendered without firing a gun, and no resistance was made at the strongly fortified city of Puebla, with its population of eighty thousand people. Here General Scott was compelled to halt in his career of victory. Three thousand of his volunteers had served the time for which they had enlisted, and now withdrew, leaving him with too small a force to continue his progress. This was all the more unfortunate, as it gave the brave and capable Santa Anna time to recover from his series of defeats, and organize new plans for the defense of the menaced capital, as well as to gather and drill the army to carry out his designs.

It was not till August that Scott, having been reinforced, so that he had again an army of ten thousand men, resumed his march. They had now left the unhealthy Tierra Caliente. The American soldiers found their line of march traversing a beautiful, well-watered country, with a fine climate. Before them rose the great Cordilleras, and ascending these, they looked down into the beautiful valley where Mexico lay amid its lakes.

When Scott reached the city of Mexico the Government of the United States had in vain endeavored to open negotiations. The Mexicans sternly refused every proposal of peace. Indeed, those in authority durst not entertain for a moment any proposition. Santa Anna had raised an army of twenty-five thousand men, with which he held all the strong positions around the city, and stood ready to check the American advance. General Scott, avoiding the regular causeways leading to the city, as they were all protected by fortresses, pushed on to San Augustin. Here the Mexicans had made little preparation, for at this point began the Pedregal, a broken field of lava, the remains of some extinct volcano. This rough and sterile lava-bed was deemed impassable by troops, and no attempt was made to defend it, though General Valencia lay beyond it with a force of six thousand men. Undeterred by the nature of the ground, General Persifer F. Smith, pushed on across the Pedregal with his own brigade and those commanded by Riley and Cadwallader. Shields pressed on steadily behind him. At San Hieronymo, Smith came up with Santa Anna, but the Mexican general fell back; and at three o'clock in the morning, in the pitchy darkness, Riley advanced to assault the Mexican works at Contreras. He soon carried them, and was in possession of the enemy's camp. Smith's brigade had been attacked by Torrejon's cavalry, but the Mexican lancers with all their horsemanship and prowess could not stand before Smith's brigade, which utterly routed them. Cadwallader, Shields, and Pierce, who had been engaged holding in check Santa Anna's reserves, now hemmed in the fugitives and cut them down.

The Mexicans were utterly defeated. Although the Americans assailed strong works, their loss was comparatively small, not exceeding a hundred in all, while fifteen hundred Mexicans lay dead and wounded

on the field of Contreras, and a thousand more were prisoners, with cannon, muskets, and stores. To the delight of the whole army O'Brien's guns, so gallantly lost at Buena Vista, were here recovered.

Having gained the position at Contreras, one great step was accomplished ; but Churubusco was the key to the city, and the assault upon it was a much more serious affair.

Santa Anna had posted himself, with an army of thirty thousand men, in a strong position. An old church and convent had been made part of his defenses, and strong fortifications covered the bridge by which the Americans could best advance to the assault. Undismayed by the numbers of the enemy or the strength of their works, the American army came on in three divisions. Worth led the right to attack the Mexican post covering the bridge, and drove them to the fortifications, which opened on him. At these he led on his men. Twiggs and Pillow rushed on with their gallant fellows to storm the convent ; while Shields, with the left, swept around to attack the enemy's reserve in the rear. The struggle was desperate : the Mexican fire of artillery and musketry swept through the small American line, and it was again and again driven back from the convent and fortifications ; but stubborn valor prevailed : both points were carried. Shields and Pierce found the reserves intrenched, and they repeatedly charged amid a murderous fire without success. They could neither carry the works nor demoralize the Mexicans ; but a loud American hurra rose above the din of battle. Worth, after carrying the works before him, was sweeping down to take the Mexican reserve in flank. Then the enemy gave way, and the American commanders pushed on in hot pursuit to the very gates of the capital.

Santa Anna had lost the battle of Churubusco, and his great army was shattered; ten thousand men lay dead or wounded, or were grim prisoners in the hands of General Scott. It had not been a bloodless victory to that general. Of his army, less than ten thousand in all, one thousand fell dead or wounded at Churubusco, with nearly a hundred officers.

The city of Mexico was now really at the mercy of General Scott, as Santa Anna could not have prevented his marching in and taking possession; but the Mexican commander resolved to make one more effort. To gain time to rally his forces, he opened negotiations. Scott fell into the snare, and, satisfied with what he had achieved, agreed to an armistice. He was soon, however, convinced of his mistake; and finding that Santa Anna was insincere, and was merely amusing him to gain time, he resolved to attack the city before all the fruit of the victories at Contreras and Churubusco was lost.

But the conquest that might have been bloodless, was now to be purchased at a heavy cost of life. The Mexicans had been fortifying their position, and again breathed defiance. The point to be attacked by General Scott in order to gain the city, was the fortress of Chapultepec, and the defenses at its base. These consisted of a stone work called Molino del Rey, or the King's Mill, and the arsenal. Both were filled with troops, and the interval between them was occupied by a large force of infantry with artillery. Here Santa Anna himself, with Generals Valdarez and Leon, awaited the American attack. General Worth was ordered to lead the assault. Early on the morning of the 8th of September his corps advanced by starlight. On the right a storming party under Wright attacked the Molino, but were driven back by the volleys of the Mexicans with terrible loss. Smith and

Cadwallader, however, hastened up, and Garland burst on their flank These commanders at last drove the enemy from their strong position.

At the arsenal, on the left, the fight was of the fiercest description. Here McIntosh led his brigade up gallantly to the assault, but he soon fell wounded, the next in command was killed, and finally the whole brigade was driven back by the tremendous fire of the Mexicans. As they recoiled from this almost impregnable position shattered and decimated, the Mexican General Alvarez, with his cavalry, came rushing down upon them; but Sumner's dragoons and Duncan's battery met this charge, and at last drove Alvarez from the field.

Duncan then opened on the arsenal, and by his steady and well-directed fire dislodged the enemy from that position, which was immediately occupied by our troops. So far, General Worth had carried the last bulwark. He had accomplished the task assigned to him, but it had been at fearful loss: of the brave men who went into that fight, eight hundred, including fifty-eight officers, lay dead or dying, reducing Scott's force to about three thousand men. Santa Anna, who had lost two of his best generals, and nearly two thousand men, fell back, and gathered the remainder of his troops on the southern front of the city.

Worth after this action dismantled the Mexican works and resumed his original position.

Chapultepec, a grim old fortress, towering high above them, remained to be taken by Scott before the final storming of Mexico, the capital. Its frowning heights, with the fortress, and military academy, held by men now nerved with desperation, told that its rocky sides would run with blood before the Stars and Stripes were planted on the summit.

General Scott in a council planned the assault. He erected four heavy batteries to bear upon the fortress, and on the 12th of Septem-

ber began a heavy cannonade and bombardment. The next day Twiggs moved around to make a feigned attack on the south ; while two columns, one led by General Quitman, the other by General Pillow, moved forward by different roads to attack Chapultepec. The Mexicans held the foot of the hill with artillery, but the American artillery soon silenced the Mexican cannon and drove the men from the guns. Then came the rush of the Americans. With a cheer the redoubt of the slope was taken, and the Mexican detachment driven up the hill. Up in pursuit charged the Americans. Pillow fell wounded before he reached the top, but the men pressed on. The fortress walls are reached. Some plant ladders, others batter in the gates. They swarm over the walls and through. Chapultepec is entered. But all is not won. The Mexicans made a desperate fight, although they were cut down on all sides. At last, seeing no hope left, they begged for quarter and surrendered.

General Scott soon reached the spot to look down on the humbled capital. Now resolved to lose no advantage, he orders Worth with his fresh men to attack the San Cosme gate, and Quitman that of Belen. The high causeways leading to these gates were defended by barricades well manned and commanded ; but both American generals carried them at a charge and reached the gates. Quitman actually entered the city ; but Worth met greater opposition, as Santa Anna threw troops into the houses, and for a time checked Worth's advance ; but, breaking through from house to house, hoisting cannon to the housetops, he fought his way in.

When night closed the two American commanders had effected a lodgment in the city.

Utterly broken and disheartened, Santa Anna fled from Mexico that night with the remnant of his force.

The next morning a deputation came to propose a capitulation.

General Scott refused to listen to any proposals. He had taken the city, and it was too late to talk about its surrender. Although there was no force of regulars to oppose him, some convicts, escaping from prison, began to fire on the Americans. These were soon routed, and Scott entered the ancient city of Montezuma, with his gallant and victorious army grimy and warworn with a long campaign, and reduced in the last desperate battles by the loss of more than fifteen hundred men

Having established his headquarters, General Scott proclaimed martial law, and established a firm discipline, to prevent any such outrages as had occurred in some other parts. So firm and just was the government of the city, compared with the misgovernment and tyranny to which they had been subjected, that many leading men of Mexico proposed to General Scott to retain possession and give them a good and permanent administration.

But the American general sought only to serve his country. He had forced Mexico to submit.

His Government was to settle the terms with the conquered republic. Peace was now certain ; but General Scott was soon after recalled, and, leaving the army in Mexico, he returned to New York in the spring.

The fall of Mexico put a stop to hostilities in that vicinity ; but Santa Anna, recovering a little courage, once more appeared in the field, and attempted to break the American line of communications. Puebla was held by a small American force under Colonel Childs, and, though besieged by a large body of Mexicans, refused to rurrender.

Santa Anna joined the besiegers with his army, and used every exertion to take the place before relief could reach it.

Failing in this, he resolved to strike a blow in another quarter, and hearing that an American detachment under Lane was marching to reinforce Colonel Childs, he attempted to intercept it. The two corps met at Huamantla, on the 9th of October, and after a brief action, Lane routed Santa Anna; and pushing on to Atlixco, attacked the Mexican guerilla Rea, who had cut off a hundred men of Major Lally's command. On the 16th, he utterly routed Rea, killing and wounding more than five hundred of his opponents.

Santa Anna, now a mere fugitive, rejected by the people whom he had led on to resist the Americans, resigned all his offices, and the government of Mexico devolved on Peña, who at once called a convention to consider the critical state of Mexican affairs. It met at Queretaro in November, and conforming to the expressed opinion of Peña, appointed commissioners to treat of peace with the United States. N. P. Trist, acting on the part of that republic, soon brought negotiations to a close, and on the 2d of February, 1848, the commissioners of the two nations signed a treaty of peace at Guadalupe Hidalgo. This treaty, finally accepted by both Governments, and proclaimed by President Polk on the 4th of July, gave to the United States the disputed territory between the Nueces and the Rio Grande, as to which the war had arisen, and in addition New Mexico and California. The American Government on its side agreed to pay Mexico fifteen millions of dollars, three millions in hand, and twelve millions in four annual installments. They were to evacuate the Mexican territory within three months. The war having thus closed, the American army withdrew from Mexico in the course of the summer.

The new territory thus added to the United States is not without its interest in an historical point of view. New Mexico had been discovered by the Spaniards as early as the year 1539, by a Franciscan, Father Mark, of Nice in Italy, who penetrated to Zuñi, one of the Indian towns still standing. He found the country inhabited by a half-civilized race, living in houses built close together of sunburnt bricks, several stories high, each story smaller than those beneath, and reached by ladders, there being no door or opening on the outside. The main entrance was in the roof. These Indians cultivated the soil, used hand-mills for grinding corn, wove cloth, made pottery, and showed great intelligence.

An expedition under Vasquez de Coronado occupied the country in 1540, and zealous missionaries began to labor among the Indians, some of them losing their lives in the Christian work.

California, which had been discovered by Cortez, the conqueror of Mexico, was visited by a fleet under Vizcaino, at the same time that Coronado was exploring New Mexica. John de Oñate finally entered New Mexico in 1595, under a patent from Philip II. of Spain, with colonists, and founded St. Gabriel, and soon after Santa Fé, in which the governor of New Mexico resided as early as 1600. Thus we see that that little town, even now far removed from all our thriving States and cities, is really, next to St. Augustine in Florida, the oldest city in the United States.

The Spaniards converted nearly all the natives to Christianity by the year 1626, and ruled the country in peace for many years ; but in 1680, owing to the tyranny of the military governors, the Indians rose and nearly exterminated the Spaniards, San Juan de los Caballeros being the only large place that escaped. The Spaniards, however,

soon recovered the country, and attempted to extend it, sending expeditions to what is now Kansas. New Mexico formed a part of Mexico till, by the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, it became part of the United States. Before the United States had taken any steps as to its government, Texas claimed New Mexico as part of its territory. This claim was resisted by the Americans who had settled there ; and in consequence, Colonel Monroe, the governor of New Mexico, in 1850, called a convention, which adopted a constitution, and proceeded to solicit admission as a State.

California was not so soon occupied by the Spaniards. It was too remote, and seemed to offer little inducement for colonists.

The Jesuits began missions in Lower California, and were extending their labors northward at the time of their suppression in the last century. In 1769, Galvez resolved to settle Upper California, and set out with a considerable force, taking live stock and all necessaries. The Franciscans, who had succeeded the Jesuits, began missions in Upper California, with a little garrison of soldiers near each. Out of these grew many of the present older towns in that State.

In this way San Diego, Monterey, San Francisco, and other cities of California were founded just about the time of our Revolution. A few Spaniards settled in the territory, and the Indians were raised to a high degree of civilization by the missionaries, who taught them agriculture and manufactures, and enabled them to live in comfort. The missions were sometimes attacked by wild Indians, and several of the devoted men were killed ; but the country prospered until 1824, when the Mexican Government sent out men to seize the mission lands and dispossess the Indians. In a short time those thriving communities were broken up, and the Indians, left to themselves, fell back to less

civilized ways, and diminished greatly. California did not gain in white settlers to make up the loss, and became a languishing province.

England and France both began to feel the importance of San Francisco as a port on the Pacific, and the Russians actually began a settlement at Bodega, not far from it.

The mineral wealth of California was not known at that time, but the same month that the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo was signed, a man in the employ of Captain Sutter, who had settled on the Sacramento River discovered gold. This set others to examine, and gold was found in many places. As soon as this became known in the United States, a general excitement ensued. Thousands started at once for the land of gold, endeavoring to reach California by any kind of vessel, the only modes of proceeding at the time being to sail around Cape Horn, or to go to the Isthmus of Panama, and cross there, and take shipping on the Pacific.

The population increased so that a regular Territorial Government was organized.

During the war, the United States had prospered, and showed their appreciation of suffering abroad by sending relief to the starving poor in Ireland. A vessel of the United States navy on one occasion carried over a cargo of provisions: a better use than bombarding cities and carrying death and desolation amid women and children clustering around the family altar.

During this administration, Wisconsin was admitted into the Union in 1848, and Oregon organized as a Territory, as Minnesota also was in 1849. But the discovery of gold in California drew the tide of emigration to that new Territory, and checked for a time the growth of the Northwest.

At the election which took place in 1848, Lewis Cass was put forward by the Democratic party, and General Taylor by the Whigs; but many of the Democrats did not accept the political views entertained by the adherents of General Cass, and Martin Van Buren was nominated by a section of the party adverse to the extension of slavery and known as Free-soilers. Zachary Taylor, accordingly, was elected President, and Millard Fillmore, Vice-President.

CHAPTER XII.

ZACHARY TAYLOR, TWELFTH PRESIDENT—1849–1850. MILLARD FILLMORE, THIRTEENTH PRESIDENT—1850–1853.

Brief Administration of General Taylor—Admission of California—Fillmore as President—Lopez and the Cuban Affairs—Sioux Indians—Kossuth—Sir John Franklin and the Grinnell Expedition—Fishery Question—Death of Clay and Webster—The Telegraph.

ZACHARY TAYLOR, born in Virginia, in November, 1781, before the close of the Revolution, removed in childhood to Kentucky. In 1807, he entered the United States army, and had won distinction in the war with Great Britain, as well as at a later date in the Seminole war and the first campaign against Mexico. His brilliant victories at Palo Alto, Resaca de la Palma, Monterey, and Buena Vista had made him a favorite with the people.

Although he had never filled any civil position in the Government, great hopes were placed on his integrity and decisive character. He selected as his first Cabinet, John M. Clayton, as Secretary of State; William M. Meredith, Secretary of the Treasury; George W. Crawford, Secretary of War; William B. Preston, Secretary of the Navy;

and to the newly erected Department of the Interior he appointed Thomas Ewing.

One of the first questions for consideration was the erection of a State Government in California, a somewhat premature step, but called for by the large number who had already settled in the State, and the constant influx from all parts.

Governor Riley, the military governor of California, called a convention to form a State Constitution, which it did, September 1, 1849. When the people adopted the instrument submitted to them by this convention, they elected Peter H. Burnett as Governor. This Constitution excluded slavery from California.

The Legislature at once proceeded to elect two Senators, who hastened to Washington with a petition asking the recognition of California as a State. On the meeting of Congress in December, General Taylor sent in these petitions and recommended action upon them ; but intense excitement prevailed through the country. Taking alarm at the hostility manifested by Northern members to the institution of slavery, the Southern members of Congress prepared to secede from the Union. A convention was called at Nashville, January, 1850 to consider the step.

The question of slavery excited violent debates in Congress, which lasted for four months, and resulted in the Compromise Act of 1850, passed on the 9th of September. By this, California was admitted as a free State ; the country east of it was formed into Utah Territory, with no limitation in regard to slavery ; New Mexico was made a Territory in the same way. At the same time provision was made for the return by the Northern States of fugitive slaves from the South.

But before this act passed, Zachary Taylor passed away. He died, July 9, 1850, of a sudden and painful illness.

Millard Fillmore, a native of Cayuga County, New York, who had risen from the position of an humble mechanic to a high rank at the bar by his own exertions, assumed the duties of the Presidency on the 10th of July, 1850. He did not retain Taylor's Cabinet, but called Daniel Webster to the Department of State ; Thomas Corwin, to that of the Treasury; made Charles M. Conrad Secretary of War ; Alexander H. H. Stuart, Secretary of the Interior ; and William A. Graham, Secretary of the Navy.

Under his administration the questions as to the admission of California were, as we have seen, settled. Utah, made a Territory by the same act, had already been fixed upon by the Mormons as their future abode. In this Territory is a remarkable body of water, known as the Great Salt Lake, resembling the Dead Sea in the saline character of its waters. On this the Mormons began Salt Lake City. Here they commenced cultivating the soil and raising cattle. Missionaries were sent to Europe, who found many to join them in England, Wales, and Norway. They thus increased rapidly in numbers, but being unrestrained by any neighbors, and under no control, they soon introduced many practices at violence with all civilized custom : among others, that of polygamy, by which a man had several wives at the same time. Brigham Young, their prophet and chief, was for a time the Governor appointed by the authorities at Washington, and this confirmed their power. As the Legislature of the Territory was entirely Mormon, and all the judges, there was no means of punishing a Mormon for polygamy, or for many murders which were laid to their charge, sometimes of considerable bodies of emigrants.

The difficulties of treating the Mormon question, prevented the admission of Utah as a State, and kept settlers from entering a Territory where they could not feel safe.

During the troubles arising out of the French Revolution, Spain was for a time ruled by a brother of Napoleon, and became the scene of many battles between the English and French. Profiting by the distracted state of the mother country, all the Spanish colonies in North and South America threw off the Spanish yoke, and, following the example of the United States, formed separate republics. Spain was able to retain only Cuba, and Porto Rico, in the West Indies. In these, too, a republican feeling grew up; and in 1851, plans were formed for a revolution in Cuba, with the design of throwing off all dependence on Spain, and making that island a republic.

There were many in the United States who sympathized with the Cubans, and who were ready to join in the attempt, many having seen service in Mexico. President Fillmore acted with decision, and prevented the organization and fitting out of a military force in the United States; but in August, an expedition of four hundred and eighty men, under General Narciso Lopez, a native of South America, who had been in the Spanish service, sailed from New Orleans, in the steamer Pampero, and landed, on the 11th day of August, at Playtas, on the northern coast of Cuba. Leaving a small party under Colonel Crittenden, of Kentucky, at the landing, Lopez penetrated into the interior, expecting a general uprising of the people. None rallied to his standard. Crittenden and his party were captured by Spanish troops, and shot; Lopez was soon defeated and his men dispersed. He himself, with some of his officers, was taken to Havana, and there garroted,

the mode of death used in Spanish parts. Others were condemned, but most of them were ultimately pardoned.

As emigration was steadily pouring to the Northwest, it became desirable to extinguish the Indian title to lands in Minnesota, and induce the powerful nation of Sioux to retire farther westward. By two treaties in 1851, they yielded large tracts of land ; but though the Indians thus ceded part of their hunting-grounds, they viewed with jealousy the increase of the whites, and nourished a spirit of revenge.

Among the acts of the first Congress under Fillmore's administration, was one reducing the postage on letters to three cents for any distance under three thousand miles. The experiment of cheap postage had been tried already in England, and found to be equally beneficial to the Government and the people. Another act authorized the Government to send a vessel to bring to the United States Kossuth and other Hungarians, who had been exiled for their opposition to the Austrians. He in fact came over, and for a time excited attention by his eloquence, but the public interest in him soon died away. He was for the time the lion of the day—one of those distinguished foreigners over whom an excitement occurs every few years. The sympathy shown in the United States, and even by the Government, for the Hungarians, had already elicited protests from the Austrian Government.

This year witnessed the return of the first Grinnell expedition sent out under Lieutenant De Haven to the Arctic Ocean, to discover and rescue, if possible, Sir John Franklin, an English explorer, who had set out to seek the passage through to the Pacific, but who had not been heard of since 1848. Dr. Kane, who had accompanied De Haven, was sent out in 1853 on a second expedition, by the generous public spirit of Mr. Moses H. Grinnell, but failed to find the lost English

navigator. Sir John Franklin had undoubtedly perished amid the northern ice.

An outrage on American shipping occurred at Greytown, Nicaragua, in November, 1851, which showed the English to be actuated by their old overbearing and arbitrary ideas. The American steamer *Prometheus* was twice fired into by the British brig-of-war *Express*, and compelled to pay illegal port dues before it was permitted to proceed. The English Government recoiled from any attempt to justify so gross an outrage, and disavowed the acts of the *Express*. It was the more necessary to maintain a good understanding between the two countries, as violent disputes already existed in regard to the fisheries. By the treaty of 1818, Americans were not to fish within three miles of the shore of the British provinces. On an irregular and much-indented shore, it became a question how this three miles was to be reckoned. The Americans considered the three-mile line to be one following the coast, and three-miles distant from it point for point, while the English drew a line between the most prominent points on the coast, and wished the Americans to be kept three miles beyond that, which would in some cases be five or six miles from the coast. The adjustment of this matter was one of Mr. Webster's last great acts. A mutually satisfactory arrangement of the fishery question was effected by the Reciprocity Treaty with the British colonies.

Henry Clay, long a prominent American statesman representing the South, had died in June, 1852, having resigned his position as Senator from Kentucky. Mr. Webster was now to follow. He died on the 21st of October. These two great men were universally lamented, as all felt that never perhaps in the country's history were such wise and experienced statesmen more needed in the management of pub-

lic affairs. Webster was succeeded as Secretary of State by the eloquent Edward Everett, one of whose first duties was to reply to the proposal of England and France to join them in a treaty by which Cuba should be secured to Spain. This was a step that America could never take. Everett replied distinctly, "that the United States could not see with indifference the Island of Cuba fall into the possession of any other European Government than Spain." While disclaiming any wish on the part of the United States to wrest Cuba from Spain, he showed that the power of Spain over that island must soon cease, and that, from its very position, America must be free to do what her interest demanded.

In the last session under Mr. Fillmore, Washington Territory was formed out of part of Oregon; money was appropriated to survey a line of railroad from the Mississippi to the Pacific Ocean, so as to bring the two shores of the continent into closer connection.

A wonderful invention, the magnetic telegraph, perfected by Samuel F. B. Morse, an artist and polemical writer, had already been widely adopted. Companies had been formed which extended lines of telegraph to all parts of the country, by which messages were sent over insulated wires with almost the speed of light, making the diffusion of intelligence nearly instantaneous.

In the Presidential election of 1852, there were several candidates. The Democrats nominated Franklin Pierce, of New Hampshire, and as Vice-President, William R. King, of Alabama. The Whigs put forward General Scott as their candidate for the Presidency, with William A. Graham as Vice-President. The Free-soil party nominated John P. Hale, of New Hampshire. Mr. Pierce was elected by a large majority.

CHAPTER XIII.

FRANKLIN PIERCE, FOURTEENTH PRESIDENT—1853-1857.

The Mesilla Valley Difficulty—Growth of the Country—Walker and Nicaragua—The Ostend Manifesto—Kansas and Nebraska—The Dangerous Excitement as to the Growth of Slavery.

FRANKLIN PIERCE, born at Hillsborough, New Hampshire, in 1804, received a finished education, and rose to a high rank at the bar. After holding various public positions, as member of the State Legislature, and Representative and Senator in Congress, he entered the army in the Mexican war as a private soldier, but was commissioned as brigadier general. We have seen him already, with Shields, leading on the troops in some of the most important battles of the war. He came to the Presidency with a high reputation as a statesman and commander. His Cabinet was composed of men of mark: William L. Marcy, Secretary of State; James Guthrie, Secretary of the Treasury; Robert McClellan, Secretary of the Interior; Jefferson Davis, Secretary of War; James Q. Dobbin, Secretary of the Navy; James Campbell, Postmaster General; and Caleb Cushing as Attorney General.

Mr. King, who had as President of the Senate acted as Vice-President under Fillmore, did not long survive his election to that office. The oath of inauguration was administered to him in Cuba, whither he had gone to regain his shattered health; but he died in April, 1853, and Mr. Atchison, of Missouri, as President of the Senate, acted as Vice-President.

A border difficulty occurred in this administration in regard to a tract called the Mesilla Valley, which it was important for the United States to possess, but which Mexico claimed. After some negotiations, Mexico finally ceded it to the United States, relinquishing all her right on payment of a stipulated amount.

Settlements had pushed on beyond the limits of Missouri, and when Congress met it was proposed to organize this tract into two Territories, by the names of Kansas and Nebraska, the former lying between 37° and 40° N., and the latter between 40° and 49° N. The question whether slavery should be admitted into these Territories aroused the whole country. The discussion was not confined to the halls where men met to discuss politics: churches rang with the exciting topic. A petition was presented to Congress against the admission of slavery into these Territories, and it was signed by three thousand clergymen. A bill was finally passed, May 22d, organizing Nebraska as a Territory, and leaving the question of slavery entirely to the people of the Territory, who were to permit or prohibit it as they chose. Kansas was soon after admitted on the same plan.

America had refused to enter into the Tripartite Treaty and bind herself not to deprive Spain of the Island of Cuba. But the European Powers did not let the matter drop. The American ministers to England and France and Spain resolved to confer with each other, and they accordingly met at Ostend, in Belgium, October 9, 1854. Here Mr. Buchanan, minister to England, Mr. Mason, minister to France, and Mr. Pierre Soulé, minister to Spain, drew up the famous Ostend Manifesto, in which they said: "If Spain, actuated by stubborn pride, and a false sense of honor, shall refuse to sell Cuba to the United States, by every law, human and divine, we (the United States) shall be justified in wresting it from Spain, if we possess the power."

This document excited considerable discussion at home and abroad, but Government did not notice the affair.

Meanwhile another occasion of difficulty arose from expeditions from the United States. The travel to California was shortened by crossing

the Isthmus of Panama, and a railroad opened in 1855 made the crossing easy and rapid. Another route led through the State of Nicaragua in Central America. The project of a railroad there attracted many Americans to that country, and some began to take part in the endless revolutions which have proved ruinous to most of the republics in Spanish America. William Walker, an American raised to office in Nicaragua, returned to the United States to obtain troops, and numbers enlisted under his standard. The Government of the United States used every effort to prevent their departure, but many got away. Walker succeeded in his attempt, and his Government was recognized by President Pierce. It did not last long, however. Walker was driven out, and, in a subsequent attempt to regain his lost power, was captured and shot.

While we were not very strict in enforcing neutrality on our citizens, we showed promptness in rebuking other Governments on that score. About this very time, England and France were at war with Russia, and as England found it difficult to raise a sufficient number of soldiers, never having ventured to adopt the French system of conscription, by which men are dragged from their business and forced into the army, it endeavored to recruit soldiers in the United States. President Pierce, to check it, dismissed the British minister at Washington, as well as the English consuls in New York and Cincinnati.

The slavery question, so far as Nebraska was concerned, was settled by the very nature of the country. It was adapted only for northern crops, and slave labor could not be profitable. Kansas became the scene of strife. If the South sent in most settlers, it would be a slave State ; if the North sent most, it would be another free State. The whole country was again convulsed, and the most inflammatory articles

in the papers and speeches to the people kept the excitement alive.

Amid it all a new election took place. The Democratic party put forward as its candidate James Buchanan, of Pennsylvania, with John C. Breckinridge, of Kentucky, as Vice-President. The new party opposed to the extension of slavery, which now assumed the name of the Republican party, selected as their candidate John C. Fremont, who had played so prominent a part in the conquest of California. The party opposed to the immigration of foreigners and the extension of the Catholic Church had revived, and gained strength in some parts to such an extent that for the first time it put forward a Presidential candidate. It was called the American or Know-Nothing party, and its choice fell on Millard Fillmore, who had already so honorably filled the Presidential chair. After an exciting election, Mr. Buchanan was chosen, the Know-Nothing party showing itself insignificant; but it was evident that the Republican party was rapidly gaining in strength. This sought only to limit slavery, but declared that it did not seek to interfere with the old slave States, or abolish slavery there, as a little party called Abolitionists demanded. Many who respected the rights of slaveholders under the Constitution, were averse to seeing slavery extend farther into the country.

CHAPTER XIV.

JAMES BUCHANAN, FIFTEENTH PRESIDENT—1857-1861.

Kansas—Its Civil War and final Admission as a Free State—Admission of other New States—Territories Organized—Party Violence—John Brown and Harper's Ferry—Four Presidential Tickets—Election of Abraham Lincoln—Secession of South Carolina and six other States—They form the Confederate States of America—Seizure of Forts—Anderson and Fort Sumter—The Ineffectual Attempt to Relieve it.

JAMES BUCHANAN brought to the Presidency long experience in public affairs as a Cabinet officer, legislator, and diplomatist. He was born in the State of Pennsylvania, in April, 1791, and was elected to the Legislature of his native State at the age of twenty-three. His Cabinet was composed of Lewis Cass, Secretary of State; Howell Cobb, Secretary of the Treasury; John B. Floyd, Secretary of War; Isaac Toucey, Secretary of the Navy; Jacob Thompson, Secretary of the Interior; Aaron V. Brown, Postmaster General; and Jeremiah S. Black, Attorney General.

Kansas was the great difficulty. The animosity of the two parties there led to repeated acts of violence, and the governors with great difficulty prevented a civil war. When the time came for framing a Constitution, two conventions met; one, of those favoring slavery, at Lecompton; the other, adverse to it, at Topeka. Each adopted a Constitution. The elections that followed were marked by every species of fraud and violence. Buchanan, recognizing the Lecompton Constitution, sent it to Congress in February, 1858, with a message recommending its acceptance. Congress, however, directed its submission to the people, by whom it was ultimately rejected. Popular sovereignty had decided against slavery; and a Constitution having been adopted, suppressing

slavery, Kansas, on the 29th of January, was admitted as a free State.

Another Territory gave trouble also. This was Utah. As it was inhabited entirely by Mormons, whose strange religion and shameful practice of polygamy cut them off from the rest of the people, Congress had always deferred admitting them as a State. Incensed at this, they commenced revolutionary proceedings in 1857, destroying the records of the United States, and aiming at a separate existence. Brigham Young, who had unwisely been made governor by President Fillmore, was removed, and Colonel Cumming appointed. A small army was sent to enforce the laws of the United States. Brigham Young threatened to resist, but, when the troops appeared, surrendered the reins of power to the new governor. From this moment the Mormons announced their intention of migrating, but for many years no such step was taken. The army, which had fortunately no necessity for action, was recalled, having lost a provision-train destroyed by the Mormons in the mountains.

The year 1858 showed, though only for a time, the triumph of enterprise and science in the laying of a transatlantic cable, extending from Europe to America, for the working of a magnetic telegraph. The wire was insulated by a coating of gutta-percha, and sunk in the ocean, a plateau having been discovered, extending from Ireland to Newfoundland, where the depth of the water was remarkably less than in other parts. This great undertaking, due in no small degree to the energy of Cyrus W. Fields, of New York, was successfully accomplished on the 5th of August, 1858, a cable sixteen hundred miles long extending from Valentia Bay, Ireland, to Trinity Bay, Newfoundland. On the 16th, the whole machinery was in working

order, and a message was sent over it from Queen Victoria to President Buchanan, and his reply was telegraphed back. But the cable almost immediately parted.

The great object was, however, attained. It was possible to lay such a cable, and work it. In a few years another cable was laid, which excited competition. In our time we have our daily news from Europe, and know great events taking place in foreign countries often long before they are known in many parts of those very states where they occur.

Lopez, who had made himself dictator of Paraguay, acted in so hostile a manner to American vessels, that a squadron was sent out under Commodore Shubrick, which obtained satisfactory apology.

England gave annoyance during this administration, by reviving her old right of search, boarding many American vessels under the pretext of their being engaged in the slave trade.

The questions arising from slavery were exciting the whole country. Congress, carrying out the Constitution, had passed a law regulating the mode of returning to their masters fugitive slaves. This law was odious in the North, and was nullified by State laws, rendering it practically a dead letter. The South, in its exasperation, sought to revive the slave trade, and introduce new slaves direct from Africa. It was evident that a great struggle was at hand. The Republican party, though professedly moderate, disavowing any design to interfere with slavery in the South, would evidently be satisfied with nothing short of the absolute abolition of slavery. They were evidently aggressive, as the South was conservative. That the Republican party then aimed at the liberation of the slaves, and investing them with the almost exclusive political power, so that ignorant and violent negroes

should legislate for and govern the cultivated white owners of the soil, no one then dreamed ; yet the result proved that the project existed.

The first blow that showed the aggressive character of the North was the action of John Brown, in Virginia. On the dark night, October 16th, 1859, this man, who had become a perfect fanatic during the civil war in Kansas, with a few followers, black and white, seized the United States arsenal at Harper's Ferry, Virginia, and called on the slaves in that State to rise and strike for freedom. The call was unheeded. The next day, the State militia invested the place, but Brown kept up the fight, and was finally reduced by a party of United States marines. Brown was badly wounded, and, with the survivors of his band, captured, indicted for treason, and tried within two weeks after his mad attempt, being brought into court on a mattress. He was promptly convicted, and, with his followers, was executed in December. The excitement caused by this affair throughout the country was intense.

The Presidential election was approaching. A Democratic convention met in Charleston, but it broke up on the slavery question. At an adjourned convention in Baltimore, Stephen A. Douglas was nominated for President, but the members of the Slave States in a separate convention nominated John C. Breckinridge. A new party, taking a sort of middle course, put forward John Bell of Tennessee, and Edward Everett of Massachusetts. The Republican party united in putting forward Abraham Lincoln of Illinois, for President, and Hannibal Hamlin of Maine, for Vice-President.

The election was very warmly contested, and showed some strange results in the method of electing a President. Mr. Lincoln received 1,866,452 votes of the people, and 180 in the electoral college.

Douglas, though he was voted for by 1,375,144 citizens, had only 12 votes in the electoral college; while Breckinridge, who received only 847,953 popular votes, had 72 electors in his favor; and Bell, with a still smaller popular vote, 591,631, had 39 electoral votes.

The excitement in the Southern States during the election had been intense, and the people were filled with the most bitter feelings.

To their minds there was no alternative between a condition of vassals and war. South Carolina acted at once. She held that, under the Constitution of the United States, a State might at any time secede, as there was nothing in the instrument denying the right, and that in the Convention the right had been virtually admitted. The Legislature of South Carolina accordingly called a convention of the people. That body, on the 20th of December, unanimously adopted an ordinance repealing the adoption of the Constitution of the United States by South Carolina, and dissolving the Union on the part of that State. Georgia, Mississippi, Alabama, Florida, Louisiana, approved the course of South Carolina, and prepared for secession. The other slave States hesitated.

While the country was convulsed with excitement and the forebodings of a terrible future, Congress met. President Buchanan, in his message, calmly reviewed the whole situation. He deplored the violent interference of the North in the matter of slavery, but showed that no act had yet been done by the General Government which could justify revolutionary resistance: "In order to justify secession as a constitutional remedy, it must be on the principle that the Federal Government is a mere voluntary association of States, to be dissolved at pleasure by any one of the contracting parties. If this be so, the

confederacy is a rope of sand, to be penetrated and dissolved by the first adverse wave of public opinion in any of the States. By this process, a Union might be entirely broken into fragments in a few weeks, which cost our fathers many years of toil, privation, and blood to establish." But he did not believe that Congress had the right to compel the submission of a State by force of arms. He urged conciliation, and proposed such an amendment to the Constitution as would relieve the fears of the South.

The course of the President pleased neither section of the country. But as he adopted the plan of not interfering to prevent secession, and several members of his Cabinet, including the Secretary of War, were avowed secessionists, they had nothing to oppose their work. The discussions in Congress were violent, but no measures were adopted.

As soon as South Carolina seceded, the Senators and Representatives from that State left their seats in Congress, and nearly all citizens of that State who were officers in the United States service, whether army, navy, or civil, resigned.

Immediately after the accomplishment of the secession of South Carolina, the people of that State prepared to seize the arsenals, custom-houses, and other property of the United States. The harbor of Charleston was defended by Forts Moultrie, Sumter, and Castle Pinckney. There was a small garrison in Moultrie, under Major Anderson, but the other works were not protected; and Floyd, the Secretary of War, who had long been working to carry out the Southern plans, determined that they should not be. Major Anderson had in vain appealed to Washington for reinforcements to secure all the forts. Finding that in case of attack he could not hold Moultrie with his small garrison, Anderson, on the 26th of December, transferred his force to

Fort Sumter, which, lying on an island in Charleston Harbor, was much more easily defended.

The effect of this movement was startling. General Cass, as Secretary of State, had urged the reinforcement of the forts, but had been forced to retire from Mr. Buchanan's Cabinet. Now Floyd, insisting on the removal of Anderson and his garrison, withdrew, and Joseph Holt of Kentucky became Secretary of War.

The Governor of South Carolina at once seized Fort Moultrie and Castle Pinckney, the arsenal, custom-house, and post-office, and ordered Anderson to return to Fort Moultrie, an order which he of course declined to obey. At Washington, three commissioners, sent from South Carolina to treat with the Government of the United States for the delivery of the forts and other property, denounced in violent language the conduct of Major Anderson. The President declined to receive them in any but their individual capacity, or to order the evacuation of Fort Sumter. Their reply was in such language that Mr. Buchanan refused to receive it.

South Carolina at once began to throw up works to besiege Fort Sumter. And other Southern States followed the example she had set of seizing the forts and other property belonging to the Federal Government. Georgia troops, by order of the Governor, seized Fort Pulaski, and, under orders of Governor Ellis of North Carolina, Fort Macon, the forts at Wilmington, and the United States arsenal at Fayetteville were seized. Fort Morgan at Mobile, with an arsenal well stored with arms and ammunition, was seized by Alabama, although none of those States had yet pretended to secede.

It became a question whether Major Anderson was to be reinforced or left to his fate. The *Brooklyn* man-of-war was at one time ordered

to proceed to that fort with reinforcements. This order was revoked, General Scott acting with great indecision, and when troops were finally sent it was in the *Star of the West*, an unarmed merchant steamer. It reached Charleston harbor on the 9th of January, 1861, but, in trying to reach Fort Sumter, was fired at from a battery on Morris Island, manned by the cadets of a Charleston school. One ball struck the steamer, and as the fort did not open fire to protect it, the *Star of the West* wore round and steered down the channel.

That same day, Mississippi, by the vote of a convention, seceded from the United States. On the 11th, Florida which was territory purchased by the United States Government from Spain, passed a similar ordinance of secession, and Alabama did the same. On the 14th, the troops of these two States seized Fort Barrancas and the navy-yard at Pensacola, with large supplies of arms, ammunition, and stores.

On the 19th, Georgia adopted the same course, although Alexander H. Stephens and Herschel V. Johnson labored earnestly to prevent the disastrous action. A week later, Louisiana, which, like Florida, was formed from territory purchased by the United States Government, adopted a secession ordinance, and seized the Government forts, arsenals, and treasure.

In Texas, General Houston, the old hero who overthrew Santa Anna at San Jacinto, earnestly opposed secession, but the convention on the 23d of February finally adopted it, but in a more republican method. The question was submitted to the vote of the people of the State, and they on the 4th of March adopted the ordinance of secession.

When this movement had been accomplished, the Representatives

and Senators of those States in Congress withdrew, many of them taking leave in speeches defending the course of the Southern States.

The Northern States were now roused to a sense of danger, and began to offer the President aid in men or money to enforce the laws and uphold the authority of the Federal Government.

The position of the country was strange. In all the Southern States, from South Carolina to Texas, the flag of the United States had disappeared; the forts were all held by the State troops, the custom-houses were in State hands, the United States Courts had ceased, the post-offices had been seized, and the militia were under arms, well supplied with all necessaries for actual service; Floyd, recently Secretary of War, having, as part of the plan of secession, sent to the South large quantities of cannon, muskets, and ammunition for the purpose.

Their next step was to organize a new government. In accordance with a proposition of Alabama, all the seceding States sent delegates to a general congress which met in Montgomery, Alabama, on the 4th of February. They at once adopted a constitution based upon that of the United States, and then elected Jefferson Davis of Mississippi as Provisional President, and Alexander H. Stephens as Vice-President of the Confederate States.

Davis was a man of ability; he was a graduate of West Point, had served in Indian wars, and as colonel of a Mississippi regiment had fought gallantly at Monterey and Buena Vista, having been severely wounded in the last battle which he helped to decide. He had been a Representative in Congress, and Senator, and under Pierce was Secretary of War. He assumed the position of President of the Confederate States on the 18th of February, 1861, and held it till the utter overthrow of the new government the secessionists sought to create

Like a President of the United States, he at once formed a Cabinet, selecting the prominent men of the movement. Robert Toombs of Georgia was made Secretary of State ; C. J. Memminger of South Carolina, Secretary of the Treasury ; L. P. Walker of Alabama, Secretary of War ; Judah P. Benjamin of Louisiana, Attorney General ; and John H. Reagan, Postmaster.

There were thus two governments in the United States, one recognized by seven States ; the other still obeyed by the remainder, some of which were ready to join the seven.

On the 14th of February, the votes of the electors were opened in the House of Representatives, by Vice-President Breckenridge, who declared Abraham Lincoln of Illinois duly elected President, and Hannibal Hamlin duly elected Vice-President of the United States.

Two days after, General Twiggs, commanding the American army in Texas, thirty-seven companies, numbering two thousand five hundred men, surrendered them to the Confederates under McCulloch, with public stores and munitions of war to the amount of over a million of dollars.

PART VI.

THE GREAT CIVIL WAR—ABRAHAM LINCOLN, SIXTEENTH PRESIDENT—1861-5—1865.

CHAPTER I.

Affairs during the Spring and Summer of 1861—Lincoln's Cabinet—Reorganization of the Government, Army and Navy—Attempt to relieve Sumter—Its Bombardment—The first call for Troops—Replies of the States—Blockade of the Southern ports—East Tennessee and West Virginia for the Union—Missouri saved by Lyon's energy—First movement of United States Troops—Ellsworth—McClellan in Western Virginia—Battles of Philippi, Rich Mountain, and Carrick's Ford—Big Bethel—Bull Run—General Lyon and the Battles of Carthage, Dug Spring, Wilson's Creek, and Lexington—First operations against the Coast of the Confederate States.

OWING to the excited state of Virginia and Maryland, which sympathized warmly with the secession movement, it became a question whether Mr. Lincoln would ever be inaugurated in Washington. The country was full of rumors of conspiracies to seize Washington, and to assassinate Mr. Lincoln on his way to the seat of government. While proceeding to the capital, the danger was deemed such that he entered the city secretly and in haste. Steps had been taken to prevent any sudden attack during the ceremony. Mr. Lincoln was duly inaugurated on the 4th of March. In his address he said: "The power confided to me will be used to hold, occupy, and possess the property and places belonging to the Government, and collect the duties and imports; but beyond what may be necessary for these

objects, there will be no invasion, no using of force against or among the people anywhere."

Such was the extent of what the new administration proposed. But as the South would listen to nothing but independence and separation, it was impossible to recover the forts, or to re-establish custom-houses, without a war. The peace propositions in Congress, and the failure of a peace convention, showed this clearly.

Mr. Lincoln selected as his Cabinet, William H. Seward of New York, as Secretary of State ; Salmon P. Chase of Ohio, Secretary of the Treasury ; Simon Cameron of Pennsylvania, Secretary of War ; Gideon Welles of Connecticut, Secretary of the Navy ; Caleb B. Smith Secretary of the Interior ; Montgomery Blair of Maryland, Postmaster General ; and Edward Bates of Missouri, Attorney General.

The duties devolved on these officers were important and urgent. The War and Navy Departments were disorganized by the acts of secretaries under Buchanan, who had worked in favor of the South ; many officers of the army and navy of Southern birth had resigned, and taken service in the army and navy which the Southern Confederacy at once organized ; the large force of regulars in Texas had been captured ; the Northern arsenals and navy-yards had been stripped of great quantities of arms ; the ships of war were dismantled or in distant seas ; the public treasury was to be reorganized to meet any coming difficulty.

The position of Fort Sumter was one requiring immediate attention. Two commissioners came from the Confederate Government, but these the administration declined to recognize or treat with. Mr. Lincoln, however, agreed with Governor Pickens of South Carolina, not to relieve Sumter without notice to him. He finally determined, against

the opinion of General Scott, to attempt to throw reinforcements into it. A squadron was fitted out, but storms scattered it, and the ships that arrived found that the steamer Powhatan, which carried the orders for the operations, with the launches for landing the soldiers, had been sent to Pensacola.

On receiving notice of the intention to reinforce Fort Sumter, General Beauregard had been sent by the Confederate Government to control the military operations at Charleston. Batteries of heavy cannon were planted at all points near the fort, some protected by railroad iron, so as to be proof against shells or balls.

On the 11th of April, Beauregard formally demanded the surrender of the fort. Anderson agreed to leave the fort by the 15th, if he did not receive controlling instructions or additional supplies from Washington. As the United States vessels were known by Beauregard to be outside at that very time, he gave notice on the 12th that he would open fire within an hour. The first shot was fired from a battery on Cummings' Point, quickly followed by others from a floating battery, Fort Moultrie, Sullivan's Island, and other works. Anderson had only eighty men—just enough to work nine guns—and only seven hundred cartridges. He replied to the fire of the enemy so steadily that they believed he had been reinforced. The wooden barracks in the fort were soon on fire, and though they were checked from time to time, the flames finally swept them all, and burned away the gate of the fort, leaving it open to the besiegers. The flag was shot away, but gallantly replanted by Sergeant Hart on the shattered wall. After thirty-six hour's bombardment, Wigfall, of Texas, came to the fort with a flag of truce, and Anderson agreed to evacuate the fort at once, as he had already agreed to do on the 15th. On raising a white

flag at Wigfall's request, officers came from Beauregard to know its meaning. Wigfall was disavowed, but the firing was not resumed, and on Sunday, the 14th, Anderson, with his garrison, evacuated Fort Sumter, with colors flying and drums beating. They were conveyed to the Baltic, lying at the entrance of the harbor.

Fort Sumter had not been surrendered. It was evacuated one day earlier than Major Anderson's offer.

This bombardment determined one question. The dispute was now to be settled, not by negotiation, compromise, or convention, but by war. The bombardment of Fort Sumter roused the whole North. On the 15th, President Lincoln, by proclamation, called forth the militia of the States to the number of seventy-five thousand men, to suppress unlawful combinations for resisting the laws which had for some time existed in South Carolina and six other Southern States. The Governors of Virginia, North Carolina, Kentucky, Tennessee, Missouri, and Arkansas, refused with scorn to obey the call. Maryland and Delaware temporized. The other States responded with enthusiasm. The apathy had been broken by the first gun fired at Fort Sumter. The general voice was for war, and public opinion became as intolerant of all argument or opposition at the North as it was already at the South.

Davis, as President of the Confederate States, called out a hundred and fifty thousand men, besides thirty-two already demanded, and at the same time invited privateers by offers of letters of marque to cruise against Northern shipping. This, President Lincoln met by a threat of treating as pirates any privateers who should be captured.

The replies of the Governors of the remaining slave States indicated that they would join the Confederacy. On the 17th of April,

Virginia passed an ordinance of secession, and attempted to seize the navy-yard at Gosport, near Norfolk, and the arsenal at Harper's Ferry. The officer in command at the latter post, Lieutenant Jones, seeing the preparations, blew up the place, destroying all the arms. The arrival of the Pawnee enabled Commodore Macauley to save the archives of the Gosport navy-yard, and the ship Cumberland, and destroy all vessels and arms that could not be removed, although by a little foresight and promptness an immense quantity of public property might have been saved.

The North, now thoroughly roused, went earnestly to work to raise men, money, and supplies for the contest, the banks and moneyed corporations promptly aiding the States to effect this.

All felt that the national capital was in imminent danger. A glance at the map will show you its position. Washington stands on the banks of the Potomac. All south of that river had joined in the hostile movement. Maryland, which lay around the District of Columbia, was so divided, that the Governor in a proclamation promised the people that troops of his State should be used only for the defence of Washington. That capital was really cut off from the States that were heartily in favor of the old Government.

Every effort was made to send forward men, as the Confederates were known to be advancing on Washington. On the 19th of April, the Sixth Regiment of Massachusetts militia entered Baltimore on its way to Washington. A mob attacked them while crossing the city to take the cars to Washington, and they had to fight their way, losing several of their men. Some Pennsylvania troops that arrived unarmed were forced to return to their own State. But other regiments poured down; bridges destroyed by the Maryland mobs were rebuilt, railroads

relaid. General Butler, with the Eighth Massachusetts, came down the Susquehanna, took possession of Annapolis, and restored railroad communication between that city and Washington. Troops poured in so rapidly that the hostile spirit was overawed, and the Maryland Legislature voted not to secede.

The northern bank of the Potomac was lined by troops to sustain the Union, and on the south were encamped several thousand menacing the capital. That city was soon safe ; and troops were thrown into Fortress Monroe, so as to insure the safety of that important post.

It was now evident that the struggle was to be a long and serious war. On the 3d of May, President Lincoln called for forty-two thousand volunteers for three years, and for an increase of the regular army and navy. A blockade of all the States from Virginia to Texas was also declared, and ships fitted out to maintain it. North Carolina had followed the course of Virginia, had seized the mint and arsenal, and then, on the 20th of May, passed an ordinance of secession. Arkansas followed two days later.

Tennessee then entered into a league with the Confederate States, and finally seceded ; but the eastern part of that State and the western part of Virginia opposed secession and adhered to the Union, and organized to resist the secession movement. When two companies of Confederate soldiers marched into Clarksburg, Virginia, on the 20th of May, they were surrounded and disarmed.

Missouri was another State in which public opinion was divided. The Governor and many of the leading men were avowed sympathizers with the Confederates. The Legislature met in secret session, and the Governor called out the militia of the State ; but four regiments of volunteers were organized by Colonel Frank P. Blair to respond

to the President's call; and the arsenal was held by Captain Lyon of the United States army, who not only furnished the Governor of Illinois with arms on a requisition from Washington, but, with authority from the seat of government, proceeded to thwart the plans of Governor Jackson of Missouri.

On the 10th of May, with his regulars and Blair's volunteers, he suddenly marched out and surrounded the militia at Camp Jackson, and compelled them to surrender. The column on its return was attacked by a mob, and had at last to fire on them. General Harney was then sent to restore order in Missouri, but he was outwitted by Governor Jackson and his general, Price; and Lyon, now made a brigadier general of volunteers, was intrusted with full command. Then Governor Jackson called out fifty thousand men to repel invasion, and in a proclamation called on the people to resist the United States authority. The railroad bridges between St. Louis and Jefferson City were cut, and all preparations made to throw the State into the hands of the Confederacy.

Illinois, running down like a wedge between the doubtful States of Kentucky and Missouri, was intensely Republican. At the commencement of the troubles, she made Cairo, at the extreme southern point, her centre of operations, and, under directions from the War Department, occupied and fortified it.

Such was the position of affairs in May. The two sections of the country were in arms, and the actual warfare might commence at any point along the line. General Scott, at Washington, was planning a campaign with all his long experience and ability, but he was surrounded by officers devoted to the South and all his plans were known almost immediately.



SHERMAN'S BRIGADE AT SUDLEY CHURCH. (Page 736)



MARCHING TO THE BATTLE-FIELD—BALL'S BLUFF.

(Page 753)



FORT DONELSON AFTER ITS SURRENDER. (Page 765)

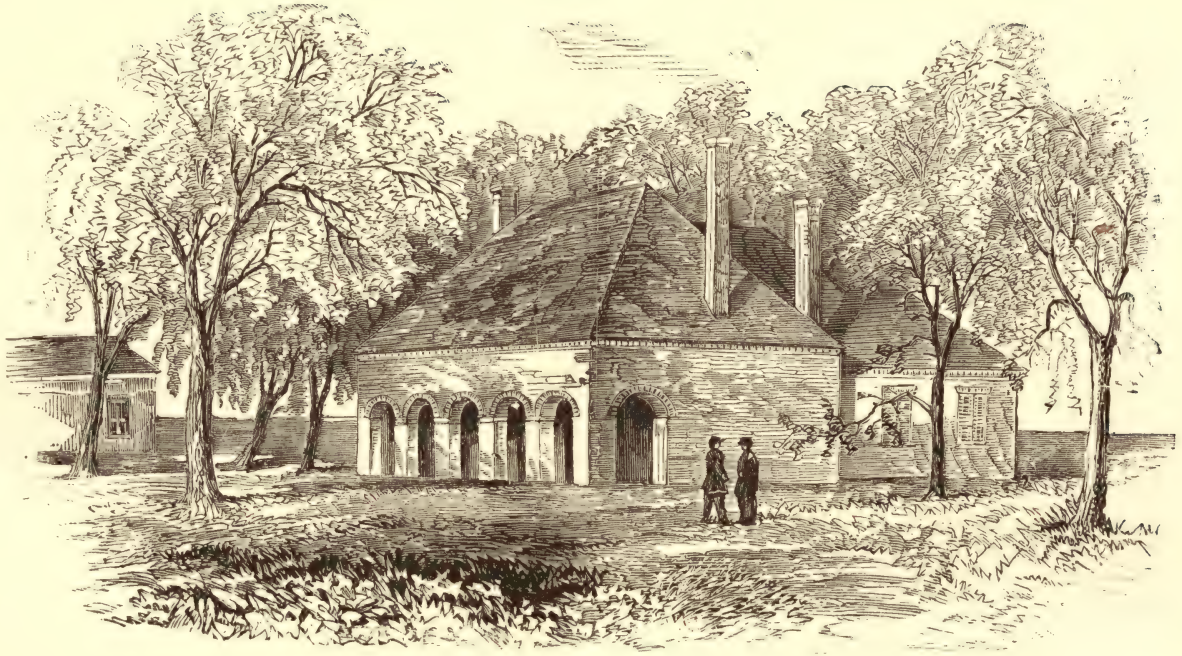


THE LAST BROADSIDE OF THE VARUNA.

(Page 773)



BATTLE OF PITTSBURG LANDING. (Page 784)



HANOVER COURT-HOUSE, VA.

(Page 787)



SCENE OF THE BATTLE OF GAINES' MILL.

(Page 790)



BATTLE OF MALVERN HILL.

(Page 791)

The troops of the insurgent States had gathered in force in Virginia, under officers who had left the United States army, and menaced Washington. It was necessary to meet them. On the 23d of May, the United States troops in three columns crossed the Potomac, and took possession of Alexandria and its vicinity, without any opposition, although Colonel Ellsworth, a young and highly popular officer, was killed in attempting to lower a Confederate flag.

The armies of the United States and of the Confederate States were, before the end of May, face to face, from the seaboard of Virginia to its western limit.

General McDowell with his large column covered Washington, confronting a Confederate army at Manassas Junction under General Beauregard. General Butler held Fortress Monroe, with twelve thousand men, held in check by the Confederate General Magruder. General Paterson was at Harper's Ferry, opposed by General J. E. Johnston; and the United States Generals McClellan and Rosecrans were operating on Western Virginia.

Fortifications were thrown up from the Chain Bridge to Alexandria, forming the first line of defence of Washington; and as the enemy had planted batteries on the southern bank of the Potomac to prevent the navigation of that river, Commander Ward organized a flotilla, which, on the 29th of May, had a sharp action with Confederate batteries at Acquia Creek.

Some of the earliest military operations, however, took place in Western Virginia. As the people there were generally adverse to the secession movement, they held the action of Governor Letcher and his Legislature to be a dissolution of government in Virginia. So they called a convention, and formed a provisional gov-

ernment for the State. This was subsequently recognized by the Government of the United States, and through it the new State of West Virginia was finally formed.

When Virginia joined the Southern Confederacy, it gave command of its forces to Robert E. Lee, son of a Revolutionary officer, and related to the family of Washington. Lee had enjoyed the confidence of General Scott up to the action of Virginia, when he resigned his commission in the United States army, and received the appointment from his own State. To control West Virginia, he sent a force under Colonel Porterfield; but the Union men were already organizing, and General George B. McClellan was appointed to the command of the Department of Ohio, which included Western Virginia. On the 26th of May, Colonel Kelley, with the First Virginia Regiment, advanced upon Grafton. Porterfield fled, but Kelley, operating in conjunction with Ohio and Indiana troops under Dumont, planned the surprise and capture of Porterfield at Philippi. Kelley, delayed by the darkness and a storm, had a longer distance to march, and did not come up in time; but Dumont routed Porterfield, and Kelley joining in pursuit, completed his overthrow. The enemy's camp, with arms, horses, and supplies, was captured, and confidence was at once given to all in the Western part of Virginia who wished to adhere to the old Government of the country. Wallace, with other Indiana troops, made a dash at Romney, and for a time with great gallantry thwarted the movements of the enemy.

On the 23d of June, McClellan took command in person at Grafton, the troops organized by him numbering twenty thousand. With these he commenced operations against General Garnett, the Confederate commander. Colonel Rosecrans, scaling the mountains, attacked one of Garnett's divisions under Pegram, at Rich Mountain, and, in

spite of artillery, drove them down the mountain-side with a loss of four hundred men. As McClellan approached, Pegram fled, exposing Garnett's rear. That commander in turn endeavored to escape into the wild mountains of the Cheat Range, abandoning all his artillery except one piece. The whole Confederate force was thus by a single blow scattered. Pegram, after a vain endeavor to escape, finally surrendered on the 14th, with his force almost starving. Garnett retreated along Cheat River, hotly pursued till he reached Carrick's Ford. There, on the 13th of July, he made a stand, but his troops broke before the charge of the Western troops, who crossed the river under a heavy fire. In the endeavor to rally them, Garnett was killed. The Confederate force was for the time broken up. A small portion, rallied by Colonel Ramsey, reached Jackson's command beyond the Alleghanies, but the army of Western Virginia had lost twelve hundred in killed, wounded, and prisoners, and great quantities of arms and stores. General Cox had successfully occupied the Kanawha valley, and for a time Western Virginia seemed secure.

Fortress Monroe, situated at the mouth of the James River, had been reinforced, and was held by a large force under General Butler, and armed vessels blockaded the rivers emptying into the Chesapeake, making it easy for the United States Government to commence operations from that point. But the first operations in this part of Virginia were ill-managed and disastrous. A force sent out to surprise a party of the enemy at Big Bethel was repulsed with considerable loss.

When General Scott, urged by the voice of the Northern press and people, resolved to assume the offensive, an army of thirty thousand men, under General Irvine McDowell, moved out of the defences of

Washington. These forces were in five divisions, under Generals Tyler and Runyon, and Colonels Hunter, Heintzelman, and Miles. The enemy lay behind a small stream called Bull's Run, a branch of the Occoquan, its rocky, wooded banks forming an excellent natural fortification.

On the 17th of July, Tyler, with the right wing, advanced by the Georgetown road; Hunter, with the centre, on the Leesburg and Centreville road; the left wing, under Heintzelman and Miles, by the Little River turnpike and Braddock road. Fairfax Court-House was occupied without a blow. The next day he made a feint with Tyler's division against Longstreet's position at Blackburn's Ford. A sharp engagement ensued, in which Massachusetts, Michigan, and New York troops were matched against troops from various States of the South. After a loss of about seventy-five on each side, McDowell withdrew his troops to Centreville. It had been his plan to turn the enemy's right flank, but a reconnoissance proved this to be impracticable. It was, however, necessary to engage the enemy at once, as the term of service of many of his troops was expiring. An attack in front was not to be thought of; but he resolved to try and turn their left, force them from the Stone Bridge, and, by seizing the Manassas Gap Railway, break their connections and force them to fall back. Beauregard on his side was preparing to attack McDowell. The War Department at Richmond ordered Johnson to elude Patterson and join Beauregard.

The battle opened by Tyler's vigorous attack on Evans at the Stone Bridge. Then Hunter made a real attack, crossing at Sudley's Ford, at half-past nine, and marching down to take the Stone Bridge on that side. As Evans saw his rear menaced, he fell back about a mile

to the intersection of the Sudley Road and Young's Branch. Here the battle raged furiously; the Confederate line wavered under the charge, but General Bee hastened up with reinforcements. Hunter was supported, but the enemy's fire was carrying havoc through his line. Hunter was borne off wounded; Colonel Slocum and Major Ballou were struck down. Porter, however, came up, and again the Confederates were checked, while over a ridge looking toward Bull Run came Heintzelman's fresh division. Crossing above the Stone Bridge, Keyes' division, led by Sherman, with the New York Sixty-Ninth, crossed above the Stone Bridge, and taking in flank the Confederates retreating before Hunter's onset, drove them back on the reserve under Jackson. "Form! form!" cried Bee to his disheartened men; "there stands Jackson like a stone wall." Form they did, and from that time forth that cool and able commander was known as "Stonewall Jackson." The Confederates were, however, fast losing the day. Their left had been turned, an important road gained, and their line driven back from its original position a mile and a half. They now held strong ground: a hight plateau admirably adapted for defence. Before it lay McDowell's three divisions well placed, Heintzelman on the right, Hunter in the centre, and Tyler on the left.

To meet the coming attack, Johnson and Beauregard called up all the troops they could spare, leaving points in their line open to attack by McDowell's reserves before them. At last the attack began. The battle raged around the Robinson and Henry houses. Around Ricketts' and Griffin's batteries, from one o'clock to three, the hostile lines surged backward and forward. The batteries were captured and retaken, the Robinson house gained and lost. At last the United States troops seemed unable to carry the plateau. But the Confeder-

ates were exhausted and dangerously exposed; McDowell's fresh troops were gaining their exposed positions. The day seemed lost. Their only hope was in some fresh regiments under Early. A cloud of dust in the direction of the Manassas Gap railroad filled them with anxiety, as they were supposed to be United States troops. To their joy they proved to be not United States troops, but an unexpected Confederate reinforcement under E. Kirby Smith. This decided the day. Four thousand fresh men gave a new spirit to the Confederates. Hurled once more on the Union lines, already priding themselves on a victory, they changed the face of affairs. The United States troops were swept down the plateau. Regiment after regiment gave way, a panic spread; and it became a general rout. The right, after a gallant fight, had been outnumbered, and was in a disorderly retreat, losing men, arms, and artillery at every step. Hoping to cut off their retreat, Johnston hurled Ewell on the American right at Centreville, but Davies sent them back in utter confusion by his fearful volleys. McDowell did what was possible to cover the flight of his right wing, but his army was hopelessly shattered, and he fell back to the intrenchments bebore Washington.

In this battle, really hard fought, though by raw troops and inexperienced commanders, the Confederate loss was one thousand eight hundred and ninety-seven, while that of the United States army was much more severe. McDowell left the enemy in full possession of the field, and lost fully three thousand men, twenty-eight cannon, six thousand muskets, and a very large quantity of ammunition.

This victory of the Confederates decided the campaign on the Potomac. All the rest of the year the two armies lay watching each other.

The battle of Bull Run was a barren victory for the South, except in the enthusiasm which it excited. Both sides felt that the war was to be a long and bitter struggle. Every means was employed to collect and equip armies for the field. President Lincoln issued a call for half a million of men, and soldiers were enlisted for the war.

The active operations that next attract attention, are those in the border States, Kentucky and Missouri, where part of the people sympathized with the South, and the rest still adhered to the old government of the United States.

In Missouri matters were in a critical condition; the Confederates had virtually gained the State, and Missouri could be saved only by an able man. It was fortunately confided to General Nathaniel Lyon.

When General Lyon succeeded Harney in command of the Department of Missouri, Governor Jackson saw that disguise was useless with that decisive officer. He began to collect his forces at Jefferson City, to begin the battle for the possession of the State. Lyon moved promptly. Sending Colonel Sigel ahead by land with the Second Missouri regiment, he embarked on two steamers with the remainder of his troops, including a few regulars, and numbering in all about two thousand men. He entered Jefferson City on the 15th of June, to find that Jackson and Price had retreated to Booneville, some forty miles further up, destroying bridges and telegraphs as they went. Lyon pushed on in pursuit, and on the 16th came upon the Confederates under Marmaduke, advantageously posted about eight miles below Booneville. Lyon at once formed his men on a rising ground, the regulars and Blair's volunteers on the left by a field of waving corn; the left, of volunteers under Shæffer, near a grove. Totten's artillery opened the battle, and the left charged, the right also moving

steadily on. The Confederates were driven from their position, but rallied, and again endeavored to regain the day; but the rush of the United States forces was irresistible. The Confederates broke and fled to Booneville, leaving their camp, provisions, arms, and stores to Lyon. That commander occupied Booneville; but as Price had fled to the southwest to form a junction with a Confederate force under Ben McCulloch, he pushed on in pursuit with about three thousand men, being compelled to leave some to hold various points. On the 5th of July, Colonel Sigel, with the advance of Lyon's army, engaged the Confederates near Carthage. There he inflicted severe loss on the enemy, but, being unable to rout them, had to fall back upon Lyon at Springfield. That general was no longer in full command. General Fremont had been appointed to the Department of the West, and General Lyon was left to his own resources. Volunteers had swelled his little force, but before was Price's army reinforced by Generals McCulloch and Pierce, with troops of Arkansas and Texas, numbering in all nearly thirty thousand men. Lyon advanced to meet the enemy, but his appeals to General Fremont for reinforcements and supplies were unheeded. He fell back to Springfield.

The Confederates under McCulloch advanced upon that town, and Lyon found that there was no alternative except to move out and attack him in his camp at Wilson's Creek, ten miles southwest of Springfield. On the 10th of August, the United States forces moved upon the Confederate camp in two columns, one under General Lyon, to attack the northern point, the other, under Colonel Sigel, to attack the southern. Lyon began his attack at daybreak, meeting a stubborn resistance. Two or three times his troops recoiled, but were rallied, till the enemy gave way. Then there was a lull, and McCulloch charged

with his whole line. Sigel had made no impression on the southern line, and, indeed, acted with so little energy and caution that he was surprised and routed, leaving Lyon to bear the brunt of the battle alone. For an hour the contest raged furiously, sometimes one side gaining a little ground, then the other. Lyon, ever in the thickest of the fight, while rallying some disordered troops was wounded in the head and leg, and had his horse killed under him. Mounting another horse, he charged at the head of the Second Kansas regiment. Almost at the same instant, Colonel Mitchell of that regiment and General Lyon fell, the latter dead, pierced through the breast by a rifle-ball. But the battle kept on. The United States troops fought with the energy of despair, and at last beat back the last assault of the enemy. Again on the battle-field the thunder of cannon and the rattle of fire-arms died away : all was silent but the groans of the wounded. The American officers held council as to the best mode of retreat. Suddenly hope sprang up. From the direction where Sigel had been sent came a column with the American flag. They approached, but suddenly opened a deadly fire. Again the battle was renewed with desperate fury. In spite of the fierce charges of the Confederates, the United States troops, drawn up in a favorable position, held their ground more firmly than earlier in the day. Though attacked almost muzzle to muzzle, they did not flinch ; the fierce waves of attack surged upon them in vain, till a flank movement on the enemies' line again drove them off.

Major Sturgis, who had so ably continued the desperate battle, seized the opportunity, and moved slowly out to the open prairie, and unpursued gained Springfield, the enemy having been too severely handled to molest his march. On the way he heard of the utter rout of Sigel's command.

Considering the numbers engaged, the Battle of Wilson's Creek showed severe losses. The United States officers admitted a loss of one thousand two hundred and eighty-five; the Confederates, one thousand and ninety-five—the real losses being undoubtedly much larger, as every commander tries to make his own loss as light as possible. But the field was left to the Confederates, with six pieces of artillery and several hundred stand of arms. At Springfield, Sigel appeared, and assuming command, retreated to Rolla, eluding Price and McCulloch.

The death of General Lyon, who so thoroughly understood the position of affairs and the plans of the Confederates, was a severe blow to the Union cause.

The disaster at Wilson's Creek was not the only result of Fremont's inefficiency and neglect. Colonel James A. Mulligan had been ordered to occupy Lexington, with a force of about twenty-five hundred men. Here he was left utterly unsupported till a hostile force to the number of ten thousand men assailed him before he had time to throw up any sufficient works. Mulligan, however, never doubting but that support would come, met the first attack, and repulsed it, so that the enemy asked leave to bury their dead. On the 18th of September, a Confederate army under General Price, numbering twenty-eight thousand, invested the place, but Mulligan refused to surrender. He kept up a vigorous defense for fifty-two hours, till the last cartridge was fired. Then his troops laid down their useless arms, and surrendered as prisoners of war.

This victory gave the Confederates three thousand stand of arms, artillery, stores, and nearly a million of dollars in money.

Roused to action at last, Fremont in a proclamation declared mar

tial law, and emancipated the slaves of those who should be proven to have taken an active part with the enemy in the field. This step, as premature, called forth a protest from President Lincoln, who ordered it to be modified so as to agree with an act passed by Congress on the 6th of August, 1861.

On the 27th of September, Fremont began his march from St. Louis, at the head of an imposing force of thirty thousand men; but it moved slowly. A brilliant dash was made by Major Frank J. White from Lexington; and Colonel Zagonyi, of "Fremont's Body Guard," on the 24th of October stormed the Confederate camp at Springfield, and drove them from the town with severe loss.

Price, with the main body of the Confederates, fell back rapidly, and would have escaped without loss but for the movements of General Lane from Kansas, which inflicted some loss on the retiring columns. Some troops under Colonels Carlin and Plumner engaged the Confederates under General Jefferson Thompson, near Fredericktown, in the southeast part of the State, and defeated them with severe loss.

Just as Fremont was on the eve of engaging the enemy and doing something to justify his command, he was superseded by General Hunter.

Kentucky, like Missouri, was divided. The Governor and many of those under him were really Confederates; but there was a strong portion of the people opposed to secession. In the hope of ultimately carrying out his view, Governor Magoffin proposed a neutrality, agreeing to keep the Confederate troops off the territory of Kentucky; but as he allowed open recruiting for the Confederate army, and the occupation of some islands in the Mississippi, although the people of the State at a special election showed their strong attachment to the Union, the United States Government no longer hesitated, and sent in troops

under General Anderson. Magoffin still endeavored to play into the hands of the Confederates; but when he called the Legislature together it proved so strongly Union that the Confederates took alarm, and General Leonidas Polk, who had laid aside his position as bishop in the Episcopal Church, took possession of Columbus in Kentucky. The United States forces at Cairo were now under the command of General Ulysses S. Grant, and he at once occupied Paducah. The Legislature of Kentucky compelled the Governor to call upon the Confederates to retire from the State, but they treated the request with contempt, and sent General Zollicoffer to occupy Cumberland Gap, an important pass in the mountains in the eastern part of the State. Buckner, Magoffin's inspector general, now, as a brigadier general in the Confederate army, seized Bowling Green.

While Kentucky was thus preparing to become a battle-ground, some sharp actions had taken place in Western Virginia, the shrewd policy of the original seceding States being to have as much fighting as possible done in the Border States.

Rosecrans, the able successor of McClellan, came up with the Confederates under Floyd, at Carnifex Ferry, late on the 10th of September. A reconnoissance under General Benham, to ascertain the exact position of General Floyd's forces, which were intrenched in a dense forest that prevented their works being seen more than three hundred yards, brought on a sharp action. The enemy opened fire along their whole line, disclosing their position. Benham at once attacked with the Tenth Ohio, Colonel Lytle, on the right, and the Thirteenth on the left. Both attacked gallantly and suffered severely. Colonel Lowe, leading up the Twelfth Ohio over a rugged route to attack in front, was killed at the head of his men.

Before they could carry the works it became pitch dark, and General Rosecrans suspended operations till morning. Then it was discovered that Floyd had fled during the night, abandoning his camp and his strong works.

Other operations followed in that difficult mountain region, through trackless woods and ranges where troops could move but slowly. General Reynolds effectually held the able Lee in check at Cheat Mountain Pass, a position of great strength, until, weary of acting on the defensive, he made a bold dash on his works at Greenbriar, October 2, 1861. Soon after, General Kelley drove the Confederates under McDonald and Monroe out of Romney, inflicting severe loss in men and war material. Thus the war raged in that wild section, assuming at last the most ferocious character. Guyandotte, held by a small party of United States troops, was surprised on the 10th of November, and every soldier was butchered, no quarter being given, and, as was charged, the citizens of the place joining in the work of shooting down the soldiers. In a few days, however, a large force of United States troops under Colonel Zeigler entered the place, and, learning the facts, burned the town.

Rosecrans was still holding Floyd, and hoped to capture his whole force. A plan for crossing New River, at a neglected ford, was defeated by the sudden rise of the river ; but another plan promised success. General Benham was sent over with orders to push on to Cassiday's Mill, and hold that key of Floyd's position, commanding his only line of retreat. But neglecting this, Benham allowed Floyd to escape, and could only inflict some damage by attacking his rear. Still Floyd's flight put an end to the campaign in Western Virginia. General Lee had been summoned to a more important command. Rosecrans, taking his position at Wheeling, had merely to hold what had

been gained in Western Virginia, which now formally effected its separation from the eastern portion of the State, and formed a new one under the name of Kanawha, although that of Western Virginia was finally adopted as the official title.

The campaign of 1861 had been on the part of the United States Government rather defensive than offensive.

The defense of Washington, of Western Virginia, Kentucky, and Missouri had been the objects, and notwithstanding the terrible reverse at Bull Run, these points had to a great extent been gained. Washington was safe, West Virginia firmly held, Kentucky had decided for the Union, and Missouri, though leaning strongly to the South, was held by the United States troops.

The troubles in the United States excited great interest in Europe. The downfall of the great American Republic was considered certain, and the Governments of Great Britain and France were swayed by this popular feeling. Almost immediately after the commencement of the secession movement, England and France recognized the seceding States as belligerents. A congress of the great European powers, held at Paris, in 1856, had proposed the abolition of privateering: the United States Government had hesitated to accede to this unless there was a general exemption of private property from seizure at sea. Soon after Mr. Lincoln's accession to the Presidency, the Secretary of State notified the European powers that the United States accepted the action of the Congress of Paris; but now England and France required that the articles of the Congress of Paris should not apply to the Southern Confederacy. They held the Confederate Government fully entitled to issue letters of marque, and send out privateers. England even went further: she permitted vessels to be built, manned, and

equipped in English ports, for service as Confederate privateers, and no evidence could convince the British authorities of their real character. At the same time, the ports of the British islands in the West Indies became the resort of these privateers, where they were always protected and supplied. On the other hand, the armed vessels of the United States were held to the strict rules governing the case of war with a recognized power.

The ocean was soon covered with Confederate cruisers, and the shipping of the Northern States was exposed to utter destruction. Unable to carry their prizes into Southern ports, these privateers generally destroyed the vessels captured. President Lincoln had by proclamation declared that privateers should be treated as pirates, but the matter was beset by difficulties.

On the 2d of June, 1861, the privateer Savannah sailed from Charleston, and the next day captured the brig Joseph, with a cargo of sugar ; but the Savannah soon fell in with the Perry, a man-of-war, purposely disguised. Taking her for a merchantman, the Savannah ran down to attack her, till, discovering her mistake, she attempted to escape. The Perry opened, and the Savannah surrendered. The captain and crew were taken to New York, indicted, and tried for piracy, but the jury failed to agree. A similar trial took place in Philadelphia, where the privateersmen were convicted. The Confederate Government at once took a number of United States prisoners drawn by lot as hostages, threatening to hang them should the privateersmen be executed. After a long detention, the privateersmen were at last treated as ordinary prisoners of war.

The only course was for the United States to pursue these vessels at sea and capture them. This was a matter of the greatest difficulty.

The Sumter, escaping from New Orleans, though pursued, captured eight vessels near Cuba, burned one, and then extended her ravages among American shipping on the coast of Brazil, and finally ran over to Spain. Entering the port of Gibraltar, she was blockaded there by the United States gunboat Tuscarora, and was finally sold. The Petrel was destroyed by the United States frigate St. Lawrence, which she attacked unconscious of her real character.

The only approach to a regular naval battle was the attempt made by Commodore Hollins, of the Confederate navy, to drive off the United States fleet blockading the mouth of the Mississippi. The Confederates had adopted a sort of steam-ram, generally made of some very solid tug-boat, the deck covered with a slanting roof of stout timbers, on which iron plates or railroad iron was laid. The bow of the boat was furnished with a solid point of timber covered with iron. This boat could be run with all the force of heavy steam-engines against a wooden ship, doing great damage, and yet receive no damage from a broadside. Hollins, with the steam-ram Manassas, of this kind, and five other vessels, during the night of the 11th of October, attacked the United States fleet under Commodore Pope, injuring the Richmond severely with the ram, captured a coal-schooner, and forced the fleet to retire beyond the bar. Two of the United States vessels actually got a ground, and might have been captured had the enemy shown any judgment.

When the plans of the United States for reducing the Confederate States assumed the offensive, one great object was to capture and hold the chief ports, and thus prevent the issuing of privateers or men-of-war, as well as the introduction of goods from foreign countries, especially arms and supplies for their armies.

The first of these operations was an expedition from Fortress Monroe, under Commodore Silas H. Stringham, with the Minnesota, Wabash, Pawnee, Monticello, Harriet Lane, and two transports, bearing a considerable land force under General Butler. The object was Fort Hatteras, on the North Carolina coast. They arrived off Hatteras, on the 27th of August, and some troops and marines were landed and the men-of-war then opened fire on Fort Clark, a smaller Confederate work. The fort at first answered with spirit, but the fire gradually slackened, and finally ceased. The enemy, in fact, abandoned it, and the United States troops entered, but could not hold it, as it lay in range of the guns of the fleet, which were now turned on Fort Hatteras. On the 29th, that work suffered a furious bombardment, the ships pouring in effective broadsides. But the Confederates resisted sturdily till an eleven-inch shell exploded in their bombproof so near the magazine as to show them that resistance was hopeless. The white flag was then raised. Commodore Barron, the Confederate commander, sought to obtain favorable terms, but Butler would grant none except that they should be treated as prisoners of war.

The fort was at once occupied, and expeditions from it planned against other points. But no great result followed: a movement agaist Chicomicomico, with a view to reduce Roanoke Island, well-nigh proved a serious disaster.

CHAPTER II.

The War in the West—Minor Operations—Battle of Belmont—Grant's First Action—Polk Crosses to Relieve his Men—Desperate Fighting—Grant Succeeds in Reaching his Gunboats—The Port Royal Expedition—A Foothold in South Carolina—Operations with no Great Result—The Slidell-Mason Affair—Commodore Wilkes—Attitude of the British Government—Slidell and Mason Given up—Pope's Missouri Campaign—The Confederate Line in the West—Preparations to Break it.

THE war in the West still partook of the character of scattered unconnected operations, which had no bearing on each other, or on any general result. The following sketch will give an account of two of these minor operations in Missouri, in which the gallant Majors Gavitt and Tanner fell.

The rapid change of commanders in Missouri and the uncertain movements of the army had given the Confederates fresh courage. Many of the people of Missouri sympathized with them, and before long the State swarmed with small hostile parties. These were met in turn by United States troops and local troops, giving the war a terrible character, desolating the whole State, and imbittering the feelings of the people against each other. Such operations are the unfortunate result of civil war, where neighbor is arrayed against neighbor, and even brother against brother.

The next battle was one fought at Belmont, a little place in Missouri, on the bank of the Mississippi. General Polk, after occupying Columbus, in Kentucky, had taken possession of Belmont, which was

low ground, completely under the guns of a force at Columbus. General Ulysses S. Grant, who was in command at Cairo, could not, however, allow the enemy to hold both sides of the river, and resolved to break up the post at Belmont. He also wished to prevent any movement by General Polk in Missouri. On the 6th of November, he left Cairo, with two thousand eight hundred and fifty men, on board several steamers, and dropped down the river, landing his men, while some of the steamers kept on and engaged the batteries at Columbus. The United States troops, Illinois and Iowa volunteers, pushed on till they met the enemy under Colonel Tappan, and drove them in. A stand was made, but they were finally routed, and retreated to their transports at the waterside, leaving their camp in Grant's hands. When he had destroyed their war material, he prepared to return, but the troops had fallen into some disorder, when they were encountered by General Pillow, who had been sent over by General Polk with three regiments. In a few moments the battle was renewed, Polk's batteries at Columbus pouring in their volleys, and fresh troops landing from that place, first three regiments, then three more, under General Cheatham, followed at last by Polk in person, with two other regiments. In spite of the United States gunboats these all landed, and it seemed for a time as though Grant could never reach his boats. But at last, after a desperate fight, in which that general's horse was killed under him, and a heavy loss of life, the troops reached the riverside. There the enemy charged again furiously, but by gunboats, musketry, and artillery they were at last driven off. This hard-fought battle lasted from half-past ten in the morning to five in the afternoon, almost without cessation, and cost the United States more than six hundred killed, wounded, and missing. The Confederates lost their camp, and some

artillery and small arms, and about a thousand killed, wounded, or taken They claimed it as a victory, but at once abandoned Belmont, so that Grant, though at heavy cost, attained his object.

One of the earliest aims of President Lincoln was to secure the Southern ports. He issued a proclamation declaring all the ports on the coast from South Carolina to Texas to be blockaded. A subsequent proclamation included those of Virginia and North Carolina.

The next step was to take military possession of the chief harbors. As the United States by its naval vessels controlled the whole coast, it was easy to fit out expeditions and send steamers carrying troops, well equipped and supplied, against any Southern seaboard city. General Butler was sent to occupy Hatteras in North Carolina. Further south lay Fort Pickens, near the old Spanish city of Pensacola, which the French and Spaniards had taken and retaken in the preceding century. The stars and stripes still floated over this fort, and from it an attempt was made to secure Pensacola. Some New York volunteers encamped on Santa Rosa Island, near Fort Pickens, but they were surprised at night by a Confederate force under General Anderson, on the 9th of October, and an irregular fight ensued. In November, the United States squadron, with Fort Pickens, for a time bombarded Fort McRae, which was held by the Confederates. They silenced it and destroyed a number of houses in the town of Warrington.

We will now return to the operations near Washington. After the disaster at Bull's Run, a reorganization of the departments was made, and General McClellan, whose success in Western Virginia had inspired confidence, was called to command the army covering Washington, as well as the whole Department of Washington, and that of Northeastern Virginia. He at once proceeded to organize the forces

under his command : a better discipline was introduced ; inefficient officers removed, irregular habits suppressed, and careful drilling enforced. At the same time, the fortifications south of the Potomac were completed under the supervision of the best engineers.

The Army of the Potomac lay watching the Confederate movements. The first operation against the enemy was a disaster. The Confederates began to fall back from the Potomac. Brigadier-General Stone, commanding at Edward's Ferry, received orders to throw a part of his force across the river.

Nineteen hundred men sent across under Col. E D. Baker, were crushed at Ball's Bluff by a superior force, and with their leader killed or taken.

The reverse at Bull's Bluff, in which the United States lost a thousand men, was atoned for in part soon after by a brief action at Drainesville, in which General McCall defeated General J. E. B. Stuart, and drove him from the field with severe loss, capturing a considerable quantity of forage.

On the 31st of October, 1861, Lieutenant-General Scott, overcome by age and infirmities, resigned the high position which he had so long honorably filled. The cares and anxieties of a great war had prostrated his failing health, and though all regretted his retirement, it was felt that the step was indeed a necessary one.

General McClellan, already at the head of the Army of the Potomac, then assumed the command of the armies of the United States.

Almost at the moment of this change, a formidable expedition sailed from Fortress Monroe, Commodore Samuel F. Dupont, with a large fleet, conveying an army under the command of General Thomas W.

Sherman. The object was to occupy a port in South Carolina. Port Royal, where Ribault planted his little French colony, was a fine port, the entrance being the best channel for ships below Norfolk. Although efforts had been made to cover the plans with the vail of secrecy, the Confederate Government received early information, and planted strong works at the mouth of the menaced harbor—Fort Beauregard on Bay Point, and Fort Walker on Hilton Head. The expedition sailed on the 29th of October, and after suffering much in a severe gale, arrived at the channel on the 5th of November. After reconnoitring the position of the enemy's forts and vessels, Commodore Dupont, on the 7th, began his attack. His ships in line swept into the harbor, delivering one broadside to Fort Walker as they passed, and wheeling, poured another into Fort Beauregard. Round and round went the terrible line of ships. The Confederates for a time replied, but when the Wabash and Susquehanna for the third time poured in their deadly broadside, Fort Walker made no response. The Confederates had abandoned the fort and fled to the woods. A small squadron then proceeded to invest Fort Beauregard, but that too was found tenantless. Both works were at once occupied by the troops of the United States, and Port Royal became a stirring and busy place, being to the close of the war the great centre of operations against the South. As soon as the troops landed, negroes began to flock to the camp, bringing cattle, poultry, horses, and mules, and they soon formed a camp of their own, occupying many of the abandoned houses. Some of these people were employed in fishing and gathering cotton, but most of them looked upon the war as their great deliverance from all work. The Confederates attempted to prevent any advantage arising to the United States, by planting forces at the points by which they

could operate against Charleston or Savannah ; but the gunboats and land forces, on the 1st day of January, 1862, drove off with severe loss the troops who attempted to hold Port Royal Ferry and Seabrook.

Meanwhile, a strange affair occurred on the ocean, which convulsed England and America, and forced the former power to show all her concealed hatred of the United States, which she had been masking under the pretence of neutrality. Commodore Wilkes, in the San Jacinto, returning from the coast of Africa, heard that Mason and Slidell, sent out as ambassadors of the Confederate Government to England and France, were endeavoring to reach English territory in the British mail-steamer Trent, running from Havana. He resolved to capture them, and, overhauling the San Jacinto, took them off, and carried them to the United States, where they were committed to prison. The British Government acted with great haughtiness, demanding the surrender of the prisoners, and reparation. The Secretary of State of the United States showed that by the uniform rulings of British courts and authors, the seizure of contraband dispatches on a neutral was justifiable ; and that the British Government was now taking the ground heretofore taken by Americans, and always denied by England. Hence, as the United States had not ordered the course of Commodore Wilkes, and could not defend it on American grounds, they were accordingly given up. The British Government had showed its real feeling, and it was now evident that on any slight pretext it would take part in the war, and assist the Confederates in establishing their independence.

Carrying out its plan of controlling the Southern ports, the United States attempted to close some of them by sinking vessels loaded with

stones in the main channels, adopting the plan followed by the British Government at Boulogne and Alexandria. As a basis of operations against New Orleans, Ship Island in the Gulf of Mexico was occupied early in December.

Missouri continued to be the scene of military operations and guerilla warfare. General Hunter, on succeeding Fremont, fell back, and the Confederates advanced; but Halleck, taking command of the department, assumed the offensive, and some advantages were gained, Brigadier-General Pope acquiring renown by a successful engagement at Clear Creek, in which he captured a Confederate force under Colonel Robinson, numbering one thousand three hundred, with all their arms and supplies. Alarmed at this, General Price retreated for a time from Springfield, but soon rallied in force at that place with reinforcements from Arkansas. Against that point, in February, a combined movement of the United States troops under Sigel, Asboth, Davis, Curtis, and Prentiss was made. As the army under General Curtis approached, Price abandoned his winter quarters and fled, the state of the roads having prevented Curtis from cutting off his retreat. Curtis pushed rapidly on, capturing many detached parties of the enemy, who made no stand till he reached Sugar Creek, after being reinforced by Ben McCulloch. The action there was a brief one, and Price again fled, losing heavily in men, influence, and war material.

Kentucky was one of the Border States which showed least inclination to join the fortunes of the Confederates, although a convention of secessionists held at Russelville, in November, passed an ordinance of secession, and attempted to organize a government. The Confederates held Columbus and Hickman, while Buckner had a force at Bowling Green, and a Confederate force under General Zollicoffer menaced

the State from Tennessee, at Cumberland Gap. General Zollicoffer's first movement was against Camp Wildcat, in Rock Castle County, held by only a single United States regiment under Colonel Garrard. Thinking to surprise it, he advanced at the head of six regiments of infantry, with a large force of cavalry and artillery. But he reckoned without his host. General Schoepf had just reached the camp with a regiment of infantry and another of cavalry, and other troops were rapidly concentrating there. Amid the heavy growth of timber that covers the land, Zollicoffer approached between the London road and the Winding Blades road, and charged with a yell on Schoepf's line, to meet a terrible volley of musketry, which staggered and finally drove them back. Again Zollicoffer led his men up on the London road; but the reinforcements had come in—among the rest a battery of artillery, which was planted on a conical hill between the roads. As Zollicoffer charged again, covered by his artillery, this battery opened, and again he recoiled. A third attack, planned with care, and carried out with untold labor, was similarly repulsed. Volley after volley swept them away in confusion.

Utterly defeated, Zollicoffer retreated to the Gap, and confined himself to plundering the country.

General Nelson was equally successful on the Virginia border. A considerable force of Confederates had entered Kentucky from Virginia, and encamped at Ivy Mountain, near Pikeville. Nelson resolved to dislodge them, and did so on the 9th of November, with very little loss, while a division of his force under Colonel Sill took Pikesville, and the Confederate force abandoned their positions and retreated to Virginia.

Encouraged by these minor successes, General Don Carlos Buell

resolved to make a movement against the enemy. In December he pushed forward his centre, forty thousand strong, under General Alexander McDowell McCook, toward Bowling Green, which was held by General Buckner with a large army. But the Confederate commander did not risk a battle: as McCook approached, Buckner fell back to the southern bank of Green River, destroying as well as he could the fine iron bridge of the Louisville and Nashville railroad over that stream. McCook's advance guard, part of Willich's German regiment from Indiana, crossed the river on a temporary bridge, and encamped near Munfordsville. General Hindman, the nearest Confederate commander, on the 17th of December sent a Texan force of Rangers under Terry to surprise Willich if possible. But this little party displayed singular courage and skill. Terry failed in his repeated charges to break or disorder their line, and was at last killed, with many of his men, the rest retreating.

General Humphrey Marshall, once a representative of Kentucky in Congress, penetrated into Kentucky from Virginia, with a force of two or three thousand men, as far as Paintville, on the Big Sandy River, among the mountains in the eastern part of the State. Here he intrenched himself; but when a force of United States troops under Colonel Garfield advanced upon him, Marshall broke up his camp and, destroying large quantities of stores, retreated. Garfield pursued with energy: coming up to a part near Prestonburg, he drove them in. On the 10th of January he engaged Marshall's main body, and after a struggle which lasted till night, drove Marshall from all his positions.

These advantages gave the Union men in Kentucky courage, and inspired the hope that the large army under Buell would by a vigor

ous campaign deliver the State from the presence of the Confederates, and save it from being a battle-ground for bodies of skirmishers and a field for cavalry raids.

The plan of the campaign that was to be decisive had occurred to several commanders, and was presented by them to the authorities at Washington. The Confederate line had one weak point, in the fact that the Tennesee and Cumberland were navigable rivers, where land and naval forces could co-operate.

They had endeavored to prevent this by erecting Fort Henry and Fort Donelson, but those works were far from being sufficient to prevent an advance. Taking note of the remarkable course of these rivers, and knowing that during the season of high water the Tennessee and Cumberland were navigable for large vessels to the very heart of the South, Buell and Grant saw that if they could force open the navigation of those rivers by reducing Forts Henry and Donelson, they would not only take Columbus and Bowling Green in the rear, but force the whole Confederate line to fall back. On the 30th of January, 1862, General Halleck gave Grant and Foote the requisite authority.

On this movement, which was to conquer the Western Border States for the Union, all now depended.

The end of the first year of the war had been reached. Many had looked upon it as an insurrection to be put down in a few months; a rebellion that Government could crush at once: but now saw that with so many States bound together in a new government, with earnest men at the head, and armies in the field supplied with the best arms, and commanded by officers of undisputed skill, bravery, and determination, the struggle was to be a long and deadly one, if victory at last was won by the United States Government.

PART VI.

THE CIVIL WAR CONTINUED—ABRAHAM LINCOLN, SIXTEENTH PRESIDENT—1861-5—1865.

CHAPTER III.

Buell's Campaign—Battle of Mill Spring—Zollicoffer Defeated by Thomas and Killed—The Confederate Line Broken—Grant and Porter Move—Fort Henry Bombarded by the Fleet, and Reduced before Grant Arrives—The Army and Fleet Moves upon Fort Donelson—The Fleet Repulsed with Loss—Grant's Attack—Battle of Fort Donelson—Desperate Fighting—The Confederate Commanders—The Surrender of the Fort—The new Confederate Line—Island No. 10 Occupied by Them—It is Reduced—The War in Arkansas—Battle of Pea Ridge—Operations on the Coast—The Burnside Expedition—Capture of Fort Pulaski—Butler's Expedition to Louisiana.

BUELL'S army was at last properly organized and drilled to take the field, and moved in five divisions. Two, under McCook and Nelson, were to combine in an attack on Bowling Green, with a third under General Mitchell as a reserve. General Thomas, with a fourth, was watching Zollicoffer, who was near Somerset, and Crittenden, on the right, lay near Cumberland Gap. On the 18th of January, the Confederates made the first movement against Thomas' position at Mill Spring. It was a night attack. At four in the morning they rushed on the camp of the United States forces, hoping to take it by surprise.

But they were on the alert, and for three hours a fierce fight went on amid the darkness of the forest. The men of Kentucky, Minnesota, Ohio, and Indiana bore the brunt, and finally, by a decisive charge, sent their assailants back in headlong flight, leaving two pieces of artillery, and strewing the way with muskets and knapsacks. Then General Zollicoffer, coming in the confusion on a party of United States officers, was killed by Colonel Fry. They did not even halt at their intrenched camp, which was entered by the victors in their pursuit, and taken with all its contents. In that direction Kentucky was wrested from the Confederates, and so discouraged were they that, fearing for all their forces in that State, General Beauregard was sent from Virginia to take command. Their main reliance was Fort Donelson and Fort Henry, on the Tennessee and Cumberland, forming, with Columbus, a chain of posts deemed almost impregnable. Against these General Halleck had planned a movement, confiding its execution to General Grant and Commodore Foote. Early in February they moved from Cairo, but the land force was delayed in its march, and, in fact, Grant thought himself rapid enough. Accordingly, when, on the 6th, Foote came in view of the Confederate work Fort Henry, General Grant had not arrived. This fort was a bastion earthwork, on the right bank of the Tennessee, armed with heavy guns, and inclosed in a line of breastworks for infantry. A road led from it across to Fort Donelson, on the left bank of the Cumberland. Without awaiting Grant's arrival, Foote resolved to attack at the hour he had appointed, without giving the enemy time to prepare. Advancing with his fleet in two divisions, he opened fire on Fort Henry, keeping steadily on till he was within six hundred yards. For a time the Confederate guns replied with vigor, even disabling the flag-ship Essex,

but they soon lost all heart, as gun after gun became disabled, and most of the garrison fled ; so that when, after a contest of an hour and a quarter, General Tilghman found it impossible to induce the men to continue the fight, he ordered the infantry to retire to Fort Donelson, leaving him with his artillerists in the fort ; so that when the Confederates raised a white flag, there were only the commander, General Tilghman, and sixty to surrender.

General Grant arrived at the close of the engagement, and took possession of the works, but was too late to cut off the retreat of the fugitives.

This second disaster of the Confederate cause deprived them of the Tennessee River, leaving it open to the United States gunboats. They were not slow to act : pushing on, they compelled the enemy to abandon and fire nearly all their boats on the river, a few only remaining to be captured by the flotilla, which penetrated to Florence, Alabama.

Fort Donelson, on the Cumberland, forty miles above its mouth on the Ohio, was an extensive earthwork, on a commanding hill near the town of Dover, scientifically constructed, well supplied with artiltery, and manned by at least thirteen thousand men. General Floyd commanded it, supported by Pillow and Buckner. Here it was evident that a desperate fight would be made. Concerting plans with Commodore Foote, General Grant moved upon it, and arriving before the fort on the 13th of February, posted his troops around it, skirmishing only to secure important positions. The next day Foote arrived, and with four ironclads and two wooden vessels opened fire on the fort. But the guns of Fort Donelson were better handled. After a severe fight, two vessels were disabled, and two seriously injured, so that he had to suspend the attack to repair. His fire had driven the Confederates from some of their batteries, but as the vessels drifted down

the river, the Confederates rallied, and the dear-bought advantage was lost.

General Grant intrenched to await the return of the flotilla, but the Confederates were too wise to allow him to carry out his plan. Resolving to cut their way out by the Wynn's Ferry road, they boldly attacked his right under McClernand, on the 15th, early in the morning. McClernand for a time stood the fierce onset of General Pillow, but gradually yielded. Buckner supported Pillow's attack by charging McClernand's left, the brigade of Colonel W. H. L. Wallace; but that brigade stood firm, and drove Buckner back to his intrenchments. When, however, Pillow's success uncovered Wallace's flank, Buckner renewed the attack, and Wallace was driven back. McClernand's whole division was forced from the field a mile and a half, his headquarters captured, and five pieces of artillery taken.

A brigade from General Lew. Wallace's division, coming to his relief, was mistaken for the enemy, and fired upon, adding to the general confusion.

The Wynn's Ferry road was open to the Confederates, who might have retreated by it, but, in the hope of crushing Grant's whole army, they neglected to do so.

When General Wallace came up to save McClernand's exhausted troops at noon, the Confederates formed on the ridge occupied during the night by McClernand, and they now charged upon Wallace's fresh troops with the same spirit they had shown earlier in the day. But they found in Wallace a foeman worthy of their steel: his steady line met their charge, and finally drove them back to their own intrenchments. During all this bloody work, Grant had been on Commodore Foote's flag-ship planning a combined movement. On arriving upon

the field he saw that either side was ready to give way, if the other showed a bold front. He seized the opportunity, and ordered an advance of his whole line.

He threw his right, Iowa and Indiana men under General Smith, on the Confederate left, strongly posted as it was on rising ground, with intrenchments and rifle-pits. The movement was successful. After a stubborn fight, the Confederates under Buckner, who had hurried to the spot, retired from their rifle-pits to their main works, leaving to Smith the ground that commanded the fort.

These operations, in which the Confederate troops had fought bravely, showed them, however, that they could not hold out. The day's engagement had cost each side two thousand men in killed and wounded. A stormy debate ensued among the Confederate commanders. Floyd would not surrender, nor would Pillow. They resigned command, and retired by night from the fort with part of the force, leaving General Buckner in command. In the morning, that commander sent a flag of truce to General Grant to propose a cessation of hostilities, and the appointment of commissioners to agree upon terms of capitulation.

Grant's reply was a memorable one: "No terms except unconditional and immediate surrender can be accepted. I propose to move immediately on your works."

Buckner, in a letter expressing his deep chagrin, accepted the terms and surrendered.

The fighting had been close and earnest: the losses were heavy. Of the Confederates engaged, one thousand two hundred and thirty-six escaped with Pillow, two hundred and thirty-one were killed, and more than a thousand wounded. Thirteen thousand surrendered, with artillery.

muskets, ammunition, and supplies; but the loss to the United States forces was five hundred killed and eight hundred wounded.

The victory at Fort Donelson had not been purchased without severe loss, but to the Southern cause the fall of the two forts was beyond calculation. Their military plan east and west of the Alleghanies was to make lines of strong positions held by armies of their best men, in order to compel the armies of the United States to fight them in the border States, leaving those at the South, to a great extent, free from the horrors of war. In this way they made Virginia the battle-ground to the last; but by the recent victories of Halleck, Grant and Foote, the Confederate armies found it impossible to hold their ground in Kentucky and Tennessee.

The loss of Forts Henry and Donelson completely broke the strong Confederate line. Bowling Green, Columbus, Clarksville, and Nashville were abandoned; many heavy cannon which could not be moved were thrown into the river at Columbus, and great quantities of valuable stores were burned.

General Albert S. Johnson, the Confederate commander, took up a new line lower down, occupying Island No. 10 in the Mississippi, New Madrid in Missouri, and Jackson in Tennessee. Here they prepared to make another effort to check the advance of the United States forces from the North. The Western troops, elated by their victories, expected to sweep all before them.

Tennessee having been thus recovered, and being without a government, the President appointed as military governor the Hon. Andrew Johnson, who had been Senator in his own State, its representative in Congress, its Governor, and Senator at Washington. He had earnestly opposed the secession movement, and now attempted to

reorganize public affairs ; but though East Tennessee adhered to the Government of the United States, the western part submitted only to force.

The Confederates were not allowed to hold their new line undisturbed. Halleck resolved to break this. Early in March, General Pope invested the position at New Madrid, the western point of the new line. Here they had thrown up a strong four-bastioned earthwork, outside which were the encampments of a considerable force, the whole surrounded with a well-erected earthwork and ditch. It was manned by more than five thousand men under General McCown, a distinguished officer, formerly of the United States army. Although aided by gunboats, McCown, after some days' siege, seeing Pope's lines daily approach, abandoned his position, leaving artillery, field batteries, tents, and stores, and retired to Island No. 10. So precipitate was the flight, that their dead were left unburied, and candles burning in the tents. As this post commanded the river, and was below Island No. 10, it enabled the United States forces to cut off the enemy's retreat from that point.

This was not the only military operation west of the Mississippi. Curtis, following up Price, pushed into Arkansas, the Confederates retreating until swelled by such reinforcements that they deemed it safe to make a stand. General Van Dorn, appointed to the command of the Confederate forces, pushed on toward Missouri, to gain Curtis' rear. On the 6th of March he fell in with and attacked Sigel, marching to reinforce Curtis. Sigel cut his way through with some loss, and Curtis prepared to meet the enemy from an unexpected point. On the 7th of March he drew up on Pea Ridge, to meet the combined forces of Van Dorn and Price, who were now between him

and Missouri. Curtis threw out Colonel Carr, whose brigade fought desperately, but was steadily driven back, losing, but regaining, some of their guns. Colonel Osterhaus, attacking the enemy's centre, met a similar result. Sigel held his own, but the position of affairs at nightfall was not cheering for the United States forces.

The contending armies slept on their arms not more than three hundred yards apart. Each army prepared in the darkness of night for the decisive struggle. On a hill that towered two hundred feet high, Van Dorn planted heavy batteries, with infantry, forming his right. Cavalry and artillery protected his left. Sigel, opposed to Van Dorn's right, drew up his men well, and pushing on, opened an artillery fire, which was well sustained, and finally dislodged the enemy from the hill. Carr and Davis had more promptly driven in the centre and left. After a furious battle, Van Dorn retreated, pursued for twelve miles by the victors. The fighting on both sides had been of the most desperate character, and the losses were large. On the side of the United States, the loss in killed, wounded, and missing amounted to one thousand three hundred and fifty-one ; the Confederates admitted six hundred killed and wounded, but lost really more than their antagonists. In this bloody fight, General Ben McCulloch, who had so long been the soul of energy, was killed, as well as Generals McIntosh and Slack. In this battle the Confederates had a number of Indians under General Albert Pike, and many of Curtis' army were found tomahawked and scalped by the savage foe.

The battle of Pea Ridge established the superiority of the United States west of the Mississippi ; and even the Indians, who had been led to share the fortunes of the Confederacy, began to waver, seeing nothing but utter ruin before them.

On the Atlantic coast, the year opened with another expedition of the naval and military forces. This was Burnside's expedition, also aimed at North Carolina. After severe storms, in which several vessels were wrecked, he reached Hatteras Inlet on the 13th of January, 1862. Entering Pamlico Sound, Captain Goldsborough, on the 7th of February, attacked the Confederate forts and flotilla. After a spirited action, the Confederate gunboats retired under the guns of the forts. Goldsborough then bombarded Fort Barton, at Pork Point, till it was utterly disabled: then General Burnside landed eleven thousand men on Roanoke Island. On the 8th, these advanced on the enemy's position, under the command of General Foster, Burnside remaining at the landing. The Confederates were strongly posted, but, though well defended, it was carried by assault, the enemy flying to the northern part of the island. There they, with all the other forts and troops on the island, finally surrendered.

Further down the coast lay a United States force at Port Royal, gradually and slowly gaining ground. On the 10th of April, General Hunter's batteries, which had been planted around Fort Pulaski, the principal work defending the port of Savannah, opened on that work. So powerful were the cannon brought to bear on it, that in thirty hours' fire a practicable breach was made in its strong walls, and the Confederate commander, Colonel Olmstead, finding many of his guns dismounted, and the rifle-shots fast working their way to his magazine, surrendered the fort.

This capture, due in no small degree to the engineering skill of General Q. A. Gillmore, cost the United States only one man. Some smaller forts, and Fort Clinch, at Fernandina, Florida, were at once occupied, as well as Jacksonville, Apalachicola, and the ancient city of St. Augustine.

CHAPTER IV.

The Invasion of New Mexico by Sibley—Canby's Defence—The Fleet on the Mississippi—The Ram Fleet under Colonel Ellet—Memphis Yields—Butler's Louisiana Campaign—Farragut's Naval Battle—Fort Jackson and Fort St. Philip—New Orleans Taken—The Fleet Ascends the River—First Operations against Vicksburg—The Chesapeake Naval Battle between the Merrimac and Monitor—The Confederate Government—Stanton—Shields defeats Jackson—McClellan's Peninsula Campaign—The Battle of Pittsburg Landing.

New Mexico, a Territory lying far to the West, had from of old been claimed by Texas, and although to reduce and occupy it would really weaken and burthen the Southern Confederacy, an expedition of two thousand three hundred men under General Sibley, an officer who had shown great ability in the United States service during the Mexican and Indian wars, marched into the Territory from Texas, in January, 1862. The United States forces were commanded by General Canby, who had been in a manner abandoned to his own resources by the authorities at Washington: but he called out volunteers, and with his regulars prepared to defend the Territory. Sibley attacked him at Valverde, in February. The battle was long a doubtful one, but at last the Texans made a desperate charge, killing Captain McRae and Lieutenant Michler at their guns, and routing the regulars and volunteers who formed the infantry support. A total rout ensued. Canby fell back to Fort Craig. Sibley then advanced, routing Colonel Slough at Apache Pass, and entered Santa Fé in triumph; but he found in less than a month that his victory was useless, and that he had no choice but to evacuate the Territory or be cut off by Canby; and, admitting that New Mexico was not worth one quarter of the

blood expended in its conquest, he retreated to Texas in May, leaving his sick and wounded.

After the evacuation of Island No. 10, Commodore Foote moved down the Mississippi as far as Fort Pillow, where the Confederates were again ready to contest the mastery of the great river. Not only was the fort strong and well supplied with guns and mortars which replied with accuracy to Foote's fire, but a ram with gunboats came up the river to attack his fleet. An action took place May 4th. The ram Mallory struck the Cincinnati in spite of her broadside and musket fire, crippling her so that she began to sink; but Commander Stembel killed the Confederate pilot, and managed to run his vessel on a shoal; and the St. Louis ran the Mallory down, sinking her in turn. The gunboats of the Confederate flotilla fared badly; one was burnt, another blew up.

Fort Pillow was soon after evacuated, and the fleet kept steadily on.

Colonel Ellet had meanwhile organized a fleet of rams to meet those of the Confederates. Commodore Davis, reinforced by this ram fleet, moved down the river, and when approaching Memphis, June 6th, came in sight of the Confederate fleet lying at the levee. It at once moved down the river, then turned and came up in line of battle. After a distant cannonading, two of the Confederate rams pushed out, when Ellet, with his rams, the Queen of the West and Monarch, made for them. The Confederates sought to elude them, but the Queen was too adroit, and took one of them, fairly crushing her to a wreck; which, as soon as the Queen backed, sank. The other Confederate ram meanwhile dealt the Queen a blow which disabled her, but was in turn struck and sank by the Monarch. That vessel was now attacked by

the Beauregard, which, however, did her no injury, while the Monarch, using the ram, crushed in the Beauregard's sides, when her boiler exploded, pierced by a ball from a gunboat, and she floated away a wreck. The Little Rebel next succumbed to the Monarch. The Confederate fleet under the broadsides of the United States gunboats was as badly handled. Of their whole force only one armed vessel, the Van Dorn, escaped down the river. This extraordinary naval conflict had lasted from five to seven o'clock in the morning. Not a man was killed in the United States boats, and no one wounded but Colonel Ellet.

The people at Memphis, with the Confederate force occupying it under General Jefferson Thompson, watched the fight with deep interest. As he saw the day going against them, Thompson sent off his troops, and at the close of the battle galloped out of the city, which sullenly yielded.

The United States Government meanwhile pursued its course in recapturing the great Southern ports. The most important movement to secure any of these important points was that against New Orleans. As early as December 4th, 1861, Ship Island, one of a long line of small sandy islands between New Orleans and Mobile, was occupied by a small force under General Phelps. On the 15th of February following, a fleet left Hampton Roads, bearing an army of fifteen thousand men under General Butler. They did not reach Ship Island till March 25th. Then General Butler with Commodore Farragut planned an attack on New Orleans. The fleet was to reduce the two forts, Fort St. Philip and Fort Jackson, which commanded the river : and across the Mississippi just at that point ran a great raft or boom of cypress-trees fastened to chain cables. Behind this was a fleet of ironclad rams, gunboats, and fireships, commanded by Commodore Whittle ; while New

Orleans itself was held by a force under the command of General Lovell.

On the 18th of April, 1862, Porter's mortar-boats were in position and opened on Fort Jackson, which replied steadily till five in the afternoon, when flames were seen bursting from the fort, the wooden buildings within having been set on fire by the shells. But the next day, and the next, the fort held out.

Then, under cover of night, Farragut sent up the Pinola and Itasca, which cut the boom and cables, and on the 23d he prepared to sail up the river past the forts. The next night the whole fleet in three lines moved up, Farragut with his largest ships near the western bank, to engage Fort Jackson; Captain Bailey along the western side; Captain Bell keeping in the middle of the river with the rest. Bailey ran by with little injury; Bell's division was less fortunate. The Itasca was disabled, and with the Winona and Kennebec dropped down to their old anchorage. Farragut, as he anticipated, had a hard fight. The Hartford and Richmond replied steadily to the fire of the fort. The Brooklyn ran on to one of the hulks of the boom, and was then attacked by the steam-ram Manassas, but evaded her blow and a bolt aimed at her steam-chest. Another Confederate steamer then came up in the darkness, but Captain Craven gave her such a warm reception that he set her on fire, and she drifted down, lighting up the scene. Reaching Fort St. Philip, he poured in such broadsides that he drove the gunners from their pieces, and pushing on, engaged gunboats further up the river. For an hour and a half he was constantly under fire.

The Cayuga, after passing Fort St. Philip, was engaged by the whole Confederate fleet, but, holding her own, had forced three of the smaller vessels to strike, when the Varuna and Oneida came to her relief

The Varuna was at once surrounded, but her fight is one of the most memorable in history. She blew up or drove on shore four of the hostile gunboats in succession: but at six was encountered by the ironclad ram Morgan, which by a raking fire killed or wounded thirteen of her men, and then struck her with the ram. But the Varuna returned her fire so hotly, that the Morgan, partially disabled, drifted out of the fight. Another ironclad ram then struck the Varuna, the second thrust crushing in her side—but not with impunity; Captain Boggs, aiming at her uncovered part, crippling her and setting her on fire. But the Varuna was going down; so he ran her into the bank, still keeping up his fire on the Morgan, till the water rose on the sinking vessel over the gun-trucks. Then he got his crew ashore, and the gallant vessel sunk; but not before Boggs beheld the Morgan surrender to the Oneida, which had come to the assistance of the Varuna, but had been sent against the Morgan by Boggs.

In this desperate fight, the fleet, without losing more than a hundred and fifty men, had overcome all obstacles. New Orleans was at the mercy of the United States forces. General Lovell, who had witnessed the action, attempted to raise a desperate force to attack the fleet; but finally sent off his munitions and provisions, and retreated, setting fire to all the shipping, steamboats, cargoes of cotton, etc., at the docks. As the fleet approached the city, batteries opened on the ships, but were soon silenced; and at one o'clock in the afternoon of the 25th the fleet anchored in front of New Orleans, its wharves one mass of fire. The city refused to surrender or haul down the Confederate flag, and the Stars and Stripes hoisted over the Mint was torn down by the mob. Porter, meanwhile, renewed the shelling of the forts, which surrendered on the 28th, the garrison mutinying; the naval

officers, however, towed out the ram Louisiana into the stream, and loading her guns, fired her, sending her down into Porter's fleet; but she blew up and sank. The rest of the Confederate fleet surrendered, except one vessel which was scuttled.

General Butler then advanced with his transports to New Orleans, and on the afternoon of May 1st began to land his troops, amid the curses and shouts of the mob. Butler took up his quarters at the St. Charles Hotel, and soon convinced the city authorities that he was master. The insults of the women to the officers and soldiers so exasperated General Butler, that he issued a famous order which called forth the greatest indignation throughout the South, and in the British Parliament, its secret ally. He sent the mayor to prison, abolished his municipality, and caused Mumford, who had torn down the flag from the Mint, to be arrested and tried. On his conviction he was hanged.

Baton Rouge and Natchez surrendered to the fleet early in May.

The advance of the United States squadron under Commander S. P. Lee encountered no opposition until it reached Vicksburg, which defiantly refused to surrender. Farragut came up bearing a small land force under General Williams. A bombardment was opened on the 29th of June, but with little effect. Farragut then ran past and met Commodore Davis, who had fought his way down from Cairo. The attempts on Vicksburg all failed, and that city was destined to be long a source of annoyance to the American commanders.

Williams returned to Baton Rouge, and was there attacked on the 5th of August by a Confederate force under General Breckinridge. The fighting was fierce on both sides, advantage being gained and lost; and at night Breckinridge drew off, having lost three or four hundred men, including General Clarke, left mortally wounded in the

hands of the United States forces. On their side the loss had been severe. Every officer of the 21st Indiana was killed, and General Williams was shot down while leading it in a final charge. The Confederates had counted on the co-operation of the ram Arkansas, which came down from Vicksburg for the purpose; but her machinery gave way, and she was unable to reach Baton Rouge. The next day she was attacked by Commodore Porter in the Essex, who shelled her till her crew set her on fire and abandoned her.

In November the President assigned General Banks to command the Department of the Gulf, and that commander reached New Orleans on the 14th of December and assumed command. Butler, who had gone down with thirteen thousand seven hundred men, and not been reinforced, turned over to General Banks an army of seventeen thousand eight hundred men, including three regiments and two batteries of negroes. Jefferson Davis, as President of the Confederate States, had, after Butler relinquished command at New Orleans, issued a proclamation declaring that that general and his officers should, if taken, be executed as robbers and criminals.

Meanwhile a most extraordinary scene occurred in Chesapeake Bay, a contest that gave the world a new theory of naval warfare.

When the Gosport navy-yard was abandoned, the steam-frigate Merrimac was one of the vessels abandoned and sunk. This the Confederates raised, and transformed into a formidable war-vessel of novel construction. The hull was cut down nearly to the water-line, and a sloping roof like that of a house placed on it. This was made of heavy timbers, and plated with bars of railroad iron three inches thick. Her smoke-stack and pilot-house alone appeared. She was strengthened fore and aft, and plated with steel, while at the bow ran

out a ram of steel, designed to cut into the side of any vessel she might engage. She carried twelve eleven-inch navy-guns, and a hundred pounder at her bow and stern. A fleet of United States men-of-war, the Cumberland, Congress, Minnesota, St. Lawrence, and Roanoke, lay near Fortress Monroe, when, on the 8th of March, the Merrimac steamed out of Norfolk, with two steamers, the Yorktown and Jamestown. As she approached the Cumberland and Congress, those vessels gave her full broadsides, but the cannon-balls slid off from her roofing without doing the slightest damage. Though staggered by the shock, she kept on, and dashed upon the side of the Cumberland, laying it open, and pouring in a broadside. The Congress, engaged by the Yorktown and Jamestown, lost Captain Smith, her commander, and, attempting to run on shore, grounded. In this position the Merrimac came down upon her with a fire that raked her fore and aft. She struck, and the Confederates took off some prisoners, but were finally driven off by the land batteries, which set the vessel on fire, and she burned to the water's edge. The Cumberland did not strike, but kept up the unequal fight most gallantly, her commander, Lieutenant Geo. W. Morris, firing his guns as she went down, and keeping his flag flying to the last.

The other vessels of the fleet in endeavoring to come into action grounded, and became disabled. Universal panic prevailed, as it was evident that none of them could cope with this new craft so strangely equipped.

Relief was to come from a most unexpected quarter. In those days every one was offering Government inventions and plans. A floating battery, called the Monitor, had been designed by Captain Ericsson, an experienced Swedish engineer, long resident in America. The

Government had built a vessel according to his plan, but little confidence was placed in it. The vessel was below the water: almost on the water-line was a shell-proof deck: from this rose a round turret, which revolved by machinery, and which contained two eleven-inch columbiads, very heavy cannon.

This vessel had just been completed, and ordered to the Chesapeake: an order countermanding this came fortunately too late, and the Monitor reached Fortress Monroe on the 8th of March, to find all in consternation.

Her arrival was hailed with joy; and the old navy officers, who had slightingly derided the cheese-box on a raft, now felt that here was perhaps a match for the Merrimac.

As the haze cleared on the morning of the 9th, the Merrimac was seen coming out for a second raid on the fleet. The Minnesota, which had grounded, was evidently her point of attack, and the little Monitor lying in her shadow was unnoticed. As the Minnesota opened with her stern guns on the dangerous enemy, the little Monitor ran out and laid herself alongside the Merrimac. In vain the Confederate ironclad poured her broadsides on the little battery: the balls flew off; while she, steaming around, sent her raking shots through the stern or through the ports. Finding that she could make no impression on the Monitor, the Merrimac opened fire on the Minnesota, doing some damage; but again the Monitor interposed and drove her off. Then the Merrimac grounded, and was at the mercy of the Monitor, and got off only to steam toward Norfolk, pursued by the Ericsson battery. In vain the Merrimac turned on her little antagonist, and attempted to get at the Minnesota: the day was lost. Sullenly, and discomfited, she with her consorts steamed back to Norfolk.

The Monitor came off without the least injury; the Merrimac had two guns broken, two men killed and eight wounded. Such was the great fight of the ironclads in Hampton Roads. In Europe and America the battles of the two days were read with the deepest interest, and it became evident that the old navies of the world must give place to ships of new form and strength.

Congress, in its regular session, made provisions for the great war raging in the land. The Government issued notes known as greenbacks, which were to pass for all uses except the payment of duties to Government. To meet the immediate expenditure entailed by the army and navy, direct taxation was resorted to, and taxes were laid on liquors, tobacco, and other articles, and a tax on all incomes over six hundred dollars. These steps caused a complete revolution in the money affairs of the country. The banks suspended specie payment, and gold became an article of trade, being bought and sold at rates exceeding the paper dollar. This rate fluctuated with military success and other causes, and at one time the gold dollar was worth two dollars and seventy cents in paper. Twelve years after the commencement of the war, and eight after its close, the gold dollar was worth fifteen cents, or nearly one-sixth more than the paper dollar.

This caused an increase in prices of all goods, commodities, and labor. The risk from privateers made imported goods higher, although nearly all imports were brought in on the ships of other countries, England especially profiting by the difficulty which she had created by recognizing the Confederate privateers. Bills were passed abolishing slavery in the District of Columbia, and making compensation to the owners, and for a similar step in the Slave States if they chose to accept it; but the Border States still adhering to the United

States Government all declined it. Notwithstanding the express words of the Constitution prohibiting acts of attainder, an act was passed confiscating the property of any one adjudged guilty of treason ; but no one was ever brought to trial on that charge and convicted.

Meanwhile the Southern Confederacy had installed a regular government under the constitution adopted. Eleven States took part in the Presidential election, casting one hundred and nine votes, which were given unanimously for Jefferson Davis as President, and Alexander H. Stephens as Vice-President. They were inaugurated at Richmond, at the base of the great Washington statue, on the 22d of February, 1862, prayer being offered by Bishop Johns of the Protestant Episcopal Church. Davis' cabinet was composed of Benjamin, as Secretary of State ; Randolph, Secretary of War ; Mallory, of the Navy, and Memminger, of the Treasury.

At Washington, the beginning of the new year was marked by the resignation of Mr. Cameron as Secretary of War, and the appointment of Edwin H. Stanton, a man of great energy and determination, who to the close of the war discharged his duties with singular vigor and resolution.

He became virtually commander-in-chief, new military divisions were created, and orders were issued directly in the President's name. Many arbitrary acts followed, such as the arrest and long imprisonment of General Stone, which gave rise to strong protests in Congress.

From this period to the close of the war, the Shenandoah Valley in Virginia became the battle-ground of contending armies, and it would require volumes to detail all the battles and skirmishes that filled that beautiful valley with blood and carnage. In the first movement, Gen-

eral Banks drove General Jackson back toward Johnston's army; but General Shields, with the advance of Banks' army, resolved to decoy Jackson to a weak point. In pursuance of this plan, he fell back to Winchester, and took up a strong position. Jackson followed and began the attack (March 21st). Shields, though wounded by a fragment of a shell which broke his arm, retained command, and drew up his men. On the 22d, however, Jackson gave no token of his presence, and many thought he had not come up, when he suddenly appeared in force, endeavoring to turn Shields' left flank and enfilade his position. Shields, fully aware of the skill of his antagonist, had been on the alert. He repulsed the attack, and when Jackson, massing his men, attacked the right, Shields was ready, and with a competent force drove Jackson back through the woods, leaving the United States troops in possession of the field, three hundred prisoners, two guns, and a thousand stand of arms. Night alone saved Jackson, who retreated five miles from the battle-field. Shields in this battle fought after being severely wounded, displayed the character of a hero and a general, and has the high honor of having inflicted on Jackson one of the few defeats he ever sustained.

Banks followed up this victory by occupying the valley, Jackson retreating to Gordonsville.

About this time the Confederates abandoned Manassas and the line of the Potomac, and fell back nearer to Richmond, on a line extending from Gordonsville to Yorktown. General McClellan, after advancing to Manassas, left General McDowell to guard that line, and prepared to make a grand movement from Fortress Monroe on Richmond. Early in April he embarked an army of a hundred and twenty thousand men on a fleet of transports at Washington and Alexandria, and

landing near Hampton, moved toward Yorktown. The Confederate lines here were held by General Magruder. McClellan's army arrived in face of them on the 5th. Instead of an attempt to storm them, McClellan prepared for a regular siege, and on the 30th opened with his siege batteries on Yorktown and Gloucester, and the Confederate shipping in the river.

The enemy for a few days replied with vigor, but on the 2d of May evacuated their works and retreated. McClellan immediately pursued on land, and sent Franklin's division and other troops up the York River—the James, owing to danger of attack from the Merrimac, not being at his command.

The Confederates made a stand at Williamsburg, where they had thrown up another series of intrenchments. General Hooker, with the advance of McClellan's army, arriving before Fort Magruder, at the junction of the Yorktown and Hampton roads, early on the morning of May 5th, began the attack; but the enemy, unassailed at other points, massed their troops at the menaced point, and Hooker's attack was repulsed with heavy loss. Kearney's division at last came up to his support, and the battle was renewed. When night closed the fight they had at last gained some advantage, while Hancock on the right by a brilliant bayonet charge carried two redoubts.

McClellan was not on the field, and arrived only on the following morning, prepared to renew the fight; but the enemy had evacuated their works in haste, leaving seven or eight hundred wounded behind them. Their loss in killed and wounded is not known, but was probably fifteen hundred in all. McClellan reported four hundred and fifty-six killed, one thousand four hundred wounded, and three hundred and seventy-two missing.

McClellan advanced in pursuit of the enemy, and on the 22d made his headquarters at Coal Harbor, fairly arrayed against the main Confederate army at Richmond. But he labored under the mistaken idea that this army was far superior to his own in numbers and equipments, and instead of a vigorous attack, began to fortify his position, calling meanwhile for reinforcements.

His advance, and the success of Burnside in North Carolina, left Norfolk no longer tenable by the Confederates, and they accordingly evacuated it, destroying the dry-dock and the Merrimac, as well as the bridges leading from the city. General Wool at once took possession of the place.

In the West, Commodore Foote had on the 15th of March begun the bombardment of Island No. 10, but it was found to be a strong position. By means of a canal, however, he ran past and joined General Pope, who was on the west of the river; and Colonel Buford, by dispersing a Confederate force at Union City, Tennessee, completely hemmed in the Confederates on the island. They attempted to escape after sinking their vessels, but it was too late; they were driven into the marshes and forced to surrender. Three generals, seven regiments, and a very large supply of cannon, muskets, tents, horses, and wagons were lost to the Confederacy on the 7th of April, 1862.

While these operations were in progress, General Grant with his army of sixty thousand men had pushed on to Pittsburg Landing, an insignificant place on the Tennessee River, eight miles above Savannah. His object was to give battle to the Confederate force under General Albert Sidney Johnston, which had concentrated at Corinth. It equalled Grant's in numbers, and was strongly intrenched.

While Grant was leisurely preparing to cut off the retreat of this

force and effect its capture, leaving his own army meanwhile without the ordinary pickets, and making no reconnoissances, General Johnston was preparing to attack him.

Moving silently out of Corinth on the 3d of April, and steadily approaching over wretched roads with every precaution, he approached Grant's unsuspecting lines early on the morning of the 6th, Major-General Hardee leading, supported by Generals Bragg and Polk, General Breckinridge holding the reserve.

When day broke, the pickets of Prentiss' division came rushing into the camp, as shot and shell told that the enemy were on them. The men, dressing, washing, cooking, were swept down and routed before they had time to form. Sherman saw one brigade similarly scattered, but for a time held the rest of his division steady; but he too gave way, leaving his camp, tent, and equipage to the enemy.

McClernand's division coming up, found Sherman's going, its best officers killed or wounded; the batteries taken or useless. Prentiss finally drew his men up, but so badly that they were flanked and utterly routed. McClernand, with Sherman beaten on one side, and Prentiss on the other, faced along the Corinth road, and for a time held it by his batteries, but by eleven o'clock he too was driven back. Stuart, on the extreme left, although supported by a brigade of W. H. L. Wallace's division, was also driven from his position from ridge to ridge. Three of the six divisions were routed. Grant reached the battle-field at eight o'clock to find his army beaten; but he set to work to regain the day. He formed his three remaining divisions, and infused new courage into his men. Hurlbut's division stood its ground for five hours. Thrice the Confederates charged, and as often they were hurled back, the Confederate commander, General Albert Sidney

Johnston, being mortally wounded in the attack ; but Hurlbut too gave way. Then W. H. L. Wallace's division, after seeing its gallant leader fall mortally wounded, fell back into line with Hurlbut's new position, losing only one gun, the carriage of which was disabled. General Lew Wallace, summoned to the field, found the enemy in possession, and had to take a circuitous route.

The rest of Grant's army was crowded on the riverside. Half the artillery was lost or disabled, the hospitals full, the loss in men enormous, whole regiments broken up and disorganized. The Confederates, had they known the state of affairs, might have swept all before them. They hesitated. Colonel Webster massed all the cannon he could find, with volunteer gunners, to cover the roads approaching the defeated army. When the enemy came up they were received with such warmth that they recoiled, especially as the gunboats also opened upon them. They had lost the moment for the decisive charge. All through the night the artillery kept up its thundering volleys.

While General Beauregard, who succeeded Johnston, was telegraphing to Richmond news of his victory, General Buell came up with the Army of the Ohio. He found proofs of desperate need, and sent on General Nelson, who formed near Webster's guns just at nightfall. During the darkness, Crittenden and McCook's divisions came up and crossed.

Daylight saw the scene change. Lew Wallace's fresh division and the three from Buell's army, with the remnant of the shattered divisions, now confronted Beauregard's men flushed with victory, but fearfully reduced by the day's battle and by straggling. He too expected aid from Van Dorn and Price, but it did not come.

The second day's battle was opened by the advance of Nelson's

division, on which the whole force of the enemy concentrated, so that its loss was terrible: but they drove them in; and when, later, Crittenden's and McCook's opened fire, they forced the enemy back to McClernand's old camp, and retook some of his cannon.

On the right, Grant threw forward Lew Wallace, Sherman, and McClernand, who steadily fought their way through obstacles of every kind.

Beauregard's army, now on the defensive, had been forced back to Shiloh Church, where it stood grim and undaunted, with heavy batteries to check any assault. But at one o'clock, finding his effective force reduced more than half by actual loss in killed and wounded and by stragglers, he resolved to draw off, and retired unpursued to Corinth.

In this battle, one of the most fearful ever fought on the continent, the losses were terrible. The armies of Grant and Buell lost one thousand seven hundred and thirty-five killed, seven thousand eight hundred and eighty-two wounded, and three thousand nine hundred and fifty-six taken prisoners by the enemy. That of the Confederates, admitted to be nearly as many in killed and wounded, was in all probability fully as great. In fact it may be safely stated that the loss on each side was about fifteen thousand men, one-third of all who went into action on that terrible field. This battle is called in Northern accounts the battle of Pittsburg Landing, while the South spoke of it as the battle of Shiloh.

CHAPTER V.

McClellan's Campaign against Richmond—Operations in the Shenandoah Valley—The Seven Days' Battles—Mechanicsville—Fair Oaks—Gaines' Mill—White-Oak Swamp—Malvern Hill—McClellan Retires to Harrison's Landing—Halleck made General-in-Chief—McClellan Embarks for the Potomac—Pope's Vainglorious Promises—Banks Worsted at Cedar Mountain—Jackson in Pope's Rear—Second Battle of Bull Run—Pope not Supported by McClellan—He Retreats to Washington and Resigns—Colonel Cantwell—Lee Enters Maryland—Outgenerals McClellan and takes Harper's Ferry—Battles of South Mountain and Antietam—Lee Retreats—McClellan Pursues—He is Relieved.

The new management of the War Department soon led to a disaster in the Shenandoah Valley. The President and Secretary of War, with no military training, were endeavoring to carry out campaigns without a plan. General Banks, pursuing Jackson, was near Harrisonburg. Milroy and Schenck, with the van of Fremont's army, were advancing from Monterey to Staunton: a small force under Kenly was at Front Royal. While the United States forces were thus isolated, Jackson, reinforced by Ewell and Johnston, moved with his usual rapidity. Leaving Ewell to hold Banks in check, he pushed on to cut off Schenck and Milroy, and took up his position on Bull-Pasture Mountain. On the 8th, Schenck failed in a desperate attempt to dislodge Jackson, and after losing two hundred and fifty-six men, retreated to Franklin, destroying his stores. Jackson pursued for a time, then crossed the mountains, and on the 23d swooped down on Kenly, whom he almost annihilated, capturing his train and nearly his whole force. Banks learned to his dismay that Jackson was pressing forward to Winchester, in his rear, with a force nearly four times his own. In his attempt to reach that city he encountered Jackson, but, after desperate fighting, managed to reach Winchester, and retreat through it to the Potomac. There his army could draw breath. Jackson had swept it

completely from the valley, with a loss of several thousand men, arms, artillery, and stores.

From Washington, new movements were directed to intercept his retreat; but the able Confederate commander eluded Fremont at Strasburg, and Shields at Masamitten Mountain, and they were not able to bring him to action till they came to Cross Keys, where Ewell took up a position selected by Jackson's keen military eye. Fremont (June 8th) attacked, but the action was indecisive although the loss was heavy. Jackson himself the next day attacked Shields' advance at Port Republic, defeating it with severe loss, and made good his escape. "Considering the perils he braved, and the odds against him, his campaign was one of the most brilliant of the war, and stamped him as a true military genius." The great object of this movement was to compel the United States Government at Washington to keep troops near the Potomac, instead of co-operating with McClellan, and in this the Confederates succeeded.

McClellan's army, after occupying Williamsburg, and pushing on toward Richmond, fought its first battle at Hanover Court House, where, on the 27th of May, General Fitz John Porter defeated General Branch, capturing his camp with arms and railroad trains. This position was important, as it opened communication with McDowell's army expected from Fredericksburg. When, however, Keyes' corps reached Seven Pines, crossing the Chickahominy, and that stream was swollen on the 30th by sudden rains, General Johnston, the Confederate commander, resolved to crush the isolated corps before it could be supported.

Longstreet and Hill attacked Casey in front, while Huger assailed his right flank, and Smith his left, almost the whole Confederate army

before Richmond, some fifty thousand men, being employed in these movements under the eye of Jefferson Davis, who was on the field with General Lee, while Casey was cut off from immediate support. and General McClellan was at a distance. Hill's attack in front, at one o'clock, took Casey by surprise, his men dropping intrenching tools to form in line of battle ; then Rains came up on the left, and in spite of Casey's efforts gained his rear. Under the terrible cross-fire, the officers and men were dropping so fearfully, that the whole division was driven back in disorder upon Couch's division, losing six guns, which were at once turned upon them. In vain did part of Couch's force endeavor to stay the onward course of the Confederates : they too were swept back, till Sumner, having with great difficulty crossed the swollen Chickahominy, checked them in that direction.

Heintzelman, a little after three, came up to the aid of Couch's right. General Abercrombie held a position of the utmost importance at Fair Oaks, where the Richmond and York River railroad crossed the Nine-mile road. Here the fighting was deadly : but Abercrombie held his ground ; General Johnston, the Confederate commander-in-chief, falling seriously wounded, and the next in command, General Smith, being struck down with paralysis. One of the last charges on Abercrombie's inflexible line was led by Jefferson Davis in person.

Just before sunset, Sedgwick's and Richardson's divisions of Sumner's corps reached the field as the Confederates had turned Couch's left. They completely swept the field, and saved Abercrombie, who was beginning at last to waver. But the Confederates did not yield the field till eight o'clock. They were then in possession of Couch's and Casey's camps, and retained possession next day, sending their contents to Richmond.

In the morning a desultory engagement followed, but at nightfall the Confederate army fell back to Richmond, McClellan making no effort to pursue them with his fresh troops, or take advantage of their condition.

This battle, fought on the Confederate side with skill, judgment, and earnestness, was on the American side desultory, guided by no directing commander, in which divisions brought up one after another were subjected to the attack of superior forces. The loss on each side was about six thousand men, in this Battle of Fair Oaks, which was fought on the last day of May and first of June.

Hooker pushed on the next day to within four miles of Richmond, and an advance by McClellan might have taken the city ; but he called for reinforcements and waited. Meanwhile Stonewall Jackson, after baffling Fremont and Banks, and keeping McDowell at Manassas instead of marching to co-operate with McClellan, joined the main Confederate army at Richmond ; and General Robert E. Lee, now in command of that army, summoned reinforcements from all quarters, so that he had an army of nearly seventy thousand men, much inferior to McClellan's in numbers, although from the first that general persisted in believing that he was outnumbered.

On the 25th of June, Lee had completed his plans, and again the Confederates prepared to attack and turn McClellan's right at Mechanicsville, held by General Fitz John Porter with twenty-seven thousand men. Against him Lee sent A. P. Hill, followed by D. H. Hill, supported by Jackson, leaving only two divisions in front of McClellan's centre and left, and thus again accumulating all his available force to crush one corps. The Hills and Longstreet advanced rapidly and resolutely, but were repulsed with carnage in the attempt

to turn Porter's left, while Jackson failed to come up as early as was expected to assail his right. Night put an end to the contest, and the Confederates lay near by the American lines ready to renew the battle. But McClellan ordered Porter to fall back to Gaines' Mill. There the battle was renewed at two o'clock on June 27th, Lee's whole force nearly being brought into action—a general advance from left to right, made under a terrible fire of musketry and artillery. Porter's position was a strong one. But it was the same old story of delay in supporting him, reinforcements arriving slowly and in small numbers, while McClellan's main army made no offensive movement to assail the enemy's lines or divert his attack on Porter.

His reserve under McCall had long been in action, supporting his overpowered front, when Slocum's division came up; but it was not enough. Porter, massing all his artillery to cover the retreat of his infantry, had checked the Confederates, when General Cooke's cavalry, attacking without orders, were sent in headlong confusion into Porter's line, causing fatal disorder. French's and Meagher's brigades indeed came up, and Porter's men, rallying behind the two fresh brigades, advanced up the hill, down which they had been driven; but the Confederates, seeing fresh troops, did not renew the attack, but halted on the field which they had won. Porter lost not much less than eight thousand men and twenty-two cannon; the Confederate loss exceeding five thousand.

During the night, McClellan withdrew Porter's forces, and his whole army was concentrated between the Chickahominy and his works before Richmond; he abandoned his line of supplies on the York; his vast stores of munitions and provisions at White House were destroyed; his cavalry fled down the Peninsula; and he himself, with a hundred

thousand men, exceeding Lee's by at least one-fourth in numbers, prepared, not to fight, but to retreat to the James. On the 28th of June the movement began, the enemy in vain expecting an attack on their position before Richmond. When they found he was retreating they gave chase, and attacked him in White-Oak Swamp, where a sharp action took place, resulting in another defeat of McClellan.

The next stand was made at Malvern Hill, on the James, which McClellan's wasted, wayworn army reached on the morning of July 1st, closely pursued by Lee. McClellan's army was drawn up in a strong position, and massed so that each corps could be easily supported. For the first time the whole army was to meet the Confederate army in battle; but it was sadly shaken by the previous engagements, and it had no commander to encourage and inspirit them by the magnetism of his presence and confidence. Lee, filled with confidence by the previous successes of his army, resolved to make an attack on McClellan's concentrated army. Jackson, with his own division and three others, pushed on by the Quaker road, the line of McClellan's retreat, while Magruder from Richmond, by the direct roads threatened his left; Longstreet's and A. P. Hill's divisions, which had suffered most in the previous battles, were held in reserve. McClellan's army was drawn up in the following order: At the foot of the hill and on its rising side was Porter's corps, forming the left with Couch's division of Keyes' corps; Heintzelman and Sumner's corps further up the hill, formed the centre; Franklin the right; while McCall and the cavalry formed the reserve.

At three o'clock the battle opened. Jackson's men, with a yell and a rush, charged on Couch's and Griffin's divisions, but were hurled back with heavy loss as Porter's massed batteries and solid infantry poured

in their deadly volleys. Through the woods poured Magruder, and others on the left, charging up to the very guns, to be sent back in disorder. Reserves were brought up, and again and again was the charge renewed, till night put an end to the conflict—McClellan holding his ground without losing a cannon, though at a fearful sacrifice of life. At last the Confederates withdrew, their army being in the utmost disorder, while the gunboats in the James, hailing shells among them, increased the confusion. The Confederate army in this rash attack must have lost nearly ten thousand men. McClellan had at last won a victory; but instead of pushing on and taking the offensive so as to enter Richmond, he gave orders the next day to continue the retreat, and withdrew his army to Harrison's Bar. The seven days' battles had cost him twenty thousand men, artillery, arms, and stores. An army far exceeding that of the enemy had never begun the attack or followed up an advantage, and finally retreated without attempting to effect the object for which it was sent.

A change was now made in the direction of the armies. General Halleck was in July made general-in-chief of the armies of the United States.

President Lincoln, chagrined at this result of such immense preparations, hastened to Harrison's Bar, and though he found McClellan with eighty-six thousand men still ready for action, ordered that general to withdraw his army to the Potomac, and McClellan did so, after a reconnoissance under Hooker, which, properly supported, might have carried Richmond. The withdrawal of the army was carried out slowly, undisturbed by the enemy; but while this powerful army was thus leisurely returning, new disasters befell the arms of the United States.

The success of General Pope in the West induced the President to confide to him the defence of Washington and the Shenandoah Valley, with an army composed of the corps commanded by Generals Fremont, Banks, and McDowell. This army of fifty thousand men was also to co-operate with McClellan, and at one time McDowell was almost near enough to join in any movement. When McClellan was forced back to Harrison's Landing, Lee took the offensive against Pope. General Banks, at Cedar Mountain with six or eight thousand men, was attacked August 9th by Stonewall Jackson, at the head of at least twenty thousand veterans. Banks, stung by the taunt of one of Pope's staff, fought desperately till he was fairly crowded off the field by numbers, after losing two thousand in killed and wounded; Jackson admitting his loss to be more than thirteen hundred. Pope, learning Banks' condition, sent up Ricketts' division to aid Fremont's corps, now commanded by Sigel. But Jackson did not renew the fight, and finding his rear menaced, retired rapidly across the Rapidan pursued by cavalry.

Having captured dispatches which showed him that Lee's whole army was advancing, Pope retreated across the Rappahannock, and being ordered by Government to maintain communications with Fredericksburg, saw his danger if reinforcements were not sent. On the 22d of August the Confederate cavalry under Stuart surprised his headquarters with his papers. Heintzelman's corps of McClellan's army reached Warrenton Junction three days after, and Franklin was announced as at hand. But Lee resolved to crush Pope before McClellan came up in force. He sent Jackson across the Rappahannock to turn Pope's right, and strike the railroad between him and Washington. The energetic Southern general carried out the plan, and while Pope

was watching in front, captured Manassas Junction, with guns, locomotives, trains, and stores to an immense amount. In vain Colonel Scammon, with two Ohio regiments, tried to regain the point: in vain General Taylor, with four New Jersey regiments of Franklin's divisions pushed forward to regain the lost fight. Jackson held his own. Pope, astounded at this, next tried to concentrate his forces at Gainesville and force a battle there, and Hooker drove Ewell back on Jackson at Manassas. Pope endeavored to close in on Jackson, and crush him before Lee could come up; but the orders of Pope were not heartily obeyed by some of his subordinate generals. Jackson escaped to Thoroughfare Gap, where McDowell met him in a sanguinary combat which lasted till night, Jackson having the advantage. The next day, August 28th, Longstreet came up to the Gap on the other side to save Jackson, and McDowell and King, unable to drive him back, retreated to Manassas.

The Southern army was now united and well in hand: Pope was in a position of difficulty. Sigel, who was nearest the enemy, began the action early on the 29th; then Kearney's division of Heintzelman's corps came up on his right by the Sudley Springs road, Reno supporting the centre, and Reynolds taking position on the left. In the afternoon, General Hooker's division came up to support the right.

Pope was now facing his antagonist with an army well drawn up. Late in the afternoon he ordered Fitz John Porter to go into action on the enemy's right, while Kearney and Hooker renewed the battle, gaining advantage, though at last forced back a little by Longstreet. This battle, fought on the old Bull Run battle-ground, had been a series of actions in which it is supposed seven thousand men were killed or wounded on each side. Pope was really beaten: he had failed to over-

whelm Jackson ; and his army, brought into action in divisions and brigades, had been severely handled. His opportunity was gone.

The next day, August 30th, he had only about forty thousand men ready for action, almost out of food, and with no forage for his horses. His call for reinforcements and supplies met no response. He could not retreat safely ; he had no choice but to fight. He ordered Porter to attack Lee's right, while Heintzelman and Reno advanced on his left. Porter attacked in vain, and was finally thrown back in confusion ; but the attack on Jackson, who was on the Confederate left, was bravely made, and only when Lee's centre under Longstreet opened on them did the United States troops recoil. Jackson at once charged, and his movement, supported by the whole Confederate line, forced Pope's army back.

Pope saw that all was lost, and ordered the corps to fall back deliberately to Centreville, Reno covering the retreat across Bull Run. Here he found Franklin and Sumner's corps of McClellan's army, who had been as it were idle spectators of his defeat.

Lee, too wise to attack Pope in front, sent Jackson to turn his flank near Chantilly. General Reno met him, and a sharp action ensued, in which, though the United States lost General Philip Kearney and General Isaac I. Stevens, Lee's plan was baffled. Pope's whole army drew back within the intrenchments along the southern bank of the Potomac, and he resigned his command, having lost in that bloody August fall thirty thousand men, at least double what Lee suffered.

This series of victories on the Confederate side had almost completely swept the troops of the Union from Eastern Virginia; and flushed with triumph they menaced Washington and the Northern States. In this emergency General McClellan was once more called

to command all the troops for the defence of the capital. He at once concentrated the two armies to watch Lee's plans. Finding that the Confederates had disappeared from his front, he left General Banks to defend Washington, and pushed on to Frederick, which he entered just as the Confederate rear was leaving it. Here he learned Lee's plans, one of which was to capture Harper's Ferry, held by a United States force of more than ten thousand men under Colonel Miles. Apparently believing that officer strong enough in men and position to hold his own, McClellan, instead of overwhelming General McLaws, whom Lee had detached against Harper's Ferry, pursued Lee's main army. The able Confederate general saw that McLaw's success depended on his delaying McClellan so that he could not relieve Harper's Ferry. He accordingly occupied the passes of South Mountain; and McClellan, swerving from the Potomac, moved for the passes. While the mass of Lee's army was covering McLaw's operations, the small force under Hill, holding Turner's Gap, was attacked by McClellan. Hill held his own with remarkable tenacity till Longstreet came to his support. Cox and Reno led the attack on the Confederate position, and, after killing General Garland, by a stubborn fight won the left of the pass: then Hooker came up with Rickett's, Hatch's, and Reno's divisions, and the battle was renewed, Hooker finally flanking and worsting the Confederate left as night fell, though Reno on his left was killed. Meade on the right, with the Pennsylvania reserves, reached the summit after a fight, and then the centre of the army pressed on the turnpike and reached the top of the pass.

It had been a hard-fought battle, but Lee fought only to keep McClellan at bay, and had succeeded. While McClellan's whole force was thus occupied by Lee, McLaws had invested Miles at Harper's

Ferry ; and that old army officer, instead of evacuating, or taking post on the heights and intrenching, acted most strangely. He had, though ordered to do so, never fortified Maryland Heights, and, when the danger came, sent Colonel Ford there without intrenching tools, so that he was soon forced from it. He even paroled Confederate prisoners, and let them go to the enemy's camp to report his position. Seeing his resolution to give up the place to the enemy, the cavalry left Harper's Ferry, and, capturing Longstreet's ammunition train, escaped ; but Miles refused to permit his infantry to withdraw. When the enemy opened with artillery he raised the white flag. The fire was kept up, however, mortally wounding Miles himself before Jackson could believe that the post really surrendered. Then eleven thousand men, with seventy-three cannon, thirteen thousand small arms, and a large quantity of supplies, fell into the Confederate hands. The victorious Jackson with the rest of McLaw's force at once hastened to rejoin Lee, and that general, satisfied with the result of his movement, fell back from Turner's Pass.

McClellan had no alternative but to pursue and attack Lee's army, now concentrated and exultant. On the afternoon of September 15th his advance under Richardson came up to the Confederates strongly posted beyond Antietam Creek, in front of the little village of Sharpsburg. McClellan soon arrived with three corps. The whole of Lee's force had not yet come on—Hill and McLaws were still on the march; but McClellan, instead of attacking at once, waited till morning. And even the morning of that day was lost in artillery fire at long range. At last, in the afternoon, Hooker, backed by Sumner, Franklin, and Mansfield, attacked the enemy's left and centre, but only to open the battle. At daylight next morning it began in earnest. Hooker was

opposed to Ewell and Jackson, whom he drove from their position with loss in men and officers, till fresh Confederate troops enabled Jackson to regain the lost ground, but only for a time, as Hooker, aided by Mansfield, who fell mortally wounded, again checked the enemy, and forced them back, till he himself, constantly exposing his person, was severely wounded. Each side now sent fresh troops to this point, where the issue of the day seemed to lie. The slaughter was fearful on both sides, as the tide of battle rolled back and forward. At last Franklin's corps by a gallant rush swept over the long-disputed ground and held it.

Richardson's division, with Caldwell's and Meagher's brigades, had meanwhile crossed the Antietam, and steadily fought their way up from the creek toward Sharpsburg, capturing many of the enemy, and defeating all attempts to flank them. While directing a battery near Dr. Piper's house the gallant Richardson fell, and was succeeded by Hancock.

Meanwhile, Porter's corps in the centre and Burnside's on the left had not been engaged, Porter's force having been weakened by detachments; but Burnside—ordered at eight in the morning to cross the Antietam and attack—moved slowly, and did not till three in the afternoon actually attack in force Lee's feeble right. He soon carried the heights, but his delay had been fatal. Hill's division now came up from Harper's Ferry, and, covered by a heavy fire of artillery, charged his extreme left, which, confident of success, had fallen into disorder. General Rodman was killed, and his men driven back toward the Antietam, till the enemy were checked by the American batteries beyond. Then they retired to their lines on the heights, having lost General Branch in the charge.

So closed indecisively the bloodiest day that America had yet

seen. Of eighty-seven thousand men whom McClellan sent into action, more than two thousand were killed, nearly ten thousand wounded, and a thousand missing. Lee left two thousand seven hundred dead on the field, and lost thirteen guns, many colors, six thousand prisoners, and fifteen thousand stand of arms.

Hard fought as the battle of Antietam had been it was not decisive. During the night Lee moved off quietly across the Potomac, leaving his dead on the field and two thousand of his desperately wounded, and retired to Winchester by way of Martinsburg.

McClellan pursued slowly, and early in November reached Warrenton, when he was relieved of his command, and never again took any part in the war.

CHAPTER VI.

The Operations in Tennessee, Kentucky, and Mississippi—Advance of General Bragg—Battles of Richmond and Munfordsville—A Confederate Governor of Kentucky Inaugurated—Buell in the Field—Bragg Beaten at Perryville—Retreats through Cumberland Gap—Rosecrans Defeats Price at Iuka, and Van Dorn at Corinth—Rosecrans' Winter Campaign—Morgan's Raid—Bragg Defeated at Stone River—Minor Operations.

THE Confederate plan of the year comprised an invasion of Kentucky like that of Maryland by Lee. Bragg's army, swelled to forty-five thousand men by conscription, formed three corps, under Generals Hardee, Polk, and Kirby Smith. Crossing the Tennessee near Chattanooga, he traversed the mountains, and, after a feint on McMinnville, pressed on into Kentucky. Cumberland Gap was abandoned at his approach; but at Richmond, General Manson made a stand with raw troops against Kirby Smith. He unwisely left a strong position, and attempted to turn Smith's right, but was defeated, while the Confederate left, under General Churchill, turned and routed his right. He fell back to his original position, where the battle was renewed, and though some reinforcements came up, and General Nelson took command, the army of the United States was utterly defeated. Nelson being wounded, Manson resumed command, and attempted to retreat, but his rear was gained by the enemy's cavalry and light troops, his force was scattered in confusion, he himself, with many more falling into the enemy's hands, having lost nine hundred killed and wounded, and several thousand prisoners. Smith pushed on to Lexington, fill-

ing Louisville, and even Cincinnati, with the wildest confusion and alarm.

Guerilla operations were carried on in the West, with little regard to the rules of war that govern civilized nations. Even the sick and wounded were butchered. Thus fell a noble soldier, who had faced death on many a field.

General Bragg, having completely flanked Buell's left, advanced in force, and enveloped a United States force of four thousand under Colonel Wilder, at Munfordsville, which, after a brief struggle, surrendered September 17th. Bragg then addressed the people of Kentucky, urging them to join the Confederate cause ; but it was too late. Yet he pushed on to Frankfort, the capital, where he inaugurated as Governor of Kentucky, one Richard Hawes ; but even the South laughed at the farce.

Buell, meanwhile, was moving slowly, waiting for reinforcements and supplies, although his army really outnumbered Bragg's. An order relieving him from command induced him to advance. Bragg then slowly retreated with his immense train of plunder gathered in Kentucky, and finally concentrated his forces at Perryville. Here, on the 8th of October, Buell came up with him. McCook, in the advance, had posted his divisions, and was consulting with Buell, when Bragg suddenly began the attack, Cheatham's division rushing with terrific yells upon General Jackson, who held the left of McCook's line. In a moment Jackson fell dead ; Terrill, next in command, endeavoring to steady the line, was killed ; Colonel Webster, commanding the other brigade, fell, and the whole division gave way in utter panic. Rousseau's division, composed of Harris and Lytle's brigades, then received the shock, and stood it like heroes, fighting steadily for three hours, but

at last fell back to a stronger ground. Gilbert's corps was then attacked in flank, but Generals Mitchell and Sheridan not only repulsed the charge, but turning their guns on the portion of the enemy which had driven Rousseau, advanced on the Confederates, whom they broke and drove through Perryville, capturing trains and ammunition wagons, the artillery keeping up a hot fire as they advanced. Gooding, sent to McCook's aid, for a time checked the Confederate General Wood, but Gooding was taken, and his brigade fell back. Then night closed the strange battle.

The battle of Perryville was one in which individual valor was more displayed than any generalship; it was on both sides a battle without a plan, or any attempt to do more than attack or repel attacks as each best could.

Buell was not on the field, and learned the state of affairs late in the day. He prepared for a general engagement the next day; but Bragg, who had lost some four thousand men, and had three of his generals wounded, resumed his retreat, leaving many of his wounded, and abandoning more with his sick at Harrodsburg, with large quantities of stores which he could not carry away in his flight. He finally reached Cumberland Gap, and so escaped into Tennessee, Buell failing to overtake him.

The result of these operations was a great disappointment to the people of the North, who had expected Buell to defeat Bragg utterly, and prevent any similar invasion.

The Government at once (October 30) removed Buell, and confided the command to General Rosecrans. That general had just displayed great ability. Left in command of Northern Mississippi and Alabama, his force had been greatly weakened by Buell,

when he learned from General Grant that a large Confederate force was advancing. He took the field, and finding that Price had occupied Iuka, concerted with Grant a plan for crushing him. On the 19th of September, Rosecrans moved in light marching order on Iuka, expecting an attack on the opposite side by General Ord from Grant's army ; but Ord, deluded by a Confederate demonstration upon Corinth, never came up. Rosecrans, finding he must attack alone, handled his small force with wonderful ability. After the most desperate fighting he inflicted such loss on Price, that the Confederate commander, who had eleven thousand men, after losing nearly fifteen hundred men, as many stands of arms, and ammunition, abandoned Iuka, destroying great quantities of stores. Rosecrans, who had in action only two thousand eight hundred men, had, from want of expected co-operation, failed to capture Price, but he had utterly routed him.

Rosecrans, made a major-general, was placed in command at Corinth, Grant returning to Jackson. Price, united with Van Dorn who had so deluded Ord, now prepared to attack Rosecrans, and they adroitly masked their design by feints on other points.

General Rosecrans prepared for either event, with his army well in hand : his batteries were planted at points where they could command the approaches, and his whole army was drawn up, not on the old Confederate fortifications, but on a smaller series suited to his numbers. Van Dorn and Price began the attack early in the morning of October 3d General Lovell assailing Colonel Oliver's hillside position : Rosecrans supported him, but the full weight of the Confederates, crushing back to their inner lines McArthur and McKean, showed that the attack on Corinth was a real one and not a feint. In spite of desperate fighting. Van Dorn had gained a little, and exultingly telegraphed to Rich-

mond that he had won a great victory. He little knew the man he had to deal with. At three next morning the battle opened again from Van Dorn's artillery, and shot and shell came hurtling into Corinth. Then Battery Williams replied, and silenced the Confederate guns. Meanwhile the rapid fire of skirmishes along the line showed that both were active. At half-past nine, from the woods east of the Memphis and Charleston railroad, a vast column of gleaming bayonets came in sight, and in the form of an immense wedge came down the Bolivar road. In vain Rosecrans' guns tore through the solid mass of Price's men : on it came, till within musket-shot. Then from Rosecrans' whole line poured out volley after volley ; but the Confederates never faltered. Up the hill they poured, and before their charge General Davies gave way. Rosecrans rushed to the spot, rallied the men, and checked the enemy. Guns were taken, but the 56th Illinois charged, and retook them. Then Rosecrans charged with his whole line, and Price was hurled back, broken, and driven down the hill, through swamp and thicket, to the depths of the forest from which his troops had so grandly issued.

Van Dorn, impeded by the ground, was later than Price in attacking, and Fort Williams and Fort Robinett commanded his approach, but he led his men bravely on. They charged to the very ditch, mown down by hundreds. Then the infantry fire cut them to pieces, yet the survivors rushed furiously on : for a moment it was hand to hand, but the next Van Dorn's shattered force was in flight.

Rosecrans did not pause. He at once pursued with five fresh regiments that came up under McPherson, inflicting heavy loss at every step, while Hurlbut and Ord, sent on by General Grant from Bolivar, struck the Confederate advance at the Hatchie, adding to their disor-

ganization and dismay. Rosecrans wished to push on, and if possible annihilate the whole force, but Grant recalled him, and the Government summoned him to take command of Buell's army. His loss at Corinth was two thousand three hundred and fifty-nine, in killed, wounded, and missing; that of Price and Van Dorn, nine thousand three hundred and sixty-three.

Fighting against an army of more than double his numbers, Rosecrans at Corinth achieved one of the most decisive victories of the war.

Congress, meanwhile, was debating the great question of slavery, out of which the war originated. As the Southern States were no longer represented in Congress, the result was clear. On the 16th of April, 1862, the first step was taken toward the universal emancipation of the slaves, by the passage of an act abolishing slavery in the District of Columbia, and providing for the payment of three hundred dollars for each slave. Bills to extend this plan to the Border States were opposed by the Democrats, and failed. But an act was passed abolishing slavery forever in any Territory. Then came other acts, passed in July, confiscating the property and liberating the slaves of all who took up arms for the Confederate Government or abetted it in any way.

It was very evident that slavery was doomed. The South, after more than a year's struggle, had not secured the Border States or crushed the Northern States that still adhered to the Government of the United States; and nothing but such a triumph could save slavery.

Rosecrans, on taking command of Buell's force, now called the Army of the Cumberland, found it sadly disorganized—without supplies,

horses, or means to take the field. Before he could put it into a position to take the field, Bragg, recovering from his late overthrow, had marched around, and appeared in force before Murfreesborough, while bands of Confederate cavalry, under Morgan and Forrest, had with the utmost boldness raided through all parts of Kentucky, destroying at pleasure, capturing trains and small parties.

Rosecrans organized his army of forty-six thousand men into three divisions, under Generals McCook, Thomas, and Crittenden, and on the 26th of December moved out of Nashville. They found the Confederate general in position on the bluffs beyond Stone River.

Each general formed his plan of attack. Rosecrans arranged to attack the enemy with his left and centre; but Bragg, early on the 31st, suddenly attacked McCook, on Rosecrans' right, in front and flank, routing completely one of his divisions, although the others, under Generals Jefferson C. Davis and Sheridan, held their ground till most of the division and brigade commanders were killed, wounded, or taken. By eleven o'clock the day was apparently lost, McCook's corps was virtually demolished, the enemy's cavalry was on their rear. But Rosecrans pushed up Rousseau from his centre, and hurried up Van Cleve's and other divisions from the left, and when Van Cleve fell, led a charge which finally arrested the Confederates, and repelled their advance on his right. The centre, well handled by Thomas, bore the brunt of the Confederate attack, but its flanks were exposed, and it gradually fell back from the cedar woods to more open and favorable ground, his artillery on a ridge. This position he held firmly, defeating with slaughter all attacks. On the left, Woods held his own against Breckinridge—Rosecrans, as ever, at the point where a commander was needed, his friend and chief-of-staff Garesché being

killed here by his side. At night, Rosecrans' army had lost half the ground it occupied, one-fourth its men, and the enemy's cavalry was busy in his rear. But he had no thoughts of retreating. He still had ammunition, and prepared for another day's fight. That night he drew up his force so as to profit by every advantage of ground, and prepared to fight it out. Rifle-pits and hasty defences were thrown up on both sides. New Year's Day passed in preparation. The next morning, Bragg's artillery opened, and while Van Cleve's division by Rosecrans' order gained a bluff, Bragg made his fierce and combined attack, hurling Breckinridge's corps covered by Polk's fire on Rosecrans' centre. It yielded to the shock: in vain the reserves came up; they too were borne back, and the Confederates swept on till Crittenden's guns and Negley and Davis' men took them at a disadvantage, hurling them back in disorder, leaving guns, colors, and prisoners in the hands of Rosecrans.

The next day he drove Bragg's sharpshooters from the woods in his front, and planted his batteries to open upon the Confederate lines. But Bragg had had enough. His cavalry, operating in Rosecrans' rear, had cut off trains and stores, crippling his power of pursuit; so the Confederate commander, cautiously gathering up his men and guns, retreated near midnight on the 3d of January. He had lost, as he admitted, in killed, wounded, and prisoners, ten thousand men out of thirty-five thousand; but his army and his loss were in all probability much larger. The loss of Rosecrans was about nine thousand out of thirty-seven. Such was the battle of Stone River, gallantly, obstinately, desperately fought, and won by the skill, energy, and indomitable spirit of Rosecrans.

On the 31st, when this great battle opened, Forrest, with his cav-

alry, attacked and nearly captured Colonel Dunham, with a small brigade, at Parker's Cross Roads; but just as Dunham was summoned to surrender, General Sullivan came suddenly up, utterly routing Forrest, who lost six hundred of his men, with arms and horses, and fled across the Tennessee. Morgan was more successful, destroying the railroad and bridges at Elizabethtown and Bardstown, Kentucky. Then the United States adopted the same course, and General Carter dashed into East Tennessee, destroying bridges in various parts, and even penetrating into Virginia.

Wheeler with his Confederate cavalry attacked Dover on the 3d of February; but the Illinois Colonel Harding, though he had only six hundred men against thirty-five hundred, prepared to fight, after sending for reinforcements. He kept up the struggle so judiciously, that four gunboats, hearing of his position, came up at eight o'clock at night, and by a raking fire sent Wheeler's force in rapid flight, leaving a hundred and fifty dead, and as many prisoners, and losing four hundred wounded. In his flight he was struck by Colonel Minty, who reduced his force still more.

The war in that portion of the country was confined for a time to small and indecisive operations, one of the boldest being that of Colonel Sleight, who swept through Northern Alabama and Georgia, doing great injury to the Confederate cause, till he was surrounded, and being out of ammunition, surrendered. The Confederates regarded his men as prisoners of war, but treated him as a felon.

CHAPTER VII.

Operations against Vicksburg—Grant's First Attempt Defeated by Van Dorn's Capture of Holly Springs—General Sherman Aided by Porter's Gunboats—Attempts to Storm it, but is Repulsed with Heavy Loss—Grant's Various Attempts—He goes down the River—Battles of Port Gibson, Raymond, Jackson, Champion Hills, Big Black—Vicksburg Invested—Pemberton Surrenders—Grant Drives Johnston from Jackson—Fight at Milliken's Bend—Operations in Louisiana and Texas under General Banks—His Repulse at Port Hudson—Second Attack—Gardiner Surrenders—Minor Operations.

ALL these operations, East and West, although they entailed great loss of life, had not given the United States Government command of a single Southern State, nor of any decisive point. The Mississippi was still held with a firm hand by the Confederates, who had made Vicksburg a place of great strength, and from that point controlled the navigation of the great river. It lies on one of the highest bluffs on the river, and had been fortified with great diligence and skill.

The necessity of reducing it had early been felt by the United States. General Grant, in November, 1862, began operations against it, but his depot of arms, provisions, and munitions at Holly Springs, left under the care of Colonel Murphy of Wisconsin, with a thousand men, was captured by Van Dorn, almost without striking a blow.

This disconcerted all Grant's plans; but General W. T. Sherman, with the Army of the Tennessee, descending on Commodore Porter's gunboats, on the 26th of December made an assault on Vicksburg from the north; but the defences were impregnable to simple assault. A garrison there might be surprised or starved out: if it did its

duty, the place could never be stormed. The bayous and swamps so covered it that there were only four points where it could be reached, and these were defended with all the best engineering skill. Yet Sherman trusted that valor could triumph. On the 26th and 27th of December, he landed his men on the south bank of the Yazoo, and pushed them forward in four columns, driving the enemy to the bluffs. But Chickasaw Bayou could be passed only at two points. General Steele found his way barred by an impassable swamp; Morgan pushed on to the bluff; Smith came to a sand-spit swept by the enemy's fire; farther to the right was A. J. Smith's division. The next day the assault was made, and never did men go more gallantly into the fight. But Pemberton's rifle-pits were lined with sharpshooters: his artillery, covering every approach, rained grape and canister on the advance. Human nature could not stand it: slaughtered as they struggled through morass and quicksand, the troops at length recoiled. Two thousand men had been sacrificed in this desperate assault.

Sherman was baffled, but did not despair: he concerted with Porter an attack on Drumgoold's Bluff; but before he could carry it out, General McClernand, his senior in command, arrived.

That general led the army to a new field. He sailed down the Mississippi and ran up the Arkansas, to attack Fort Hindman at the point known from the early French times as the Post of Arkansas.

On the 11th of January, the attack was begun by Hovey, Thayer, and Smith, supported by the artillery. At three the guns of the fort were silenced, and a general assault was ordered; but the Confederate General Churchill saw that resistance was useless. He raised the white flag just as the 120th Ohio was swarming over his intrenchments. McClernand had carried the fort, and taken some five thousand pris-

oners. After destroying the works, and all that he could not remove, he returned to Milliken's Bend. Just at Vicksburg is one of the great bends of the Mississippi. Grant's next project was a ship-canal across it, so that boats could run up and down without passing Vicksburg: but after long toil, this proved utterly useless, and was abandoned. A smaller canal to Lake Providence proved of some service.

An attempt of General Ross to flank the defences of Vicksburg by way of the Yazoo Pass failed, the gunboats in March being unable to silence or take the enemy's works. Then a passage by Sunflower River was tried, but this too was well defended by nature and art.

Meanwhile, the Queen of the West ran past the Vicksburg batteries, and ascending the Red River, did considerable damage to the Confederate cause, till a treacherous pilot ran the vessel ashore. The commander, C. K. Ellet, and his crew, had to abandon the Queen, and in the Era reached the ironclad Indianola. That fine ironclad, ascending the Mississippi, was attacked during the night of February 13th by the Confederate rams Webb and Queen of the West, which they had refitted, and two smaller gunboats. They attacked the Indianola with great energy and skill, butting with their rams, until at last the Webb, striking her for the seventh time, stove in her stern. The Indianola in a sinking condition was then surrendered and run ashore.

This gave the Confederates control of the Mississippi from Vicksburg to New Orleans: but they lost their advantage by a queer trick of Commodore Porter. He fitted up an old flat-boat with clay furnace and smoke-stacks of pork-barrels to look like some new and terrible ram, and set her afloat. As the tide carried her past Vicksburg, all the batteries opened on her, and warning was sent to the Webb and Queen. Both fled in all haste; the Indianola, which they were repair-

ing, was blown up, and the river was again clear : but all attempts of real gunboats above Vicksburg to pass below failed—all that tried the experiment being lost.

Grant resolved on another attempt. As soon as the roads were practicable, in March, he took the field and pushed down to Hard Times ; then Porter ran the batteries, with his gunboats well protected, and pouring into the Confederate batteries as they passed a furious broadside ; but the transports were not so fortunate : the Clay was burned, the Tigress sunk, the Forest Queen disabled.

To confuse the Confederates, Grant sent Colonel Grierson, with a body of cavalry, to sweep as far as possible through the country. In a forced march of sixteen days he traversed six hundred miles, burning railroad bridges, cars, stores, arms, and munitions, capturing five hundred prisoners, with the loss of only twenty-seven men. The enemy sent out troops in all directions to head him off, but he baffled them all, and rode into Baton Rouge in safety, after fighting four times in the last twenty-eight hours of his daring ride.

On the 29th of April, Grant resolved to try the batteries at Grand Gulf. Porter opened on them with his gunboats, but the enemy's works were too high. Despairing of success here, Grant fell down the Mississippi to Rodney, and crossing there on the 30th, pushed on the 13th Corps to Port Gibson, in the rear of Grand Gulf, the 17th Corps following close. Sherman, who had been left above, now with some of the gunboats that had not run down made a feigned attack on Haines' Bluff, a strong position on the Yazoo above Vicksburg, and kept it up till Grant summoned him to join the other corps below.

Grant's advance under McClernand was met on May 2d, near Port Gibson, by a Confederate force under General Bowen, but, in spite of the



GENERAL GRANT IN ACTION.



BATTLE-FIELD OF ANTIETAM.

(Page 799)



STATE HOUSE, FREDERICKSBURG, VA.

(Page 821)

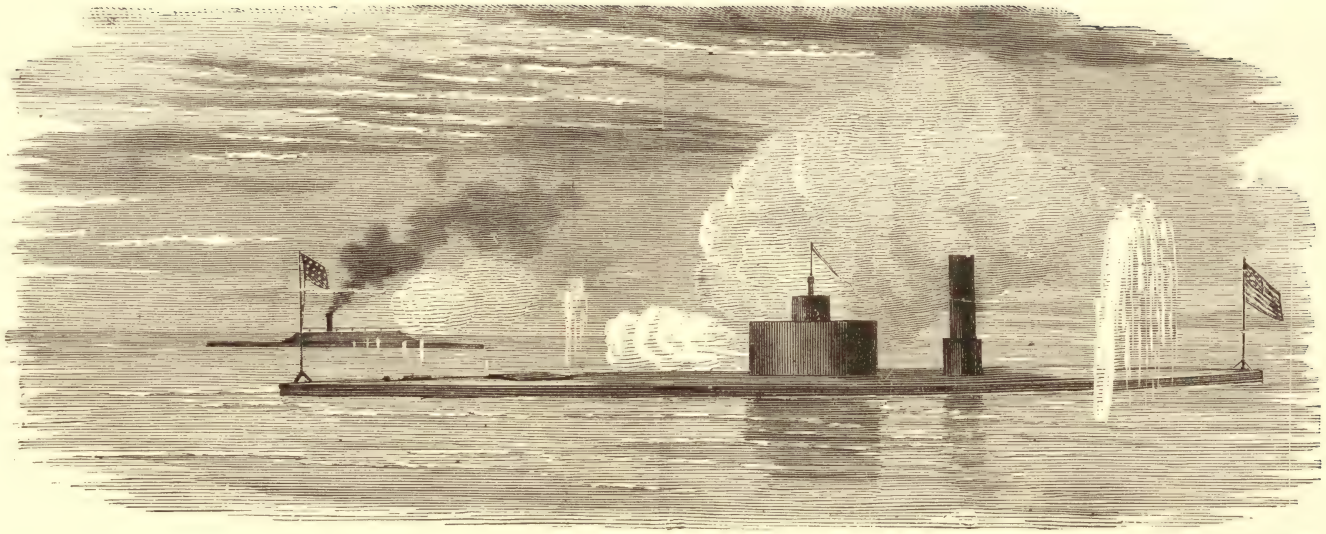


BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG.

(Page 825)



THE BATTLE OF LOOKOUT MOUNTAIN. (Page 843)



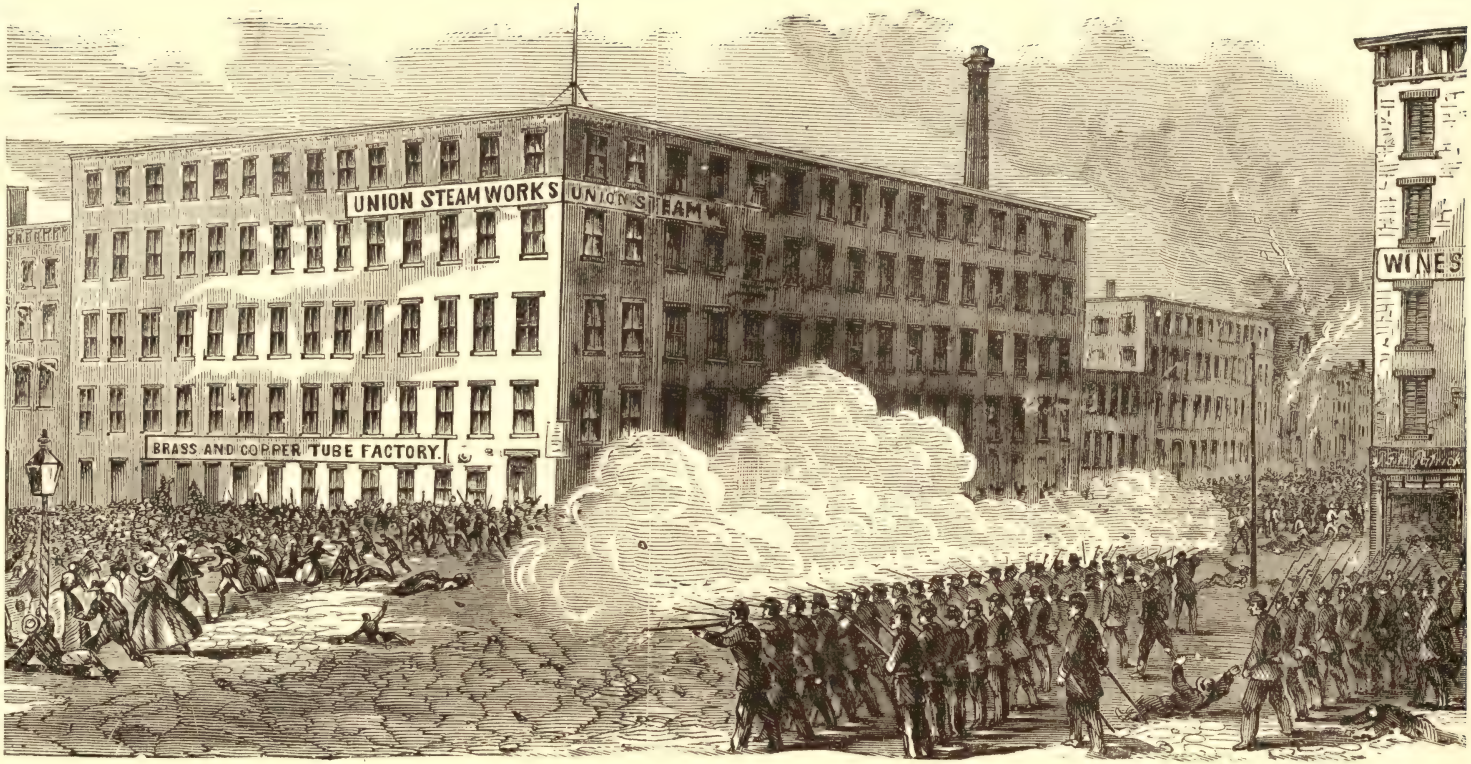
Atlanta. Weehawken. (Page 857)

ACTION BETWEEN THE U. S. MONITOR WEEHAWKEN AND THE CONFEDERATE IRON-CLAD ATLANTA.



THE BOMBARDMENT OF FORT WAGNER.

(Page 859)



THE DRAFT RIOTS IN NEW YORK.—THE BATTLE IN SECOND AVENUE.

(Page 865)

difficult nature of the ground, McClernand finally defeated him with heavy loss, and drove him into Port Gibson, which was abandoned that night. The strong works at Grand Gulf were also evacuated by the Confederates, leaving Grant master of the situation. A river, the Big Black, which passes near Vicksburg, emptied into the Mississippi at Grand Gulf. Up the left bank of this river Grant advanced, McPherson's corps nearest the river, McClernand's on the ridge, Sherman in the rear Near Raymond the Confederate General Gregg attempted on the 12th to check the advance, but the fight was a short one. The furious Southron charge was met with a terrible fire of grape and canister under which it broke and fled, leaving nearly a thousand dead, wounded, and prisoners. McPherson then pushed on to Clinton, on the Southern Mississippi Railroad, and began to destroy it from that point to Jackson, where it joins the Mississippi Central Railroad. But he was not to reach Jackson without a fight. A force of South Carolina and Georgia troops under General Walker, had come up, and disputed the passage. McPherson charged. His whole line swept forward, driving the enemy into Jackson. Artillery was soon planted to open on the capital of Mississippi, but the Confederates evacuated it; and McPherson entered, Sherman reaching it almost simultaneously by the road from Raymond.

Vicksburg was now cut off from all supplies or reinforcements by railroad.

General Pemberton was in position near Edward's Station, and Grant resolved to attack him before Walker's troops from Jackson could reach him. General Johnston, the Confederate commander-in-chief, equally anxious to effect a junction with Pemberton, ordered that commander to march on Clinton; but when he reached Champion Hill,

Hovey's division in Grant's advance met him. McPherson supported, but McClernand did not come up. Unequal as the numbers were, Hovey, though crowded back again and again, massed his artillery, and finally drove the Confederates back, losing in the long and desperate struggle, one-third of his force, while McPherson by a brilliant charge gained the enemy's rear, and cut off one division, which fled southward.

Grant at once pursued. Pemberton made a stand at the Black, but Carr's division carried an important point, and the Confederate general fled across the river by bridges he had made of steamboats and now destroyed, leaving eighteen guns, one thousand five hundred prisoners, and quantities of arms and stores ten times more valuable to him than to Grant.

Before Grant could force a passage, Pemberton was safe within the intrenchments of Vicksburg, which was completely invested by Grant on the 19th of May. Porter at once attacked Haines' Bluff, but the enemy fled, leaving guns, forts, munitions, tents, everything in fact, to fall into the hands of the fleet. Yazoo City, a great naval depot and workshop, was then taken.

Grant was now before Vicksburg, and felt that no time was to be lost, as Johnston, the able Confederate commander, was in his rear, receiving reinforcements from Bragg's army. A general assault was ordered on the 19th of May. Blair's division actually planted its colors on the enemy's works, but the advantage gained was too slight, and the troops were recalled. On the 22d the assault was renewed. Again Blair led the storming party, but no troops could stand the deadly fire poured on them. The survivors recoiled. In vain did Ewing, Giles, and Kilby Smith try at various points. Flags were

planted on the works, and men mowed down like grass, but at night the troops were withdrawn : there was no success sufficient to balance the heavy loss.

McClernand had carried a couple of works, but was taken as in a trap. The other assaults were fruitless. At eight o'clock the men were recalled from the more advanced positions, and the assault ended, having cost Grant nearly three thousand men.

He now determined on a regular siege, which Pemberton, driven into the city after a defeat, was in no position to continue long, as he needed provisions and ammunition. But he held out gallantly. Grant drew his siege-lines nearer, and ran mines under the main works. The first of these was sprung on the 25th of May ; then came another assault, that failed : and so the siege went on, fort after fort being mined ; Pemberton trying by countermines to defeat Grant's plans. The citizens, exposed to furious bombardment from the land side and the river, lived in caves dug into the bluff, with famine staring them in the face. At last, after forty-five days' siege, Pemberton, seeing that Johnston could not relieve him, hoisted a white flag. Grant at first demanded an unconditional surrender, but finally agreed that Pemberton's men should be paroled and marched out of his lines, arms, public stores, and munitions to be surrendered. On the 4th of July, Grant entered Vicksburg, so long the object of the United States : the Confederate arms were stacked ; the cannon looked idly on the river, where along the wharves lay the American gunboats. But this triumph had not been gained without blood. Nearly nine thousand was the fearful loss of the army from its landing below Grand Gulf. To the Confederate cause the fall of Vicksburg was a terrible blow. In the siege and the various actions, their loss in killed and wounded was

ten thousand, and in prisoners thirty-seven thousand; besides their strongest post with all its war material.

Johnston, watched by Sherman, had been endeavoring to cut his way into Vicksburg. On him Grant now turned his strength. Sherman with an army of fifty thousand men at once pursued that Confederate general, driving him into Jackson. There Sherman invested him, but Johnston, eluding him after a brief action, fled across the Pearl, destroying bridges as he went.

Another fortress fell soon after. General Banks had been operating in Louisiana, with a view to recovering Texas, but a series of disasters on the coast of that State baffled his projects. His force was too small to occupy all necessary points and invest Port Hudson, where the Confederates lay in strength. He began some operations on the Atchafalaya, but as Farragut proposed to run the Port Hudson batteries, he was summoned to attack that fortress. Farragut got past with part of his fleet, but the frigate Mississippi ran aground, was cut up and set on fire, floating down the great river at last one mass of flame. His other vessels suffered severely, and a land attack was abandoned. Banks carried out his original campaign, breaking up General Taylor's operations, capturing two thousand men and twenty-two guns. About the middle of May, on Grant's offer of aid, he proceeded to invest Port Hudson. This he effected May 26th, General Augur joining him from Baton Rouge, after defeating a force sent out by General Gardiner, the Confederate commander. A gallant assault was made the next day, but though the fleet aided, and caused the Confederates great loss, Banks' columns were hurled back with severe loss by the unseen enemy, who poured down grape and canister and volleys of musketry. A loss of nearly two thousand men was the result.

A regular siege began, and after weary days of digging in the trenches, a second assault was made on the 10th of June, with no important success. Gardiner was at the last extremity, nearly starving, and Banks' mines ready to blow up his citadel, when, on July 6th, news came that Vicksburg had fallen. When convinced of this, Gardiner at once opened communication with General Banks, and on the 8th surrendered the post with his garrison as prisoners of war. While Banks was operating before Port Hudson, the scattered posts in Louisiana were suddenly attacked by General Dick Taylor. Most of the commanders displayed incompetence and cowardice. Post after post was taken almost without a blow, no serious resistance being made ; but when Port Hudson fell, Taylor abandoned his conquests as rapidly as he had made them, and retreated toward Texas.

That State, by the wish of the Administration, was to be the scene of the next operations of the United States forces. An expedition under General Franklin, consisting of four thousand men, was sent with several gunboats under Lieutenant Crocker to attack Sabine Pass. Instead of landing his troops and marching on the enemy's works, Franklin let Crocker attack the fortifications. He lost two vessels, a third ran aground, and his killed, wounded, and prisoners equalled the whole Confederate force engaged. Such was the affair of September 8th, after which Franklin returned to New Orleans. Other reverses followed at Morganzia and Opelousas.

Banks, meanwhile, prepared a new Texas expedition, which he led in person. Landing at Brazos Santiago on the 2d of November, he took successively Brownsville, Point Isabel, Aransas Pass, and invested Fort Esperanza at Matagorda Bay. This was all he deemed it prudent to do with the force he could spare. General Dana, left in

command, scoured the country, secured Indianola, and asked to be allowed to move inland and crush the Confederate forces in the State, but he was overruled.

The frontier bordering on Mexico was now, however, in the hands of the United States Government for the first time since the commencement of the war.

CHAPTER VIII.

The Army of the Potomac under General Burnside—He Crosses the Rappahannock and Attacks Lee's Position at Marye's Heights—He is Repulsed with heavy Loss, and Recrosses the River—Removed when about to Renew the Attack—General Hooker takes Command—He Crosses the Rappahannock—Battle of Chancellorsville—His Right Wing Turned by Jackson, who is Killed—Desperate Fighting—Hooker Stunned by a Cannon-ball at Chancellorsville—Sedgwick, Operating below, Attacked by Lee's whole Force and Driven across the River—Hooker Recrosses—Longstreet—Lee Flanks Hooker's Right—Milroy Surprised at Winchester—Lee Crosses the Potomac—Hooker, unable to Obtain the Garrison of Harper's Ferry, Resigns—Meade placed in Command—Movements of the Armies—They come in Collision at Gettysburg—The Battle—General Reynolds Killed and his Corps Driven through the Town—The Halt on Cemetery Hill—Sickles takes a wrong Position—Hancock—Meade Arrives—Sickles Driven back—The Terrible Charge of Lee's whole Line—Its Repulse—Lee Retreats—Manassas Gap—Warren and Hill—The Armies Resume their old Positions—Mine Run—Droop Mountain.

General Burnside, when placed in command of the Army of the Potomac, immediately commenced preparations for a movement of his forces down the Rappahannock to Frederick, Lee following on the opposite side of the river. Sumner, with the van, attempted to cross at Fredericksburg on the 17th of November, but failed, the Confederates having burned the bridge, and pontoons failing to arrive from Washington. The United States gunboats ascended the river, but were driven back, and the channel effectually closed by batteries.

Fredericksburg refused to surrender, and having been occupied by

sharpshooters who annoyed the American troops, was bombarded and greatly damaged.

At last pontoons came, and the army crossed between the 10th and 12th of December, in spite of the constant fire of Confederate sharpshooters, whom not even the fire of Burnside's batteries crashing into the houses could dislodge. At last a call was made for volunteers to cross in small boats. Robert H. Hendershot, drummer-boy of the 7th Michigan, sprang into a boat, and, when compelled to leave, clung to the stern and crossed. Just as he landed, a fragment of a shell knocked his drum to pieces, but he soon found a musket, and returned to camp at the close of the day with one of the few prisoners brought off.

Lee was drawn up behind the bluffs of the Rappahannock, as far down as the Massaponax. His army was divided into two corps, Jackson on the right, Longstreet on the left. Jackson was confronted by Franklin's division, forty thousand strong, while Hooker and Sumner were on the right, with at least sixty thousand.

The attack began on the 13th of December, Couch's division moving up Marye's Hill, through a storm of artillery and musketry, only to be confronted by a stone wall from which a perfect hurricane of fire poured on them. Hancock's corps, including Meagher's Irish brigade, charged with all the gallantry of their race against this wall of fire, till only two hundred and eighty men were left out of one thousand two hundred. Never was life so ruthlessly wasted. But fresh troops were sent up again, till the terraces and slopes leading up to the Confederate works were piled with dead and wounded. Franklin on the left lay inactive meanwhile, awaiting explicit orders, and, though he gained at last some advantage, fell back, when Lee, having repulsed

every assault on Marye's Height, could turn his whole force against him. Night fell at last on this scene of unmilitary slaughter, in which the army of the United States lost fifteen thousand men, including many officers of high merit, like Major-General George D. Bayard, Brigadier-General C. F. Jackson, and Colonel Heenan. Lee's loss was less than half that of Burnside, as his men fought behind defences and used their artillery effectively.

Yet Burnside wished to renew the attack the next day, and was with difficulty dissuaded. He remained two days in Fredericksburg, to see whether Lee would come out of his stronghold to fight him—then re-crossed the river.

He prepared plans for a new flanking movement, but his army was thoroughly disorganized. His subordinate generals remonstrated to Washington against him, and while he was about to dismiss several of them, he was himself relieved from command on the 28th of January, 1863, ending his brief and unsatisfactory career.

Major-General Hooker was then appointed to the dangerous post, to find the efficiency of the army almost destroyed. Desertion and corruption prevailed: the enemy's cavalry were raiding all around the army. The first work was to reorganize, and to this Hooker devoted himself for two months, infusing new spirit into his officers and men, and creating confidence in himself as commander. In April, he sent General Stoneman with the cavalry to cross the river to strike Fitzhugh Lee's Confederate cavalry near Culpepper Court House, and then to push on toward Richmond, destroying bridges, crippling railroads, and impeding in every way the retreat of Lee.

Then, by a masterly movement, deceiving Lee completely by throwing troops across at Franklin's and Pollock's Mill, below Fredericks-

burg, Hooker silently pushed his main body up the river to Kelly's Ford, and crossing there, moved on Chancellorsville, driving in General Anderson.

Lee at once, leaving a small force to face Sedgwick below and hold the heights of Fredericksburg, advanced with all his forces to meet Hooker.

That general was in a difficult country of woods and thickets of which he knew nothing. His movements were uncertain. He could not tell his antagonist's force at any point. Sykes, leading the Fifth Corps, advanced toward Fredericksburg, but soon met the enemy in superior numbers, and was ordered to fall back. Sickles' corps, the Third, had been posted in reserve at the centre : Slocum and Howard held the right. Thus the army stood on the morning of May 2d. Sickles soon saw Lee's troops passing toward the right, and charged them, capturing many, but the movement was continued further off. He pushed on, cautious and watchful ; but his warnings had been unheeded by General Hooker as well as by Generals Howard and Slocum, who had not even thrown up earthworks or batteries.

At six o'clock, as the winter day was closing, the movement was explained. Stonewall Jackson, with twenty-five thousand men, attacked the Eleventh Corps on three sides. It was not in line, and was scattered in a moment, every general and colonel disabled or taken, and the whole corps driven in wild confusion on Chancellorsville.

Sickles, finding at last that the Eleventh Corps was routed, called on Hooker to sustain him, but that general could not even send him a division of his own corps. Sickles, with two divisions of his corps, was left to hold out as best he could. He was well posted ; and Pleasanton coming with a small body of cavalry, arrested Stonewall Jackson's charge on

Sickles' corps, which he hoped to treat as he had Howard's. But Keenan, with the 8th Pennsylvania, died like heroes, to give Pleasanton time to get into position, while Sickles gathered all the fugitives he could to swell his force. Suddenly from the woods burst the Confederate line with all the fury of their usual charge: but the ground was covered by Pleasanton's guns double shotted with canister, and the yelling masses were hurled back to the woods. Three times was the charge repeated, and as often repulsed, General Thomas Jonathan Jackson, the famous Stonewall, being mortally wounded. When the respite came, Sickles and Pleaanston strengthened their position, and even regained some of Howard's lost ground. But General Hooker ordered Sickles to fall back.

In the morning, his corps bore the brunt of Lee's first attack, made with utter recklessness by J. E. B. Stuart, reinforced again and again, until Sickles began to yield. He called upon Hooker for reinforcements, but the commander of the army lay senseless at the Chancellorsville House, a cannon-ball, striking a pillar, having dashed him to the ground. No one assumed command. Sickles fought on, repelling five charges, French and Hancock charging the enemy's left, and relieving Meade, who was hard pressed.

At last, General Couch ordered the whole army to fall back toward the river.

Meanwhile, Sedgwick had pushed on, entered Fredericksburg, and, with some loss, carried the heights, so fatal to Burnside. Then he moved forward on the Chancellorsville road. By this time, Lee, having seen all fighting cease at Chancellorsville, detached forces to meet Sedgwick. Before that general lay a strong position, which it became more and more difficult to carry, while his own position became critical.

Hooker had recovered, and taken command again; but he did not attack Lee, who, seeing all safe in that direction, turned his whole force on Sedgwick, and drove him across the river with the loss of five thousand men. Hooker then recrossed, and the strangely fought battle ended.

Hooker had lost full eighteen thousand men, with a host of able and experienced officers, among whom may be mentioned Generals Berry and Whipple. The Confederates made no statement of their losses, but from the reckless bravery of their assaults it was probably as great, and the loss of Stonewall Jackson was a terrible blow.

Stoneman's cavalry movement effected some little damage, but was an utter failure so far as the cutting off of Lee's communications with Richmond was concerned.

While this battle was fought, General Longstreet, with part of Lee's army forty thousand strong, was besieging Suffolk. But General Peck, aided by gunboats, though his force never exceeded fourteen thousand, kept Longstreet at bay, and even captured one of his batteries, men and guns. At last, after losing nearly a month, and two thousand men, Longstreet retired.

For a time the two armies lay watching each other, when Lee decided on a bold move. He resolved to elude Hooker, and strike northward. Leaving a small force in Fredericksburg, he pushed on to the Shenandoah Valley, unperceived by Hooker, or by the officers in command there. Winchester was held by General Milroy, with ten thousand men; when the approach of the enemy in force was reported, he derided it, but on the 14th of June was attacked by Ewell. He attempted to escape, but it was too late—the enemy were in his rear, and cut off his flight; not half his force reached Harper's Ferry.

The Government now took alarm. Pennsylvania called out her militia; New York, New Jersey, Ohio, and West Virginia were called upon by the President to send militia to the relief of the threatened State. But the country was disheartened by the length and errors of the war, and its bravest men were in the army, or dead on the countless battle-fields. Not more than fifty thousand responded to the call.

General Hooker, on the day of the attack on Winchester, began his march northward; but the Confederate cavalry swept along in Lee's front, and were already in Chambersburg, Pennsylvania, levying contributions. General Ewell, pursuing Milroy, entered it on the 16th of June. Hooker at last covered Washington, and reinforced by part of the troops in the defences at Washington, had at last a hundred thousand men to meet Lee, who marched through Hagerstown with ninety-one thousand, and six thousand cavalry, while at least five thousand cavalry were spreading havoc through Pennsylvania. Hooker, with the eye of a general, resolved to secure the mountain passes, and cut off Lee's line of retreat through the Cumberland and Shenandoah Valleys, and for this purpose wished to use the troops near Harper's Ferry. But General Halleck, as general-in-chief, would not permit him to add to his army the garrison at Maryland Heights. On this, General Hooker asked to be relieved of his command, and General Meade was appointed to command the Army of the Potomac, which thus changed generals on the very eve of a battle.

Major-General George C. Meade, thus suddenly and unexpectedly raised to the command of the army when he actually expected to be arrested on charges preferred by Hooker, was a native of Pennsylvania, and, from an early period of the war, connected with the re-

serves of that State. He was the very reverse of the bold and daring Hooker; he was cautious, judicious, careful. General Hooker, on retiring, truly styled him "a brave and accomplished officer, who had nobly earned the confidence and esteem of the army on many a well-fought field." He had displayed his ability at Gaines' Mill, Malvern, South Mountain, Antietam, Fredericksburg, and Chancellorsville.

When he assumed command of the Army of the Potomac, Lee, who had been levying heavy contributions on the people of Pennsylvania, was rapidly concentrating his troops at Gettysburg, intending to march on Harrisburg, and not yet aware that Hooker was almost in sight. Meade had either to meet Lee at Gettysburg, or draw him to ground of his own selection. The choice was not left to him. His cavalry, in the advance under General Kilpatrick, encountered Stuart's Confederate horse near Hanover, and a sharp fight ensued, in which Kilpatrick drove his antagonists off only when Custer came to his aid. General Buford, moving from Gettysburg, at Willoughby Run, two miles from town, encountered the van of Lee's army, Heth's brigade of Hill's corps. General John F. Reynolds, with the First and Eleventh Corps, Wadsworth's division in the van, were near at hand, and the First pressed rapidly forward through Gettysburg, and forcing back Hill, seized and held the ridge overlooking the place. Reynolds was with the advance, and saw that it was the place for battle. He sent back for the other corps to support him, but while reconnoitering was struck by a sharpshooter's bullet, and fell forward on his face dead. Thus opened, on the 1st of July, the battle of Gettysburg.

That pretty little old-fashioned village lies on the northern slope of a hill, Stevens' Run winding through the valley below, and a college and seminary dotting the opposite hillside. When Reynolds

fell, General Abner Doubleday took command ; but the Eleventh Corps did not come up, and Hill pressed Wadsworth back. But that general yielded without confusion and with a purpose, for when the eager pursuers under Archer were pressing on him, he suddenly swung around his right division, and caught Archer, and nearly a thousand men, the whole of Davis' Mississippi brigade, in a perfect trap, the cut of an unfinished railroad.

When Doubleday reached Seminary Hill, Howard came up with the Eleventh Corps, and taking command of the First, put Schurz at the head of the Eleventh. Here the battle was renewed : the two corps, well posted, repelled all assaults till one o'clock, when the Confederates saw Ewell's corps coming to their aid from the direction of York. They came rapidly into the fight, and threw their whole force on the Eleventh Corps. It was routed and sent back on Gettysburg, carrying with it the First, which had hitherto done so well. The two corps, suffering terrible losses, were driven through the town, but were at last rallied on Cemetery Hill, west of the village, reduced to one-half their numbers.

Sickles, with the Third Corps, was at Emmettsburg, halting by Meade's order ; but on Howard's call he pressed on, leaving a part of his force at Emmettsburg. Just as Howard had taken post on Cemetery Hill, Sickles came up and took post on his left. Meanwhile Meade, at Taneytown, learning that the battle had unexpectedly opened, sent on General Hancock to assume the chief command, and that general stationed Wadsworth's shattered division on Culp's Hill, at his right ; and part of Slocum's Twelfth Corps, which now came up, he ordered to Round Top on his left. Meade, satisfied now that Gettysburg was the place for battle, ordered up all the corps. During the night, Hancock's corps, the Second, under General Gibbon, came up.

and Sedgwick's, the Sixth, was alone wanting ; but was rapidly approaching, having thirty-six miles to march. His right, consisting of the Twelfth Corps and Wadsworth's division of the First, on Culp's Hill ; the Eleventh, with Robinson's and Doubleday's divisions of the First, held Cemetery Hill ; left of them lay Hancock's Second Corps; while the Third, under Sickles, formed the left wing, running from Hancock to Round Top.

Lee, too, drew up his army. Hill's corps formed his centre, Ewell's the left ; the right to be held, when he arrived, by Longstreet. The day was nearly spent in these manœuvres, and Meade had just posted Sedgwick, who had arrived with the Sixth Corps, when the battle opened. Sickles had injudiciously advanced, exposing himself greatly. Lee ordered Longstreet to attack him ; while Ewell assailed Slocum, who held the right. Sickles was crushed back, and the Confederates pressed on to gain Little Round Top, a position of vital importance to Meade. They had almost carried it when Sykes, sent by Meade to save it, came up, and it cost a fierce and bloody struggle. Sykes succeeded ; but Humphreys, on Sickles' right, assailed in front and flank, only by a most heroic and skilful fight was able to fall back to the position which Sickles should never have left. Then came a deadly struggle for Round Top.

Slocum, on the right, weakened by detachments, lost some ground under Ewell's stern pressure ; and Lee closed the day by an ineffectual attack on Howard's corps, which held the face of the hill.

Lee was hopeful and confident. Three of Meade's seven corps had been terribly reduced ; Reynolds was dead ; Sickles had lost a leg ; Zook, one of his brigadiers, was dead ; while of the rank and file the loss must have been nearly twenty thousand men.

All prepared for the morrow, when the decisive struggle must be made. The garrison of Maryland Heights, which had been refused to Hooker, were not called on by Meade, who here yielded to the ideas of others. There was no reserve, no reinforcement to help him. He must fight out the battle as he was.

Cemetery Hill was the centre of Meade's line. Early had in vain attacked it the first day. On it Lee now turned the fire of no less than a hundred and fifteen heavy guns posted along Seminary Ridge. It was the greatest artillery combat ever seen in America. Meade's guns, inferior to Lee's, were at last silent. Then Lee charged with his whole line, three or four miles long, and the Confederates rushed furiously on, attacking Meade's whole line as it lay vailed in smoke from the Round Top, where Sykes held out, to the Cemetery, where Hancock was grimly awaiting them. On they came in three lines, with the disciplined steadiness of veterans. The first line was swept away by the cannonade and musketry of Meade ; but the second line pressed on, driving in his lines, bayoneting the gunners at their pieces : but where they gained an advantage like this, artillery would open an enfilading fire, and again they were swept away, or so isolated that they had no alternative but to lay down their arms and surrender. Whole regiments, and even a brigade, thus yielded to Hancock's sturdy corps.

In spite of their terrible earnestness, their splendid drill and bravery, the Confederate troops failed to carry a single point of Meade's line, heavy as his loss was in officers and men. Lee gathered up the broken fragments of his splendid force, formed his lines, and marched away. The day was won. The Army of the Potomac could boast of one decided and decisive victory.

But Meade was without ammunition or fresh troops to renew the struggle and profit by his victory. Sykes pushed on, indeed, recovering the arms and wounded left in Sickles' repulse, and capturing some prisoners.

The battle of Gettysburg, in desperate and continued fighting, had as yet been unequalled in the war. Meade left nearly three thousand dead on the field, while his wounded and missing numbered twenty thousand. Lee's losses were fully as great, and included many generals and higher officers; he left, too, over thirteen thousand prisoners in Meade's hands, and twice that number of arms.

In this battle, Henry Shaler, a boy attached to an Indiana regiment, took more prisoners than any other. On the morning of the 4th, noticing a party of Confederates near where he was, he went out with his poncho over his shoulders, and they mistook him for one of their own army. He told them to lay down their arms for a minute, and come help carry some wounded off the field. They followed him without mistrusting; but when he got them some distance, he rode up to the lieutenant in command, and ordered him to surrender, which, with a revolver pointed at his head, the officer did. Henry then marched officer and men into camp.

During the 2d and 3d, the cavalry of the two armies had several slight collisions; but on the 3d, the Confederates, under Hood, made a vigorous effort to turn Meade's left on the Emmetsburg road; but this was defeated by Merritt's cavalry and Farnsworth's brigade.

Though urged by some of his officers to make a general advance, Meade only sent out bodies of cavalry on the 4th, who returned with prisoners, reporting the Chambersburg road strewn with wounded and

stragglers, ambulances, and caissons, showing the enemy to be in full retreat and greatly demoralized.

On the 5th, Sedgwick was at last sent in pursuit of Lee with the Sixth Corps. Near Funkstown, his advance under Howe and Buford came upon the enemy. Although, from Meade's cautious policy, they sought to avoid a general engagement, they took up a strong position, which the Confederates attacked; but Howe's troops were remarkably good—they quietly repulsed the Confederates twice, and the third time sent them in full retreat back into Funkstown. Lee, by showing a bold front to Sedgwick at Fairfield Pass, prevented an attack, and at last, by what must be deemed a marvellous escape, reached the Potomac at Williamsport. But his troubles were not ended. General French, who had lain idle at Frederick, had sent a cavalry force to Falling Waters, which captured Lee's guard and destroyed his bridge. Lee was forced to prepare for an engagement, for Meade was in full force near him. He drew up his army to make a desperate fight; but on Meade calling a council of his corps commanders, he found that a majority, and among them the oldest and most experienced, opposed the plan of attacking Lee. Meade yielded to their advice, and stood still while Lee crossed the Potomac, no attempt to molest him being made, except a cavalry charge by General Kilpatrick, about two miles from their bridge at Falling Waters. In this skirmish the Confederate General Pettigrew, commanding Lee's rear-guard, was killed, with a hundred and twenty-five of his men, fifteen hundred being captured.

General Meade crossed the Potomac at Berlin, on the 18th, and pushed on to Warrenton, resuming the line of the Rappahannock, which the army under his command had left hardly two months before

—and a most eventful two months they had been. He had outstripped Lee, and seized the passes through the Blue Ridge, preventing the Confederate commander from coming out of the Shenandoah Valley in that direction ; but that energetic general soon reached his old lines south of the Rappahannock.

The two armies were thus in the same position which they had so long occupied. Lee soon after sent part of his forces to reinforce Bragg ; and Meade having by cavalry expeditions under Buford, Kilpatrick, and Pleasonton, ascertained this, crossed the Rappahannock, and took post at Culpepper Court House, throwing forward two corps to the Rapidan, and was about to cross it when he was ordered to send the Eleventh and Twefth Corps, under Hooker, to aid our army at Chattanooga. On receiving reinforcements, Meade again advanced, but Lee pushed boldly upon him. Then, on the 13th of October, Meade retreated to Cattell's Station and Centreville, pursued so rapidly by Lee's cavalry that they actually got into the midst of his army. A sharp action occurred on the 14th, near Bristow Station, between Hill's corps and General Warren's, the Second Corps of Meade's army, in which the United States troops repulsed the Confederates, and held the field till evening, when they followed the rest of the army, whose retreat they had covered.

Then Lee, having with an inferior force chased our army almost up to Washington, destroyed the railroad by which it received its supplies, and large quantities of valuable stores, and taken two thousand prisoners, recrossed the Rappahannock.

At the same time, Imboden's cavalry had dashed through a gap in the Blue Ridge and captured Charlestown, near Harper's Ferry, with four hundred and twenty-four men, and valuable stores.

Eager to retrieve his credit, Meade wished to attack Fredericksburg, but Halleck overruled himt. Then he made an attack with Sedgwick's Fifth and Sixth Corps on Lee's position at Rappahannock Station. The attack was gallantly made on the 7th of November, by General David A. Russell's division, the 6th and 20th Maine and 5th Wisconsin leading. It proved perfectly successful, carrying the works, while the 121st New York and 5th Maine swept down on the right, cutting off the retreat of the Confederate garrison, capturing sixteen hundred of them, with four cannon and two thousand muskets.

At the same time, the Second and Third Corps, under General French, crossed on a pontoon bridge at Kelly's Ford, General de Trobriand leading, and captured the 12th Virginia regiment.

Lee, thoroughly worsted, fell back to Culpepper, and the next night crossed the Rapidan.

Meade, after some delay, pushed on cautiously, and with his army of seventy thousand men, on the 27th of November, came up to Lee, who had his fifty thousand posted at Mine Run. Meade's first attack was delayed by French's corps failing to come into line in time. Lee kept strengthening his already formidable position, so that Meade found it rash to attack him in front, which was bristling with abattis, parapets, and batteries. After a careful reconnaissance, an attack directly in front was negatived by the majority of the generals. Then Warren was sent southward, with the Second and Sixth Corps, to feel the enemy's flank and turn it. On his report that an attack was practicable at that point, Meade massed several corps there, and prepared for a battle, Sedgwick to attack on the right as soon as Warren began.

Artillery and skirmishes opened the action early in the morning of

November 30th, but soon word came from Warren that Lee's defences were too strong to attack with any hope of carrying them.

Meade hastened to the spot, and concluded to desist for the day. The next day he fell back beyond the Rapidan; and thus terminated the campaign of the Army of the Potomac in 1863.

It seems strange that the army made no attempt to bring Lee to battle; but Meade was not one who liked to assume too great a responsibility, he was hampered by orders from Washington, and the corps commanders, from motives of their own, always decided against active measures.

The only other operations in Virginia at this period were cavalry raids, sometimes successful, sometimes repulsed. Late in the fall, General Averill, with a force of five thousand men, engaged the Confederates under General Echols, on the top of Droop Mountain, in Greenbrier County, and routed him with heavy loss. West Virginia was by this blow delivered from the Confederates, who never afterward attempted to occupy it, contenting themselves with occasional raids.

CHAPTER IX.

Morgan's Raid through Indiana and Ohio—The War in Tennessee—Rosecrans flanks Bragg, and drives him to Lafayette—Bragg Faces—Battle of Chickamauga—Rosecrans Defeated—Grant succeeds him—Bragg sends Longstreet against Burnside—Campbell's Station—Longstreet Repulsed—Cavalry Raids—Grant's Campaign—Hooker Crosses the Tennessee—Wauhatchie—Lookout Mountain—Mission Ridge—Sherman—Cleburne checks Hooker at White-Oak Ridge—Knoxville Relieved—The War in Missouri, Arkansas, and Indian Territory—Marmaduke at Springfield, Hartsville, Batesville, and Cape Girardeau—Coffey's Operations—Quantrell's Cruelties—Indian Operations—The Sioux War.

THE West was at this time the theatre of one of the wildest and boldest affairs of the war.

This was Morgan's celebrated raid into Ohio. Morgan was a great partisan cavalry leader in the Confederate service, and had already given the United States commanders infinite trouble in Kentucky and Tennessee, by the boldness and celerity of his movements. This bold rider, who will long be remembered in the West, started from Sparta at the end of June, and crossed the Cumberland, with some two thousand men and four pieces of light artillery. Every preparation was made for rapid movement, his men and horses being of the best. His first operation was not ominous of success. On the 4th of July he came upon two hundred men of the 25th Michigan, under Colonel Moore, at Tebb's Bend of Green River, and summoned them to surrender. Moore replied that, being the glorious Fourth, he couldn't entertain the proposition. Morgan at once assaulted, but Moore had hastily and well defended his position. For several hours he kept Morgan at bay, killing fifty of the assailants, including several of Morgan's best officers, and wounding two hundred and fifty. At last the Confederate commander drew off.

At Lebanon he was more successful. With some loss, he defeated Colonel Hanson, and firing the place, compelled him to surrender. Then he pushed on to the Ohio, and seizing two steamboats, crossed over, his original force being swelled to four thousand men by recruits from Kentucky Secessionists. Reaching the northern shore, he moved irregularly to avoid pursuit, knowing that General Hobson was after him. He galloped through Corydon, Greenville, and Palmyra, captured three hundred and fifty Home Guards at Salem, Indiana, destroyed railroads, bridges, telegraphs, and depots, exacting contributions as he went, and sweeping off horses. The militia at Old Vernon turned out so formidably that he avoided an action, and sweeping around Cincinnati, reached the Ohio at Buffington Island, expecting to cross and escape to West Virginia.

But Hobson had resolved to head him off, and had sent to Louisville to have the river patrolled by gunboats, and the people in Ohio obstructed the roads leading to the river, so as to impede Morgan. When the Confederates attempted to cross at Pomeroy, they were received by a volley, and a gunboat opened on them, while three heavy columns of infantry opened fire on their rear and right. There was little time for deliberation: leaving his guns and wagons with six hundred sick, wounded, and dismounted men, Morgan fled up the river to Belleville, and began to cross, when Hobson and Shackleford were on him again, and gunboats confronted him. Some three hundred got over, retreated to a high bluff, and for a time held out; but the struggle was hopeless. Morgan and a small band managed to escape, but the rest surrendered. The commander himself, continuing his desperate flight, was hemmed in by militia and home guards near New Lisbon, and surrendered July 25th. His raid of nearly a month had

thrown the whole State into confusion, and the destruction of property was considerable ; but of his whole force of four thousand, only four hundred escaped back to the Confederate lines, and at least five hundred were killed and wounded. So exasperated were the people, that Morgan and several of his officers were taken to Columbus, confined in the penitentiary, and treated as felons ; but Morgan, with six others, dug their way out, and escaped to Kentucky, where they found friends who aided them to reach the Confederate lines.

The great operation of the war in the West was the advance of Rosecrans. Bragg lay before him, superior in cavalry, with abundant railroad lines of supply or retreat in his rear ; while Rosecrans, inferior in cavalry, depended on one line, which, running through a country favoring the Confederate cause, had to be protected by troops at almost every step. When Rosecrans obtained from the reluctant authorities at Washington the cavalry and horses he needed, he prepared to advance.

Bragg's army was in three divisions. Polk was in a formidable position at Shelbyville, with another intrenched camp at Tullahoma. Hardee was on his right at Wartrace with twelve thousand men ; while Buckner was near Knoxville and Chattanooga.

Rosecrans resolved to force him out of his strong position by a flank movement, and a feigned attack on Shelbyville. On the 24th of June he began his march, although heavy rains made the roads almost impassable. General McCook, with the 20th Corps, pushed on toward Shelbyville, and carried Liberty Gap by a vigorous attack, Thomas pushing on Manchester, with the 14th Corps, carrying Hoover's Gap with Wilder's mounted brigade. On the 27th, Rosecrans had his headquarters in Manchester, and Bragg, overpowered and

deceived, had been forced back to Fairfield. Granger and Stanley then carried Guy's Gap, the Confederates retreating to their rifle-pits near Shelbyville. Although at the risk of being overwhelmed by superior numbers, Granger and Stanley pushed on, and at six o'clock in the afternoon carried Shelbyville itself, with five hundred prisoners and a large store of provisions.

Rosecrans at once sent Wilder with his cavalry to destroy Elk River bridge in Bragg's rear, and proceeded to flank the Confederates at Tullahoma; but Bragg, completely outgeneralled, decamped, and fled so hastily, that Rosecrans, having to guard his lines, could not pursue him; and though some blamed him, all who knew the country and its condition justified the wisdom of his course.

In nine days, at a loss of only five hundred men, he had cleared Middle Tennessee of the enemy, capturing one thousand six hundred prisoners, with arms, artillery, and stores.

By the 25th of July, Rosecrans had collected the provisions required for an advance through a sterile and exhausted mountain region. He then moved on Chattanooga, the remaining Confederate stronghold in Tennessee. Upon this Rosecrans now moved with great rapidity, and yet with caution. Sheridan, Reynolds, McCook, and Brannan crossed the Tennessee at points selected by Rosecrans, where they would be least observed; Crittenden pushed on to Lookout Mountain, and looked down into Chattanooga, while Thomas pushed across Mission Ridge to the Chickamauga Valley. Bragg was again outgeneralled: he relinquished Chattanooga, and saved his army, retiring South to Georgia, drawing up at Lafayette. There he concentrated and called for aid. Buckner, eluding Burnside, hastened to his support from East Tennessee; Lee, holding Meade inactive, sent to

Bragg's aid Longstreet with his veterans ; militia were sent up to aid him in guarding bridges, depots, etc.

Rosecrans, who supposed him retreating on Rome, pushed on to meet an army of nearly a hundred thousand men, the finest army the Confederates ever massed west of the Alleghanies.

On the 10th of September, the van of Rosecrans' army, under Crittenden and Thomas, found the enemy in force at Tunnel Hill and Dug Gap. McCook, flanking Bragg, found that he was no longer in retreat. Rosecrans had been informed by General Halleck that Bragg had sent part of his army to reinforce Lee, and was thus misled—finding Bragg not weakened, but greatly reinforced.

Aware now that he had been deceived and misled, he saw that he must concentrate and fight. Bragg, his inferior in generalship, had failed to entrap Rosecrans.

The American general's army, as now concentrated, was drawn up with seven divisions forming the main line, ranging from right to left from Gordon's Mill northward—Gordon Granger in reserve in the rear of the left, covering the roads to Chattanooga. Bragg attempted to turn and crush the left, while Polk pressed Rosecrans' front at Gordon's Mills, and Hill covered his left flank.

The battle opened on the 19th of September, at Reed's and Alexander's bridges over the Chickamauga, Thomas attacking : the Confederates, however, soon sent up fresh troops, and a long and fierce struggle ensued, as each side was reinforced. By four o'clock, Thomas had repulsed the assaults, killing the Confederate General Preston Smith, but he prepared for fresh attack. This time it came on his right, a charge so impetuous that his men recoiled, till General Hazen, of Crittenden's corps, massing his artillery on a ridge, sent the enemy

back in disorder. Cleburne, indeed, again led up the Confederates ; but when night fell, Thomas held his ground.

On the right, Rosecrans had done well. McCook had met and sustained firmly the charge of Hood.

When night came, Rosecrans had lost no ground, but he saw that he was outnumbered, and could expect no reinforcements, while Bragg was constantly receiving them. He drew up his line to the utmost advantage, and at daylight galloped along the lines, and ordered some changes of position. The battle on Sunday, the 20th, began by Breckinridge making a flanking movement across the Rossville road. Rosecrans sent up to support Beatty and Baird, and Breckinridge was driven back in disorder. Other Confederate corps came up successively, but Thomas stood like a wall of iron : Bragg failed to turn his flank and get between him and Chattanooga.

Rosecrans fared badly, however, on the right, which had been weakened to support Thomas : at an unfortunate moment, when a gap was left in the front by a misconceived order, Longstreet charged, Hood, supported by Buckner, crashing through Rosecrans' line, separating five brigades from the rest of the army, cutting off nearly half of them, and sending the rest in confusion toward Chattanooga. Rosecrans rallied and reformed the commands of Sheridan and Davis at Rossville, and then hastened to Chattanooga, to prepare for a desperate effort to hold it, if the worst came to the worst.

The main body of the army was under Thomas, and could not be in better hands. Brannan and Hood had been posted on Mission Ridge in his rear, while Gaw massed all the reserve artillery. Thomas thus provided for any attack on his rear. Gordon Granger, at Rossville, finding no enemy in his front, and hearing the battle going on, re-

ported at three o'clock to Thomas, bringing in what he greatly needed, a small supply of ammunition. At that time the enemy were pressing him in front and on both flanks, and Hindman was creeping up a gorge to assail his right in flank and rear. By a vigorous charge, Granger hurled him back, taking the gorge and a ridge beyond it. Bragg, furious at the stubborn resistance which seemed to sweep away a victory already gained, made a general attack on all points of Thomas' line at four o'clock; but in vain did Longstreet, McLaw, Preston, Breckinridge, Cleburne, Hindman, and the flower of the Confederates pour down on his line. Thomas withstood and repelled assault after assault till the sun set. Then, by order of Rosecrans, he began to withdraw from the position he had so gallantly held. A part of the Confederate force appeared, but was charged with such effect that it was repulsed, leaving many prisoners in his hands. There was no pursuit. Thomas retired, and took up the position at Rossville appointed by Rosecrans. So ended the fiercely fought battle of Chickamauga. Bragg admitted a loss of eighteen thousand, sixteen thousand in killed or wounded. Rosecrans lost about eleven thousand in killed and wounded, and seven thousand five hundred prisoners, thirty-six guns, and eight thousand arms. Bragg had won an undoubted victory, but that was all. Rosecrans held Chattanooga, and was a commander with an army not to be despised. Though defeated, the hero of Iuka and Corinth had secured the great strategic object of the campaign.

The authorities at Washington, themselves responsible for the event, made Rosecrans the scapegoat, and on the 19th of October that able general received an order removing him from command. He at once took leave of his companions in arms, and General Thomas became the general of the Army of the Cumberland.

While Rosecrans had been conducting a life-and-death struggle with Bragg, General Burnside, at the head of a small independent army, had overrun East Tennessee, hailed with delight by the Union men, and finding no enemy in the field to oppose. Neither he nor his superior, General Halleck, seem to have suspected that the Confederate troops had all been sent to aid Bragg. So that, instead of reinforcing Rosecrans, General Burnside, after capturing General Frazier with two thousand men in Cumberland Gap on the 9th of September, scattered his forces, having an occasional skirmish with some isolated Confederate band. Had he joined Rosecrans, the result would have been different.

As it was, Bragg, after forcing Rosecrans back to Chattanooga, sent Longstreet to crush Burnside. Longstreet, advancing silently and rapidly, fell upon Colonel Wolford, at Philadelphia, on the 20th of October. Wolford escaped with difficulty. The surprise was complete. Six hundred and fifty men, six pieces of artillery, and a great stock of arms were taken. Burnside, roused by the tidings of danger, concentrated all his available forces at Campbell's Station. Here he made a bold stand, and by means of his artillery checked Longstreet; falling back to another ridge when the Confederate general endeavored to flank him. When his trains had a fair start he resumed his retreat to Knoxville. By the 17th of November, Longstreet was before him ; but Burnside had not been idle. Formidable earthworks covering heavy batteries were not to be carried without heavy loss. Longstreet's first assault carried a hill on Burnside's right ; and on the 28th he assaulted, with a storming party of three brigades, Fort Sanders on the left of Burnside's line ; but General Ferrero repulsed the attack, and Longstreet drew off, after sacrificing eight hundred men

in his rash attempt. By this time his opportunity was lost. He could no longer serve Bragg, and retreated rapidly into Virginia.

When Rosecrans was removed, Halleck telegraphed to Grant to take command of the army, and ordered troops from all parts to Chattanooga: but Grant was sick at New Orleans, and meanwhile Bragg's cavalry under Wheeler had captured in Sequatchie Valley Thomas' train of a thousand wagons loaded with supplies; then another train at McMinnville, besides destroying railroads and bridges to prevent relief reaching him. Thomas was reduced to terrible straits. When Grant at last reached Louisville, October 18th, he telegraphed to Thomas to hold Chattanooga at all hazards, and that general replied: "I will hold on till we starve." Grant, on arriving at Chattanooga on the 23d of October, proceeded with General Thomas and his chief engineer to examine the river. It was decided that Hooker should cross at Bridgeport, where he was, and advance on Wauhatchie, in Lookout Valley. This he did on the 28th, while four thousand men under Brigadier-General W. F. Smith dropped down the river by night and seized the heights at Brown's Ferry, and in the morning completed a pontoon bridge. Grant had thus gained the shortest line for concentrating his troops, and a convenient road for supplies. With scarcely a skirmish between pickets he had made Chattanooga safe.

Law's division of Longstreet's corps on Lookout Mountain had watched Hooker, occasionally sending a shell into his line. He was not strong enough to fight Hooker by daylight, but hoped to surprise part of his force in the woods, and at least cripple him by capturing a train. At one o'clock in the morning he attacked Geary with a wild yell, charging on three sides at once. But Geary held his own; and Schurz came up to his aid, while Tyndale's brigade gallantly car-

ried a hill on his left, and the 73d Ohio charged up a hill still farther behind. Foiled and badly shattered, Law's line recoiled into the darkling woods, leaving one hundred and fifty-three dead and more than a hundred prisoners. Hooker followed up his success by clearing Raccoon Mountain of the enemy.

Bragg, weakened by the absence of Longstreet, made no further attack, but held to his strong line along the western and northern slopes of Lookout Mountain and Mission Ridge, and across the valley at the mouth of Chattanooga Creek.

Sherman, ordered by Grant to join him, had marched from Vicksburg with his corps, harassed all the way by the enemy; but Grant ordered him to use all dispatch, and on the 15th of November he reported in person. Grant at once sent this new force to threaten Bragg's extreme right; but when he had engaged Bragg's attention there, he quietly crossed at the pontoon bridge, and moving around Chattanooga, took position on Thomas' left. On the 23d, Thomas advanced with Granger's corps, Sheridan, Wood, and Palmer. With one bold rush they carried Orchard Ridge, taking the Confederate rifle-pits and many prisoners. Then Hooker moved on Lookout Mountain, which was held by General Stevenson with six brigades, and soon reinforced. But Hooker pressed on, seizing a bridge here, building one there. Then he opened with all his artillery, and Wood and Gross, dashing across, joined Geary, and swept down the valley, driving the enemy before them up the mountain, and following at full speed over ledge and chasm; while Geary swept round the summit and pressed on. Hooker, for fear of surprise, had ordered them to halt at the summit; but they kept on, driving the shattered remnant of the enemy down the eastern side of the mountain. At two o'clock so dense a

cloud enveloped the mountain that no further movement was possible: but Hooker made good his position by good though hasty works.

About sunset the enemy made a final effort to gain the mountain; before morning they abandoned it, leaving rations by the thousand, and abundant camp equipage. A difficult mountain position, held by a brave enemy, with brave troops had been carried.

While he was resting, Sherman was busy crossing, and by noon had bridges across the Tennessee and Chickamauga, eight thousand men over, and the rest crossing, eager to join in the hot work of the day. The firing soon began. A sharp struggle was made for Mission Ridge, but Sherman planted himself there, and soon made his line too strong to fear attack.

Thomas pushed on to join the advanced positions of Sherman and Hooker, while Thomas' cavalry under Colonel Long swept along Bragg's rear, burning Tyner's Station, capturing wagons, and destroying stores—playing the same game on Bragg that he had played before on Rosecrans. Bragg was beaten out of his strong line: he abandoned Lookout Mountain; but Hooker pressed on, delayed by the destruction of bridges. While Osterhaus swung around Mission Ridge on the east, and Geary on the west, Crufts moved upon the enemy's front, well protected as it was by breastworks. At a charge they swept on, bearing the Confederates before them, flanked as they were by Osterhaus and Geary, who captured all who attempted to escape. At sunset, Hooker had cleared the mountain, and encamped amid the rocky heights he had so nobly won.

Sherman met harder work as he advanced down one mountain-slope and up another in face of the enemy. A long, stubborn fight ensued, actually hand to hand; but Corse could not carry the enemy's works,

which were held by General Cleburne, under Lieutenant-General Hardee. But Smith and Loomis flanked the enemy's works; and though the reserves were driven back by a fierce artillery fire, Sherman lost no ground, but was held by the stubborn resistance of his antagonist. Generals were disabled and carried from the field; but though the fight went on, no success had been gained at three o'clock.

Thomas was already in movement. Driving the Confederates under Anderson from their rifle-pits at the foot of the mountain, his men pursued them under a fearful volley of grape and canister up the hill-side, no wavering in his long line till he reached the summit, capturing prisoners, cannon, and ammunition. Only on the left was any resistance made by General Bates. Then the enemy, at the railroad tunnel in front of Sherman, gave way, and were captured or driven across Chickamauga Creek. So rapidly were all these movements made, that large bodies of Confederates, in endeavoring to retreat, were caught in between different portions of Grant's army and captured.

By midnight the whole of Bragg's strong position on Lookout Mountain, Chattanooga Valley, and Mission Ridge, was in Grant's possession, with prisoners, artillery, and small arms in great number; and as he confessed, he owed the escape of his army only to his own thorough knowledge of the country, and Grant's comparative ignorance of it.

Grant, sending off Granger to relieve Knoxville, let Sherman and Hooker at daylight, on the 26th, pursue Bragg, who was in full retreat on Greysville and Ringgold. Many prisoners and some guns were taken in this pursuit; but the stubborn Cleburne made a stand at the

Gap, in White-Oak Ridge, losing a hundred and thirty men, but delaying Hooker, and causing him a loss nearly four times as great. The pursuit was not continued beyond Ringgold, as Sherman too turned toward Knoxville, and by a forced march compelled Longstreet to raise the siege.

In this glorious series of battles, which effectually broke the Confederate power in that section, Grant lost, in killed, wounded, and missing, about fifty-six hundred men, capturing more than six thousand prisoners, forty cannon, and seven thousand stand of arms. Bragg lost in killed and wounded about three thousand, but his loss in war material was very heavy ; and the spirit of his army was broken.

The operations west of the Mississippi were occasional movements of Confederate forces from Arkansas, which was one of their strongholds, upon Missouri, where they were always sure to find sympathizers and recruits. These campaigns served only to fill Missouri with desolation and ruin, and did not contribute materially to the final results of the war. When the Confederates lost the control of the Mississippi by the battle of Belmont, the loss of Fort Henry, Donaldson, and Island No. 10, as well as of Forts Jackson and St. Philip, and New Orleans below, and finally, by the loss of Vicksburg, their armies west of the Mississippi were completely cut off from those which were fighting the great contest on the east.

Early in 1863, four thousand men under General Marmaduke issued from Arkansas, and avoiding General Blunt, struck at Springfield. But General Brown, in command there, was a man of resolution and resource. Although he had only militia at his command and men of the 118th Iowa, and some convalescents, or, as the soldiers called them, "the Quinine Brigade," he fought Marmaduke so bravely and skil-

fully, all through the 8th day of January, that the Confederates at night drew off, having lost two hundred men.

Marmaduke then moved on Hartsville, but was confronted by Colonel Merrill, and again repulsed after a spirited fight, in which he lost several prominent officers. Fearing that General Blunt would be upon him, Marmaduke retreated to Arkansas, and was soon after attacked at Batesville.

Fayetteville was the chief outpost of the United States forces on the Arkansas frontier. It was held by Colonel Harrison, when, on the 18th of April, it was attacked by General Cabell at the head of two thousand mounted men. But the cavalry charge of the Confederates was met by a determined and skilful resistance, and Cabell withdrew as rapidly as he advanced.

Two days later, Marmaduke again entered Missouri at the head of an army swelled by reinforcements from Price's corps. The object of his expedition was Cape Girardeau, on the Mississippi, where there was a large depot of army stores. General John McNeil, seeing his aim, pushed for the same point from Bloomfield, with twelve hundred men and six guns, and took command of the post, where he found only five hundred men. Sending off all the stores he could remove, he prepared to fight. Marmaduke summoned him to surrender, giving him only thirty minutes to decide. McNeil at once opened, and though again summoned, was too busy to talk, but kept on firing. Marmaduke, who had not expected such a warm reception, lost severely, and seeing gunboats approach with troops on board, again made for the Arkansas frontier.

Down in the Indian Territory there was also fighting. At the beginning of the war, the agents of the Cherokees, Creeks, Choctaws,

and Chickasaws were Southern men, and many of the Indians, who had adopted white ways, favored the cause of the seceding States. The Indians were easily persuaded that the United States Government was overthrown, and that their only hope was to join the South. When the Confederate government was organized, Albert Pike was appointed Commissioner of Indian Affairs, treaties were made with the tribes, and many Indians took up arms on the Confederate side. Before the end of the first year, however, many began to see that they had acted rashly. Two parties at once arose, some siding with the United States, while the rest adhered to the enemy. On the 20th of May, 1863, Colonel Phillips, who held Fort Blunt in the Creek Nation, with eight hundred white soldiers and a regiment of Creek Indians, was beset by a large Confederate force under Colonel Coffey; but after driving off some cattle, they retired, and were soon pursued by Phillips, who drove them across the Arkansas with loss.

On the 1st of July, a wagon-train of supplies for Fort Blunt, although guarded by a cavalry force, and eight hundred negro soldiers and five hundred Indians, was attacked at the crossing of Cabin Creek by a force of Texans and Indians under Standwatie, a Cherokee. But the attack was as badly managed as it was rashly planned, and Standwatie was driven off.

This was a curious battle, from the mixture of races. The Confederates from the commencement of the war employed the negroes in building fortifications, throwing up earthworks, and even occasionally as soldiers. As the armies of the United States penetrated into slave territory, numbers of negroes flocked into camp, and it was soon found necessary to employ them. General Hunter at Hilton Head began to organize them as soldiers. This excited some protests in Congress, but

his course was sustained. General Phelps did the same at Ship Island, and, when General Butler forbid it, and required him to use them only in menial labor, resigned his commission: yet Butler himself was soon forced to adopt the same course. The Confederate Government viewed this step with alarm and rage: the President of the Confederacy, Jefferson Davis, by an order of August 21st, 1862, declared Hunter and Phelps outlaws, and directed any officer who had been engaged in drilling or organizing negro soldiers, to be treated as a felon when taken, and not as a prisoner of war.

But this threat did not deter any one. Negro regiments were formed, and rendered essential service on many occasions. An act of Congress was passed July 16th, 1862, formally authorizing it; and when volunteers began to decrease in number, and it was found necessary to resort to the unpopular course of conscription or drafting, so repugnant to every Anglo-Saxon community, no further difficulty was made about accepting negro soldiers.

President Lincoln, at a later date than that of which we are treating, July 30th, 1863, issued an order directing that a Confederate soldier should be executed for every negro prisoner put to death by the Confederates; and a Confederate soldier put to hard labor in retaliation for every negro soldier sold or enslaved by the enemy.

The Indians employed in the contending armies did some service, but the tribes suffered terribly. Their country was ravaged, the tribes were divided into factions, and their progress in civilization checked, while all their bad qualities were called out by war. Those in the army gained something perhaps by the habits of subordination and system which they acquired, but when thrown back into the tribes were not improved.

These operations around Fort Blunt roused General Blunt to take steps to protect that advanced post. Having ascertained that the Confederate General Cooper lay at Honey Springs with six thousand men, awaiting reinforcements before advancing, Blunt resolved to attack him at once. Marching at midnight with three thousand men, he crossed the Arkansas, and on the 17th of July came upon Cooper's encampment. He charged instantly, and with such a dash that he carried their position though well covered. The Confederates held their ground, fighting well for two hours, but then broke and fled in disorder, having lost nearly seven hundred men. While Blunt was pursuing them, Cabell came up with the Texan reinforcements, but he did not attack Blunt, and that commander was too prudent to risk his battle-worn men with a fresh foe. By morning, however, when they were ready to meet the enemy, Cabell had disappeared. Blunt pursued him in vain into the Choctaw Nation, and, after taking Fort Smith, was nearly captured by Quantrell, a sanguinary guerrilla leader, while returning with a small escort. The guerrilla captured and butchered in cold blood many on this occasion, eighty in all being killed.

A Confederate attack on Pineville, in the southwest of Missouri, was repulsed by Colonel Catherwood with the Missouri cavalry; and Coffey, after suffering severe loss in men and supplies, retreated.

About this time the sanguinary leader who went by the name of Quantrell began a series of raids. His first blow was struck at Lawrence, Kansas, which had from the time of the old troubles been a place hateful to the South. At early dawn on the 21st of August, Quantrell surprised this place, killed every negro and German who could be found, and many others—in all, one hundred and forty unresisting persons; he then plundered the place, and burned a hundred

and eighty-five buildings. He retreated in all haste, and managed to outstrip his pursuers, although some of his party were killed.

After the surrender of Vicksburg, a force under General Steele was sent to reduce Little Rock. With a force from Missouri under General Davidson, Steele had nearly twelve thousand men at his command. Davidson took the advance, and, after a series of skirmishes, reached Bayou Fourche, five miles from Little Rock, on the 9th of September, after crossing the river. Here Marmaduke was drawn up in a strong position to oppose him with a force of cavalry, infantry, and artillery. Steele, on the other side of the river, galled Marmaduke by an artillery fire, and then Davidson by a resolute charge broke Marmaduke's line; and the United States troops, sabre in hand, rushed into the city as the Confederates fled through and beyond it. The capital of Arkansas was then formally surrendered, but steamboats and railroad cars had been destroyed by fire by Price before evacuating.

In these operations Steele lost few men by death or wounds in battle, yet his force was reduced nearly one-half by sickness, marching as they did through low swampy lands late in the summer.

The Confederates endeavored to retrieve their loss by an attack on Pine Bluff; but Marmaduke was again unfortunate. His force of twenty-five hundred men was repulsed by Colonel Powell Clayton, who held the place with only six hundred men. Marmaduke's shells fired the town, but he utterly failed to carry it, and finally drew off, after losing nearly two hundred men.

Then Shelby and Coffey made a dash into Missouri. They reached Booneville, only to begin a hasty retreat. General Brown was at their heels, and finally overtaking them at Arrow Rock, on the 12th of October, fought them till nightfall, and lying on his arms during the night,

in the morning completely routed them, with the loss of all their artillery and baggage, and some three hundred in killed, wounded, and prisoners. General McNeil joined in the pursuit, and was soon after appointed to command the Army of the Frontier.

It was not only among the Southern Indians that the Confederates had exerted an influence. Agents from their side, and from the British possessions, had roused the Sioux against the white settlers. That warlike and treacherous nation of Indians needed little to stimulate them to a war. On Sunday, the 17th of August, 1862, while the frontier towns were in peaceful repose, the Sioux began the work of blood. Five persons were murdered at Acton. Then, as if maddened at the sight of blood, or following out the concerted plan, they fell next day on settlers in the fields and roads, and even lured into an ambuscade a party of troops under Captain Marsh, killing him with many of his men. The old scenes of terror so familiar in New England, Wyoming, Cherry Valley, and Kentucky, were revived. Men fled from their newly formed homes, happy if they reached a large village in safety. New Ulm was crowded with fugitives, and had just organized a force for defense, when, on the 19th, a body of three hundred Indians assailed the place, killing some of the people, firing houses, and waylaying all who approached the town. But the resistance was sturdy, and when Captain Flandreau came dashing down upon them with a mounted troop, killing many of the dusky warriors, the Sioux drew off, and hastening across the country, nearly surprised Fort Ridgeley, where treacherous half-breeds had rendered the guns useless. For three days they kept up the attack, but were steadily repulsed.

Then they once more tried to take New Ulm. There not a moment

had been lost—the place was made extremely strong; but the Indian force had swelled in numbers, and came on with great fury. The pickets are driven in; the first houses reached and fired; the Sioux are actually in the town, their deadly rifles bringing down man after man: but Flandreau by a bold dash drives them out of the town. All day long the fight goes on, and the next day—half the place is in ruins. A small force arrives at last to help them: but all agree to retire and leave the town to its fate. Around that beleaguered place, in settlements, and in deadly fight, nearly five hundred people had fallen. Fort Abercrombie was furiously assailed by another band, who were driven off with loss. Here their success ended. The people were thoroughly alarmed and on their guard. Troops were concentrating from various points. The Indians, retreating in all haste, are overtaken by General Sibley at Wood Lake. There Little Crow was utterly routed, and fled with a part of his tribe to Dakota. Five hundred Indians were taken, and a court martial at once proceeded to determine their fate. Three hundred were sentenced to be hanged; but of these only some forty were actually executed.

The next summer, General Sibley followed up his success, defeating the Sioux at Missouri Couteau, Big Mound, Dead-Buffalo Lake, and Stony Lake, killing a hundred and fifty, while Sully, in September, 1863, routed a band at Whitestone Hill, killing many, and capturing a hundred and fifty prisoners. The remnant fled across the Missouri and eluded pursuit. This virtually ended the Sioux War.

CHAPTER X.

Operations from North Carolina to Florida in 1862–3—Capture of Fort Pulaski—Jacksonville taken and abandoned—Hunter repulsed at Secessionville—The Nashville—Dupont Repulsed—Ironclad Raid from Charleston—Attack on Fort Sumter—The Swamp Angel—Wagner taken—Hill at Newberne—Vallandigham's case—The Draft-Riots in New York—Negro Soldiers.

On the Southern coast some operations had meanwhile taken place which did not reflect any great credit on the arms of the United States. The occupation of Port Royal had not led to any important result, the expeditions to various points having gained no decisive victory. In June, General Hunter planned an attack on Secessionville, a strong post on James Island held by Colonel Lamar. At early dawn, on the 16th, a force of six thousand men under General Wright advanced on these works. Over a narrow neck of land swept by grape and canister pressed the United States columns, led by General Stevens; but a ditch and high parapet faced them, and the brave men of Michigan, and the New York 79th, Highlanders, were mercilessly mowed down. In half an hour half the force lay dead and dying; and so fierce was the struggle that, with all their defenses, more than two hundred of the Confederates were struck down.

Wright drew off, leaving his dead and wounded on the field; and thus ended General Hunter's attempt to capture Charleston.

General Mitchell, the astronomer, who next took command, planned a movement to break the railroad connection between Charleston and

Savannah. But he was soon after prostrated by disease. Then General Brannan attempted it, and pushed on to Pocotaligo, where the Confederates under Walker met and checked his advance, until Brannan saw that troops were coming up from Savannah and Charleston, and that he must retire to avoid capture. Gunboats had meanwhile run up the Coosawhatchie, and Colonel Barton landing, attacked a train bearing troops from Savannah, and after dispersing it, advanced on Pocotaligo, but he too was forced to retire, and the whole object of the expedition was missed.

Fort McAllister, on the Ogeechee, was a strong Confederate work guarding the navigation of that river, interrupted here by piles driven in the channel. Under its guns lay the Nashville, ready to sail as a war vessel. On the 27th of February, Captain Worden, in the Montauk, ascended the river to attack and destroy her. In spite of the torpedoes in the channel and the fire of the fort, he ran within less than a mile of his antagonist and opened fire, sustained by three consorts which could not approach so near. Before long a shell exploding in the Nashville set her on fire, flames burst from every part, her guns exploded, and her magazine at last blew up, shattering the vessel to fragments.

Elated by this, Commodore Dupont attacked Fort McAllister, with the Passaic, Patapsco, Montauk, Ericsson, and Nahant, all ironclads; but this action of March 3d showed that if ironclads could stand the fire of forts, forts built of sand cannot be injured by ironclads. After a tremendous expenditure of ammunition on both sides, lasting for hours, not a man was killed on either side, and no material injury done.

Soon after the Confederates captured the United States steamer Isaac

Smith, sent up the Stono, and taking heart at their recent successes, on the 31st of January sent out from Charleston two ironclads, the Palmetto State and Chicora, with three steamboats as tenders, to attack the blockading fleet, having learned by spies that the Powhatan and Canandaigua, the two largest men-of-war, were at Port Royal coaling. The Palmetto State ran into the Mercedita, and sent a seven-inch shell through her steam-drum, completely disabling her, and compelling her to strike. Then she attacked the Keystone State, setting her on fire with a shell. Captain Leroy drew off to extinguish the fire, and then tried to run the Palmetto State down ; but his steam-chests were also pierced, and the rifled shells tore through his vessel. The fleet now bore down and rescued the two vessels; upon which the Confederate gunboats sailed back—and General Beauregard and Commodore Ingraham issued a proclamation declaring that the blockading fleet had been sunk, dispersed, or driven off, and that therefore the port was open and the blockade raised.

The United States Government then resolved to make a serious effort to reduce Fort Sumter and the other defenses of Charleston. Twelve thousand men, Foster's 18th Corps, were sent down from North Carolina, and Commodore Dupont prepared his ironclads and gunboats for action. On the 6th of April, a beautiful morning, with a slight haze hanging over the scene, the fleet steamed in. They passed Morris Island, and kept on toward the channel between Fort Sumter and Sullivan's Island, when at last the fort opened upon the Weehawken. The plan had been to pass beyond Sumter and attack the northwest face, but this was soon found impossible : the channel on each side was closed by rows of piles or hawsers with torpedoes attached. The fleet had then to engage the fort on its strongest sides, uuder the fire

of all the batteries erected by the Confederates on the land side. The Keokuk, Captain Rhind, ran gallantly up to within five hundred yards of Fort Sumter, and kept up a steady fire till she was riddled and sinking. The Catskill and Montauk, close up to her, the Nahant, Passaic, Nantucket, and Ironsides, all poured in their broadsides ; but the artillery of the fort, hundreds of the best rifled guns, fired with careful aim, proved too much for the fleet of the United States. Convinced at last of the uselessness of the attempt, the ships drew off, but the Keokuk sank just as she got outside, the wounded having been removed, the well swimming for their lives.

This tremendous artillery fire had caused little loss of life on either side : the Confederates had two guns dismounted, and had crippled and sunk one vessel.

A movement with troops under General Truman Seymour was abandoned on the failure of the ironclad attack.

The next work for the navy was to capture the Atlanta, an old blockade-runner, which had been transformed into a sort of Merrimac ironclad at Savannah. On the 17th of June she came out of the Wilmington River, with two steamboats, the latter loaded with ladies and gentlemen from Savannah, who came to see a victory won. The Weekawken, Captain John Rodgers, seeing the ironclad, ran up to engage her. The Atlanta opened fire, but Rodgers kept steadily on till within three hundred yards, when he opened with his heavy fifteen-inch gun. His terrible balls went crashing into the Atlanta as he advanced. A port-hole shutter is shattered ; the pilot-house swept away like chaff ; the iron and wood fly in splinters, as a ball tears through from side to side, killing and wounding fourteen men before it dropped into the water. Fifteen minutes' fight, and the white flag is raised : the steam-

boats steal away crest-fallen, with grave doubts about the speedy raising of the blockade.

General Gillmore and Commodore Dahlgren next took command of the army and navy before Charleston. In the plan of operations devised by General Gillmore, the first point was to establish himself firmly on Morris Island. To effect this, he began a series of operations to bewilder the Confederates: he sent out expeditions in various directions; General Terry made a demonstration on James Island; while Colonel Higginson ascended the Edisto as if to renew the old attempt to cut off communications between Charleston and Savannah. While the enemy's attention was thus distracted, Gillmore cautiously threw men and guns upon Folly Island, where General Vogdes was already posted.

On the 8th of July, Terry again ascended the Stono, while Strong with two thousand men pushed up in boats to the junction of Light-house Inlet. At daybreak, Vogdes' batteries, forty-seven guns in all, opened on the Confederates in their front, and the ironclads running up cannonaded Fort Wagner. Then Strong threw his men ashore in spite of a heavy fire of artillery and musketry. By nine o'clock he had carried all the Confederate batteries on the south end of Morris Island, giving the United States forces possession of three-fourths of that island.

The next morning, General Strong attempted to carry Fort Wagner by assault; but the gunboat cannonade had not weakened it or disconcerted its defenders. Strong's columns were met by so fierce a fire that they recoiled. It was clear that the place was too strong to be captured except by regular siege.

The Confederates saw the danger of the advantage gained, and at

once prepared to thwart Gillmore. Terry was attacked with great spirit on the 16th of July, but he was on the alert, and aided by the gun-boats, easily repulsed the assault.

Two days after, the bombardment of Fort Wagner began. All day long the land batteries and ironclads poured in shot and shell, till the United States commanders believed the place a wreck and the garrison disheartened and scattered.

The next day the assault was made, Colonel Shaw leading with his Massachusetts regiment of colored men. Under a heavy fire the column pushed on till they reached the ditch, when cannon and musket opened at short range a perfect hurricane of fire. On pressed the assailants up the rugged face of the fort, and the Stars and Stripes are planted on the top. In a moment of deadly struggle, Shaw fell dead, General Strong was mortally wounded, and officer after officer went down, till at last, to stop the slaughter, Major Plympton, the highest surviving officer, drew off the remnant of the brigade—Shaw's regiment, commanded by a lieutenant, Higginson, himself a mere boy.

Fearful as the slaughter had been, the United States commander did not despair. Another assault by the second brigade, led by Putnam's New Hampshire regiment, was as nobly made and as gallantly repulsed. Fifteen hundred men in the uniform of the United States lay dead or wounded on the parapet and slopes of Wagner or the line of approach.

Failing in this attempt to carry Wagner by storm, Gillmore, a good engineer, pushed on his siege-works, defending his parallels well against a sudden sortie from the fort, into which the Confederates could easily throw a large force from Charleston for any such movement. Gillmore had not only to meet the fire of Wagner and Battery

Gregg behind, but also to protect himself against the cross fire of Fort Sumter.

To check the latter, he planted batteries of very heavy guns within two miles of that renowned fort, and these, manned by Admiral Dahlgren, soon began a fire that told on the stout walls of Sumter, although Commander George W. Rodgers, of the Catskill, was killed.

This did not satisfy Gillmore. A marsh west of Morris Island seemed to him a spot from which Charleston itself could be reached by shot and shell. To plant a battery amid the mire and ooze, at least sixteen feet deep, seemed impossible ; but he drove down piles to reach the firm sand, and on them built a heavy-gun platform. On this he established the Marsh Battery, protected by a sandbag parapet and epaulement. One single gun, an eight-inch rifled Parrott, was planted here, and all looked eagerly to see what it would effect.

On the 17th of August the bombardment of Wagner and Sumter was renewed, and all day long the thunder of artillery resounded, as batteries and ironclads replied to the forts. By the 23d, nearly all the barbette guns of Sumter were dismounted, its walls were masses of ruin ; so that the Confederates removed many of the cannon.

Then Gillmore summoned Beauregard to abandon Morris Island and Sumter, threatening to bombard Charleston if he refused. As no reply came, Gillmore opened from the Marsh Battery, whence the "Swamp Angel," as the soldiers called the piece placed there, soon sent shells into the startled streets of Charleston.

Wagner, however, was not surrendered ; so Gillmore pushed on his works till he reached a narrow neck within two hundred and forty yards of the fort. Before him the ground was filled with torpedoes, and the approach was covered by a concentrated fire of the fort.

Trenching could go no further. Up then to the front came mortars and rifled guns, and powerful calcium lights enabled them to work steadily on while blinding the enemy by their glare.

On the 5th of September these batteries and the ironclads opened, and the besieged were driven to their bombproofs. Then the sappers plied their implements, till the guns of the fort were completely under range of a battery as soon as it should be placed.

The Confederates had contested the place long and well. Now the end had come, and while Gillmore was preparing to storm it in the morning, the garrison escaped silently by night, and moved so stealthily that only seventy men fell into Gillmore's hands. This sand fort had stood a fearful cannonade from the heaviest artillery known, yet the bombproofs were unharmed.

The next day, September 8th, Commander Stephens, with thirty rowboats of Dahlgren's fleet attempted to take Sumter ; but the men clambering over the ruined wall were fired upon by Major Elliot, the Confederate commander, and their boats were destroyed by the Confederate land-batteries. Of the two hundred gallant tars sent upon this rash expedition some eighty were killed, the rest made prisoners.

The Swamp Angel had done little real damage to Charleston, but Wagner and Battery Gregg were now turned on the city, and new batteries of mortars and rifled guns planted on the island brought half the city under fire.

Charleston, the city where Secession was first proclaimed, was thus at last made to feel the realities of war. The profitable blockade running ceased ; and day by day shot and shell came hustling into the city, spreading destruction and making a part of it a desert.

But the people did not yield. The barriers still prevented the approach of the United States ironclads. Sumter was still theirs, and they endeavored to remount guns, but this only drew on the ruined fort a new bombardment, which was renewed whenever any signs of activity were perceived amid the ruined works. Then attempts were made to destroy the shipping by torpedoes, but this too failed, and for the rest of the year the condition of affairs remained unchanged, Gillmore's great and well-won advantages not giving the cause as yet either Sumter or Charleston, two points on which the heart of the North was set.

In North Carolina there had been no important operations. General D. H. Hill was indeed sent by the Confederate government to recapture Newberne ; but his large force was easily held in check till reinforcements came up.

Washington in that State was his next point. On the 30th of March he appeared before that place. Fortunately for the cause of the United States, General Foster, commandant of the department was there, and prepared for a vigorous defence, although he could not prevent Hill from securing several important ridges commanding the town.

Hill, however, acted feebly, losing valuable time and enabling Foster to strengthen his works.

At last the bombardment began, Hill opening with fourteen heavy guns to which Foster steadily replied, and even endeavored to capture Hill's battery on Rodman's Point.

Meanwhile a small fleet of gunboats came up with a land force of three thousand men under General Prince, who refused, however, to attack the Hill's Point battery. Foster nearly out of ammunition was

thus almost reduced with abundant reinforcements near him. Rowboats by night alone enabled him to obtain ammunition to keep up the fight, till at last a steamboat bravely ran the gauntlet of the Confederate batteries, and debarked at the fort the Fifth Rhode Island. Foster at once protecting the steamboat's works with hay, ran down to Newberne, and brought up seven thousand men stationed there under General Palmer, and taking up Prince's men, landed to attack Hill's Point. Hill, however, did not wait to receive him ; he abandoned his works and was in full retreat when Foster came up.

Some minor operations took place during the summer, a bold dash of Colonel Jones, with some Massachusetts troops on a Confederate outpost at Gum Swamp in May ; and cavalry raids to break up the Weldon and Wilmington railroads at different points being the only events worth noticing.

The war at first was carried on by militia, and the few regulars constituting the United States Army ; then volunteers were called out from the several States. The same course had been followed in the Confederate States, although they had no regular army to begin with.

As the war which few at first supposed likely to last more than a few months dragged along, and became a gigantic struggle, in which the whole strength of two great sections of the country was arrayed in arms, it became evident that neither side could long depend on volunteer enlistments, which after the first enthusiasm gradually decreased in numbers. Large bounties were then offered, and this brought in a new class of enlistments. The South having less resources, was the first to adopt a system of conscription or drafting, similar to that in France. By an act of the Confederate Congress, passed April 16th, 1862, all able-bodied white males between the ages of eighteen and

thirty-five were made liable to enrollment in the army for the period of the war. This enabled the South to fill up its sadly-thinned ranks.

The government of the United States was not slow in following the example thus set, and which made a similar course necessary. On the 3d of March, at the very close of a session, Congress passed an act by which provost marshals and other officers were to enroll all able-bodied white citizens, and aliens who had declared their intention to become citizens. Those between the ages of twenty and thirty-five constituted the first class, all others the second class. The President was authorized to draft at his discretion after July 1st the number needed for the army. Any one drafted had to pay a commutation of three hundred dollars or report himself for service within a given time under penalty of being treated as a deserter.

Such a step was unheard of; it was repugnant to the whole feelings of the people, England even never having resorted to such a measure in any of her wars. It accordingly excited throughout the country the most indignant protests. The Supreme Court in New York and in Pennsylvania declared the act unconstitutional, but the Administration prepared to enforce it at all hazards. To strike down opposition by a bold blow, Clement L. Vallandigham, a prominent Democratic politician of Ohio, who had in recent speeches denounced with unsparing severity the acts of the Administration, which he deemed in violation of the Constitution and laws of the United States and the rights of the States, was arrested by military authority at night while in bed in his own house in Ohio, for words uttered by him in a speech at Mount Vernon. It was one of the gravest violations of the rights of a citizen that had ever occurred in the United States, and one that must ever be deplored.

This civilian, in no way connected with the army, was brought before a court martial, and of course denied a trial by jury. The farce ended by his conviction on a charge of expressing sympathy for those in arms against the government, and he was sentenced to close confinement to the end of the war, General Burnside designating Fort Warren in Boston harbor as the place of his confinement.

President Lincoln recoiled from this, although he confirmed the proceedings ; but he directed Mr. Vallandigham to be sent through the military lines of the United States into the Southern Confederacy, ordering that if he returned he was to be confined as directed by the Court. A United States Judge applied to for a *habeas corpus* refused it.

Torn from his home and sent into the scene of military operations, Mr. Vallandigham made his way to Wilmington in North Carolina, and thence by way of Nassau to Canada. In vain meetings were called in various parts to protest against an act which struck at the very vitals of American liberty ; the Administration, conscious of its strength in the support of an immense army, overruled all opposition.

It was very evident that it would enforce the obnoxious Draft Act. The 13th of July was appointed for its enforcement in the great city of New York ; everything foreboded trouble. The drawing at the corner of Third avenue and Forty-sixth street had gone on for about half an hour, when the mob which had gathered attacked the house, scattering officers and clerks, tearing up all the documents connected with the draft. The building was then set on fire. The police and draft officers were powerless to check the rioters, who had increased in numbers to thousands, and drove off a small force of the invalid corps sent to check them. Almost immediately the spirit of

riot spread throughout the city; the great factories and public works stopped, and the rioters swelled by constant accessions. Many, who had beheld at first in the resistance to an unjust law only a course similar to that of our fathers in 1776, recoiled at the scenes of violence and bloodshed that now disgraced New York. The rioters pursued all negroes whom they saw, hanging several in the streets, driving others out of their houses, and destroying all they possessed. The Colored Orphan Asylum was in this way attacked and burnt to the ground after the complete destruction of all its contents. Everywhere houses were pillaged and property destroyed. The mob ruled the city. The public conveyances stopped running; business ceased; people kept in their houses, or vainly endeavored to escape from the city in their panic. This terrible state of affairs lasted for three days, and spread even to Brooklyn, where a fine grain elevator was destroyed by a mob.

Gradually military came in, militia were called out, and a series of battles in various parts of the city took place, one of the most important being on Third avenue, where the rioters made a decided stand against Captain Putnam of the Twelfth regulars. This was on Thursday, and that night, and the next day, saw the city filled with a military force able to overawe all opposition.

The series of battles in the streets of New York during the Draft Riots were attended with great loss of life, so great that every effort was made to suppress details. Yet there can be little doubt that nearly a thousand people were killed or mortally wounded.

The City Government at once raised money to procure men to fill up the quota demanded from New York, and thus prevented a repetition of the bloody work.

The obnoxious act called out similar but less organized and bloody opposition in Boston, Jersey City, Troy, Jamaica (N. Y.), and in parts of Wisconsin and Pennsylvania.

The ensuing elections showed that a majority of voters in the Northern States were resolved to sustain the Administration in all measures, and the Republican party ruled with a stronger hand than ever; the courts were filled up with judges who decided with the predominant party, and it was evident that, according to the old Roman maxim, "amid arms the laws are silent."

CHAPTER XI.

An Offer of Amnesty—Gillmore's Operations in Florida—Seymour defeated at Olustee—A Convention at Jacksonville in favor of the United States—Unsuccessful Operations in South Carolina—A Stirring Campaign in North Carolina on Land and Water—Bank's Red River Expedition—He retires—The Fleet carried over the Rapids by Engineering Skill—Operations in Texas and Arkansas—Rosecrans in Missouri—Price's last Attempt to carry the State—Battles at Pilot Knob, Little and Big Blue, Little Osage and Newtonia.

WHEN the Congress of the United States opened on the 7th of December, 1863, President Lincoln sent in his annual message accompanied with a proclamation of amnesty in which he offered a free pardon to all engaged in the opposition to the government of the United States, on condition of their taking an oath to support the Constitution, and to "abide by and faithfully support all acts of Congress passed during the existing rebellion, having reference to slaves." As all the leaders on the Confederate side, whether civil or military, were excepted, no notice was taken of this Amnesty, and only in rare cases did any one come forward to profit by its terms.

Matters remained in the same position before Charleston, but when

Dahlgren refused to attempt to fight his way up to the city with his ironclads, Gillmore, not to remain idle, opened the operations of the year 1864 by sending a force into Florida in twenty steamers under the command of General Truman Seymour.

Jacksonville was occupied without opposition on the 7th of February, and the next day Seymour's advance, under Colonel Henry, pushed on to surprise Finnegan's Confederate force eight miles west of Jacksonville. The camp was captured, most of the Confederates having retired; Baldwin was next taken, with large amounts of munitions and provisions, some guns and camp equipage. Still pushing on, he captured Sanderson with more spoil, and at eleven o'clock on the morning of the 9th, he came upon Finnegan in a strong position. He fell back to await Seymour's arrival with the main body. Finnegan, however, fell back to Olustee, and when Seymour came up, he started in pursuit in direct contravention of the orders of General Gillmore, who had come to Florida, but returned.

On the 20th of February, Seymour's little army, wearied out with a toilsome march, came upon Finnegan covered by a swamp and pine forest, with his flanks well protected. Seymour threw his troops upon the enemy, pushing his guns up to the very edge of the woods. The men went down like chaff; regiments were cut to pieces by a fire from an enemy whom they could not see. Seymour fought with reckless bravery, rushing from point to point to rally his men, but showing little generalship. Colonel Montgomery, by a charge of the 54th Massachusetts, and 1st North Carolina, checked and repulsed a Confederate attack and saved the army from a rout. Then under fire of his remaining guns Seymour began to retreat, having lost fifteen hundred in killed and wounded on his ill-advised advance.

Destroying property as he retired, he at last reached Jacksonville. There a Convention was called, but it was a mere farce. The attempt to restore Florida to its rank as one of the States had utterly failed. The defeat at Olustee destroyed all hopes of gaining the State, and beyond the destruction of some salt works near St. Augustine, and at Lake Ocola, which supplied the Confederate army, the operations of the United States army in the ancient land of Florida were perfectly fruitless.

Similarly mismanaged was an expedition for South Carolina, in which four brigades were sent in July to attack the Confederates at Legareville. The troops had no artillery, and coming upon a Confederate battery well supported, sent a negro regiment to attack it, and when in five spirited charges it had lost nearly a hundred in killed and wounded the whole force retired from the Battle of Bloody Bridge.

The operations in North Carolina were more stirring. The foothold gained there by the United States forces had been retained and that was all. But this was galling to the Confederates, who early in 1864, resolved on a vigorous effort to dislodge them. On the 1st of February, the Confederate General Pickett suddenly attacked and carried by assault an outpost at Bachelor's Creek, near Newbern, and menaced that city, a part of his daring men in boats gallantly boarding the United States gunboat Underwriter, lying at the wharf under the guns of two batteries. When these opened the captors fired their prize and retreated. Plymouth was held by General Wessels with twenty-four hundred men, composed of New York, Pennsylvania, and Connecticut men. His position was well fortified, and three gunboats were anchored in the river. The Confederates advanced upon the

place so stealthily, that General Hoke, with seven thousand men, was within two miles of the place before Wessels was apprised of his danger. Fort Warren, the highest outpost up the river, was first attacked, and a gunboat going to her assistance was disabled: then Fort Wessels below was surrounded and forced to surrender. Meanwhile, the Albemarle, a Confederate ram ran past Fort Warren, and sinking the gunboat Southfield, so cut up the Miami, killing her commander and many of her men, that she fled down the Neuse, leaving the Albemarle in command of the river to co-operate with General Hoke in his attack on the town.

Next morning Hoke made his grand attack. Ransom, with one brigade on the right; Hoke himself with two on the left, in the face of a murderous fire carried two forts, taking the whole garrison prisoners. The town was then easily carried. Wessels still held Fort Williams, and was pouring in grape and case-shot with deadly aim, till he was so enfiladed that resistance was hopeless. He at last surrendered, with one thousand six hundred effective men. Hoke's loss was very severe, but his victory was gallantly won.

Washington at the head of Pamlico Sound was then evacuated. So that almost in a moment all the posts gained by the United States arms were swept away, and little left of them but Newbern and Roanoke Island. Hoke prepared to follow up his advantage, but a reverse came. The Albemarle ran down with two consorts to attack the United States gunboats at the mouth of the Roanoke. The gunboats soon drove her consorts out of the fight, and a struggle began between the Albemarle and her three antagonists. After a cannonade that did no harm on either side, though at short range, the Sassacus ran the Albemarle down, sending her hull under water with the shock, but not

sinking her. Then the cannonade was renewed, the Sassacus at every opportunity sending a shot into some vulnerable point, till a Confederate bolt pierced one of her boilers, completely disabling her; yet she kept up the fight, and as the steam lifted from the scene, she saw the Albemarle retiring from the fight, badly injured; the Sassacus, crippled as she was, followed, keeping up her fire. Hoke's hopes of besieging Newbern were based on the co-operation of the Albemarle. He endeavored to repair her, and bring her again into action, but Lieutenant Cushing, in October, ran up in a steam launch and fired a torpedo boat which sunk the Albemarle behind her barricade of logs, Cushing and his men refusing to surrender when their launch was disabled by the Confederate batteries, but managing to escape and reach the vessels in the river below.

Hoke had meanwhile been summoned to Virginia, and Commander Macomb, running up the river, recaptured Plymouth, taking some prisoners, guns, and stores.

The year wore away without any more real fighting in North Carolina, although General Wild, in October, led a force of colored troops into Camden county, which returned to Roanoke Island with twenty-five hundred slaves, and a great many horses and cattle.

On the Atlantic coast little had been gained if anything at all during this year. From North Carolina to Florida things remained as they were: the people showed no disposition to yield, or to abandon their new Confederacy for the old Union. What the United States could hold by its troops, that bent to its sway and no more.

In the Southwest there were some important operations, which failed, however, to produce the expected results. General Halleck formed a plan for a campaign on the Red River, in which ten thousand men

from Sherman's army under General A. J. Smith, were to capture Fort de Russy, and then push on to Alexandria, where General Banks was to meet him with fifteen thousand men from New Orleans. The combined army was then to move on Shreveport, to which General Steele from Arkansas was also to march with fifteen thousand men. The plan was badly concerted, and prepared for a disastrous failure.

Smith's force in transports conveyed by Admiral Porter's ironclads, ascended the Red River to Simmsport, which the Confederates evacuated, falling back to Fort de Russy. The gunboats removing obstructions in the river, kept on to that fort as Smith did by land. With remarkable energy, he started from Simmsport at daylight, marched forty miles, built a bridge, and finally reaching Fort de Russy, assaulted it and carried the place, taking ten guns and nearly three hundred prisoners, and accomplished it all before sunset.

The Confederate force under General Walker, retreated up the river. Porter's vessel then reduced Alexandria, on the 16th of March, and General Lee, with the cavalry of Franklin's command in Banks' force, entered that place on the 19th, and on the 20th, his whole force arrived. Steele, however, was still far away; and part of Smith's command was called to Vicksburg, while the necessity of establishing a depot of supplies, and guarding it still further, reduced Banks' effective force. The enemy were not going to let Shreveport fall without a struggle. Troops from Texas and Arkansas came on, so that General Kirby Smith confronted Banks with a force somewhat superior to his in numbers. Still Banks pushed on, and met the enemy at Sabine Cross Roads, three miles below Mansfield; the main body of the Confederate line, being hidden in pine woods beyond the crest of a hill. Franklin was in the rear, and the advance was outflanked by

the Confederates and forced back. At five o'clock Franklin came up, and a new line was formed, but the Confederates, elated with their first victory, again flanked Banks, and charging desperately crowded his army back, capturing nearly a thousand men and ten guns, as they became crowded in the narrow road. Nearly the whole baggage and supply-train of two hundred and sixty-nine wagons fell into the hands of the enemy. A general rout ensued, unequaled since the field of Bull Run. In vain did Generals Banks and Franklin endeavor to rally their men. Fortunately, General Emory, hearing that the battle was lost, drew up his command at Pleasant Grove, four miles in the rear, carefully selecting his ground, and posting his men, Banks' men came upon them in wild confusion and were allowed to pass, and reform if possible. The Confederates came rapidly on. Emory reserved his fire till they were close, and then gave a terrible volley. The Confederates were staggered; General Mouton, and a host of their bravest were dead or dying; but they had a great superiority in numbers, and until daylight ceased they continued to charge with reckless bravery on Emory's division; but it stood firm and saved the army from annihilation, and with it the fleet which could not have escaped from the shallow river.

Falling back to Pleasant Hill during the night, Banks found Smith there, and now with a force of fifteen thousand men, prepared to renew the battle, his line drawn up across the road.

At eleven in the morning, the Confederates came up, and cautious skirmishing began. The day wore on, and Banks thinking that no general action would take place, had begun sending to the rear, artillery and trains guarded by most of his cavalry, when at four o'clock in the afternoon, the Confederates in two heavy columns, charged on

his left centre, crushing back after a desperate resistance Benedict's brigade of Emory's division. The other brigades surrounded on three sides were also forced back; but Smith now led up his veterans, and the Confederate column was hurled back, and driven for nearly two miles, losing men and guns in their flight; but the charge was not without its loss to the United States forces, the brave Colonel Benedict wounded in the opening of the action, here falling mortally wounded as he saw the day retrieved.

Banks had won a victory, but he had lost four thousand men; he was without water, his ammunition was on the transports: so the next day he fell back to Grand Ecore. Porter's fleet which had reached Springfield Landing, near Shreveport, was recalled, and his passage down the shallow dangerous river, was under a constant fire from Confederate batteries and sharpshooters, and at last by regular attacks of infantry and cavalry, which were driven off by a furious cannonade, inflicting such severe loss that they abandoned all hope of intercepting them.

On the 13th, several of the vessels got aground at Compte, but Banks sent up troops to their relief. At Grand Ecore the large vessels were aground, and much time was lost in getting them afloat. The Eastport sank; and although raised and repaired, grounded again and again, till at last she was fired and blown up, just as a large Confederate force appeared. Too late to capture the Eastport, they made a rush at the Cricket, but were driven off by volleys of grape and canister, Fort Hindman and another gunboat also joining.

Banks was already far ahead, and his retreat was thus covered. The fleet kept on undisturbed till the vessels reached Cane River. There the Confederates had planted a battery, and as the United

States fleet rounded a point, the picket leading the line, the fire opened on them with well aimed guns. The shells tore through the Cricket, disabling her aft gun, and killing or wounding every man at it; and almost as promptly and effectually the after gun. Her decks were completely swept, but Admiral Porter who was on board put negroes at the gun, and with an impromptu engineer, placed himself in the pilot-house and ran her past. The Juliet also ran down, but the Hindman could not till after dark. The Champion was disabled, set on fire, and destroyed.

Porter had run down meanwhile to bring up an ironclad, but he got aground, and on reaching the Osage ironclad found her engaged with another Confederate battery; the Lexington, her consort, having already suffered severely.

After this terrible ordeal of fire, the fleet reached Alexandria. The river had been ingeniously used by the Confederates to embarrass the United States gunboats. It was the season when the water is high, and Porter so expected to find it, but the Confederates by damming up the outlets of several lakes that feed the river, kept the water at an unprecedentedly low state; giving Porter great difficulty, and occasioning the loss of some of his boats.

General Banks was at Grand Ecore, but hearing that General Bee had taken post at Cane River, with eight thousand men, in hopes of checking Banks' army completely, the United States general, on the 22d of April, suddenly moved at daybreak, and halted at night ready to attack Bee in the morning. Then Emory assailed the Confederates in front, while General Birge moving up the river, flanked Bee's right, and in a gallant charge led by Colonel Fessenden completely worsting the enemy. Bee abandoned his position and all attempt to assume the

offensive, and retreated hastily toward Texas by the Fort Jessup road.

Banks had driven off his antagonists on land, but it seemed impossible to save his gunboats. The river was so low that the fleet could not be got down the falls. Lieutenant-Colonel Joseph Bailey, engineer of the nineteenth corps, was, however, equal to the emergency, and will ever be remembered for his ability. On one of the battle fields, he had suggested to General Franklin a plan, which General Banks sanctioned, although Admiral Porter did not show much faith in it.

However, Bailey, now that the time of action had arrived, set to work and began to build a dam across the river below the falls, so as to give the fleet water enough to float down. After eight or nine days' severe toil, a dam 758 feet long, of wood and stone, was run across the river; but on the 9th of May the current swept part of it away.

Porter convinced of the success of Bailey's plan sent the Lexington down. She went smoothly over the falls, and flew like the wind through the opening in the dam, hung for a moment on the rocks, and then swept safely into the deep water below amid the cheers of the army.

The Neosho was next sent down, but her pilot faltered, and she did not get through unharmed. A hole was knocked through her bottom. The Hindman and Osage fared better, and glided through fearlessly and safe. The heavier gunboats were still above. But Bailey encouraged by the success already obtained, went to work again on his dam, and in three days more had the consolation to see the Mound City, Carondelet, Pittsburg, Ozark, Louisville, and Chillicothe, pass safely down the falls and dams.

But the Confederates still checked navigation below Alexandria by their batteries. On the 5th of May they riddled the gunboat Covington, and compelled the gunboat Signal, and the transport Warren, with four hundred troops on board to surrender. The City Belle, another transport, was soon after captured.

Banks evacuated Alexandria to march to Simmsport. At Mansura, he encountered the enemy, and a battle ensued. Emory with Banks' right, and A. J. Smith with his left, flanked the enemy's position, and after a sharp struggle, drove them from their position, recapturing some of the prisoners taken on the vessels.

Crossing the Achafalaya, Banks after repulsing an attack on his rear, made by Prince Polignac at Yellow Bayou, turned over the army to General Canby, who had been appointed to command the trans-Mississippi Department, and returned to New Orleans. Smith returned to his own Department, and Porter's fleet resumed its watch on the Mississippi. The Red River expedition had been to all intents a failure. For the vast expenditure of labor and life, there was no result except the cotton seized by the fleet or collected by speculators.

Although Banks was able to withdraw his army with little comparative loss, this was not the case with some of the smaller armies that were co-operating with him. General Steele, with seven thousand men, had marched on the 23d of March from Little Rock to join General Banks, and General Thayer with the Army of the Frontier, about the same time marched from Fort Smith, with a view to form a junction with Steele at Arkadelphia. The Confederates retarded both these commanders, and at Prairie d'Anne, Steele had a brisk action with General Sterling Price, who after a desperate dash at nightfall to carry Steele's guns drew off. But Steele had begun to hear of Banks'

reverse, and instead of pursuing Price marched to Camden. Here he learned to a certainty that Banks' Red River expedition had been a failure. His own position had now become one of peril, as the Confederate forces were closing in around him rapidly. He moved at once. His trains sent out to forage were cut off; first one, then another. Lieutenant-Colonel Drake made a gallant fight at Mark's Mill, but he was overpowered by General Fagan's Confederate force six thousand strong, and his whole command killed, wounded, or captured; the negroes with the force, even servants of the officers, were shot down in cold blood after the surrender. Steele on this continued his retreat, but at the crossing of the Saline, on the 30th of April, was attacked at daybreak by a powerful Confederate army under General Kirby Smith.

In the miry-wooded bottom, where men and horses sank at every step, the troops who had been toiling all night were in no trim for fighting. The wild Confederate rush swept back Colonel Engelmann's and Rice's brigades, but could not break the line. Three assaults were repelled with great slaughter. Then troops which had already crossed came to their relief; and the 43d Illinois, and 40th Iowa, crossing Cox's Creek, prevented a flanking movement on the right.

Then gathering up for a final charge, Kirby Smith hurled his compact masses on Steele's centre and left: it yielded, but was at once supported, and at noon had completely repulsed Smith, and driven him a mile from the field. Steele now crossed quietly, having lost seven hundred men in this fierce infantry fight; the Confederate loss amounting to three times as many.

A Confederate force under Fagan was between Steele and Little

Rock, but the United States general avoided it, and with almost incredible hardship reached Little Rock on the 2d day of May.

After this all through the summer there were partisan encounters and raids, which it would take long to describe. The fortune of war in these operations varied ; here a Confederate force would be captured ; there troops of the United States. The fight on Big Creek was a curious one. The 56th United States, a regiment of negroes, was attacked on July 26th, by a large Confederate force under General Dobbins. Brooks stood firm, but Dobbins was preparing for a decisive charge, when he was startled by the clattering of cavalry. Major Carmichael going down the Mississippi on a steamboat, with a hundred and fifty of the 15th Illinois, hearing the cannonade, had landed in Dobbins' rear to take a hand in the fighting. He came upon the Confederates rear at a charge, and swept through their line, enabling the hard-pressed troops whose gallant Colonel had just fallen, to drive Dobbins off.

On the whole, the United States lost in these operations beyond the Mississippi. Arkansas had been recovered, a legislature organized, and a new State government installed ; but Steele's reverses gave two-thirds of the State to the Confederates, and they restored their own government, and their cavalry swept through the State, shutting up the United States forces in the posts held by them, and filling with terror all who had professed any attachment to the government at Washington.

The Confederate success in Arkansas had inspired them with the hope of at last wrestling Missouri from the hands of the United States, and attaching it forever to the fortunes of the Confederacy. Price was gathering his army for an invasion, and a secret society in Missouri, which numbered thousands, was ready to join him as soon as he ap-

peared. General Rosecrans, who had been assigned to the Department of Missouri, found on his arrival at St. Louis, at the close of January, 1864, that in a State disaffected within, menaced from without, he had scarcely any force at his command except militia, some of whom would certainly join Price as soon as he reared the Confederate standard on the soil of Missouri. He appealed to the President for aid, but the only step taken by General Grant, was to send to Missouri General Hunt, who considered that there was no danger, and no need of reinforcements. Even when Rosecrans arrested the State Commander, and several prominent members of the secret "Order of American Knights," he received an order to liberate the Commander. At last he was allowed to raise some twelve months' men. While he was thus battling with the obstinate incredulity that prevailed at Washington, the crisis was approaching. On the 3d of September, General Washburne commanding at Memphis, warned General Rosecrans that Shelby was at Batesville in Arkansas, ready to join Price and invade Missouri. Then at last they began to believe. General A. J. Smith then moving up the Mississippi river, was ordered to proceed to St. Louis.

On the 26th, Price had made his way to Pilot Knob, and with his army of ten thousand men invested General Hugh S. Ewing who held it. Rude as his works were Ewing showed fight, and in an obstinate resistance repulsed two assaults in which Price lost full a thousand men. But when night came, Ewing who saw that he could not hold out with one thousand men against nine times his number, spiked his large guns, and blew up his magazine making good his retreat to Harrison, where he was attacked by Shelby, and again fought obstinately till relieved.

Rosecrans remained at St. Louis, overawing the disaffected and gathering his forces. Price moved rapidly, his men being nearly all mounted. He destroyed bridges and railroads to prevent pursuit. But Smith was on his trail, and others were gathering in his van. As he menaced Jefferson City, Generals McNeil and Sanborn reached it in time to make a defence: Price did not attack but marched westward.

Pleasanton, who took command of the United States forces, sent Sanborn in pursuit, and that officer brought him to action at Versailles, hoping to delay him till Smith came up. Price was now in great danger as superior forces were closing around him; but he eluded them and started southward.

Pleasanton brought him to action on the Big Blue, and after a battle lasting from seven in the morning till one in the afternoon, routed him. Smith, sent off his right track, could not reach Price's line of retreat in time. But Curtis, from Kansas, and Pleasanton brought him to action again, at Marais des Cygnes and Little Osage. The last action was particularly disastrous to Price, who lost eight guns and more than a thousand of his men were taken prisoners, including Generals Marmaduke and Cabell, and great quantities of arms and trophies.

After this it was a mere flight; Price retreated in the utmost haste, strewing the roads with the wrecks of his wagons and his stores.

The last action was at Fayetteville in Arkansas, where Colonel Brooks held out against Fagan's command, and then against Price's army till Curtis came up and raised the siege.

Price with Shelby and the Missouri recruits had in his operations in this campaign at least twenty-five thousand men: of these in this last

Confederate invasion of Missouri, he lost two thousand in prisoners, and more in killed and wounded. There was no general rising, as he had anticipated, among the Secessionists of the State, and his force as he retreated dwindled sadly.

CHAPTER XII.

General Grant in Virginia—He takes Command of the Armies—The Army of the Potomac reorganized—Kilpatrick sent against Richmond—Death of Dahlgren—Grant fights the Battle of the Wilderness—Spotsylvania—Hancock storms the Lines—His Captures—Sheridan and J. E. B. Stuart—Butler operating south of the James—Action at Port Walthall Junction—Beauregard attacks Butler—Gunboats blown up—Grant at the North Anne—A sharp Action—Burnside defeated—Repulse at Cold Harbor—Butler's Operations against Petersburg—Meade at the Weldon Railroad—Defeat of Hancock and Gregg—Close of the Campaign of 1864—Jones and Avery in the Shenandoah Valley—Early threatens Washington—Sheridan sent against him—Battles of Opequan and Fisher's Hill—Early surprises Crook at Cedar Creek—Sheridan's Ride—A Defeat turned into a Victory by a single Man.

THE government had now resolved to confer a higher rank and greater powers on General Grant, investing him with the command of all the armies of the United States. In February, 1864, an act was passed reviving the grade of Lieutenant-General, never conferred on any one but the Father of his Country. President Lincoln at once approved the act, and nominated General Grant.

Summoned from the West by telegraph, he proceeded to Washington, and received his commission as Lieutenant-General, commanding all the forces of the United States. General Halleck, who had so long directed the operations of the war, became Chief-of-Staff of the Army.

Lieutenant-General Grant on taking command announced that his headquarters would be in the field, and for the time being with the

Army of the Potomac. A new military division, that of the Mississippi, comprising the Departments of the Ohio, the Cumberland, the Tennessee, and the Arkansas, was created, and General W. T. Sherman assigned to it, General McPherson assuming command of the Department of the Tennessee.

The Army of the Potomac, which was now to do active service under the eye and direction of the Lieutenant-General, was now reorganized and formed into three corps, the Second under General Hancock, the Fifth under General Warren, and the Sixth under General Sedgwick. Burnside then joined it with his, the Ninth Corps, swelling its effective strength to more than a hundred thousand men.

The operations began by cavalry expeditions. General Custer, at the end of February, with fifteen hundred horse crossed the Rapidan, and moved rapidly down to Charlottesville, where he was met by a superior force, and retired, followed by hundreds of negroes, having done considerable damage to the railroads, depots, and bridges. But his main object was to divert attention from a raid under Kilpatrick, who about the same time crossed the Rapidan, and pushed on through Spotsylvania Court House, Beaver Dam, across the South Anne to Kilby Station, and so on till he got within the defenses of Richmond, passing the first and second cities, and for several hours attacking the third. He encamped, the night of March 1st, between Richmond and the Chickahominy, but being attacked, moved down toward Fort Monroe, from which General Butler sent out a force to meet him.

Another expedition, under Colonel Dahlgren, was to strike Richmond on the south, but lost its way, and did not appear before the inner fortifications of that capital till the 2d, when he was repulsed with loss, and was checked at Dabney's Mills, on his retreat, by local militia, who

killed him, and dispersed his command, capturing many. Young Dahlgren, a brave officer and gentleman, was treated when dead with the utmost indignity, and the Confederate authorities refused to give him up for burial, pretending that most incendiary documents were found on him.

Butler, too, menaced Richmond with his army, so that the Confederates were obliged to look to the safety of their capital as well as confront Grant.

On the 4th of May, the Army of the Potomac, under Meade, crossed the Rapidan on Lee's right; Warren and Sedgwick at Germania Fords; Hancock at Ely's; followed next day by Burnside. They were moving on Chancellorsville. The district was known as the Wilderness, and well deserved its name. A rocky table-land, cut up by deep ravines, and covered with dwarf trees and dense bushes, with few roads through it, and those of the most primitive character. Lee resolved to keep Grant here, and moved out of Mine Run, to open the terrible and bloody campaign, in which Lee's generalship and tact were matched by the stubborn Grant's plan, which was to flank Lee's right, and force him to leave position after position in the hope of finding a battle-ground where he could give him a decisive defeat. This he hoped to do between the Rapidan and Chickahominy, but Lee was a consummate general.

The first battle in that campaign was that of the Wilderness, fought from the 5th to the 12th of May.

On the 5th, as Grant's army was marching to the positions he had selected, Lee struck them in force. Warren and Sedgwick, on the right of Grant's army, were met by Hill and Ewell between the Old Wilderness Tavern and Parker's Store. Hill repulsed the attack of Warren, and was charging Warren's left flank when Hancock with his

divisions came up, and after a stubborn fight checked the enemy. Ewell, attacking Sedgwick, had lost Generals Jones, Stafford and Pegram, and suffered severely without any real gain.

The next day, Grant made an advance of his whole line, but Lee was already in motion, who first struck Sedgwick attempting to flank him. At eight o'clock Lee made a charge on Grant's whole front, turning to account their thorough knowledge of the ground, and endeavoring to push in between our different corps, and attack them in flank. But Grant's line stood firm, and Hancock on the left actually forced Hill back across the Brock road, till Longstreet, coming to Hill's relief, for a time threw Hancock's front into disorder. But Burnside came up, and the battle raged furiously. Lee's army, better arranged to move men to support the weak points, kept sending up fresh troops. Gathering up for a fresh onset, Lee again charged, and Hancock and Burnside were forced back to their intrenchments and abatis on the Brock road, and there lost the brave General James S. Wadsworth, who had been in service from the commencement of the war.

Grant's line was again formed, Hancock on the left, then Burnside, then Warren, then Sedgwick, at the right. After a lull Lee charged again with Hill and Longstreet's corps, and forcing back one of Burnside's brigades pushed through to attack on the flank. But Hancock was on the alert. At a word Colonel Carroll's brigade sprang forward, the flanking Confederates struck in flank, themselves were driven back with heavy loss, and again the Army of the Potomac stood grimly awaiting another onset, but none came. After a long lull, however, just as night was falling, Lee, suddenly massing his men, struck swiftly and well on Grant's right, surprising and routing two brigades, and getting off in the coming darkness with many prisoners.

So ended the second day's battle, in which many a brave man breathed his last, but in spite of the slaughter neither side had gained any advantage. Yet Grant had sacrificed full twenty thousand men, Generals Wadsworth and Hays were killed, Hancock, Getty, Gregg, Owen, and several other generals wounded. Lee, in spite of his being the assailing party, seems to have lost much less ; they admitted only eight thousand loss, but Generals Jones, Stafford, and Jinkins were killed, Longstreet severely wounded, with many others.

The next day (Sunday), the 8th of May, Grant moved out of the Wilderness, slowly making his way through the intricate passes of that desolate district. As he emerged, he found Lee's troops in all favorable positions to check his advance. Skirmishing at once began, but the next day Grant had the whole army of the Potomac, under Meade, drawn up around Spottsylvania Court House, Warren in the centre, Hancock on the right, and Sedgwick on the left. The last of these generals was placing his guns, and bantering some soldiers who shrunk from the bullets, when he was struck in the face by a ball and fell dead, and Grant was thus deprived of one of his best corps commanders, at the very moment when he was about to fight a serious battle. General Wright succeeded to the command of the corps, and Burnside coming up took post on his left.

Grant now became the assailant. He attempted to turn Lee's left flank, but failed ; and his charge on Lee's line, though made with all possible skill and bravery, failed to break them, till Wright's division by a gallant charge carried part of the Confederate works, capturing nearly a thousand prisoners with many guns. The day closed, however, without any material success, the field strewn with dead and dying. It was from this battle-field that Grant sent a dispatch contain-

ing an expression that became a by-word: "I propose to fight it out on this line, if it takes all summer."

Again Grant rearranged his line so as to assume the offensive when day came. Amid a fog that hung over the scene, Hancock pushed forward upon an earthwork before him, held by Johnson, one of Ewell's division generals. Swiftly and silently, Hancock swept over the rugged wooded space before him, and dashed with a cheer over the Confederate works, capturing Generals Johnson and Stewart, three thousand men and thirty guns. He had nearly captured Lee himself, and cut the Confederate army in two. Roused to despair, Lee accumulated troops to crush Hancock or drive him back; but Grant too hurried up his men. Warren and Burnside charged, though in vain, the works before them, able only to keep the Confederates there from reinforcing the centre. There Lee was straining every nerve to overwhelm Hancock. Five times his men charged with all their Southern dash, and all the firmness of veterans that they were. Flags were often planted on opposite sides of the same breastwork. Hancock, striving not only to hold his own, but to push on, met their assaults with frightful carnage, and charged in turn. Though rain set in, it was not till midnight that the noise of battle died away and Lee withdrew, leaving Hancock in possession of his dear-bought advantage. But he fortified a new line, and awaited attack.

Grant, however, kept to his purpose. Fight he would, if he must, and at any sacrifice of men, but he was pushing on to Richmond.

On the 18th and 19th of May were fought the last battles around Spottsylvania Court House. They had cost Meade's Army of the Potomac fully twenty thousand men.

On the night of the 20th, moving by the left, Grant resumed his march.

Again the cavalry was sent out. Sheridan captured Beaver Dam Station, liberating four hundred United States soldiers, destroying the railroad track, and immense stores for Lee's army. Though Stuart came dashing down with all his wonted gallantry, he could not check Sheridan, who next destroyed Ashland Station, and pushed on toward Richmond.

Stuart had massed his cavalry at Yellow Tavern, and was ready to meet him. One of the fiercest cavalry fights of the war followed, but Stuart fell mortally wounded, and his force was driven off. Again the cavalry of the United States dashed within the outer defenses of Richmond, sweeping off prisoners under its very guns, and then returned to Meade's army.

The war was now crowding down toward Richmond, and Petersburg became a point of great importance, as all the railroad lines by which Lee could obtain men or supplies from the South centred there. To secure this as part of Grant's operations, Butler, in May, advanced up the James, with Smith's and Gillmore's corps, the Eighteenth and Tenth, with Kautz's cavalry. Ironclads escorted the transports, and all seemed to promise success. Fort Powhatan and City Point were seized, but owing to a want of harmony, and mistakes, the great prize was missed. Meanwhile the Confederates had taken alarm. Lee could spare no troops, so Beauregard was summoned from Charleston, and came hastening up as fast as railroads could bring him and the troops he gathered. While Butler supposed Beauregard at Charleston, that general suddenly on the 16th of May hurled Whiting's division on Butler's right, in the attempt to turn it. Smith's men gave,

but Gillmore finally checked the movement, and repulsed the assault.

Butler was now convinced that the Confederates were in force before him. Smith, with no time to intrench, resorted to a stratagem, which in a foggy morning was singularly successful. Finding a lot of telegraph wire at hand, he stretched it between the trees along his front, about two feet from the ground. This strange preparation was scarcely made when the Confederates, yelling and whooping, rushed on his front. Charging blindly on, the soldiers tripped over the wire, and went down to be shot or bayoneted before they could rise.

But Beauregard again endeavored to turn Smith's right, and that general fell back, Gillmore doing the same. Beauregard, who had lost nearly as many men as Butler, then advanced cautiously, and ran a line of works across the peninsula.

"We are bottled up," wrote Butler to Grant, and the phrase became a by-word. The great object of his movement was indeed lost, and Petersburg was, as we shall see, to cost Grant many months and thousands of lives before it was reduced.

Meanwhile Grant was pushing sturdily on to Richmond. From Spottsylvania Court House, he moved by another flanking movement to the North Anne. Lee, watching him from the high ground, made one attack and then fell back to confront him at the crossing. As Warren came up to Jericho Ford, he encountered a fierce attack in the usual Confederate style, made on his right flank by General Brown, with three brigades of Hill's corps. In his furious charge, Brown swept back Cutler on his right, and Griffin on his left, but was checked and routed by McCoy's 83d Pennsylvania, one of whose men seized Brown by the collar, and dragged him into the United

States lines, where nearly a thousand of his men bore him company as prisoners.

Hancock carried a bridge-head, and Grant thought that he had triumphantly crossed the river; but Lee had merely left the river-bank to draw up on a height in a sort of horse-shoe shape that was almost impregnable. "Grant paused and pondered, studied and planned;" but it was useless to waste lives there, so he kept on his march, and on the 28th of March, crossed the Pamunkey.

Lee had of course not lain idle. Having a much shorter road, he was in advance of Grant, and already in position—his front holding both railroads, and the turnpike to Richmond, so as to make it next to impossible for Grant to cross the Chickahominy on his right. But there was no alternative, Grant had to try it. Reconnaissances along the front of Lee's line showed it to be almost impregnable: so Wright's Sixth Corps was pushed across the Chickahominy, near Cold Harbor, where they were soon joined by General Smith, with ten thousand men from Butler's army.

On the 2d of June, the battle of Cold Harbor began, Grant carried a good part of the Confederate advance line of rifle-pits, with many prisoners; but failed to carry the second line, in front of which they bivouacked, having lost two thousand in the brave but fruitless struggle.

On the 3d of June, Grant resolved upon a general assault on the Confederate lines—well as Lee was posted—defended by the natural advantages which led his military skill to select it, and strenghtened by the works which he at once threw up. At sunrise the attack was made by Hancock, Wright, and Smith, with all the intrepidity of the bravest: Barlow's division gained some advantage, but were hurled

back; Colonel McMahon planted his colors on the Confederate works only to fall mortally wounded. Burnside swung round into action, but all in vain.

The old battle ground where McClellan had fought, with Gaines' Mill in view, was again uselessly dyed with blood. A fiercer battle has seldom been known. In twenty minutes after the first shot was fired, ten thousand soldiers of the United States lay dead and wounded before Lee's works, while his loss had been only a thousand.

Meade under Grant's direction, ordered the attack to be renewed, but the men refused to obey.

Lee, encouraged by his success, made a night attack on Grant's line, and though repulsed, renewed it two nights later.

Grant adhering to his plan, resolved now to cross the Chickahominy and James, and attack Richmond from the South. While preparing for this, he sent Sheridan out with his cavalry around Lee's left. Once in the saddle, that dashing commander swept around to the rear, tearing up the Virginia Central Railroad; then the Fredericksburg road, then the Central road again at Trevilians, hard as Wade Hampton tried to prevent him, and so on down to Louisa Court House, where the Confederates had gathered in force to surround him. But he swept back to Trevilians, where he had to fight again for very existence, and galloped off to Grant's camp.

That commander had crossed the Chickahominy almost unmolested by Lee, and reaching the James, at Charles City Court House, crossed to the South on the 14th and 15th of June.

Just before this, on the 8th, Butler had made another attempt on Petersburg; Kautz's cavalry having actually entered the place, but

being unsupported by Gillmore—who had halted within two miles of the city, after driving the Confederate skirmishers into it—had to retire.

When Grant arrived, he ordered Butler to send Smith's corps—which had been restored to him—against Petersburg, to capture it before A. P. Hill could occupy it with his corps. Smith carried the outer line of rifle-pits, but halted ; and Hancock, who came up had received no orders, so there they lay with the prize in their grasp, leaving Hill with his veterans to march in, fortify the place, and defy them to attack. That night's delay cost months of time and torrents of blood. By daybreak, the silent works before them were manned by the grim veterans of Lee, whose disciplined bravery handled by skilful officers, made them a match for ten times their numbers. The armies that had faced each other at Gettysburg, fighting steadily all the way down across Virginia, were here again confronted.

In Grant's army Smith was under Meade on the right, resting on the Appomattox, Warren on the left, with Hancock and Burnside in the centre.

At six o'clock in the afternoon of June 16th, a general assault was made. The three corps moved on to the assault under a terrible fire. Birney of Hancock's corps carried the ridge before him, Burnside at daybreak took an outwork with four guns and four hundred prisoners : but the assault at other points failed, and when night came on, Lee concentrated all on Burnside and drove him out.

To divert Lee if possible, Butler moved on Port Walthal Junction, but Longstreet forced him back, and the point was soon made impregnable.

On the 18th, Grant ordered another general assault only to find

that Lee had evacuated his former line to occupy a still stronger and better one in front of the beleaguered city. This was attacked on the afternoon of the 18th, but only to cover the ground with the corpses of his gallant men ; Grant had lost already ten thousand human lives before Petersburg.

He accordingly began to intrench, while the Second and Fourth Corps were sent to turn Lee's right. As usual, a large gap was left between the two corps ; and the Confederates aware of this system in the United States armies, resorted to their usual tactics : Hill charged through the gap, taking each corps successively in flank, throwing them into disorder, and capturing guns and men. Meade restored order, and advanced to the Weldon Railroad, where Hill again attacked, taking the advanced regiments in flank. Without any material gain, Grant had here sacrificed four thousand more. His cavalry under Wilson and Kautz did some service by destroying part of the Weldon, Lynchburg, and Danville roads ; but they were repulsed at Stony Creek, and signally defeated at Reams' Station, losing guns, trains, prisoners, and horses, and barely escaping to Grant's lines. Even cavalry expeditions after this were suspended.

Butler was at Deep Bottom, within ten miles of Richmond, and Sheridan with his cavalry operating on the same side. But active operations on Grant's were nearly suspended ; his armies, which in eight weeks had lost seventy thousand men, needed rest and reinforcement, or at all events discipline for the raw recruits sent to fill up the decimated ranks.

Lee who had suffered less, took the offensive, and made two attacks on the 24th and 25th of June, which were, however, easily repulsed. Then he attacked Foster's post at Deep Bottom, but was again defeated.

Grant then sent the Second Corps to his right, and while Foster kept the Confederates engaged in front, Hancock turned their flank, capturing their outpost with four guns. The Confederates retreated, but held on to a strong work opposite Fort Darling. Sheridan manœuvred to take this work in the rear, so that Lee to secure it drew five of eight divisions from Petersburg. Then Burnside, who had mined a Confederate fort in his front, blew it up on the 30th of July; but there had been confusion as to the party to charge into the crater after the explosion; precious time was lost, an incompetent officer went in, and though supported by a black division, was finally driven out by the Confederates, who even including their losses by the mine, had sacrificed less than a thousand men, while Grant's killed, wounded, and prisoners, amounted to four thousand four hundred. So ended what Grant himself terms, "a miserable affair."

Another attack on the 12th, made by Hancock on Lee's lines, and a night attack on the 18th, alike failed.

The only advantage gained lay in the fact, that Lee was forced to concentrate his troops near Richmond. Taking advantage of this, Warren on the 18th, struck at the Weldon railroad, and holding it, pushed on toward Petersburg. But the Confederates saw the danger, and were at their old flank movement. Taking a road unknown to Warren, they came suddenly on him, taking a Maryland brigade in flank, and hurling it back. But Warren arrested the charge; repelled the Confederates; and fortifying his position, held the Weldon railroad at last.

But the usual slow movements nearly proved disastrous to Warren. He was without support, and at a distance from the rest of the army. The space between should have been filled by General Bragg, whom

Warren again ordered to occupy it. Before it was done, Hill charged in, according to the uniform Confederate plan, striking Crawford on the flank and rear, and capturing twenty-five hundred men. Two of Burnside's brigades came up, however, and the lost ground was regained. But three days after, Warren saw the struggle coming. Lee was massing troops to crush him, and open the road. A terrible artillery fire opened upon him, and then on his front and left, the Confederates came swooping down with desperate courage. But Warren stood like a wall of iron, not only repulsing the assault, but driving them from the field, where they left their dead, and many men to fall as prisoners into Warren's hands. While this battle was going on, Hancock, who had been busy tearing up the road at Ream's Station, a few miles from Warren, was attacked by Hill. Heth, the Confederate, after three unsuccessful charges, at last carried Miles' position on Hancock's right ; Gibbons failed to retake it, and was in turn driven from his breastworks, and, unsupported, Hancock was at last forced from the road with heavy loss.

As the summer had passed, and winter was approaching, Grant resolved to push Lee vigorously. Another general advance was made. On the 29th of September, General Butler with Birney's corps, the Tenth and Ord's : the Eighteenth fought the battle of Chapin's Farm, assaulting and taking Fort Harrison, with fifteen guns, and a long line of intrenchments. He failed to take Fort Gilmer, which General Field held too firmly. Fort Harrison was too important to be lost without a struggle to regain it. The next day, Field assaulted it on one side with three brigades, while General Hoke charged on the other. But the long dread struggle died away with the day, leaving the battle field strewn with dead and wounded ; Field drew off, having

failed to accomplish his purpose; although he subsequently surprised General Kautz on the Charles City Road, and captured five hundred of his men.

On the 1st of October, Warren pushed westward to Squirrell Level Road, and intrenched after defeating and killing General Dunnovan. He at once threw up works to connect this position with that on the Weldon road. For a time the two armies lay in front of each other, the thunder and booming of cannon along the lines being the only movement.

At last Grant resolved on another attempt. While Butler attacked on the left, Meade's Army of the Potomac was pushed forward to turn Lee's right flank. Warren, on the 27th of October, pushed forward with the Ninth and Fifth Corps upon the enemy's works at Hatcher's Run; while Hancock reached and crossed the Boydton Plank Road. Warren could not carry the Confederate works before him, and Hancock and he were as usual separated, and in their ignorance of the country, did not know each other's positions. The old opportunity was afforded to the Confederates, and they did not neglect it. Down through the woods came, silent and swift, Heth's division of Hill's corps. Drawing up, it burst with a yell on Mott's division of Hancock's corps, which gave way; but Egan, without waiting orders at once faced, and as the Confederates emerged from the woods in pursuit of Mott, Egan swept down with two brigades taking them in flank, recapturing Mott's guns and taking a thousand prisoners. Heth fought like a hero, but his men were hurled back, and two hundred more retreating from Egan's terrible charge, ran into Crawford's lines and were taken. Had Crawford advanced none of Heth's division could have escaped.

Meanwhile Hancock's left and rear were assailed by Wade Hampton, with five brigades of cavalry, and Gregg's cavalry only with great difficulty held their ground. At last the battle ended. Hancock had held his ground, but as reinforcements might not come up in time, he determined to fall back. Grant's line thus extended to the Squirrel Level road.

This action closed Grant's active operations of the year against Lee. In this bloody half-year, between the 5th of May, and 28th of October, his loss had been fully a hundred thousand men, seven hundred and ninety-six officers, and nearly ten thousand men killed; about fifty-four thousand wounded, and twenty-four thousand taken prisoners from the Army of the Potomac, the losses of Burnside and Butler swelling it to the fearful hundred thousand.

Lee's losses were probably about half that amount.

When Grant began his operations against Lee's main army, he had directed Sigel to move up the Valley of the Shenandoah; but Sigel handled his army so badly, that he was routed at Newmarket by General Breckinridge, who captured seven hundred men, six guns, a thousand stand of arms, Sigel's hospitals and part of his train.

General Averill with his cavalry, attempted to destroy the lead-works at Wytheville, but he was defeated by Morgan and failed. General Crook, did indeed defeat McCausland at Dublin Station, but was soon forced to retreat; and the whole movement in the valley proved a failure.

Hunter, succeeding Sigel, found an easier task at his hand, Breckinridge, and many other commands, having been ordered to reinforce Lee. On the 5th of June, Hunter brought General W. E. Jones to action at Piedmont near Staunton. In the spirited and well-fought

action Jones fell dead, pierced through by a minie ball, and his army was utterly routed ; Hunter gathering up fifteen hundred prisoners, three thousand stand of arms, and three pieces of artillery.

General Hunter then pressed on toward Lynchburg, by the way of Lexington, at the head of an army of twenty thousand men. But this was no part of Grant's plan, who expected Hunter to move to Gordonsville.

General Hunter's error was soon manifest, Lynchburg was too important a city for the Confederates to lose. Anxious as he was to use every man, Lee detached troops to save Lynchburg ; and Hunter finding formidable forces gathering around him, retreated, sharply pursued to Salem. Thence he made his way through Newcastle into West Virginia, exposing the Shenandoah Valley.

Early, who had been sent to relieve Lynchburg, saw his opportunity, and marched in all haste to the Potomac. Sigel fled at his approach, abandoning valuable stores ; while Early destroyed the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, levied contributions, burned part of Williamsport, and carried his raids into Pennsylvania. In fact, he produced such a panic that, President Lincoln called on Pennsylvania, New York, and Massachusetts, for militia.

Meanwhile General Lewis Wallace was gathering troops to meet Early, and at last with very inferior forces engaged him at the Monocacy. Early charged him on the morning of the 9th of July ; but though outnumbered, Wallace repulsed not only that, but another assault by Early's second line. Reinforcements had been promised him, but when at four o'clock, Early again advanced, he fell back, Colonel Brown gallantly holding a bridge which saved his force.

While Early's cavalry menaced Baltimore, and a part under Gil-

mor burned the bridge over Gunpowder Inlet, capturing the passenger trains ; Early's main force pushed on to within six or seven miles of Washington City. There General Augur engaged him on the 12th, and the place became too hot. He found that he had to escape at once if at all, as troops were approaching from Grant's army, and Hunter might block his way ; Wright's corps, the Sixth was the first to give chase, but he moved feebly, for Early on the 20th of July, having reached the Shenandoah, and feeling as if on his own ground, turned on Wright with such impetuosity, as to drive back his advance. Crook, succeeding Wright, followed Early to Winchester, but on the 23d of July, was furiously attacked by the able Confederates, who routed him, killing among other eminent officers, Colonel Mulligan, the hero of Lexington, whose merit never won him a promotion. Crook, having lost twelve hundred men retreated north of the Potomac. Early was complete master of the valley, and his cavalry raided in all directions, levying contributions. Chambersburg in Pennsylvania, unable to pay the hundred thousand dollars in gold which he demanded, was burnt by his cavalry under McCausland. Early had already in his first raid, burned Governor Bradford's, and Mr. Blair's residences near Washington.

Averill at last drove the incendiaries across the Potomac ; and near Moorfield, on the 4th of August routed them, capturing their guns and wagons, and five hundred prisoners.

It was evident that a General of more comprehensive mind and greater powers was required. Grant, therefore, sent General Sheridan to take command of the Middle Department, and troops amounting to thirty thousand men were placed at his command. It took some time to collect and arrange this force which he found widely

scattered, but Grant at last authorized him to assume the offensive.

Sheridan waited for a moment when he could strike a blow to put his army in good spirits, and fill them with confidence. On the 13th of September, he saw his opportunity, and suddenly took Kershaw's division in flank, capturing a colonel and nearly two hundred of those South Carolina troops.

The next morning at two o'clock, he was on the move to attack Early's strong position on the west bank of the Opequan. By ten, Ricketts and Grover in the van, pushing through woodland and hill, rushed so resolutely on Early's first line that it was carried, General Rhodes being killed, and three of his Confederate colonels taken. Early, prompt as his antagonist, drove Grover and Ricketts back with fearful loss, but the shattered regiments rallied, and with the guns that came up, held an important pass, till, as the exulting Confederates renewed their charges, other troops coming up took them in flank and front, and almost annihilated them.

Then Sheridan charged with his centre, while the cavalry and Eighth Corps turned and struck Early's left flank. Sheridan's centre fired their last cartridges, but as Early's line still stood, charged with the bayonet. A height in the rear held out, but was soon taken by Crook, and Early thoroughly beaten fled, having lost three thousand prisoners, and many dead and wounded. Sheridan's loss was about three thousand, including General David A. Russell.

Early made a stand at Fisher's Hill, eight miles south of Winchester, but here Sheridan striking him on the flank and rear with his Eighth Corps, and breaking his centre by a vigorous front attack again won a complete victory.

Early, hotly pursued, fled to the mountains, while Sheridan pushed on to Port Republic, and his cavalry captured and destroyed army supplies, and broke up railroads and bridges.

On his return, Sheridan, under orders from General Grant to leave nothing in the valley that could invite the enemy to return, laid it waste with an unsparing hand. The destruction of Chambersburg, the bushwhacking of all his small parties, the murder of his engineer officer, Lieutenant Meigs, had steeled him. He destroyed more than two thousand barns full of grain and hay and seventy mills : he seized and issued to his troops three thousand sheep and a drove of four thousand cattle, and great numbers of horses.

The South was filled with dismay and rage. The Confederate papers clamored for the burning of New York, Boston, or some Northern city, and an attempt was actually made by Confederate agents to destroy the city of New York, by a general conflagration.

As Sheridan retired from the valley, Early followed, and a few collisions occurred. Sheridan, however, deeming Early thoroughly beaten, proceeded to Washington. Meanwhile Early had been gathering his forces, and at nightfall of the 18th of October, moved silently out of his camp, and cautiously advanced flanking on both sides Crook's army of West Virginia, which lay in front of the 6th and 19th corps. Before dawn, the men of the South occupied the positions selected by the master-mind of the Confederate general. At the first light of dawn, they opened a tremendous musketry fire, and charged, completely surprising the United States forces, many of the soldiers not even having their muskets loaded or time to charge them. In fifteen minutes the Army of West Virginia was a rabble of fugitives.

Emory's Nineteenth Corps, after in vain endeavoring to arrest Crook's disordered flight, met the charge of Early's victorious troops, and held out till one-third of the men were either killed or wounded. The Sixth Corps, next assailed, retired steadily, leaving Early in possession of their camps, equipage, artillery, and numbers of prisoners, hale and wounded.

Such was the tidings which reached Sheridan at Winchester. He at once leaped into the saddle, and rode like the wind. By ten o'clock he reached the front of his crushed and defeated army. He at once stopped the retreat, and drew up his army again for battle, and for two hours studied the ground, and prepared for action. "Boys! if I had been here this would not have happened," he cried, and they believed him. His new line was defended quickly, as well as time would allow, and every advantage taken of position.

Early, eager to finish up the complete overthrow of the United States army, again attacked at one o'clock, but Emory on the left, in a dense wood, repulsed him with loss.

At three, Sheridan charged along his whole line. Early's front line was carried, and Gordon, on Early's left, flanked and driven by the Nineteenth Corps.

There was a pause in the thunder of artillery, and rattle of musketry volleys, then came Sheridan's second charge, more determined than the first, with cavalry on both wings. Early could not stand the troops, well handled at eve, whom he had routed when badly-generaled at dawn. He gave way, and, pursued through Strasburg by the cavalry, fled southward again, his army virtually destroyed; Sheridan's war-worn men slept again in their camps, having lost three thousand men, but recovered many of their prisoners, taking fifteen hundred of

Early's men. They recovered their guns, and took twenty-three more, with caissons.

This spirited action closed the operations in the wasted valley of the Shenandoah.

CHAPTER XIII.

Sufferings of Prisoners—Andersonville—Forrest's Raids—He takes Fort Pillow—Fearful Atrocities—He routs Sturgis—Is beaten by A. J. Smith—Various Actions—Morgan's last Raid—Pursued and killed—Sherman's Campaign against Johnston—His three Armies—Hooker takes Resaca—Davis takes Rone—Fight at Pumpkinvine Creek—New Hopes—Dallas—Allatoona—Sherman repulsed at Kenesaw—Again flanks Johnston—Hood supersedes Johnston—He twice attacks Sherman and is repulsed—Stoneman's Failure—Hardee defeated—Hood abandons Atlanta—Sherman occupies it, and expels its Inhabitants—Hood endeavors to draw Sherman out of Georgia—French defeated by Corse at Allatoona—Thomas sent to defend Tennessee—Sherman prepares to march to the Sea.

THERE were great numbers of prisoners taken on both sides, and the Confederates, from the disaster at Bull Run to the end of the war, always had thousands of United States prisoners in their hands. These prisoners fared badly. They were hooted at and reviled in the towns as they passed, and when the place of confinement was reached they were treated with great severity. The Northern papers were filled with accounts of the sufferings endured by the United States soldiers confined in Libby Prison, Castle Thunder, and other dungeons.

The Confederate prisoners at Elmira, and other points in the North, complained as bitterly, and charged that the prisoners at the South fared no worse than the Southern troops. Some Southern prisoners to escape their harsh treatment entered the United States army to serve against the Sioux, who had begun to massacre the whites.

The authorities at Washington were at first not disposed to recognize the Confederate government so far as to agree to exchanges of

prisoners, but after the disaster at Bull Run, when so many prisoners fell into their hands, a greater willingness was shown. Finally a cartel was made by which prisoners were to be exchanged at Richmond on the East, and Vicksburg on the West. Various questions arose. The United States would not at first recognize privateersmen as prisoners of war, and to the very end of the war, the Confederates refused to regard as such any negro soldiers who fell into their hands. Every negro taken by them was treated as a slave, even if born free in a Northern State. All such prisoners were sold as slaves, and many of them were held in slavery even after the close of the war.

The lot of the white prisoners was a terrible one. The experience of the Bull Run prisoners filled the North with the terrors of prison-life at the South; and at first every effort was made to effect exchanges, but the Confederates raised difficulties, and toward the close of the war the United States showed as little desire to relieve the brave fellows who were wasting away in the filth and starvation of prisons.

The prisoners taken from the Confederates were kept confined at various points in the North, Elmira in New York, and Johnson's Island in Lake Erie, among the number. They were both healthy localities, and the food supplied to the prisoners was good and sufficient, but great severity was required, especially at Johnson's Island, as plots were constantly on foot within and without, Confederates in Canada planning to liberate them, and the prisoners themselves conspiring to escape to the British province. The boldest attempt of the kind was that made by a party of twenty men who got on board the Philo Parsons, at Malden, in September, 1864, while on her way from Detroit to Sandusky. They seized the boat,

captured another steamer, the Island Queen, which they scuttled, and ran in toward Sandusky, where by the aid of Confederates in that city, they hoped to capture the gunboat Michigan, but as their signals were unanswered, they ran over to the Canada side, and abandoned the vessel near Sandwich.

It would be tiresome to follow all the minor operations of the war in the West, or to tell how Hurlbut's cavalry raided to Grenada, in Mississippi; how Forrest dashed into West Tennessee, and made good his escape with more men and better horses than when he entered; how Sherman's grand move to Meridian came to naught; to tell of General W. Smith's race to Memphis, with Forrest at his heels.

On the 11th of March, there was, however, a brisk fight in the streets of Yazoo City, then held by one white and two colored regiments. The Confederates, under Ross and Richardson, dashed into the place in superior numbers, and a desperate battle was fought in the streets, in which the Confederates were rapidly gaining possession of the town, when cheering told the arrival of reinforcements of United States troops. The Confederates withdrew, but soon had the satisfaction of seeing the place evacuated by the American forces.

Then again we hear of Forrest raiding in March into Tennessee, capturing a cavalry regiment at Union City, and finally investing Fort Anderson at Paducah. But Colonel Hicks, with his Illinois boys, prepared to make fight. In vain Forrest made assault after assault, Hicks repelled every charge, so that Forrest at last drew off.

Then Buford summoned Hicks to surrender, but the Confederate was too wise to risk an assault.

But Forrest was not always unsuccessful. Before sunrise, on the 12th of April, he appeared before Fort Pillow, a post about forty

miles above Memphis. It was commanded by Major Booth, and garrisoned by five hundred and fifty men. Major Booth held out, and the fight went on sharp and furious till nine o'clock, when Booth was killed. Major Bradford, however, kept up the fight, the gunboat "New Era," giving him some little aid; but when she drew off, the Confederates stole down two ravines leading to the fort, and by a sudden dash entered it. Then ensued a scene of blood that is almost unparalleled in the annals of civilized warfare, and will form forever the darkest blot on the escutcheon of the Confederates. As the garrison with the women and children in the fort rushed down the slope toward the river, they were slaughtered without mercy, or dragged back to be wantonly put to death with refinements of cruelty known only to savages. Not a negro was spared. Major Bradford was taken and murdered several miles from the place. They slew the negroes under the rules adopted; and the whites for fighting for negroes. This horrible crime was attempted to be palliated by Forrest, and his superior officer Lee, but the stigma is ineffaceable, and even the British Parliament, which in other days thanked God for Cromwell's massacre at Drogheda, did not try to excuse the massacre of Fort Pillow, the bloodiest page in the Civil War.

Forrest lost, he says, less than a hundred men, and butchered more than three hundred. He retreated in haste from the scene of murder, to safe quarters in Mississippi.

An ineffectual attempt at pursuit was made by General S. D. Sturgis, and somewhat later, an army of twelve thousand men under the same General, was sent against Forrest. He came up to the Confederates at Guntown, on the Mobile railroad, on the 10th of June. Grierson's cavalry opened the action, and the infantry were hurried

up to their support without rest or judgment. A total rout was the consequence, Sturgis lost all his train and nearly one-half his men.

Mortified at this disgraceful defeat, the authorities in the West sent another army of twelve thousand men under General A. J. Smith, against Forrest. The Confederates impeded his progress by cavalry skirmishes, till Smith reached Tupelo, where Forrest had fourteen thousand men concentrated. He did not wait to be attacked, but three times in succession assaulted Smith's lines, sustaining such heavy loss that he drew off, leaving his dead and dangerously wounded on the field.

This was on the 14th of July; but Smith did not pursue Forrest. He returned to Memphis, and soon after, again marched to the Tallahatchie. The active Confederate General had, however, given him the slip, flanking him by night, and, dashing into Memphis, at dawn on the 21st of August, made directly for the Gayoso House, where he hoped to capture several of the United States generals. He did indeed capture some officers, but was repulsed at Irving prison, where the Confederate captives were confined. He lost two hundred men in his two hours' stay, but destroyed a large amount of property, and carried off some three hundred prisoners.

These Confederate cavalry raids were not confined to the banks of the Mississippi. Wheeler swept down on a supply train from Chattanooga to Knoxville, and captured it easily near Charleston, on the Hiwassee, although it was almost immediately retaken by Colonel Long, who came clattering up with his Fourth Ohio cavalry.

Morgan too was again in the field. He had to cope with Sturgis, whom Forrest had so well drubbed, and drove him back at least thirty miles. On the 1st of June, Morgan dashed into Kentucky, at the

head of two thousand five hundred men, and eluding the watchfulness of General Burbridge, captured Mount Sterling, Paris, Cynthiana, and Williamstown, burning trains, tearing up railroad tracks, and sending small parties in all directions. One of these, only three hundred strong, captured General Hobson with sixteen hundred well-armed soldiers. But General Burbridge was now in full pursuit of Morgan, and on the 9th of June, defeated him at Mount Sterling. Then Morgan's band divided ; part, dashing through Lexington, burned the railroad depot, while another part set fire to the town of Cynthiana. On the 12th Burbridge was again up to Morgan, and attacked his camp while the men were at breakfast, killing, wounding, and capturing seven hundred with a thousand horses, and liberating many prisoners. The Confederate raider fled towards Virginia, but, while endeavoring to form a new corps, was surprised at Greenville, in East Tennessee, by General Gillem. Morgan, in the confusion, attempted his escape, but he was intercepted and killed.

Then the fortunes of war swayed to and fro. Burbridge, advancing to destroy the Confederate saltworks at Saltville, near Abingdon, was defeated on the 2d of October by General Breckinridge, and retreated, leaving his dead and wounded on the field. To counterbalance this reverse, General Gillem, on the 28th of October, attacked and completely routed a Confederate force under Vaughan and Palmer, capturing four hundred men and four guns ; but, while rejoicing over this victory, was in turn surprised at night by Breckinbridge, on the 13th of October, and utterly routed, losing his battery-train, and almost all his arms.

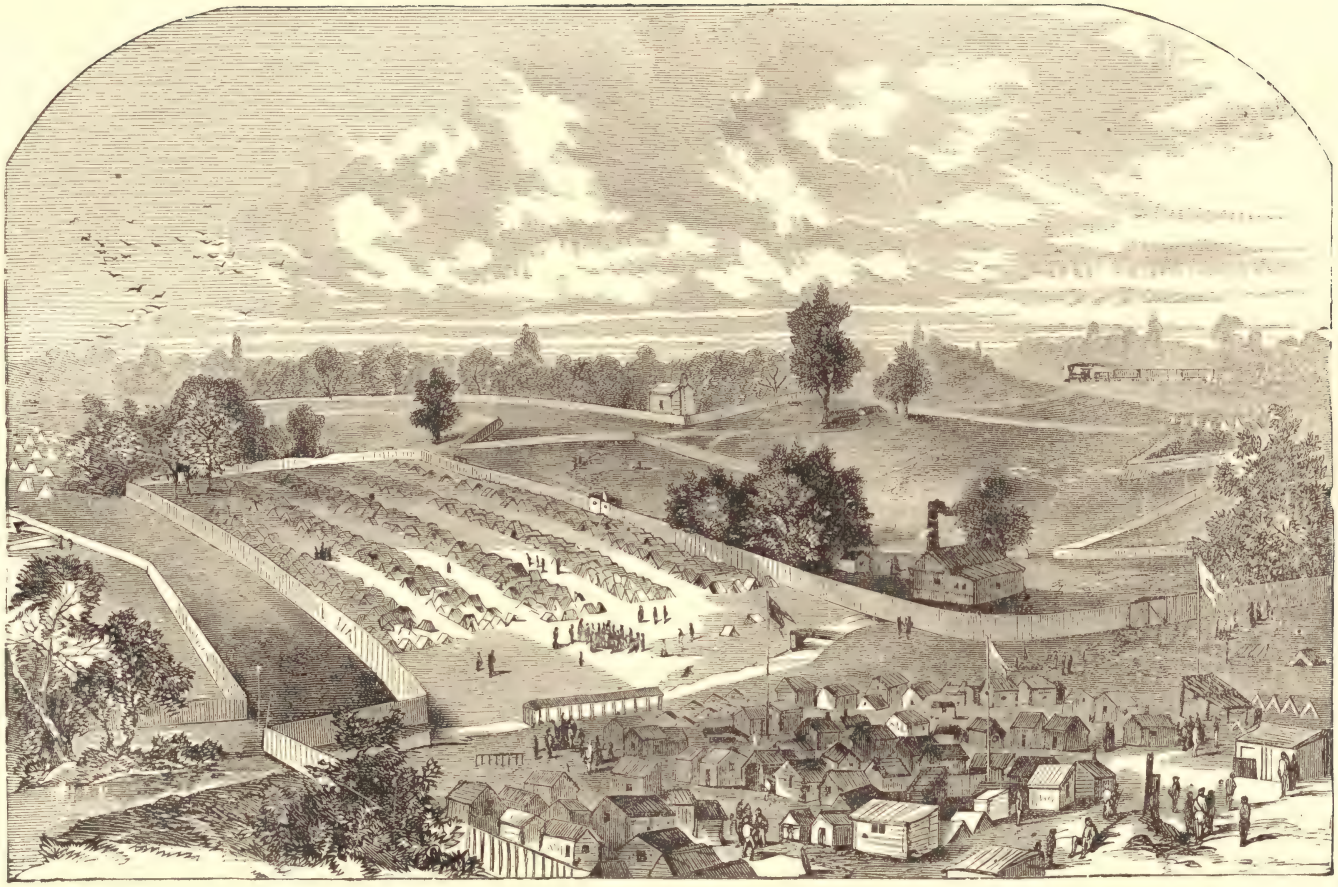
These were the minor operations of the war. The great movement in the West, was that made by General Sherman, simultaneously with



PRISON AND ESCAPE. (Page 903)

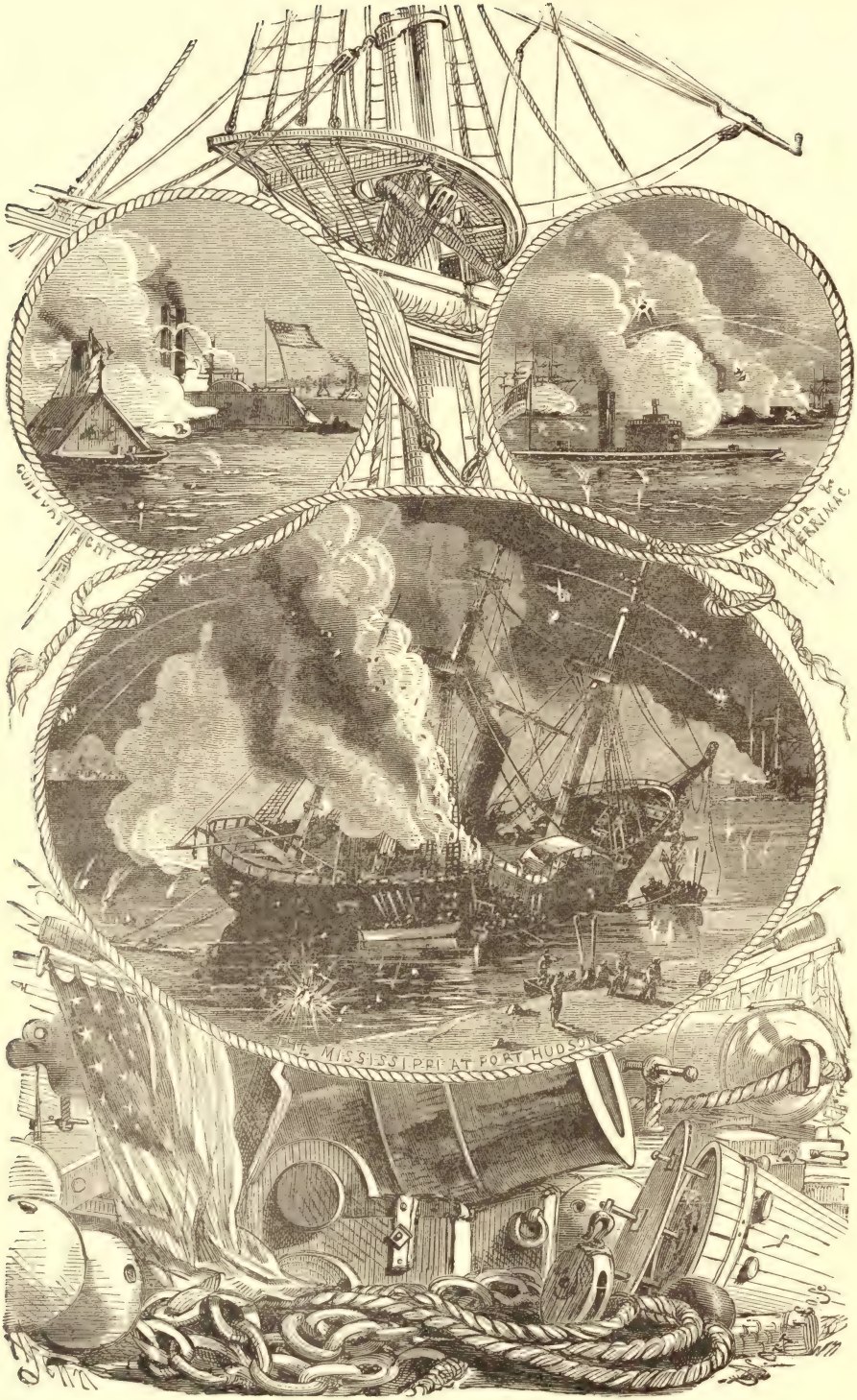


CASTLE THUNDER, RICHMOND, VA., WHERE U. S. PRISONERS WERE CONFINED. (Page 903)



THE UNITED STATES PRISONERS CONFINED AT ANDERSONVILLE.

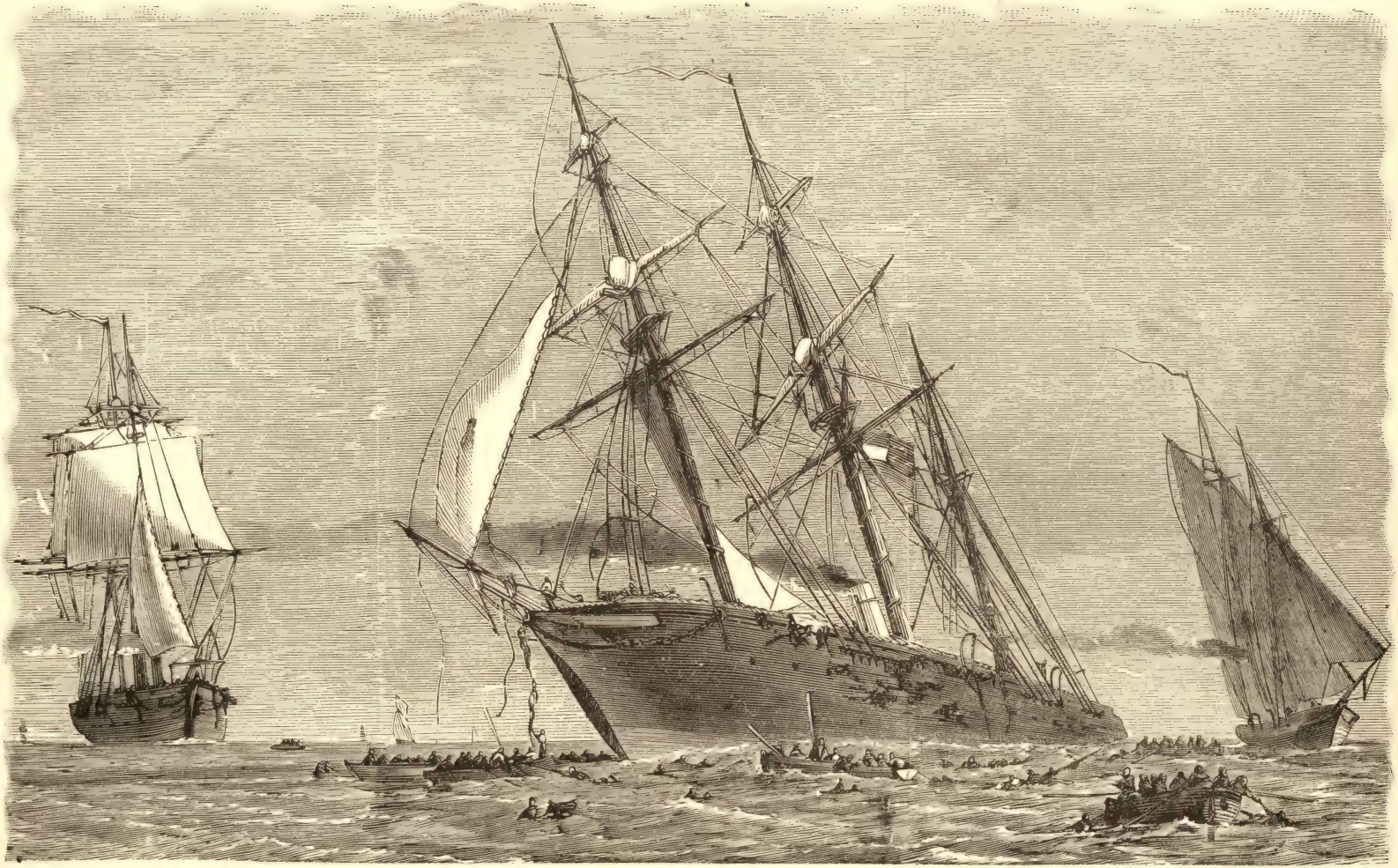
(Page 903)



THE NAVY IN THE WAR



FUGITIVES BEFORE THE APPROACH OF A HOSTILE ARMY.



Kearsarge. Alabama. Deerhound.

THE KEARSARGE SINKING THE ALABAMA.

(Page 920)



SHERMAN'S MARCH TO THE SEA.—CROSSING THE EDISTO.

(Page 930)



WINTER SCENE IN CAMP.

Grant's movement upon Lee. Sherman had under his control, the Army of the Cumberland, of sixty thousand men commanded by General Thomas ; the Army of the Tennessee, about twenty-five thousand men commanded by General McPherson, and the Army of the Ohio, commanded by General Schofield, which numbered thirteen thousand. He had thus a force of near a hundred thousand men, with two hundred and fifty cannon. The Confederate army before him was probably not more than fifty thousand strong, but it was commanded by General Johnston, the army corps being those of Generals Hardee, Hood, and Polk.

The reinforcements which Rosecrans had asked in vain, were here given to Sherman, who was thus enabled to advance from Chattanooga, over the difficult country before him, and overwhelm his opponents.

Johnston lay at Dalton, his front covered by a mountain pass, called Buzzard's Roost Gap, so fortified that no army could force it. Sherman was too wise to attempt such a step, but while General Thomas made a show of attack in front, McPherson flanked Johnston's left, moving down toward his rear by Ship's Gap, Villanow, and Snake Gap, and actually menacing Resaca. Johnston, though he repulsed Thomas' charges, which were vigorously made in front, fell back on Resaca. Here Sherman again prepared to flank him, when Johnston turned furiously on Hooker and Schofield still on his front and left. The campaign opened with a hard-fought fight on the 15th of May, but Hooker drove the Confederates from several hills, and Johnston, abandoning Resaca by night, retreated, Hardee covering his rear. Thomas followed sharply, with Schofield on his left, and McPherson on his right. Johnston endeavored to make a stand in his strong works before Adairsville, but as Jefferson C. Davis, in Thomas' van, had taken

Rome with its founderies and guns, he continued his retreat. His only hope was the strong mountain country in his rear, where the natural defenses would put him more on an equality with Sherman.

On the 19th of May, Sherman found him in a strong position at Cassville, but this was not Johnston's battle ground. He again retreated, and at last drew up in a very strong position, covering the Allatoona Pass, in a rugged, difficult, mountain tract. When Sherman came up, he saw that it was too strong for a front attack. So he moved well to the right, intending to concentrate his army at Dallas; but Johnston was on the alert; he swung round so that when Hooker reached Pumpkinvine Creek, the Confederate was there confronting him in line of battle. Again the din of battle rang out, but Hooker failed to break the stubborn Confederate line, which the next day was seen to be well intrenched in very difficult ground, extending from Dallas to Marietta. Nor was Johnston disposed to stand on the defensive. Just as Sherman was about to try another flank movement, he was himself attacked on his right.

But McPherson had intrenched, and his men defended by breastworks repulsed the impetuous charge of the Confederates. Sherman then in turned charged, and Howard's line swept down upon the Confederates, but Cleburne was never at fault, and he sent Howard back to his lines.

Sherman at last so enveloped the Allatoona Pass, that Johnston was compelled to evacuate it. Sherman at once placed a strong garrison here, making it a base of supplies. He had thus far, by sturdy fighting and generalship, forced his antagonist back, but it had cost him the lives of many brave men. Fortunately at this moment, Gen-

eral Frank Blair arrived with part of the Seventeenth Corps and a brigade of cavalry.

Once more Sherman began his march through the rugged land, till he came in sight of Kenesaw, Pine, and Lost mountains, towering in rugged bulk before him. There lay Johnston, his long line defended in part by nature ; where too his veterans had reared defenses, or were still busy strengthening them. It seemed a desperate venture to attack such men well handled, and so defended ; but Sherman at last, on the 14th of June, attempted to force a passage between Kenesaw and Pine mountain. As the battle opened, Johnston and his generals gathered to watch events. The group caught the eye of Thomas, who ordered a battery to open upon it. The Confederate generals got out of range, but General Polk in his anxiety to watch the battle, ventured out, when a three-inch shot struck him on the side and tore him to pieces.

Sherman kept crowding on, losing heavily in men, but gaining ground. A day's fighting made Pine mountain and Lost mountain untenable by the Confederates. Kenesaw, however, held out, the artillery hurling its iron hail on the approaches, and Hood even charged on Sherman's line.

Weary at last, the United States general, on the 27th of June, made a vigorous attack on Johnston's lines south of Kenesaw. But in vain did Thomas and McPherson sweep nobly up to the enemy's breastworks. Their position was unassailable, and the American flag was borne back in the recoil, General Harker, General Daniel McCook dead, and three thousand gallant officers and soldiers stretched dead, or wounded on the rugged mountain-side.

Without pausing over this costly repulse, Sherman pushed forward

his right, moving McPherson rapidly down to the Chattahoochee, at night fall. Johnston saw his danger, and through the long summer night, troops moved swiftly through rock and woodland. When the sun rose the position had changed. Sherman's troops held the summit of Kenesaw, and Johnston's army was passing out of Marietta.

Sherman was soon in pursuit, hoping to take Johnston at a disadvantage at the crossing of the Chattahoochee, but his antagonist was prompt and cautious. He was at the river-side, well intrenched, when Sherman came up, and held him at bay, while the army crossed the deep and rapid river, leaving only a few troops to hold the bridges, which were covered by works. To attack these was Sherman's first object: and he soon forced Johnston to abandon them, destroying the bridges; then Sherman, with pontoons, threw his army across, and was at last, after long and almost unintermittent marching and fighting, face to face with Johnston before Atlanta—the first great object of his campaign. The Confederates must now fight for it.

But the Confederate Government was dissatisfied. It chafed under Johnston's cautious policy, by which he had been steadily forced back, till a United States army had planted the American flag once more in the heart of Georgia. There was a clamor for a bolder man, who would attack instead of waiting to be attacked. The Confederate Government repeated the United States blunder in the case of Pope. General Hood, a dashing, but conceited and boastful commander, superseded Johnston.

The new General acted promptly. Sherman, on the 22d of July, crossed the Chattahoochee, to close around Atlanta, the enemy's skirmishers contesting the ground. McPherson on the extreme left, was breaking up the railroad, Schofield on his right, had reached Decatur,

and Howard's divisions of Thomas' army were closing on Schofield, when Hood suddenly appeared in force, bursting upon Howard's, Hooker's, and Palmer's corps. It was a surprise, but the troops stood firm. Terrible was the struggle, but the Confederates at last recoiled, leaving Generals Stevens, Featherstone, Armistead, and Pettus, with five hundred more dead on the field, and wounded men to thrice that number.

The next day, Sherman reconnoitring Hood's lines found them deserted. He pushed on towards Atlanta, only to meet a much stronger line of works near the city. To attack these defenses, and Atlanta itself was the work now before him, and he set about it. Blair had carried a hill, and was planting batteries to sweep the city, when it was found that Hood had outwitted them. The strong lines were held by a mere handful, while Hood, with his main army, marching by night, had turned Sherman's flank, and was already with Hardee in the van, pouring down like a torrent on Sherman's left and rear. In a moment McPherson, one of the best generals lay dead, Smith's division of Blair's corps was crushed back, eight guns were lost; but Blair at last found a strong ground and held it, able ere long to repulse the Confederates by striking their right.

Again Hood renewed the attack, pushing through the Fifteenth Corps, till Schofield by concentrating his batteries, drove them back by his shells. Then at Sherman's command, the Fifteenth Corps swept forward to retrieve its honor, and recover its lost ground and guns, succeeding in recapturing all these but two.

Hood recoiled, and retired within his works; having lost twenty-two hundred killed, his wounded and missing swelling his loss to at least eight thousand.

Soon after a great cavalry expedition under General Stoneman, supported by McCook's and Rousseau's divisions, started from Sherman's camp. Its object was a grand one ; it was not only to break up railroad lines, but to capture Macon, and then push on to Andersonville, there to liberate the thousands of United States soldiers held as prisoners with such severity if not cruelty.

McCook captured a valuable train belonging to Hood's army, but on reaching Lovejoy's, the appointed rendezvous, could learn nothing of Stoneman. That cavalry general, disregarding his orders, made no attempt to join McCook, and on approaching Macon, was driven off by a hastily collected force. Panic-struck, he fled, and dividing his force, was at last captured with a thousand men by Iverson, who had not half that number.

While this movement was in progress, Sherman was again at work near Atlanta. He transferred the Army of the Tennessee, under General Howard, from his left to his right, with a view to flank Hood out of Atlanta, but the Confederate general, on the 20th of July, struck out heavily from his left at Howard's lines. Logan's, the Fifteenth Corps, held the crest of a wooded ridge. He had improved every moment to throw up a rough breastwork of logs and rails. After a brisk cannonade, Hood's infantry, under Hardee and Lee, swept bravely up to Howard's right flank ; but a deadly fire swept their line; back they were hurled, but again and again they re-formed and advanced, till nearly seven hundred lay dead, and thousands fell wounded. Hood, having sacrificed several thousand men, withdrew once more within his fortifications at Atlanta.

Closer and closer Sherman drew his lines, pushing them to East Point, shelling Atlanta, and menacing the railroads on which Atlanta

depended for subsistence. Hood sought to avert the final blow by dispatching Wheeler with his cavalry to operate in Sherman's rear.

The United States commander sent Kilpatrick at once to break up the West Point and Macon railroads, which was done pretty effectively. Then he abandoned the siege of Atlanta, and sending his sick and his wounded, with his surplus wagons, to the Chattahoochee, he put his whole army in motion, and before Hood penetrated his design, was behind Atlanta, thoroughly destroying the railroads on which Hood depended. That general now divided his army. Hardee, with one portion, advanced to Jonesborough. Here, on the 31st of August, he came upon Howard, with the Fifteenth, Sixteenth, and Seventeenth Corps. Howard had covered his front with a breastwork, and calmly awaited attack. It was made with great courage and skill, but after two hours of terrible struggle Hardee retreated, leaving his dead and wounded.

Sherman then came up, with Thomas and Schofield, who had been breaking up the roads, and by a vigorous attack carried the Confederate lines at Jonesborough, capturing General Govan, with his brigade and batteries. Hardee retreated in haste. Hood, cut off from supplies, with his army scattered and beaten, blew up his magazine and, destroying his stores, evacuated Atlanta and fled, on the 1st of September.

Sherman, pursuing Hardee, found him well intrenched near Lovejoy's, between Walnut Creek and Flint River. To attack him would entail a useless waste of life. But before he took any other course rumors came that Hood had fled: then a courier dashed up from General Slocum, announcing that he himself was actually in Atlanta.

Without making the attempt to pursue and capture any of the

scattered divisions of Hood's army, Sherman concentrated his whole force at Atlanta. He ordered the removal of all the remaining inhabitants, allowing them to go North or South as they preferred. This severe measure, which General Sherman deemed imperatively necessary, as he could not supply the inhabitants with food, and none would be sent to Atlanta while he occupied it, drew from the South the most unsparing condemnation.

While Hood's cavalry was raiding into Tennessee, Hardee had effected a junction with Hood near Jonesborough, and the defeated army was reinforced, and visited by Jefferson Davis, who sought to rouse the enthusiasm of the soldiers, in the gloomy days that had befallen them. Hood then crossed the Chattahoochee, and tearing up the railroad, menaced Allatoona : but General Corse, a sturdy man, was already there with his brigade to defend the valuable stores in the place. General Sherman, on the first tidings of Hood's movement, dispatched General Thomas to Nashville, to check any Confederate movements in that State, and now himself started in pursuit of Hood. Before he could reach Allatoona, French, one of Hood's generals, had invested the place on the morning of the 5th of October, and opened a sharp cannonade, which echoed through the mountains, and reached Sherman's ears as he pressed eagerly on. From mountain-peak to peak, flags carried to Corse the cheering news that aid was at hand. "He will hold out," cried Sherman ; "I know the man."

When Corse refused to surrender, French assaulted with all his forces, rushing again and again to the very parapets ; but Corse, his face streaming with blood from a bullet-wound, hurled them back at every onset, his brave men thinning, till at last, French. finding Cox approaching, retreated, leaving his dead on the field.

Hood, anxious to draw Sherman out of Georgia, pushed northwest to Kingston, and then on to Resaca, followed steadily by Sherman, who in vain endeavored to bring him to action. But Hood no longer cared to fight, he eluded Sherman and made off. Then Sherman halted at Gaylesville, Alabama, and sending most of his cavalry and the Fourth Corps to Thomas, prepared for a march towards the sea, gathering up all his garrisons, destroying all railroads. foundries, mills, etc.

CHAPTER XIV.

The Confederates on the Sea—The Oreto, Alabama, Florida—Capture of the Revenue Cutter Chesapeake—Aid given by England and her Provinces—Capture of the Florida and Japan—Engagement between the Alabama and the Kearsarge—The Alabama sunk—Farragut in Mobile Harbor destroys the Confederate Fleet.

We will leave the land operations for a time to follow the movements of the armed vessels on the seas. Confederate cruisers, or rather English war-vessels under the Confederate flag, still ravaged the American shipping on the ocean. The steamer Orèto, in spite of the efforts of Mr. Adams, the United States Minister in England, was allowed to escape from Liverpool, and though she put in at Nassau, the English authorities disregarded the remonstrances of the Americans, and she was allowed to depart. Under British colors, she ran into the harbor of Mobile, through the neglect of the blockading squadron, and on the 27th of December, 1862, sallied out on her work of destruction, commanded by John N. Maffit. The Alabama, also fitted out in England, and commanded by Raphael Semmes, was also soon on the ocean. Both these vessels used the British as well as the Confederate flag, and

at British ports were always received with the warmest welcome. Early in May, 1863, the Florida, one of these cruisers, with the brig Clarence, which she had captured and fitted out as a privateer, ran along the Atlantic coast, capturing and destroying vessels. Reed, the commander of the Clarence, transferred his flag first to the bark Tacony, and then to the schooner Archer, in which, on the 24th of June, he boldly entered the harbor of Portland, Maine, and at night cut out the steam revenue-cutter Cushing. This bold act roused the place. Volunteers at once manned two merchant steamers, and gave chase. The Cushing was soon overhauled, and her captors took to their boats, and blew her up. The boats were soon captured, and the Archer forced to strike, and Reed and his comrades lodged in prison.

Another bold act in the same waters, was the capture of the Chesapeake, a steamer plying between New York and Portland. On the 6th of December, 1863, sixteen of the passengers proclaimed themselves Confederates, and seized the vessel, putting the captain in irons, and murdering an engineer. The captors then ran her into Sambro harbor, Nova Scotia, but two United States gunboats, the Ella and Anna, ran in and recaptured her. The Confederates were handed over to the British authorities at Halifax, but were at once rescued by a mob, the people of all the British provinces showing, throughout the war, the most bitter and hostile feeling to the United States. The judicial authorities, however, restored the Chesapeake to its owners. In 1864, three new British cruisers sailed from England, the Tallahassee, Olustee, and Chickamauga. The ships destroyed by these cruisers up to January, 1864, were estimated at more than thirteen millions of dollars, but the ravages after that time increased with fearful rapidity.

The Florida, after a successful cruise, ran into Bahia, in the midst of a Brazilian fleet, and under the guns of a fort. The United States steamer Wachusett, Captain Collins, had just discovered her, and without any regard to her being in a neutral port or well protected, he ran in, compelled her to surrender, and making fast a hawser, towed her out to sea, unharmed by the guns which the fort opened upon him. Captain Collins resolved to rid the sea of the Florida, even if it cost him his commission. Though pursued by the Brazilian fleet, he reached Hampton Roads, Virginia, with his prize. On the complaint of the Brazilian Government, he was, however, suspended from command.

The Japan, another vessel built at Greenock, sailed from English waters in April, 1863, and assuming the name of Georgia, destroyed many ships, and returned to England. Sailing out again as a British merchantman, she was captured by the Niagara, Captain Craven, in August.

The most famous of these cruisers, the Alabama, Captain Semmes, continued her ravages till June, 1864, when the Kearsarge, Captain Winslow, overhauled her. The Alabama was in the harbor of Cherbourg, France, and on the 15th of June steamed out to meet the Kearsarge, firing three broadsides from her eight guns, before Winslow replied. The Kearsarge endeavored to board, but Semmes, who evinced great cowardice, leaving his coin and chronometers on shore, and having a British yacht, the Deerhound, at hand to succor him in need, steamed rapidly away. The Kearsarge kept pace with her, firing slowly and surely, while the Alabama's gunners, picked men from British men-of-war, shot wildly. The chase became a circle. Seven times the Kearsarge steamed around, narrowing in each time, disabling one of Semmes' guns, blocking up the engine-room, and cutting

up the hold and rigging. The Alabama, after half an hour's fight, tried to reach the French shore, but as she was sinking, hauled down her flag, but kept up firing, while Semmes and his men attempted to reach the Deerhound in their boats. He succeeded in doing so, with forty of his men, and escaped to England. His vessel soon went down. The Alabama had lost nine killed, twenty-one wounded, and sixty-five taken by the Kearsarge, which had three men wounded, one, the gallant William Gowin, mortally.

This victory caused the greatest exultation in the United States, the ships having been equally matched, and the triumph complete and undeniable.

The United States Navy was now so increased as to be able to close all the Southern ports except Wilmington, in North Carolina, and Mobile, in Alabama, where forts prevented a blockading squadron from approaching, so as to cut off blockade-runners.

In August, 1864, Rear-Admiral Farragut prepared to force a passage in spite of Forts Morgan, Powell, and Gaines, assisted by the ironclad Tennessee and other Confederate gunboats under Admiral Buchanan. Farragut had four ironclads, and fourteen wooden vessels. He took post in the main-top of his flagship, the Hartford, and pushed in, the Tecumseh leading and engaging Fort Morgan, but she soon caught on a torpedo, which exploded, sinking her almost at once. In spite of this, Farragut pushed on, silencing the fort, and coming to action with the Confederate fleet. The latter opened fire, and the Tennessee bore down on the Hartford, while the gunboats poured broadsides into her. Farragut then cast off the Metacomet, which was lashed to the Hartford, and ordered her to engage the Selma. A stirring fight ensued between the two, but after an hour, Murphy, the cap-

tain of the Selma, having lost his lieutenant and five men killed, and being wounded himself, as were many of his crew, struck. The other Confederate gunboats, the Morgan and Gaines, fled to the cover of the fort-guns, and the Morgan finally escaped to Mobile, while the Gaines was run ashore and burned.

But the Tennessee resolved to make one bold attempt to retrieve the day. Under a full head of steam, she dashed at the Hartford. The United States fleet closed around her. The Monongahela struck her in the side, coming at full speed, but the blow, and the broadside, left her unharmed. Again the Monongahela drew off, and came on, crushing in her own beak; then the Lackawanna ran crashing on, to recoil shattered by the shock. The Hartford tried to strike her, but slid along. Then the Chickasaw and Manhattan, monitors, attacked her at the stern, battering her considerably. The Tennessee had bravely stood all this tremendous pummelling, but her smoke-stack, her steering-chains, her port-shutters were all disabled; it was useless to prolong the contest, so seeing the Hartford, Lackawanna, and Ossipee, all about to ram her, Admiral Buchanan, severely wounded himself, surrendered.

Farragut's loss had been heavy, but the Confederate fleet was gone. His complete victory cost him in killed and drowned, a hundred and sixty-five, while a hundred and seventy were wounded.

The remaining forts were now to be reduced, but in the night, Fort Powell was evacuated and blown up; and the next day Fort Gaines was so effectively shelled that it surrendered, though Colonel Anderson was bitterly reproached by General Page, and generally in the South, for yielding. Yet Page himself held out only one day in Fort Morgan. With its fall the outworks of Mobile passed into the hands

of the United States, the Confederacy losing a fleet, three forts, a hundred and four guns, and nearly fifteen hundred men as prisoners of war.

CHAPTER XV.

The Presidential Election—Movements for Peace—The Negotiations at Hampton Roads—Forrest's last Raid—Hood advances, and Thomas falls back to Nashville—Bloody Battle at Franklin—The Battle at Nashville—Thomas attacks Hood on the right and left, and carries his first Line—He storms Overton's Hill—Hood routed and driven across the Tennessee—Breckinridge driven into North Carolina—Saltville taken.

THE year 1864, amid all the din of war, was the period for a new Presidential election, and party feeling was strong. A Radical Convention held at Cleveland, in May, nominated General John C. Fremont for President, and General John Cochrane for Vice-President, but both these soon withdrew. The Union National Convention of the Republican party met at Baltimore in June, and renominated Abraham Lincoln for President, while for Vice-President they put forward Andrew Johnson of Tennessee, a man of much ability and experience. It was a curious circumstance, that a party arrayed against the South thus selected as its candidates natives of Southern States.

The Democratic Convention did not meet till August when General George C. McClellan was nominated as President, and George H. Pendleton of Ohio, as Vice-President.

Both parties prepared for the election by stirring appeals, but the general voice was evidently in favor of the Republican party. When the election came off, the vote in the States which were not under Confederate control, and in which alone the election was held, gave Mr. Lincoln two million two hundred thousand votes, and McClellan

one million eight hundred thousand ; but he secured the votes of only three States, New Jersey, Delaware, and Kentucky, which gave twenty-one votes ; all the rest giving two hundred and twelve votes for Lincoln and Johnson.

With their power thus confirmed, the Republican party, at the next Congress, passed, 31st January, 1865, a Constitutional Amendment abolishing and forever prohibiting slavery.

This bloody war had desolated the country for four years, and at last efforts were made to negotiate and restore peace. President Lincoln showed an inclination to meet the Confederate leaders, and he went down to Fortress Monroe, where, on the 3d of February, a conference was held between him and Mr. Seward, the Secretary of State, and three Confederate delegates, Alexander H. Stephens, John A. Campbell, and Robert M. T. Hunter. The restoration of the Union was the point on which Mr. Lincoln insisted absolutely, but to which the Southern delegates would not listen. They, unfortunately were led by their feelings, and threw aside a favorable opportunity to secure terms such as nothing but a series of victories could win for them.

Meanwhile, hostilities had gone on in the field. Forrest, in the latter part of September, with a cavalry force, invested Colonel Campbell, at Athens, and that officer pusillanimously surrendered, just as troops arrived for his relief, only to be captured also. The alarm was, however, given, and Rousseau on one side, Steedman on another, and Morgan on another, endeavored to cut off the daring cavalry leader of the South, but all in vain : Forrest eluded them all, and, carrying on his work of destruction to the last, crossed the Tennessee at Bainbridge, and made off.

Hood, meanwhile, after advancing almost to Chattanooga, moved westward upon Decatur, an important point, where several railroad lines crossed. General Gordon Granger was posted here, and Hood pushed up his lines of rifle-pits, threatening an assault; but Granger, in a sortie, flanked his rifle-pits on the left, and carried a battery on his right. Nettled as he was at this, Hood durst not waste time, but pushed on, and crossed the Tennessee at Florence, while Forrest, again in the saddle, made a dash at Johnsonville, a place where important stores had been accumulated. It held out bravely, but so fierce was the attack that the besieged fired their gunboats and transports, the flames spreading to the town, destroying a million and a half dollars' worth of supplies, which Thomas greatly needed. Part of Taylor's army from Louisiana now joined Hood, and it was clear that Nashville was his object. Thomas pushed forward the Fourth Corps, General Stanley, and Twenty-Third Corps, General Schofield, to Pulaski, to check his march. These, numbering twenty thousand men, with eight thousand cavalry, constituted his army, while Hood was advancing on him with forty thousand infantry, and twelve thousand most effective cavalry, Sherman's march to the sea relieving him from all fear of attack from that general.

As Hood advanced, Generals Schofield and Granger fell back on Nashville. On the 30th of November Schofield took up a position on the southern verge of Franklin, in a bend of Harpeth River, and throwing up a breastwork, prepared to fight in order to give his trains time to get well on towards Nashville. Hood soon came up with his van, but seeing the strong line, waited till all his force arrived. Then, with Stewart on his right, and Cheatham on his left, and Forrest's horse on either side, he prepared for a decisive charge. "Break

those lines," shouted the Confederate general to his men, "and there is nothing more to withstand you this side of the Ohio River!" With a wild cheer they dashed on. Over Schofield's advanced works they poured like a torrent, hurling back in disorder two brigades which held them, and then breaking through Schofield's centre, captured Carter's Hill with eight guns, planting the Confederate flag on the breastworks. The day seemed lost, and men began to stream back in flight. But behind the hill stood Opdycke's brigade, and above the din rang out its commander's clarion voice: "First brigade, forward to the works!" With the last rays of sunset gleaming on their levelled bayonets, they swept up to the scene of disaster, and in a few moments stood victorious at the old line, with not a Confederate in sight except dead, wounded, or prisoners; recapturing the guns, and holding as trophies ten of Hood's battle-flags, so sudden and unexpected had been his charge.

But Hood was not defeated. Till ten o'clock at night he sent his brave men into action, now on Schofield's right, then on the flank; but every assault was repulsed, and his veterans recoiled with steadily decreasing lines. At midnight the noise of battle died away. Schofield's trains were well on their way, so he drew out his men, and marching steadily on, by noon drew up within Thomas' lines of works defending Nashville.

Hood lost in this sanguinary battle Cleburne, one of the best Southern generals, with four brigadiers killed, his death-roll running up to seventeen hundred, his total loss to more than six thousand, while Schofield's loss in killed was less than two hundred.

Hood at last confronted Thomas at Nashville, but the odds were against him. His army of forty thousand was faced by Thomas' force,

which every day strengthened. The passing steamboats landed A. J. Smith's command from Missouri; the railroad trains rattled up with Steedman's force from Chattanooga. On the 14th of December Thomas began the battle, Steedman, on his left, attacking Hood, to mislead him, while in the morning, Smith, with Wilson's cavalry, struck Chalmers in flank, and after a severe fight, routed him, taking Hood's whole line of defense, and forcing him back to a new line. But Hood was not easily beaten; so that Thomas, pushing on again, confronted him, Smith in the centre; Wood and Steedman, on the left; Schofield and Wilson on the right. Wilson's cavalry soon reached Hood's rear, while Wood and Steedman assailed Overton's hill, but as they struggled over abatis, were mowed down with volleys of musketry, canister, and grape. Smith and Schofield, more successful, carried the works before them; and when their loud huzzas rang out, and Wilson was known to be in the rear, Wood and Steedman again charged, and in spite of the murderous fire, swept all before them. Hood's army fled broken and disorganized to Franklin, Chalmers' cavalry holding the road for a time, till Spalding carried it with the 12th Tennessee horse. Then the pursuit was renewed: eighteen hundred wounded were taken, and two hundred United States soldiers were recaptured at Franklin. The pursuit was kept up for several days, till heavy rains made the roads impracticable, and the rivers too deep for an army to cross without pontoons.

The victory was complete. Huntsville, Athens, and Decatur were again reoccupied.

Stoneman then, in a brilliant campaign, drove Breckinridge into North Carolina, and captured Saltville, destroying the salt-works, locomotives, and rolling stock.

CHAPTER XVI.

Sherman's March to the Sea—Mode of Proceeding—Fights on the way—Before Savannah—Hazen storms Fort McAllister—Sherman meets Foster and Dahlgren—Savannah evacuated—Sherman's Christmas-present to President Lincoln—Operations to co-operate with him—He crosses the Edisto—Actions at Branchville, Orangeburg, and on the Congaree—Columbia surrendered—The Conflagration—Hardee evacuates Charleston—The Stars and Stripes raised at Sumter—Sherman enters North Carolina—Fayetteville—Actions at Averysborough and Bentonville—Goldsborough—The Expeditions against Fort Fisher—It is carried at last—Fall of Wilmington—Hoke's Repulse—Wilson's brilliant cavalry Campaign in Alabama—Canby reduces Mobile.

We will now return to General Sherman. When he left Thomas to cope with Hood, he prepared to march to the sea with the Fourteenth, Fifteenth, Seventeenth, and Twentieth Corps, organized in two grand divisions under Generals Howard and Slocum, with cavalry on the flanks, General Sherman marching and camping alternately with each wing, which moved at some miles distance apart. They were to live on the country, and did so, sending out foraging parties which swept the State like a swarm of locusts. On the march, they demolished railroads, bridges, and all military stores and supplies that were not needed for their own use.

Milledgeville was entered without opposition on the 23d of November, 1864. Pushing on from this, the first opposition of any moment was encountered by General Kilpatrick, who, while attempting to reach and liberate the United States prisoners held at Milden, was attacked by General Wheeler, and compelled to dismount, and throw up a breastwork for his defense.

Sherman crossed the Ogeechee on the last day of November, and his two columns, sweeping on their relentless course of desolation, brushing aside all the small parties of the enemy, at last united before Savannah. The Confederates had been in uncertainty at what precise point he was striking, and he kept them in doubt by his course, Kilpatrick engaging Wheeler at Briar Creek, on the 4th of December.

Six days after, Savannah was completely beleaguered, and Hazen was in front of Fort McAllister, and Sherman and Howard opened communication with Admiral Dahlgren, and General Foster on the fleet outside.

Then Hazen attacked the fort. Over torpedoes and abatis, his gallant fellows rushed, the fiery volleys never checking their line as they poured over the parapet, and took the fort. The garrison surrendered, with twenty-two guns and ammunition.

When Sherman saw the Stars and Stripes floating over McAllister, he went down and congratulated Hazen, and the next day met Dahlgren on board the Harvest Moon.

Heavy guns were then brought up to bombard Savannah. General Sherman formally summoned Hardee, the Confederate general in the city, to surrender, but he refused. The siege-guns were then placed in position, but it was soon discovered that on the dark and windy night of the 20th, Hardee crossed the Savannah on a pontoon bridge, and retreated towards Charleston, so silently as to escape the notice of Sherman's pickets. He had destroyed his iron-clads and other vessels, with much ammunition, but left his cannon and cotton intact.

Sherman had thus swept across the South, and taken one of the great cities and ports with no loss but that of sixty-three men killed,

and two hundred and forty-five wounded. He telegraphed to the President:

"I beg to present you as a Christmas gift the city of Savannah, with one hundred and fifty heavy guns, and plenty of ammunition, and also about twenty-five thousand bales of cotton."

During his march several movements had been made to distract the enemy's attention. Two from Vicksburg, sent out by General Dana, and a third under Grierson, from Memphis. Various engagements occurred, the hardest fight being at Egypt, on the 27th of December. Foster on the sea-coast had, though suffering from an unhealed wound, kept the Confederates on the alert, by movements against the Charleston and Savannah railroads.

After remaining a month at Savannah, to refit his army, Sherman resumed his march. On the 1st of February, his whole army moved northward in two columns. South Carolina felt that her hour of desolation was come, but she would not submit tamely. Governor Magrath called out as militia every able-bodied white man not already in service; the slaves, who had not yet had a chance to escape to Sherman's army, as thousands had done in Georgia, were driven in gangs to work at felling trees to impede the roads. But Sherman came on relentless as fate, his men marching knee-deep through swamps, routing the first opposition at the Salkehatchie, and driving the Confederates beyond the Edisto. By menacing Augusta and Charleston, he kept the Confederate forces divided, and went on tearing up the railroads.

Columbia, the capital of South Carolina, was reached on the 17th, and as Wade Hampton fled it surrendered without a blow, but after Sherman's army passed through, much of the city was reduced to

ashes. Who fired it is one of the disputed points of history. Sherman says that the Confederates under Hampton fired their cotton, which set fire to the houses. The Confederates and their allies, the British Government and people, charge that Sherman's army set it on fire. It was a time of terror and humiliation for the haughty capital of South Carolina. An enemy holding the city, flames on all sides, the air like a furnace, the streets impassable, frightened men, women, and children running in all directions.

The fate of Charleston was now decided. General Hardee prepared to evacuate the cradle of Secession. Every building, warehouse, or shed stored with cotton, was fired by a guard detailed for the purpose. The fire thus kindled proved nearly as disastrous to Charleston as Wade Hampton's did to Columbia. The powder in the northwestern railroad depot caught and exploded, killing no less than two hundred people. From this point the fire spread rapidly, laying several squares in ashes.

Sherman entered the fire-scourged city on the 18th, and the United States flag was at last raised again on the ruins of Fort Sumter.

Sherman's march through Georgia, had been one of devastation; but through sparsely settled South Carolina, it was even more destructive. It has been well said that no other State or section has, in modern times, been so thoroughly devastated in a single campaign, signalized by as little fighting as was South Carolina by that march.

Fayetteville, North Carolina, was Sherman's next point. On the way, Kilpatrick, after deluding and battling Wheeler, was suddenly attacked by Wade Hampton, surprised and routed, with the loss of his guns. He rallied, and charging on foot, recovered his guns, and turned them on the late victors, who in turn fled in all haste as

Mitchell came up to Kilpatrick's relief with a brigade of infantry.

At Fayetteville, Sherman destroyed the United States arsenal with its machinery. He rested here three days to reorganize his army. The Confederates were now gathering in force around him. Hardee, with the troops from Savannah and Charleston; Beauregard from Columbia, Cheatham from Tennessee, Wheeler and Hampton's cavalry, with militia from North Carolina, now formed an army of forty thousand men, with the able General Joseph Johnston at its head. Sherman pushed on to Averysborough, where a battle was fought on the 10th of March, but Hardee was defeated with loss, the Twentieth Corps, under Williams, and the Fourteenth, winning laurels by their gallantry.

On the 18th of March, Slocum, driving in Debbrell's Confederate cavalry near Goldsboro', was assailed by Johnston's whole army. Carlin's brigades were hurled back with the loss of three guns. Slocum saw his peril, and throwing up such intrenchments as he could, stood on the defensive in a well-formed line, with Kilpatrick on his left. Then Johnston charged furiously; six times in succession his men rushed on to the assault, but the fire of artillery and musketry mowed them down. In vain did Johnston strain every nerve to crush Slocum before relief could reach him. Finding this impossible, he drew off, and intrenched in a strong position, a sort of triangle facing Slocum on one side, and on the other Howard, who had come up to Slocum's relief. Sherman, meanwhile, sent Schofield to gain Johnston's rear and cut off his retreat, but Johnston was not to be caught. He decamped at night, and retreated on Raleigh.

Sherman then pushed on to Goldsboro', whence, leaving Generals

Terry and Schofield in command, he ran on to City Point, to confer with President Lincoln, and Generals Grant and Meade. He had fought his way through the very heart of the Confederacy, taken several of the most important Southern cities, and was now with a victorious army, ready to co-operate in any plan of the Commander-in-chief. His stay was brief, and on the 30th of March he was again at the head of his army in North Carolina. Some other operations had meanwhile been undertaken in North Carolina, from Grant's army. To seize Wilmington, and cut off the supplies received by the Confederates through that port was an important object. To attain it, an expedition under General Butler proceeded on Commodore Porter's fleet in December. After an abortive attempt to blow up Fort Fisher, a Confederate work commanding the main channel at the New Inlet leading up to Wilmington, Porter bombarded it with the ironsides Canonicus, Mahopac, Minnesota, and other large ships. In seventy-five minutes he silenced its guns, set it on fire in several places, and blew up two magazines. The fire was renewed on the 27th of December, and Butler then landed to assault the fort, but finding it too strong, abandoned the attempt. General Terry was next sent down by Grant with fresh troops. Again the ironclads rained their missiles on the fort; then, on the 14th of January, Terry landed. The next day, a terrible fire from the fleet drove the Confederates to their bomb-proofs, and then two thousand sailors and marines, who had gradually worked their way up to within two hundred yards of the fort, rushed up by the flank along the beach. But as the fleet's fire ceased, the Confederates sprang to their works, the sailors were swept down by canister, grape, and musketry; though some gained the parapet, they were repulsed. On the left Curtis' bri-

gade drove the Confederates from the heavy palisading, and while most were fighting the sailors, gained part of the works. Reinforcements came up, and the fight went on, the Confederates, animated by their commander, Major-General Whiting, resisting with stubborn courage. At last they were driven out of the fort, and attempted to escape, but were forced to surrender, their commander receiving his death-wound before he yielded. Terry took over two thousand prisoners, and one hundred and sixty guns, losing one hundred and ten killed, and five hundred and thirty-six wounded in the desperate assault.

Fort Caswell, with other works, was then abandoned and destroyed by the Confederates.

General Schofield, with his Twenty-third Corps, was then ordered from the West by Grant, and sent down to Terry, who at once advanced on Fort Anderson, the chief remaining work between him and Wilmington. Hoke, the Confederate general, hastily abandoned it, and fell back to Town Creek, where he intrenched; General Cox, who had been thrown over the Cape Fear, pursued and routed him, then pushed on towards Wilmington. General Terry, on the peninsula, had been unable to carry Hoke's works before him, but Wilmington was won. Hoke retreated, destroying two privateers, steamers, cotton and stores to a large amount. He was soon pursued, but turning suddenly on Colonel Upham, captured seven hundred of his men, though in attempting to attack Schofield, he found it too dangerous, the attempt resulting in very heavy loss. Hoke then resumed his retreat, and soon reached Johnston's army, while Schofield entered Goldsboro', just before Sherman reached it, as we have already seen.

A great and brilliant cavalry campaign in the West under General

Wilson, had captured important Confederate towns, and at last routed Forrest.

Wilson crossed the Tennessee on the 18th of March, with a splendid body of light armed and equipped cavalry, numbering in all fifteen thousand men. Selma, in Alabama, was the first point aimed at, and Forrest was found strongly posted on Boyle's Creek, with about five thousand men. Wilson attacked with Long's and Upton's divisions. Long, on the right, charged and carried the guns before him, while Upton, on the Maplesville road, made short work there. In a brief struggle, the hitherto victorious cavalry officer of the Confederacy was driven from the field with heavy loss in guns and men, and did not halt till he was twenty miles from the field. He made a stand at Selma, by order of General Dick Taylor, but Wilson pursued him rapidly, and on the 3d of April, attacked him in his new lines. Long fell at the head of his men, but they swept on over the Confederate intrenchments, driving Forrest's men pell-mell into Selma. There they rallied again with stubborn energy, but Upton charged in his turn, and Selma was taken, with thirty-two guns, and twenty-seven hundred prisoners. The butcher Forrest, with about three thousand, escaped by night, after burning twenty-five thousand bales of cotton. Wilson sacked the town, destroyed the arsenal, factories, foundries, and all the cotton that was left.

After repairing bridges, Wilson pushed on, and early in the morning of the 12th of April entered Montgomery, Alabama, where the Confederate Government was first organized. It was ablaze with burning cotton, no less than a hundred and twenty-five thousand bales having been burned there by Wirt Adams, the late Confederate commandant. At Columbus, Georgia, which he reached on the 16th, Wilson

had a sharp fight, but finally took the place, destroying the Confederate ram Jackson, which lay there, locomotives, cars, and thousands of bales of cotton.

The same day, a detachment under Lagrange took Fort Tyler, at West Point, killing General Tyler, the commander, and capturing his whole force.

Wilson kept on his career till April 21st, when he was informed by General Howell Cobb that the war was virtually ended.

Further south, General Canby had prepared to reduce Mobile, and on the 28th of March, Spanish fort was invested by the Sixteenth and Thirteenth Corps, the fleet joining in the siege, although two vessels, the Metacomet and Octorara, were blown up by torpedoes. After a tremendous bombardment, the guns of the fort were silenced on the 8th of April, at midnight, and at two o'clock in the morning the American troops entered unopposed, most of the garrison escaping, although six hundred and fifty-two, with thirty heavy guns, fell into the hands of the United States forces. Forts Tracy and Huger were then attacked, but they were speedily evacuated. But Generals Thomas and Cockrill held Blakely, with three thousand Confederates and abundant artillery. General Garrard led the assault on their works, under a fearful storm of shell and shrapnel, and carried them, while Rinnekin's and Gilbert's brigades, turning the Confederate left, captured Thomas and a thousand men, who were endeavoring to escape. On the right, colored troops shouting "Remember Fort Pillow!" swept over the Confederate works.

Fort Blakely was won, but at the cost of a thousand killed and wounded. The Confederates lost five hundred killed and wounded, three thousand prisoners, thirty-two cannon, four thousand muskets.

CHAPTER XVII.

The Close of the War—Grant begins operations—The Confederate Rams in the James—Sheridan in the Valley again—He crushes Early—Wheels around Lee's Lines and reports to Grant—Lee's bold Dash—He takes Fort Steedman—Grant's Advance on the Confederate Lines—Sheridan at Five-Forks—General Assault by Grant—Forts Gregg and Alexander carried—Lee defeated, and A. P. Hill killed—He telegraphs to Davis that Richmond must be evacuated—The Confederate Capital in Confusion and Flames—Weitzel enters it—Lee's Retreat—Sheridan heads him off—Grant proposes a Surrender—Lee hesitates—Appomattox Court House—Surrender of Lee's Army of Virginia.

THE great Civil War was now verging to its close. Even those in Europe who had encouraged the Confederates, in the hope of seeing the great Republic broken up and ruined, began to see that the United States Government would ultimately reduce the revolting States. Every great port from Norfolk to New Orleans was once more under the flag of the United States. The only large armies of the Confederates were now in Virginia and North Carolina, but they were confronted by armies superior in numbers, arms, and material of war.

In Virginia, the first operation in 1865 was the descent of the Confederate iron-clads, Virginia, Fredericksburg, and Vicksburg, with five wooden steamers, and three torpedo-boats. Breaking General Butler's chain at Dutch Gap, on the 25th of January, the Fredericksburg passed through, the Drewry stuck fast and was soon abandoned, and then blown up by a shell from the land batteries. The Virginia was pierced by a bolt which killed several, and after a battle which lasted all day, the Confederate fleet retired to Richmond.

On the 5th of February Grant opened his campaign, endeavoring

to turn Lee's right at Dinwiddie Court House, with the Fifth Corps, while the Second charged in front. A sharp action ensued, in which Lee, endeavoring to take Grant's column on the left and rear, drove back Gregg's cavalry, as well as Ayres' and Crawford's divisions, with a loss of two thousand men. Grant, however, had gained ground, extending his left to Hatcher's Run.

Three weeks later, Sheridan, in the Shenandoah Valley, dashed out of Winchester, with ten thousand mounted men, and, galloping down, surprised Early at Waynesborough, capturing sixteen hundred out of twenty-five hundred men, with cannon, arms, and wagons. Then sending back his prisoners under guard, he pushed on towards the James, destroying military stores and depots. Unable to reach Grant's left, he swept around Lee's army, destroying bridges, railroads, and canals, till he reached White House, and on the 27th of March reported to Grant in front of Petersburg.

There the great struggle had already commenced. Two days before, at dawn, the Confederates, under Gordon, had dashed like a lightning flash upon Fort Steedman, the very centre of Grant's line. The surprise was complete: nearly the whole garrison were taken on the spot; the adjacent batteries were abandoned, and the guns were all turned on Grant's astonished troops.

But the Confederate forces did not press up to support Gordon, the decisive moment was lost, when Grant's line might have been cut through. The United States troops rallying, so encircled Gordon as to cut off his escape, and two thousand were taken. Then Meade, without loss of time, pushed the Sixth and Second Corps forward, carrying Lee's intrenched picket-line, which had been left slightly guarded.

On the 27th, Grant pushed forward Warren's corps (the Second), and Humphrey's (the Fifth), across Hatcher's Run, to strike Lee's right, while Sheridan was still further to the left with his cavalry. Through rain and mud they pushed on, Warren fighting steadily, till they found the enemy strongly posted at Five Forks. Lee, alive to his danger, at ten the next morning dealt Warren a staggering blow, striking Ayres' division heavily in the flank and rear, routing it and Crawford's. Griffin's division saved the corps, and with Humphrey's corps finally repulsed Lee's charges, though they could not carry his position. Sheridan, meanwhile, had made another dash at Five Forks, which he carried, but Lee struck out, driving Devin and Davies back, and cutting them off from Sheridan, who finally centred his command at Dinwiddie.

Sheridan, the next day, prepared to carry Five Forks, and ordered Warren to assail the enemy's left in full force. This was done so slowly, that he impetuously relieved Warren from duty, putting Griffin in command of the corps.

The Confederates, Pickett's and Bushrod Johnson's divisions, were unable to resist the concentrated attack. Ayres and Griffin carried their works, capturing two thousand five hundred prisoners. Crawford had taken them in the rear, cutting off their retreat, so that Ayres and Griffin soon drove all the remaining Confederates in disorderly flight westward, and before night Sheridan had carried the long coveted position completely, having taken in all five thousand prisoners, his own loss all told not exceeding a thousand.

Lee's right wing was demolished. Grant then opened a furious cannonade on Lee's works before Petersburg, and next morning made a grand attack. Parke, with his Ninth Corps, carried the outer works

before him; Wright, with the Sixth, drove everything before him on the left, sweeping down the rear of the intrenchments, Ord's corps forced Lee's position at Hatcher's Run, and finally carried Forts Gregg and Alexander, but not till Harris's Mississippi brigade, holding the former, was reduced to thirty men.

Humphrey and Sheridan had not been idle on the left. It was a bitter day for Lee. Longstreet came up from Richmond; A. P. Hill, on the left, endeavoring to regain the lost works on his left, was killed. Lee saw that he could not hold Petersburg much longer. Ten thousand of his gallant men had fallen, with one of his ablest generals, in the vain attempt to maintain his lines. At half past ten on that eventful day (Sunday, April 2d), he telegraphed to President Davis, at Richmond: "My lines are broken in three places: Richmond must be evacuated this evening." It reached him while in church. He at once left the temple of religion. The news spread, and the city which had for nearly four years been the capital of the Confederacy became a scene of the wildest confusion. Government officials were removing archives, treasury, stores, arms; citizens were endeavoring to fly with property; bands of lawless desperadoes roved about plundering; then Ewell set fire to the great tobacco warehouses; the rams were blown up, all the shipping at the docks scuttled or fired; as well as the bridges. With flames spreading on all sides, the city soon became one vast conflagration, as tongues of flame leaped from street to street. Before the elaborate defenses of Richmond lay only Weitzel, with two divisions, unaware of what was going on so near, till Lieutenant de Peyster, from the signal tower, reported that the city seemed on fire. At four in the morning, a negro drove in in a buggy, announcing that Richmond had been abandoned.

Only at daylight did the troops dare to advance through the intricate works, thick set with torpedoes. Then Weitzel and his staff, at six o'clock in the morning, rode into the suburbs of the city, amid the roar of exploding shells and falling walls, welcomed by the shouts of negroes. The flag of the United States was at once raised over the Capitol, the city was placed under military rule, and every effort made to check the conflagration, but it burned out the very heart of Virginia's capital; warehouses, post-offices, banks, in fact one-third of the city, before it was extinguished.

Petersburg also was evacuated, and as the telegraph bore the news throughout the North, the day became a holiday of public rejoicing; bells rang out, and cannon thundered forth the exultation of the people.

The Confederate Government was now a fugitive affair, making its first temporary stand at Danville.

Lee's army, now reduced to some thirty-five thousand men, was in a critical position. His progress southward was prevented by Grant's extension of his line. He pushed on to Amelia Court House, hoping to receive supplies from Lynchburg and Danville, but Sheridan intercepted them. Lee then retreated west, pursued by Meade and Sheridan. In vain he turned from time to time to fight. They cut off wagons and guns: Ewell's corps was cut off from Lee, surrounded, and taken. General Read, with a small force, struck the head of Lee's line, and endeavored to check its progress: he was killed in the desperate rush of the Confederates, but though Lee managed to cross the Appomattox, at Farmville, his men were fainting and falling by the way, his horses dying of hunger.

During the night of the 6th the general officers of the fleeing army



LEE SURRENDERS TO GRANT. (Page 941)



THE DEATH-BED OF PRESIDENT ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

(Page 944)



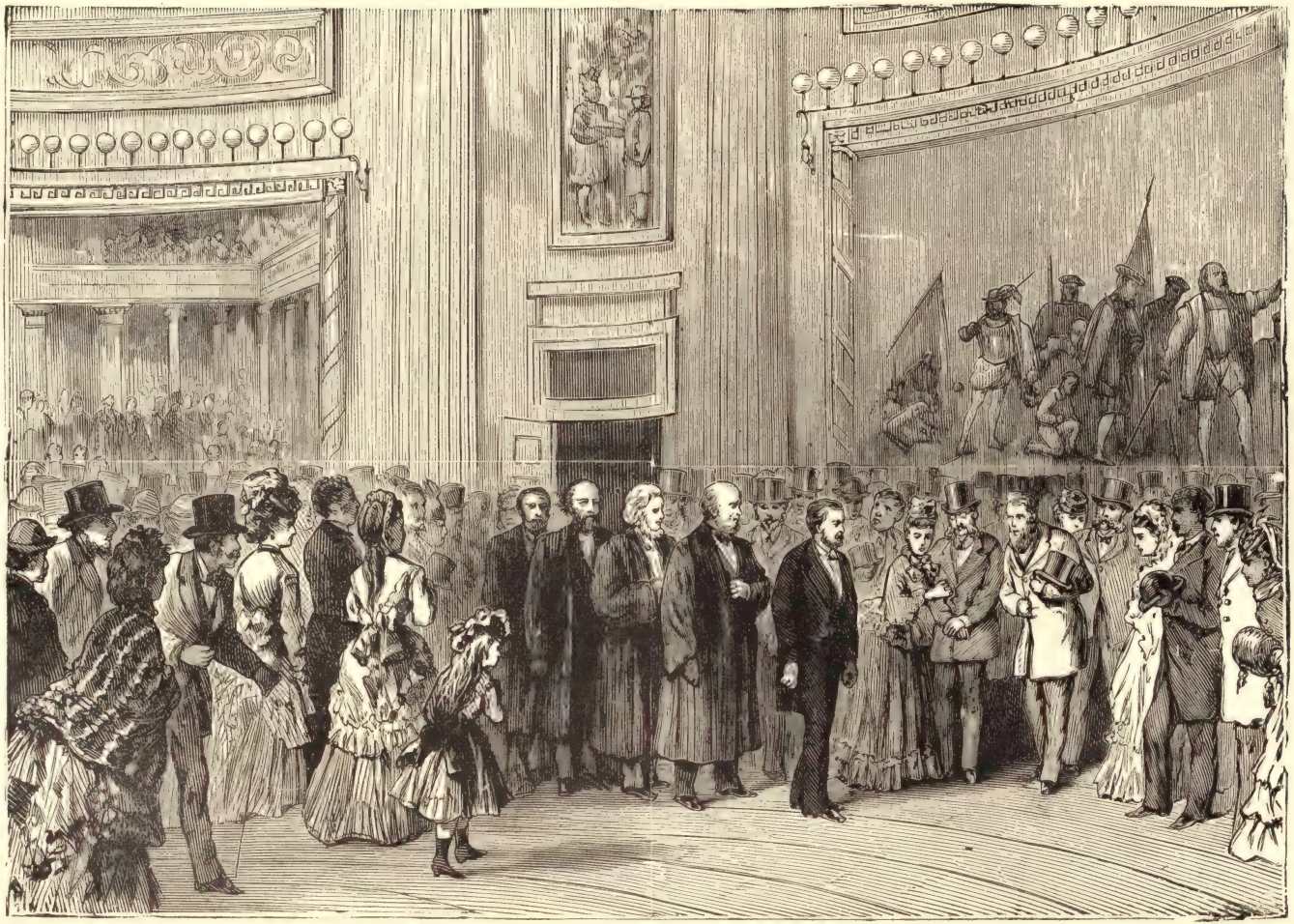
SURRENDER OF GENERAL JOHNSON TO GENERAL SHERMAN.

(Page 951)



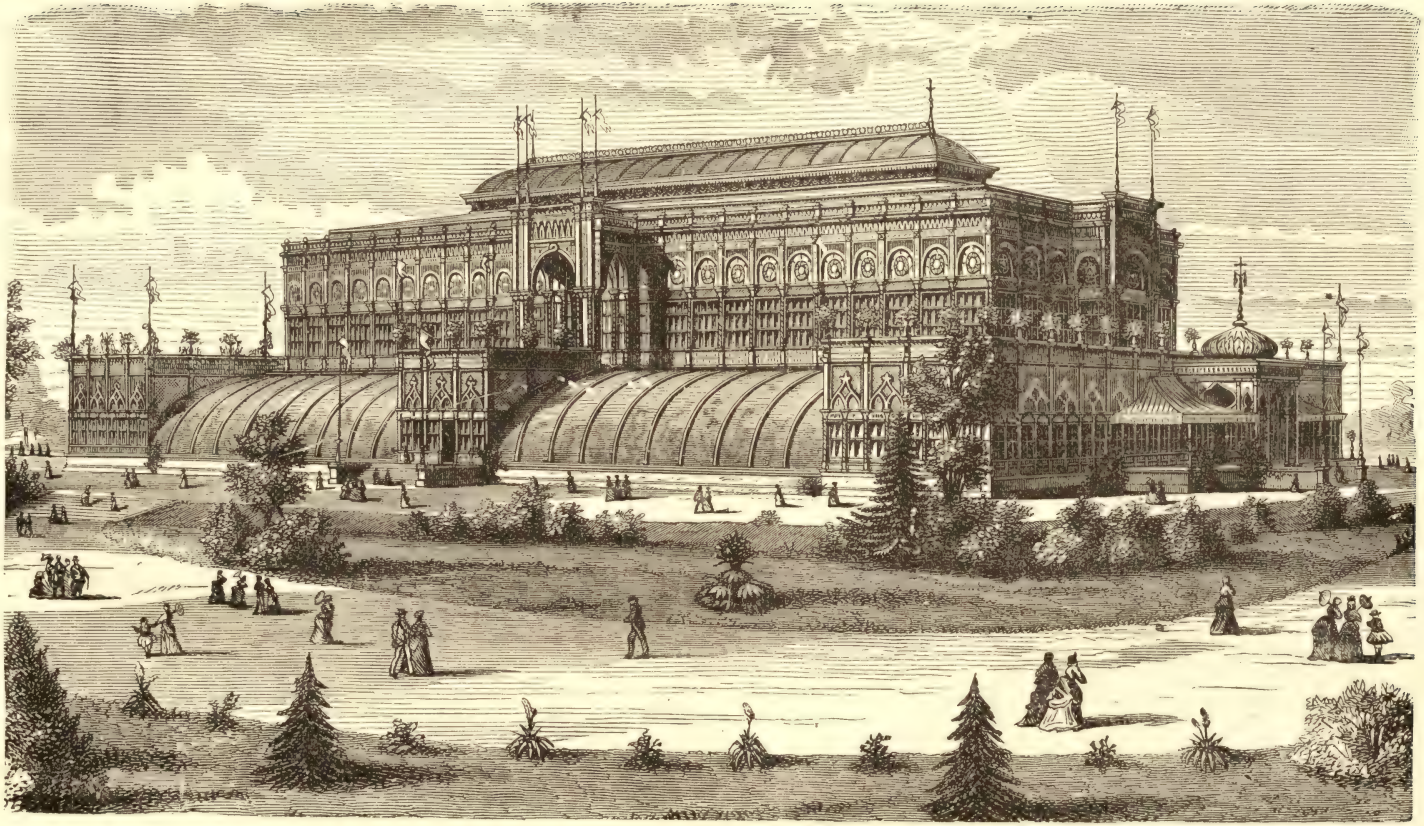
THE IMPEACHMENT OF ANDREW JOHNSON.

(Page 957)



GENERAL GRANT'S SECOND INAUGURATION AS PRESIDENT.

(Page 971)



HORTICULTURAL HALL.

(Page 976)



THE SPANISH MAN-OF-WAR "TORNADO" CHASING THE AMERICAN STEAMER "VIRGINIUS." (Page 973)



A GROUP OF SIOUX INDIANS.

(Page 977)

met around a bivouac fire in council. A capitulation was decided upon, and they informed General Lee of their conviction.

The next day came a letter from General Grant, asking Lee to surrender, and avoid a hopeless struggle and useless effusion of blood. Lee, after repulsing an attack made by Humphreys, replied, asking the terms. Grant stated but one condition ; that the officers and men surrendered should be disqualified from taking up arms again against the government of the United States, until properly exchanged.

Again the retreat and pursuit went on. The army of Virginia made its last charge on the 9th, to repel Sheridan, but when behind it were seen the serried lines of Grant's main army, the white flag was raised. Hostilities were suspended. General Grant and General Lee met immediately at the dwelling house of W. McLean, near the Appomattox Court House. The interview was not prolonged. Commissioners were appointed. General Grant agreed to parole the officers and men : the arms, artillery, and public property to be packed, and stacked, and turned over to his officers. Then each officer and man was to be allowed to return home. Twenty-seven thousand men, the remnant of Lee's army of a hundred and fifty thousand, were included in this capitulation, but probably not more than ten thousand had retained their arms in the flight.

The parting of Lee with the officers and soldiers who had so bravely and devotedly fought under his orders was a sad one. Receiving rations and transportation, the almost starving soldiers of the Lost Cause started for their homes ; the army which had for four years menaced Washington, and held the vast power of the United States at bay, melted away, and General Lee, with the reputation of one of the greatest generals of his day, retired to private life.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Abraham Lincoln's Second Term—His Inauguration—He receives the News of the Fall of Richmond—He visits that City—His last Proclamations—He is assassinated in Ford's Theatre, Washington, by John Wilkes Booth—Simultaneous Attempts to assassinate Mr. Seward, the Secretary of State—Death of Mr. Lincoln—Effect throughout the Country—Its terribly disastrous Consequences to the South.

On the 4th of March, 1865, Mr. Lincoln was for the second time inaugurated as President of the United States. His address was brief, solemn, and full of religious thought. Of the war, which might be regarded as closed, he said: "Both parties deprecated war; but one of them would make war, rather than let the nation survive; and the other would accept war, rather than let it perish—and the war came. Neither party expected for the war the magnitude or the duration which it has already attained. Neither anticipated that the cause of the conflict, Slavery, might cease with or even before the conflict itself should cease. Each looked for an easier triumph, and a result less fundamental and astounding."

He made no change in his cabinet, and in a short time after his inauguration proceeded to General Grant's headquarters, everything announcing that the final struggle was at hand, and no doubt being entertained of the result.

From the 24th of March, till Richmond fell, he was almost constantly at City Point, and on the 4th of April, he accompanied Admiral Porter in a gunboat up to Rockett's, a mile below Richmond.

There he landed, and attended by the Admiral and a few sailors, he walked up to the house recently occupied by Jefferson Davis. The soldiers, recognizing him, cheered, the negroes caught up the cry. After holding a levee, or reception, he drove through the city, and returned to City Point. Two days after, he paid another visit, and met some of the adherents of the late Confederate Government. To his moderation and magnanimity, the South now looked for generous treatment in its fallen fortunes. President Lincoln returned to Washington, to prepare for the great work now before him, and on the 12th of April issued two proclamations, one aimed at those foreign governments which had done so much to aid the Confederates. In this proclamation, he demanded for the ships of the United States in foreign ports, on penalty of retaliation, those privileges and immunities which had for the last four years been denied them.

The next day an order from the War Department put a stop to all drafting and recruiting, and all further purchases of arms and army supplies.

On the evening of the 14th of April, the President, with his wife and two others, drove to Ford's theatre, in Washington. While seated in a private box, at about half-past ten, and looking towards the stage, he was shot in the back of the head. The assassin, John Wilkes Booth, an actor, had presented a card to the President's messenger, and after standing for a few moments entered the vestibule of the box, and closed the door, securing it from the inside. Then with a pistol in one hand and dagger in the other, he entered the box, and placing his pistol close to the back of the President's head fired the fatal shot.

The report startled the house, and Major Rathbone, who was in the

box, grappled with him, but Booth burst from him, and shouting "Sic semper tyrannis!" sprang over the front of the box to the stage, where he fell, his foot catching in the American flag. Though his ankle was sprained, he rushed across the stage, and out at the rear, to a horse in waiting for him. Mounting it in haste, he rode off in the gloom.

Meanwhile, men gathered around the fallen President. The ball had crossed the brain, and lodged back of the right eye. Mr. Lincoln fell forward when shot, his eyes closed, but he uttered no cry. The surgeons, who were at once summoned, found him insensible, and saw that it was beyond the power of man to save his life. The dying President was then borne from the theatre across the street to the house of a Mr. Peterson, and there laid on a bed. His breathing was regular, and he did not seem to struggle or to suffer pain. His wife and son, with physicians, and a clergyman, surrounded him, but no sign of recognition, or even of consciousness was given by the dying man.

At twenty-two minutes past seven, on the 15th day of April, 1865, Abraham Lincoln expired. His remains were then removed to the President's house, and while the terrible tidings flashed on the telegraph wire to all parts of the country, preparations were begun for his obsequies.

Two Presidents had already died in office, but the long war that marked his administration, and the murderous circumstances attending the death of Mr. Lincoln, made it deeply impressive. A general gloom pervaded the whole country. Flags hung at half-mast, public buildings and private residences were draped in black.

His body was embalmed, and in solemn funeral borne to the Capi-

tol, where it lay in state till the 21st, when it was removed to be carried to Springfield, Illinois, the place of his abode when raised to the presidential chair. At Baltimore, Philadelphia, New York, and other cities on the way, it was received by a procession, and escorted on with funeral pomp. He was laid in his final resting-place on the 3d of May.

His early life had been rough, and not favored with the education and culture that fall to the lot of so many, but his vigorous mind had raised him to eminence. As President in a most difficult period, he had evinced no animosity or rancor; he was opposed to extreme measures, and yielded reluctantly to the force of circumstances in many of the acts which he finally adopted. For the South, he entertained the most kindly feelings, and they soon learned how terrible a loss they had sustained in his mad assassination.

CHAPTER XIX.

ANDREW JOHNSON, SEVENTEENTH PRESIDENT, 1865–1869.

Sketch of President Johnson—His Inauguration—Investigation into Lincoln's Assassination—Pursuit of Booth, his Capture and Death—The Attempt to Assassinate Mr. Seward—A Conspiracy—Arrest of several—The bloody Court-martial—Hanging—The Conclusion of the War—The Surrender of Johnston—Other Confederate Bodies—Jefferson Davis attempts to escape—Pursued and captured—Imprisoned, but never tried—The Confederate Flag on the Ocean—The last of the British-built Ships—President Johnson and Congress—Their different Views as to the Treatment of the South—A Series of Collisions—Bitter Feeling of the Republican Party against the Man whom they had raised to Office—President Johnson's Vetoes—Congress disregards them—Assumes to be the Government—One House of Congress impeaches the President, whom they had treated with every Dishonor—The other tries him—The great Impeachment Trial—Acquittal of the President—The South ruined by oppressive Reconstruction Acts—Fenian Affairs—Attempts to invade Canada—Prompt Action of Government—The Atlantic Cable—Close of Johnson's Administration.

By the provisions of the Constitution of the United States, Andrew Johnson, who had so recently been inaugurated as Vice-President, became President of the United States. He was a man of the people, who had risen by his own merit, and who had held many important offices, giving him great experience in the direction of public affairs. All this seemed to promise an administration peculiarly happy in its results, but so little can we judge of the future, that his short term will be long remembered in the history of the country as in many respects one of the most unfortunate.

Andrew Johnson was born at Raleigh, in the State of North Carolina, on the 29th December, 1808. He was deprived of a father's care when he was a mere child, and in his tenth year he was bound out to

learn the tailor's trade. He plied this humble calling for several years in South Carolina, but he was ambitious, and during that time, by his own unaided efforts, learned the rudiments of a plain English education. He fortunately married one who had enjoyed greater advantages, and by her aid was able to extend his studies. Having resolved to emigrate to the West, he settled at Greenville, Tennessee, and entering into public affairs, soon gained the respect of his fellow-citizens. In 1830, the poor tailor-boy of North Carolina was Mayor of Greenville. He was elected a member of the State Legislature in 1835, and took his seat in the Senate of Tennessee in 1841. He was one of the representatives of that State in Congress, from 1843 to 1853, his constituents during a period of ten years constantly returning him. He then became Governor of the State, and in 1857, was chosen United States Senator. At the outbreak of the Civil War, he opposed the Confederate movement with great energy, and did much to save that State. President Lincoln appointed him military governor of Tennessee in 1862, and he was, as we have seen, elected Vice-President in 1864.

After Mr. Lincoln expired, the oath of office as President was quietly administered to Mr. Johnson in his rooms at the Kirkwood Hotel by Chief Justice Chase, in presence of the Cabinet and several members of Congress, his inauguration being without any parade.

President Johnson entered at once on the discharge of the duties of his important post, making no change in the Cabinet. William H. Seward was thus Secretary of State; Edwin H. Stanton, Secretary of War; Hugh McCulloch, Secretary of the Treasury; John P. Usher, Secretary of the Interior; William Dennison, Post-Master General; and James Speed, Attorney-General.

At the moment Washington was a scene of terrible excitement. The body of the late President lay on its bloody bier. The Secretary of State, Mr. Seward, was not expected to live, for on the same night that Mr. Lincoln was shot, Lewis Payne Powell forced his way to the bed where Mr. Seward lay, having been thrown from his carriage and seriously injured. Felling young Frederick Seward to the ground, Payne rushed on the Secretary with a bowie-knife, and gave him three terrible stabs in the face and neck, but was fortunately secured by an invalid soldier, named Robinson, who was in attendance as a nurse.

It was at once felt that the assassinations were part of a plot, and while hot pursuit was made after Booth, several persons were arrested as principals or accessories in the plot. Booth and Harold, an associate, fled across the Potomac, and through Virginia to Bowling Green, in Caroline County, where they were overtaken in Garrett's barn. Harold surrendered, but Booth, attempting to fire on his pursuers, was shot through the head by Boston Corbet.

On the 2d of May, the President issued a proclamation, in which, after stating that the assassination had been incited by Jefferson Davis, Jacob Thompson, and other prominent members of the Confederate Government, or its agents in Canada, offered a reward of a hundred thousand dollars for the arrest of Mr. Davis, and smaller sums for the others.

The same day, by another proclamation, he declared that the United States would refuse hospitality to all nations who gave hospitality to Confederate cruisers, and had virtually violated their treaties with the United States by their treatment of its vessels in their ports.

The investigation into the assassination of the late President, and the attack on Secretary Seward, led to the arrest of George A.

Atzeroth, Edward Spangler, the carpenter at Ford's theatre, Samuel Arnold, Michael O'Loughlin, and Mrs. Mary E. Surratt, the owner of a hotel called Surrattville, where Booth stopped in his flight, and obtained arms and liquor.

In the panic which had seized upon the public mind, government dared not bring these people to trial before the ordinary courts of law. It was therefore determined, by the advice of the Attorney-General, to create a new tribunal, and President Johnson, on the 1st of May, ordered a Military Commission to be convened for their trial.

It was a terrible step to take, fraught with the greatest danger to the liberties of the country. If citizens not belonging to the army and navy, or engaged in any rebellion against constituted authority, can be tried by a military tribunal, and deprived of trial by jury whenever a President chooses to order their arrest, no one is safe, the lives of all are at the mercy of the President.

By order of Mr. Johnson, the Assistant Adjutant-General selected Major-Generals Hunter and Lewis Wallace, with Generals Kautz, Howe, Foster, Ekin, Harris, and two officers of lower grade to sit in judgment on Payne, Harold, and those already named, to whom was added Dr. Samuel A. Mudd, who had set Booth's leg during his flight. The accused were allowed to have counsel, but the temper of the court was shown at the outset by the remark of the presiding General Hunter, to the Hon. Reverdy Johnson, the counsel of Mrs. Surratt. "The day has passed," said General Hunter, "when freemen from the North were to be bullied and insulted by the humbug chivalry of the South."

The proceedings of the Commission began on the 13th of May, in the Old Penitentiary, the prisoners, even Mrs. Surratt, being heavily loaded with irons.

On the 5th of July the Commission completed its labors, finding all the accused guilty, and sentencing Payne, Atzeroth, Harold, and Mrs. Surratt to death, O'Loughlin, Spangler, Arnold, and Mudd, to imprisonment for several years or for life. They signed a recommendation of mercy in behalf of Mrs. Surratt, but Judge Advocate Holt suppressed it, and it was not laid before the President. An attempt made in behalf of Mrs. Surratt, to have her tried before a Court of Justice, was met by President Johnson's order suspending the Writ of Habeas Corpus especially in her case. Only three days were given them to prepare for death, and on the 9th of July they were all executed.

Mrs. Surratt's execution excited great feeling throughout the country, and for years those concerned in her death endeavored to shift the responsibility on each other.

At the time the feeling of indignation among the whole people was so great, and the horror of the crime so deep, that the severest penalties on all who had been in any way associated with Booth was imperatively demanded. Payne, Atzeroth, Harold, and O'Loughlin were undoubtedly implicated, and, in fact, admitted their crime.

The treatment of the United States prisoners at Richmond, Belle Isle, Andersonville, Millen, and Salisbury, had filled the Northern States with such a deep feeling of indignation and horror, that the popular voice demanded a victim. The barbarities practiced were certainly known to if not encouraged by the Confederate authorities, but government did not venture to bring any of them to trial on a charge of high treason. But as the Confederate officers placed over the prisons appeared to have been selected for their brutal capacity, to carry out a system of malice, government resolved to bring to trial Cap-

tain Henry Wirz, who had been jailer at Andersonville, and who was accused of great cruelty. Again the fearful Military Commission was called together. Wirz was tried, and found guilty. He was hanged on the 10th of November, 1865, and public feeling was appeased.

The war was yet to be closed on land. General Stoneman had, on the 12th of April, defeated and scattered to the winds a Confederate force under Gardiner, which attempted to check him near Salisbury, where many United States prisoners were held. Two days before Sherman had moved upon Johnston's lines at Smithfield, but the Confederate general, aware of Lee's surrender, retreated. However, on the 14th, when near Salisbury, he wrote to Sherman proposing a suspension of operations. This led to the signing of a basis of agreement in which many points were embraced that Sherman, as commander of an army, had no power to settle. The President at once rejected it, and General Grant in person proceeded to General Sherman's headquarters. On the 26th, Johnston surrendered on the same terms that had been granted to General Lee. This event was followed, on the 4th of May, by the surrender of General Taylor's forces in Alabama to General Canby.

The important armies of the power which had so long ruled the South thus passed out of existence, and the smaller corps scattered rapidly. A semblance of government was kept up by Jefferson Davis and his fugitive cabinet, but as he hastened through the South, one after another fell away, his cavalry escort dwindled down; the proclamation offering a reward for his arrest as a murderer, transformed the late powerful President into a mere fugitive. His only hope was to get to seaboard and escape, or reach one of the armies still existing beyond the Mississippi. But on the 7th of May, he was surprised

and captured at daybreak by Lieutenant-Colonel Pritchard of the Fourth Michigan cavalry.

He was at once conveyed to Savannah, and thence by sea to Fortress Monroe, where he was subjected to a long and rigorous imprisonment. Vice-President Stephens and Secretary Reagan were also captured, and confined in Fort Warren, near Boston.

Thus fell the Confederacy, and the war, which had so long desolated the fairest part of our country, came to an end.

Although the Confederate Government had ceased to exist, and its armies had surrendered or dispersed, the flag yet floated on the ocean, on vessels built and fitted-out in England. The powerful iron-clad Stonewall, closely watched by the Niagara and Sacramento, dodged from one friendly port to another, and finally running into Havana, was taken in charge by the Spanish authorities, and transferred to the United States.

The Shenandoah, built at Glasgow, was in the Pacific. After receiving, in Australia, a perfect ovation in February, 1865, she sailed northward, and her captain, Waddell, though informed of the surrender of Lee and Johnston, and the capture of Davis, kept on his piratical course, capturing twenty-nine whalers, all of which he burned except four, and then returned to England, and in due form surrendered his English-built vessel to the English Government. The United States most unwisely accepted the vessel at their hands, for, as she had never entered a Confederate port, but was built, and officially registered as English, was equipped, cleared from, and returned to English ports, she was thoroughly English, and the responsibility for her work should have been left with the English people.

On the 2d of June, General Grant, in a patriotic General Order,

announced to the army the termination of hostilities. "Your marches, sieges, and battles, in distance, duration, resolution, and brilliancy of results, dim the lustre of the world's past military achievements, and will be the patriot's precedent in defence of liberty and right in all time to come. In obedience to your country's call, you left your homes and families, and volunteered in her defence. Victory has crowned your valor, and secured the purpose of your patriotic hearts: and with the gratitude of your countrymen, and the highest honors a great and free nation can accord, you will soon be permitted to return to your homes and families, conscious of having discharged the highest duty of American citizens."

The immense army of the United States, numbering nearly a million of men, was rapidly mustered out of the service, and in a few months this mighty multitude was lost among their fellow-citizens, each man resuming his profession, employment, or trade, taking his place as a citizen to increase the wealth and well-being of the country for which he had so gallantly fought.

President Johnson was anxious to see the whole country in the way of prosperity, and studied deeply the best method of reconstructing the Southern States, which were actually without State governments, courts, or civil organization. On the 29th of May he issued the first proclamation of amnesty, excepting from its provisions all who held office under the Confederate Government; all who held offices or commissions under the United States, or, after receiving an education in its Military or Naval Academy, had gone over to the Confederacy; all engaged in destroying American commerce, and all who had taken part in the war, and were worth more than twenty thousand dollars.

Some of the Southern States had already been reorganized by President Lincoln. Carrying out the same plan, Johnson appointed provisional governors of North and South Carolina, Georgia, Florida, Alabama, Mississippi, and Texas.

About the same time, with a view of studying the subject on the spot, General Grant made a tour of the Southern States, and was favorably impressed by the disposition shown to accept the result of the war. Slavery was finally abolished by the adoption of the Fourteenth Amendment, and everything seemed to promise a speedy and harmonious restoration.

But the President's course was singularly displeasing to the more violent members of the Republican party, who wished the South treated with the utmost harshness and severity. The meeting of Congress showed how deep this feeling was. A majority of both houses declared their disapproval of the President's plan of reconstruction. They appointed a committee of fifteen to consider the whole matter, and laid on the table the credentials presented by the members returned from the reconstructed States. They passed the Civil Rights Bill, and one extending the powers of the Freedmen's Bureau, and though President Johnson returned them with his veto, they passed both by the majority necessary to make them laws.

The Supreme Court of the United States decided against some test oaths which had been introduced, but Congress insisted on extreme measures, disregarding the highest tribunal in the land.

The Thirty-ninth Congress adopted a plan of reconstruction of its own, which the President did not approve. The Southern States refused to accept the severe conditions under which alone they could regain their position in the Union.

The Fortieth Congress met in March, 1867, but showed no signs of relenting in severity. On the contrary, it prepared to bind the South in fetters of iron by new and stringent laws. The Military Bill, which is now admitted to have been utterly unconstitutional, was amended over the President's veto. The Attorney-General, having given an opinion unfavorable to the Act, Congress passed new acts explaining and enforcing it, so as to secure to the Republican party the control of the States engaged in the war, or deprive them indefinitely of self-government and a voice in Congress.

The country was now in a strange position. The President was actually, by the circumstances of the case, shorn of all the powers conferred upon him as the Chief Executive of the country. A Congress with an overwhelming majority against him, could pass any law it pleased, and deprive him of all power.

Nor was this opposition confined to the halls of Congress. The President soon found that his cabinet did not share his views. Postmaster Dennison, Attorney-General Speed, and Harlan, Secretary of the Interior, had resigned, and were succeeded by A. W. Randall of Wisconsin, Henry Stansberry of Ohio, and O. H. Browning of Illinois.

The country was in a most unhappy state. Just after a desolating war, when all energies should have been bent to restore peace and prosperity, the Congress was in direct opposition to the President, passing laws to which he was compelled to withhold his sanction. For the time being the presidential power was gone, and Congress ruled supreme.

Nebraska was admitted as a State, by an Act which contained provisions as to voters that President Johnson disapproved, but the Act was passed over his veto on the 9th of February, 1867.

Soon after, in March, the ruling majority in Congress adopted their measures for reconstructing the South. None of the State governments were to be recognized: all the States which had been engaged in war against the United States were considered as out of the Union, only to be admitted as new States, when they adopted constitutions acceptable to the ruling power in Congress, that is, which gave the negroes entire control of their affairs. In the meantime they were divided into military districts, and made subject to military law and rule. As the President was known to be opposed to this violent and unrepublican course, all power in the matter was taken out of his hands, and the acts of the District Commanders were made subject only to the General of the Army, General Grant, who was now in perfect accord with the radical portion of the dominant party. The President thus ceased to be the Commander-in-Chief of the Army.

Two of the States, Mississippi and Georgia, endeavored to avert their doom. They applied to the Supreme Court to restrain the President from enforcing the Act; but the court, by the Chief Justice, Chase, decided that it had not sufficient power to arrest the action of the army acting under the orders of Congress.

So limited had the Presidential power become, that he was forbidden by law to remove any member of his cabinet, without consent of the Senate. This act was passed to maintain Mr. Stanton in his office of Secretary of War, in spite of the wishes of Mr. Johnson, to whom he stood in an attitude of personal and defiant hostility.

Resolving to bring his strange position to a test, President Johnson, on the 12th of August, suspended Mr. Stanton, and appointed General Grant as Secretary of War, *ad interim*, and things remained in this position till Congress met, when, no action being taken to remove Mr.

Stanton, General Grant yielded the office up to him. The President then, on the 21st of February, 1868, formally removed Stanton, and appointed General Thomas Secretary of War.

The most violent excitement ensued. The House of Representatives three days after impeached the President, and prepared charges against him. On the 5th of March, 1868, President Johnson was arraigned as a criminal before the Senate, Chief Justice Chase presiding. The strange spectacle was thus presented to the world, of the President of a great nation arraigned by one antagonistic branch of the Government, the other branch, equally antagonistic, sitting as judges. Never, perhaps, was the great cause of human liberty in greater jeopardy. The trial was long and exciting, but on the 26th of May the vote was taken. Thirty-four senators pronounced him guilty, but as nineteen voted him not guilty, there were not two-thirds against him, and he was thus acquitted.

The President's right to remove his obnoxious Secretary was thus sustained. Mr. Stanton at once retired from the post, and Johnson appointed General Schofield Secretary of War.

During the administration of Mr. Johnson, the United States remained at peace with foreign nations. Throughout the country there was a strong feeling against England for the part she had taken during the recent war, in fitting out ships for the destruction of American commerce. As soon as peace was restored, steps were taken to demand from the English Government compensation for the property destroyed by these cruisers. The English nation at first ridiculed the idea of their paying any indemnity, or admitting that they were at all in the wrong. But the question in Congress was treated in a manner that showed that the United States was not to be trifled with in the

matter. A speech of Senator Sumner excited special indignation in England. But a new affair came up that modified English views. The people of Ireland, whose separate Legislature had been suppressed in 1800, had long been restive under the English rule. Agitation followed agitation, and about this time a vast organization called the Fenians was formed, having branches not only in Ireland, but in England, Canada, and the United States. Its object was to begin a revolution for the liberation of Ireland.

Large amounts of money were raised by Fenian leaders in the United States, men were organized so as to be used as regiments ; it was proposed to run out of the ports of the United States vessels which would hoist the Fenian flag as the English cruisers did the Confederate flag. When a Fenian invasion of Canada was talked of, England took alarm, although Canada had enabled the Confederates to make a raid into Vermont, where they plundered the town of St. Albans, and killed several people. In that case the United States Government remonstrated, but the guilty men were not punished, nor was the property restored.

In April, 1866, a Fenian gathering at Eastport, Maine, showed an evident intention to cross over and commence operations in New Brunswick, making Campo Bello Island the basis of operations. The Government of the United States, however, acted promptly and prevented it.

In June some two hundred Fenians under General O'Neill crossed at Niagara, but were soon confronted by a body of Canadian volunteers under Colonel Booker. The battle of Limestone Ridge was fought, several were killed on both sides, but the Fenian plans were defeated. Again the United States Government interposed, and broke

up the movements, as they did a subsequent attempt in Vermont. General O'Neill was finally arrested and imprisoned.

The English Government could not but admit that the United States had acted more vigorously and honorably than they had done. A treaty on the Alabama claims, as they were called, from the vessel which did most damage, was negotiated by the Hon. Reverdy Johnson, as Minister of the United States, but the Senate refused to confirm it and it fell through. The Alabama question remained a subject of warm and often angry discussion during the rest of Johnson's administration.

The North, relieved from the strain of the war, entered on a career of commercial and industrial prosperity. Great public works like the Pacific Railroad were pushed through, and emigration again flowed westward, to till the fertile plains yet unbroken by the plough. The great fire at Portland, in July, 1866, caused by an explosion of fireworks on the 4th, was the only great draw-back. The conflagration raged for two days, and laid much of the city in ashes, involving an immense destruction of property.

During the American Civil War, England, France, and Spain, unable to obtain satisfaction from Mexico for claims against that republic, sent a joint expedition against her. After taking Vera Cruz, England and Spain withdrew, but the French continued the war. Reinforcements were constantly sent over, and the French captured city after city, and finally took Mexico. The Mexicans under Benito Juarez as President, however, maintained the struggle against imperial power. At last the intention of France became evident. Counting on the success of the Confederacy, the Emperor Napoleon III. aimed to overthrow republicanism in Mexico, and to erect a monarchy there as a

check to the growth of republics, and especially as a balance against the influence of the United States, whether it became two republics or remained one. A Congress of Mexican notables, meeting in the capital, and acting under French influence, resolved on a monarchy, and offered the crown to the Archduke Maximilian of Austria, a prince who, as governor of Lombardy and Venice, had evinced many good qualities as a ruler.

After much hesitation, Maximilian, on the 10th of April, 1864, accepted the dangerous position of Emperor of Mexico, and came out to America. A part of the nation rallied around him, and the French troops supported him on his throne, with some Mexican and foreign troops forming his own army. He endeavored in vain to induce Juarez to acknowledge the empire or join him in his attempt to give Mexico a better government.

The United States protested sternly against the whole movement, but as long as she was herself rent by a civil war, France paid little heed to her remonstrances. When, however, the Confederate cause, though encouraged by England and France, was lost, the whole position of affairs changed. The campaign in Mexico had cost France immense sums of money without any corresponding return. Her victories were barren of result, and after a time even of glory, being confined to mere skirmishes with guerrillas. With peace at home, the Government of the United States became more urgent. France resolved to withdraw her army, and this was done more precipitately than was at first announced or intended.

Maximilian, who had shown great wisdom and moderation in his management of affairs, was left in a precarious and dangerous position. Yet he resolved to face the difficulty as became a man of honor : but

Juarez, when he had the French no longer to keep the people in awe, soon gathered to his standard a large army. Maximilian advanced to meet him, but was betrayed by one of his generals, who led a large part of the army over to Juarez. His lines being thus exposed, Maximilian's headquarters were surrounded at night, and on the 15th of May, 1867, the Emperor, with several of his prominent Mexican generals, surrendered to General Escobedo, the commander of the Republican forces. According to the sanguinary policy which has characterized all Spanish-American warfare, they were tried by court-martial and condemned to death. The United States in vain used its influence to save them, but Juarez, who owed so much to the attitude of this country, turned a deaf ear to its intervention. Maximilian and his generals were shot on the 19th of June, the last words of the unfortunate prince being, " Poor Carlotta," showing that he grieved for his wife rather than himself. She became a maniac, and was conveyed to Europe to linger for years devoid of reason. The overthrow of Maximilian destroyed all hopes entertained in Europe of crushing out republicanism in America, and before many years France and Spain, two of the countries that took part in the attempt to overthrow the republic of Mexico, themselves rejected royalty and became republics.

About this time success crowned a new effort to connect America with Europe by means of a submarine telegraph cable. The first attempt to lay a cable at the bottom of the sea was made in 1850, with a view to connect England and France. In 1858, as we have seen already, one was run across from Ireland to Newfoundland, which from some cause ceased to work almost immediately. Means were raised to lay a new cable, and take up and repair the old one. The Great Eastern,

an immense steamer, was fortunately adapted to this use. She sailed from Valentia Bay, Ireland, on the 13th of July, 1866, and on the 27th, reached Heart's Content, Newfoundland, without accident, laying the cable as she went. The other was then examined and repaired, and telegraphic communication between the two countries became permanently established, so that the morning papers gave all the European news of the day before. Samuel F. B. Morse, an American artist, and the inventor of the first successful magnetic telegraph, lived to see this wonderful application of his invention, which drew on him honors at home and abroad.

This leads to the mention of other American inventions of this period, some of which acquired a world-wide renown. McCormack's reaper and mowing-machines enabled farmers to cultivate large tracts which it would have been impossible to manage, had the gathering of crops depended on the cradle and scythe, wielded by human hands. The success of these inventions led to other machines for facilitating almost every branch of agricultural labor.

The Sewing-Machine, invented by Elias Howe, not only facilitated work in large factories and workshops, but even in private families to a great extent replaced the needle. Being easily worked, it enabled a seamstress to sew in a few moments what under the old plan would have required hours.

Not long after the close of our civil war, troubles began in the adjacent island of Cuba, a colony of Spain. The United States could not view the matter without interest, as the trade with the island was very extensive and valuable. Sugar, and tobacco, and cigars, were imported from it in great quantities, and the island took in return American manufactures and provisions.

The people of Cuba had long wished to be free from the Spanish yoke, and the Government of the United States had long showed a desire to purchase the island. Spain, however, was unwilling to give up so rich a colony; she would neither sell it nor allow it to become independent.

Many young Cubans, educated in the United States, were thoroughly republican in feeling, and repeated attempts at revolution were made, but suppressed with great cruelty by the Spanish Government. During the administration of Mr. Johnson, Cuba again rose, and formed a republican government. The Spaniards, though holding the large cities, and surrounding the island with fleet and powerful steamers, were unable to crush the Cubans, or to prevent arms and men being landed from time to time on the island. Mr. Johnson, through his officials, checked as far as possible all efforts to aid the Cubans, but occasionally a vessel would get out with supplies. This state of things lasted for several years. The Spaniards were cooped up in the large cities, while the interior of the country was held by the Cubans. Every now and then the public mind in the United States would be shocked by some Spanish barbarity, but the nation carefully adhered to its neutrality. One of the bloodiest chapters in the war was the execution of a number of boys, medical students in Havana, who were accused of having scratched a glass in the tombstone of a Spaniard in the cemetery at Havana.

China had long maintained a spirit of reserve, keeping aloof from all other powers. Anson Burlingame, sent from the United States, led the Emperor to adopt a more cordial policy, and in June, 1868, he arrived in the United States at the head of a Chinese embassy, Chikuhan and Swunkiasing, two chief mandarins, and others of inferior

grade, being associated with him. After negotiations with the United States looking to a closer relationship the embassy proceeded to Europe.

Several eminent Americans passed away during this period. General Scott, so long at the head of the United States army, survived the great civil war; he died in June, 1866, after a brief illness, and was interred at West Point. Mr. Buchanan, whose presidency saw the commencement of the civil war, and who had so long served his country in diplomatic and cabinet positions, died at Wheatland, Pennsylvania, on the 4th of June, 1868.

The stormy administration of Andrew Johnson was drawing to a close, and both the political parties began to prepare for the coming election. The Republican party, with its immense power in Congress, resolved to let the Southern States into the Union only in such a way as to vote for its candidate. Negro suffrage being made imperative, and multitudes of whites being excluded by stringent oaths, Arkansas, North Carolina, South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, and Florida were admitted in June, 1868, and those States fell under the sway of the ignorant negro population, led by a few unscrupulous Northern whites, who were styled "carpet-baggers." The result was disastrous in the extreme. The Legislatures ran up the public debt in these States to enormous amounts, the public moneys were squandered, taxes increased ten-fold, property sank in value, and the white landowners saw nothing but ruin and destitution before them, with no means under heaven of obtaining the slightest relief. Many in despair formed secret leagues called Kuklux, but their acts of violence against the negroes only embittered the hostility to the whole body of unfortunate Southern white people.

The National Republican Convention met at Chicago, and put forward as the candidates of the party Ulysses S. Grant of Illinois, and Schuyler Colfax of Indiana. The Democratic Convention nominated Horatio Seymour of New York, for President, and General Frank Blair for Vice-President.

The result of the election could not be doubtful. Three States, Mississippi, Virginia, and Texas, were excluded from voting by the action of Congress ; of the remaining twenty-six voted for Grant and Colfax, only eight casting their votes for Seymour.

CHAPTER XX.

ULYSSES S. GRANT, EIGHTEENTH PRESIDENT, 1869-1877.

President Grant — His Cabinet — Reconstruction of Virginia — Mississippi and Texas — The Fifteenth Amendment—Proposed Annexation of St. Domingo—The great Conflagration at Chicago—Settlement of the Alabama Claims—The Presidential Election—Death of Mr. Greeley —The Modoc War—Trouble with Spain in regard to the Seizure of the Virginius and Murder of her Crew and Passengers at Santiago de Cuba — The Louisiana Troubles—Centennial Exhibition at Philadelphia—Colorado admitted as a State—Trial of Belknap, Secretary of War —Nez Percés and Sioux War—Presidential Election—Disputed States—Electoral Commission.

GENERAL GRANT had from the close of the war been rising steadily in popularity, and his election was a complete triumph. Sprung from an early New England settler, and identified with the West, he pleased both sections. All expected from the great soldier, a firm vigorous, and honest administration.

After the war, his duties as general of the army employed General Grant, till President Johnson called him temporarily to assume the duties of Secretary of War.

The accession of General Grant to the presidency gave hopes of a speedy return of prosperity. His vigor as a general, his kindly feel-

ing to the South, his moderation in politics, all induced men to expect a return to the old harmony and good feeling.

He was duly inaugurated on the 4th of March. His cabinet was not immediately organized to his satisfaction. He chose as Secretary of State, E. B. Washburne of Illinois ; J. D. Cox, of Ohio, as Secretary of the Interior ; Adolph E. Borie, of Pennsylvania, as Secretary of the Navy ; John M. Schofield, of Illinois, as Secretary of War ; J. A. J. Creswell, of Maryland, as Postmaster-General ; and E. Rockwood Hoar, as Attorney-General. As Secretary of Treasury, he fixed upon A. T. Stewart, an eminent New York merchant, but as he proved to be ineligible, G. S. Boutwell, of Massachusetts, took that important position. Mr. Washburne was soon after appointed minister to France, and during a great part of General Grant's administration, Hamilton Fish, of New York, was Secretary of State. General J. A. Rawlins, and W. W. Belknap, were successively Secretaries of War, and George M. Robeson of New Jersey, became Secretary of the Navy.

Congress was convened almost immediately, and on the 10th of April, an act passed for the reconstruction of Virginia, Mississippi, and Texas. Under its provisions elections were held, and a constitution adopted and ratified by Virginia in 1869, and by the other States in 1870.

The Fifteenth Amendment, guaranteeing suffrage or the right of voting to the negroes, was passed this year, and adopted by many States during 1869, and by enough in the following to make up the number required. It then became part of the Constitution of the United States. The States recently reconstructed, were admitted only on their acceptance of the Fifteenth Amendment. Senators and Rep-

resentatives from those States were admitted in 1870. But the passage of the Fifteenth Amendment, and acts to enforce it, exasperated the South still more, and stringent measures were proposed, which took shape in the Ku-Klux Bill, passed in 1871.

One of the earliest projects of General Grant was the annexation to the United States of Dominica, a part of the Island of St. Domingo, which, throwing off the Haytian, or negro rule, had maintained its existence as a separate republic. Under General Grant's authority, a treaty, of annexation was signed at the city of St. Domingo, November 29, 1869. But the matter was not favorably regarded, and the treaty, when submitted to the Senate, was, after a sharp debate, rejected.

The island is rich and fertile, and in proper hands would be very productive, but under the negro rule of Hayti, and the constant revolutions that disturb the Republic of Dominica, all trade and industry languish. General Grant showed great earnestness in endeavoring to carry out the annexation, but though a commission was sent out to examine Dominica the whole affair fell through.

A man who never held any public position, but who was known and honored in England, the philanthropic American banker, George Peabody, died during this administration. His immense liberalities to the poor of London, drew on him letters of thanks from Queen Victoria, who would have ennobled him, had the American merchant been willing to accept such an honor. He founded public libraries and institutions at Baltimore and other cities, and gave a large fund to extend the benefit of education in the Southern States. He was born at Danvers, Massachusetts, February 18, 1795, and died in London, November 4, 1869. He was laid temporarily in

Westminster Abbey, among all whom England deems her greatest and noblest. Then his remains were brought over to Portland, in the British steamship of war Monarch, and finally interred at Danvers, in February, 1870.

On the 12th of October, 1870, General Robert E. Lee, one of the great actors in the late civil war, passed away, his last years having been spent in retirement as president of a college in Virginia.

While the country was rapidly recovering from the desolating effects of war and sectional feeling, all were startled by the terrible calamity which suddenly befell the great city of Chicago. A fire which broke out in a stable, in one of the poorest districts of the city, on Sunday, October 8, 1871, spread rapidly. Every effort to check it failed; all day long, all night, all the next day, the fire swept steadily on, as if kindled and fed by supernatural power. Those who looked at it from a distance of blocks and miles, soon found themselves in peril; people who began by moving their most precious articles a few blocks, found the flames pursuing them, and hastened on. The bridges were soon crowded by frantic droves of people, and vehicles of every kind. The gas works perished, and the city at night was plunged in darkness; the water works by which water from Lake Michigan was pumped through a tunnel for supplying the city were wrapped in flames, and the fire department was paralyzed. Street after street was swept by the destroying element, the very air seemed fire; people perished in the streets; no means could be found to remove the sick and infirm, or property of any kind. Before the fire spent its fury, two thousand one hundred and twenty-four acres were burned over, seventeen thousand four hundred and fifty buildings had disappeared, including all the public edifices, most of the churches, libraries, galleries of art,

the great business houses, and dwelling houses of rich and poor. A hundred thousand people were homeless. No such conflagration had ever been known, and the wants of the suffering drew bountiful contributions from all parts of the country. Thousands fled from the city to seek shelter elsewhere. In a short time, however, the citizens went vigorously to work to rebuild it, and Chicago rose from her ashes more beautiful and better built than before.

The completion of the census of 1871, showed that in spite of a bloody civil war, the United States had gained in population, and reached thirty-eight millions.

The District of Columbia, which from the time of the organization of the Government had been governed by Congress, and not by a Legislature chosen by the people, was now placed under a regular territorial government. But in the wild schemes of corruption that pervaded all parts of the country, the District, like other parts, fell into the hands of men who sought only their own profit. A great debt was speedily incurred.

The long-pending dispute between the United States and England, as to the responsibility of the British Government for the depredations caused by the Alabama and other vessels from English ports, was at last adjusted by the Treaty of Washington, in 1871. Under its provisions, a tribunal of statesmen from different countries were to meet at Geneva, in Switzerland, and decide the various questions at issue between the two countries.

The Commissioners met in April, 1872, and, after long and exciting arguments on either side, decided in a way that gave the people of the United States much gratification. England was held to have been in fault, and was required to pay fifteen millions of dollars for the prop-

erty so wantonly destroyed by the Alabama and other vessels fitted out in the name of the Confederacy from English ports.

The final adjustment of this vexed question was welcomed heartily by all.

Another peaceful victory over England, was the decision by the Emperor of Germany, in favor of the United States, in regard to the dispute between the two countries as to the north-west boundary, which had also been a topic of angry discussion.

The year 1872 was marked by a strange fusion of parties. A number of Republicans opposed to the severe measures of the more radical portion of the party, formed a new organization as Liberal Republicans. Their great leader and advocate was Horace Greeley, the able editor of the *New York Tribune*. In the convention held by this party, he was nominated for President. The Democratic Convention, which met some months later, resolved not to put forward a candidate of their own, but to throw all their influence in favor of Greeley against Grant. The Republican party again put forward General Grant as their candidate. A small portion of the Democrats, disliking the fusion with the Liberal Republicans, named Charles O'Conor of New York, as candidate for the Presidency.

The election was an exciting one, but just after it Horace Greeley died from the excitement.

At this election all the States, for the first time in twelve years, took part. Nearly six million five hundred thousand votes were cast by the people, Grant having a majority of seven hundred and sixty thousand, showing how strong a hold he had on the affections of his countrymen.

In the electoral college, two hundred and eighty-six were cast for

General Grant, as President, and Henry Wilson, of Massachusetts, as Vice-President. The opposition, numbering only seventy-eight votes, was divided among several candidates.

General Grant was thus, by the voice of his fellow-citizens, invested once more with the chief magistracy of the country. He was inaugurated on the 4th of March, 1873, by the Hon. Salmon P. Chase, Chief-Justice of the United States, who died a few months after, May 7th, at the age of sixty-five, having filled his high office with dignity and ability.

Indian affairs, under the administration of General Grant, assumed a new form. The tribes were divided up among the different denominations in a strange manner, often to the serious detriment of missions established at great labor and expense. The chief direction was confided to the Society of Friends, and, besides the regular Indian Bureau, a body of advisory commissioners was established. This did not prevent troubles, and indeed, in some parts, seemed to hasten them. The military and the peace party did not work in harmony, and the frauds of traders and unscrupulous agents received no check.

One of the projects was to make the Indian Territory one of the regular Territories, under the name of Oklahoma, and remove the wild tribes to it. This was strongly opposed by the Cherokees, and other tribes, who had made considerable progress in civilization.

An attack on a Piegan party by Colonel Baker, in 1870, when that officer destroyed the village, killed one hundred and seventy-three Indians, and carried off three hundred horses, excited sharp criticism.

The attempt to remove the Modoc Indians from their old residence on Lost River, Oregon, led to serious results. This tribe had, like many others, signed treaties ceding their lands, but without any distinct

knowledge of its meaning. They were removed to a reservation entirely unsuited to their mode of life, in consequence of which they suffered greatly; provisions, furnished for them by Government, having been appropriated to private use.

Seeing nothing before them but starvation, they resolved to return to their old grounds. After they had been there a short time, the authorities attempted to remove them by force to the reservation. They flew to arms, and began by murdering several settlers in the valley. Then they retreated to a strange tract of country on the borders of Oregon and California, and known as the Lava Beds, a mass of volcanic rocks, full of caves, yawning ravines and precipices, with occasional spots of grass.

The United States troops, under General Gillem, pursued them, but their position was found to be almost impregnable. A battle fought January 17, 1873, resulted in severe loss, the troops being utterly unable to see an Indian, while they were fired at from all sides. Yet the troops pressed on, gradually gaining ground; but the country was impatient at the delay, and mortified to see the army held at bay by a handful of Indians. The peace party urged negotiations, and commissioners were sent to treat with the Modocs. On the 12th of April, Captain Jack, with some of his chiefs, met Brigadier-General Canby, Rev. Dr. Thomas, and Messrs. Meacham and Dyar, but during the peace conference Captain Jack and his party attacked them, killing General Canby and Dr. Thomas on the spot, and wounding Meacham. The war was then pushed vigorously, and the Indians driven from point to point, till, on the 1st of June, Captain Jack, with a few who had followed his fortunes, finding it impossible to hold out or escape, surrendered to Colonel B. Perry. The Modoc chief with several others were

tried by court-martial for the treacherous murder of the commissioners, and, having been found guilty, were hanged at Fort Klamath, Oregon, on the 3d of October.

The Cuban affairs during the year 1873 led to an affair which nearly involved the United States in a war with Spain. The insurrection in Cuba had spread, in spite of all the efforts to crush it. In April, 1869, a Congress met at Guaimaro, and declaring Cuba a republic, adopted a Constitution ; Carlos M. Cespedes became President, and General Quesada commander-in-chief of the army. Some severe actions took place, in which the Spanish troops suffered severely. After this men and arms were introduced from time to time from the United States, although Spain had a large fleet of gunboats around the island.

In December, 1873, this state of affairs resulted in a bloody tragedy, which caused a thrill of horror throughout the civilized world, while in the United States it aroused a feeling of intense indignation.

The American steamship Virginius, which had been in the interest of the Cubans, endeavoring to land men and arms, for the aid of the Republicans of the island, was discovered, on the 31st day of October off the southern coast of Cuba, by the Spanish gunboat Tornado. The Virginius immediately steered for the Island of Jamaica, pursued by the Tornado, which gained rapidly, as the Virginius was not in good sailing trim. At last, when in sight of the English island, the Tornado, favored by the clear moonlight, brought the Virginius to, and sent an officer on board. Captain Fry, of the Virginius, presented his papers, which were regular, but the Spaniards declared the vessel a prize, hauled down the American flag, and, putting all on board in irons, steamed away for Santiago de Cuba. On reaching that city, the governor, Burriel, one of those bloodthirsty wretches who dishonor

the human race, ordered all on board to be tried by court-martial, and, to prevent interference, cut the telegraph wires running to Havana The American and English consuls remonstrated in vain; the American vice-consul was not even permitted to telegraph to the consul at Kingston.

It was resolved to butcher the captives, and that with all haste. The Virginius arrived, in charge of the Tornado, on the 1st of November. On the second, a naval commission was appointed to try the prisoners as pirates; the next day the trial terminated, condemning to death three Cubans found on board, Varona, Cespedes, and del Sol, and Washington Ryan a native of Canada.

The next morning at six o'clock, the victims were led out to the slaughter-house, shot down and bayoneted with every cruelty.

The Spanish authorities suppressed all news of this outrage, so that it was not till the 6th of November, that the telegraph announced in New York the capture of the vessel. There was no American or English man-of-war near Cuba to check this violation of all international law, but as a vessel was daily expected from Jamaica, Burriel hastened the murder of the rest. Captain Fry, of the Virginius, with thirty-six of the crew, almost to a man American citizens, or British subjects, were next condemned to death as pirates, as though an unarmed vessel, which had never robbed or molested any other, could be a pirate.

On the 7th of November, they were all taken out and butchered in cold blood. The next day another band were slaughtered, but an English man-of-war, the Niobe, Captain Loraine, steamed into the harbor, and peremptorily demanded that the executions should cease. He compelled the Spaniards to take up the American flag, which was

kicked about the deck of the Virginius, and convey it to the consul's office.

When information of this butchery reached the United States, the public mind was aroused as it had not been for many years. The vessels of the navy were at once fitted out, and the minister in Spain, General Sickles, at once demanded from the Spanish Government the restoration of the Virginius, reparation for the murders committed, and for the insult to the American flag. After some negotiation, a document was signed at Washington, by which Spain made some reparation, though far less than had been demanded or should have been exacted. The Virginius was given up, disabled and reeking with filth, and in such a condition that she sunk in the endeavor to bring her to the United States.

The Alabama claims, submitted to a commission at Geneva were finally all decided, and, by the judgment of these arbitrators, England was required to pay to the Government of the United States, fifteen million five hundred thousand dollars, which was accordingly paid on the 9th of September, 1873.

The foreign affairs of the country were thus cleared from all matters of dispute before the meeting of Congress, but there was one of grave importance at home which began in 1872, and dragged through to 1874. This was the Louisiana trouble.

The Reconstruction Acts, and the laws to enforce the Fifteenth Amendment, had invested the United States courts and officials with powers that, in the hands of the best and wisest of men, would excite the alarm of every lover of his country, and in the hands of unscrupulous politicians, threatened to destroy utterly every vestige of American liberty.

An election for governor and members of the legislature took place in 1872, Kellogg being the administration candidate, while McEnery received the support of the Democrats and Liberal Republicans. The returns as made officially gave the election to the latter, but Kellogg claimed that great frauds had been committed. A United States Judge, Durell, issued an order in his house at night, under which the Federal Marshal, aided by troops, took possession of the State House, drove out McEnery and the legislature which recognized him, and installed Kellogg and his adherents.

This led to further trouble and to constant interference in elections by United States troops. This at last filled the country with alarm, and drew upon President Grant great unpopularity.

Before the close of the year 1875, the office of Vice-President became vacant by the death of Henry Wilson, who expired on the 22d of November.

The year 1876 was the one hundredth after the Declaration of Independence, and all Americans looked forward to it with pride and enthusiasm. One of the events connected with its celebration was the "International Exhibition of Arts, Manufactures and Products of the Soil and Mines," which was opened in Fairmount Park, Philadelphia, with great pomp by President Grant in May, in presence of the Emperor and Empress of Brazil. The articles exhibited were contributed from all parts of the United States, and from thirty-six nations in Europe and other parts of the world, making a display such as had never before been witnessed.

On the 4th of July, 1876, Colorado, which promised to become rich and populous, from its mineral wealth and grazing lands, was admitted to the Union as the thirty-eighth State.

About this time the country was shocked by the arraignment of William W. Belknap, the Secretary of War, who was charged with official corruption. He resigned his office and was tried before the Senate of the United States, but the majority for convicting him was not sufficient to secure his condemnation.

The Indian affairs of the country at this period were involved in difficulties. General Grant had early in his administration divided the agencies among the different religious denominations, but this merely increased the confusion. The frauds and oppressions on the Indians became greater than ever. The Nez Percés had been deprived of their old homes and ordered to remove to a new reservation. As these Indians saw no hope of subsisting there, they refused to leave their old residence. Troops were sent to drive them from the home of their ancestors, which they had held for many years. For two months these brave Indians, under Chief Joseph, baffled three American generals, and surrendered at last at Bear Paw Mountain, only to save their wounded men and starving women.

The attempt of the whites to invade the Black Hill Country claimed by the Sioux led to another war. Sitting Bull with his braves prepared to fight. Three columns of United States troops, under Generals Terry, Crooke, and Gibbon, were sent to defeat and capture his force. Crooke first encountered Sitting Bull, but finding himself too weak to engage the Indians, fell back; Custer operating in connection with Gibbon pushed on ahead, and discovering an Indian camp on the Little Big Horn River, attacked it without waiting for Gibbon's troops. The Indians under Sitting Bull fought with great skill and courage, killing Custer and almost all his force, except some companies of cavalry which had been sent to take the Indians in flank. After

this battle, which took place June 25th, Sitting Bull retreated into the English territory, baffling the armies in pursuit. Here he remained for several years, menacing the western country, till the Canadian authorities required him to give up all hostile plans or leave their territory. Then his warriors began to return to the United States and submit. At last the stern old chief sullenly yielded.

During the year 1876 both political parties prepared to nominate candidates for the Presidency. General Grant had lost much of his popularity by extreme measures and the corruption prevalent among officials, and though some desired to nominate him for a third time, the general voice was against it. In the Republican Convention James G. Blaine, of Maine, and Roscoe Conkling, of New York, were the prominent candidates, but neither was able to secure the nomination, which fell upon Rutherford B. Hayes, Governor of Ohio, William A. Wheeler being nominated as Vice-President. A Democratic Convention, held at St. Louis, put forward Samuel J. Tilden, of New York, for the Presidency, and Thomas A. Hendricks, of Ohio, for the second position. There was a third party, known as the Greenback party, which nominated Peter Cooper, of New York. The election was warmly contested. Hayes carried nearly all the Northern States. Tilden carried besides the South, the States of Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, and Indiana, giving him one hundred and eighty-four votes, one more vote being required to elect him. South Carolina, Florida, and Louisiana were claimed by both parties. The administration employed military force at the time of the election in the South and controlled the returns. In Louisiana the Democratic members of the Returning Board were excluded, but the return forwarded to Congress by the Governor gave the Tilden electors as

chosen. The election turned at last on that State. Charges of fraud have ever since been made against the Republican claim to have carried Louisiana, and the weight of evidence is clearly against it.

When the matter came before Congress, the Senate being Republican accepted the Republican return; the House of Representatives, which was Democratic, considered the Democratic return as the true one. As it seemed impossible to come to any agreement, an act was passed submitting the question to five members of each House and five associate Justices of the Supreme Court. The selection of Justices gave three Republicans and two Democrats, and obedient to the dictates of party they decided in favor of the Republican electors from Louisiana, refusing to make any investigation into the alleged frauds. Accordingly Rutherford B. Hayes was declared President and William A. Wheeler, Vice-President.

CHAPTER XXI.

RUTHERFORD B. HAYES, NINETEENTH PRESIDENT, 1877–1881.

His Cabinet—Conciliatory Policy toward the South—Financial Troubles—Strikes and Riots—The House of Representatives resists the use of Military Power at Elections—The Ute War—The Yellow Fever—The Chinese Question—Decrease of the Debt—Presidential Election.

RUTHERFORD B. HAYES was duly inaugurated March 4, 1877, by the Chief-Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States, Morrison R. Waite. He selected as his Cabinet William M. Evarts, of New York, for Secretary of State; John Sherman, of Ohio, for Secretary of the Treasury; George W. McCrary, of Ohio, for Secretary of War; Richard W. Thompson, of Indiana, for Secretary of the Navy; Carl Schurz, of Missouri, for Secretary of the Interior; David M. Key, of

Tennessee, for Postmaster-General; and Charles Devins, of Massachusetts, as Attorney-General.

Mr. Hayes entered upon his office with a disposition to conciliate the people of the South by arresting all the oppressive and vexatious measures which kept them from heartily sympathizing with the Federal Government and the people of the other parts of the country. He withdrew the United States troops from the South and left the people to manage their own concerns without interference from Washington. He also purified the civil service by stopping much corruption in office. Mr. Hayes' leniency toward the Southern States aroused a strong opposition in those Republicans who still insisted on harsh measures, and who became known as Stalwarts.

Early in Mr. Hayes' administration the decline in prices caused by the prospect of a resumption of specie payments produced great distress in the country. During the war, specie—that is, silver and gold money—almost disappeared, and none was paid out by the banks for checks or their own notes. Specie was required to pay duties at the Custom-houses and to make payments in Europe, and those who were compelled to obtain silver or gold coin were forced at one time to give two hundred and seventy dollars in bills for one hundred dollars in gold. After the end of the war the rate of gold declined, and the time was approaching when a paper dollar would be worth a gold dollar. Then the banks would again pay out gold and silver. While paper money was worth so little all prices rose, and now they were declining. Property was not worth so much. Many merchants and bankers failed. People whose property was mortgaged lost everything. Railroad and other companies reduced the pay of the men in their employ. This led to fearful riots on the railroads in Maryland,

Pennsylvania, and other States, by which for a time all travel and transportation of goods were stopped. Troops were called out and the riots were at last suppressed, but not till great quantities of valuable property had been destroyed.

The use of the military under the direction of United States marshals in elections had been so arbitrary that the Democrats, on obtaining a majority in the House of Representatives in 1877, insisted that no appropriation for the pay of marshals should be made without a clause depriving them of this power. This led to violent debates in Congress, to vetoes by the President, and to a bitter feeling in the country. Congress ended without making the appropriations for carrying on the Government, and an extra session was called in vain.

The next year the same struggle was renewed, and a law introduced to prevent the abuse of power by the marshals was vetoed by th President.

This agitation roused a spirit in the North which greatly increase the strength of the Republican party. At the South the negroes took alarm and emigrated to the North and West in great numbers; this led to great suffering, as their means were scanty, and no employment could be found for them.

The year 1879 opened with a general resumption of specie payments, and the business of the country gradually recovered. The arbitrary power given to the Indian agents over the tribes to which they were appointed led to troubles in this year. The Ute Indians killed their agent and subjected his family to great cruelty and hardship. A military force was sent against them, but the Indians, who have now the best arms, and skilful leaders, are not easily overcome. On this occasion they attacked Major Thornburgh, who was advancing

against them, killed that commander and ten of his men, and held the rest so closely besieged that they were rescued with great difficulty. A sufficient army to reduce the Indians was then sent.

During the years 1878 and 1879 several cities of the South, New Orleans, Vicksburg, and Memphis, with other smaller places, were visited by yellow fever, which swept off great numbers of people, and compelled the rest to retire to camps in healthy localities. Physicians, clergymen, sisters of various orders, and other volunteer nurses hastened to the relief of the sick, and the Howard Associations devoted themselves with great zeal to relieve the distressed.

Among other events of this administration was a movement on the Pacific Coast against the Chinese. A large heathen population had come into the country, bringing all the vices that prevail in countries which have not fully received the light of revelation and the Gospel. There was a feeling in all classes that the introduction of these people by large Chinese companies, holding them really as slaves, ought to be stopped. A law passed Congress, but President Hayes vetoed it as conflicting with the treaty between the United States and China. A new treaty signed at Pekin in 1881 opened the way for laws to remedy all real evils.

The resumption of specie payment and the general prosperity following it enabled the Government to pay off much of the immense debt of the country, and for the remainder to issue bonds on which the country paid only four and four and a half per cent. interest. The debt of the United States on the 1st of January, 1866, had been two thousand eight hundred millions of dollars; but eight hundred millions were paid off by the close of the year 1880.

When the Republican Convention met in that year to nominate its

candidate for the Presidential chair, a strong effort was made to put General Grant again forward, and three hundred and six votes were steadily given for him. The opposition was at first divided, but finally united on James A. Garfield, of Ohio, who had risen during the war to be a Major-General, and had been for years a prominent Member of Congress. Chester A. Arthur, of New York, was selected as candidate for Vice-President, the two candidates, it is somewhat curious to note, being from the same States as those nominated at the last election. On the Democratic side General Winfield Scott Hancock was nominated for the Presidency, and W. H. English, of Indiana, for Vice-President. There was a lack of harmony in both parties; the Republicans who had adhered to Grant showed little zeal for Garfield, and the Democrats in New York were divided into two hostile factions. Owing to this dissension Garfield carried New York, with all the other Northern States, except New Jersey, California, and Nevada, and received a small majority of the popular vote.

The validity of his election was not questioned, and the count was made in Congress without objection.

CHAPTER XXII.

JAMES A. GARFIELD, TWENTIETH PRESIDENT, 1881. CHESTER A. ARTHUR, TWENTY-FIRST PRESIDENT, 1881–1885.

Garfield's Cabinet—Difficulty as to New York Appointments—He is Shot by Guiteau—His Sufferings and Death—Foreign Sympathy—Arthur's Policy—Trial of Guiteau—Apportionment of Representatives—The Suppression of Polygamy in Utah—Arctic Explorations—The Brooklyn Bridge—Election of Cleveland.

Though Mr. Garfield had been elected by the full vote of his party, the dissensions among the Republicans had not been healed. The Senate for a time failed to organize, as the two factions could not

agree in regard to the officers of the House. When that body was ready for the nominations of his Cabinet, Mr. Garfield sent in the names of James G. Blaine, of Maine, Secretary of State; William Windom, of Minnesota, Secretary of the Treasury; William H. Hunt, of Louisiana, Secretary of the Navy; Robert F. Lincoln, of Illinois, Secretary of War; Wayne McVeagh, of Pennsylvania, Attorney-General; Thomas L. James, of New York, Postmaster-General; and Samuel J. Kirkland, of Ohio, Secretary of the Interior.

When President Garfield sent in to the Senate names for several offices in New York City, the two Senators from that State claimed a right to recommend candidates for them from their branch of the Republican party, and wished the President's nominations to be rejected. The Senate declined to go so far, and the two Senators from New York resigned, hoping to be reappointed by the legislature of their own State. In this they were disappointed, there being manifestly a wish to let President Garfield act freely. By this time the dissension in the Republican party had become intense, and in the newspapers and public meetings the most violent language was used by angry partisans.

At Washington several treaties which had been negotiated with foreign countries were submitted to the Senate and approved. The immediate urgent business was completed, and President Garfield prepared to visit a college where his son was to be graduated. On the 2d of July he proceeded to the station of the Baltimore and Potomac Railroad in Washington, and entered the building arm in arm with Secretary Blaine, when two pistol shots were fired at him from behind, one striking him in the back and passing nearly through his body. His assassin, Charles J. Guiteau, proclaiming himself a Stal-

wart, was seized, and proved to be a visionary politician, of depraved life, without any moral control, who had been an applicant for the position of Minister to Austria. The most eminent surgeons in the country attended the wounded President, but they could not trace the ball in its entire course, and failed to relieve him. The illustrious sufferer sank gradually, and though he was removed to Long Branch in hope of invigorating his system, he expired on the 19th of September. Queen Victoria and many high dignitaries in Europe sent the expression of their sympathy for Mrs. Garfield, and their sorrow at such a crime; and when death closed the President's sufferings, the Courts of England, Belgium, and Spain put on mourning.

The sympathy throughout the country for the widow was profound and general. Political animosity was silenced for a time by the terrible example of its fatal tendency.

On the death of President Garfield, Chester A. Arthur took the oath of office in New York, and with the members of the Cabinet proceeded to Long Branch, and accompanied the remains of General Garfield to Washington. Here he was formally inaugurated on the 22d. After his inaugural address he appointed as a day of fasting, humiliation, and prayer, the 26th, that set apart for the funeral of the late President at Cleveland.

There had been a question whether the wound of the President did not create a disability which required Mr. Arthur to act in his stead till his recovery; but with delicacy and prudence he left the administration in the hands of the Cabinet, President Garfield affixing his signature to some official acts.

On his inauguration President Arthur requested the members of the Cabinet to retain their positions, but changes soon took place;

Frederick W. Frelinghuysen, of New Jersey, became Secretary of State, and a scheme of Mr. Blaine's for a Congress of the Spanish American States was abandoned. In time all the members of Garfield's Cabinet retired except Mr. Lincoln, who remained Secretary of War till the close of the administration.

The assassin of the late President had a long trial, in which every endeavor was made to prove him insane, but he was convicted and executed.

In 1882 an act was passed to apportion the representatives in Congress to the result of the census of 1880, which showed the population of the country to be fifty millions. This is done after every census, and to prevent the House of Representatives from becoming too large, the number of inhabitants entitled to one representative is fixed. Each State then has the right to elect as many members of the House as the population divided by this number will give. Every State must have at least one representative, even if the population does not reach the number. In the apportionment of 1882 some of the new Western States gained representatives, but Maine, New Hampshire, and Vermont each lost one.

The question of suppressing polygamy in Utah was taken up actively, and in 1882 a law introduced by Senator Edmunds gave the first check to the abominable practices of the Mormons, who had for years adopted polygamy, many of their leading men having a great number of wives. But the Mormons did not give up the wicked system, although several were convicted and imprisoned. The power of the Mormon Church in the Territory has prevented its admission as a State, no Christian denomination, except the Catholic, having been able to maintain churches and schools and keep the truths of Christianity before the deluded followers of the Mormon leaders.

Under the guidance of De Lesseps, the projector of the Suez Canal, an attempt was made to cut a ship canal through the isthmus of Panama. Early in his administration President Arthur called the attention of Congress to the project, and to the necessity that the United States should possess some control over it. Subsequently preparations were made by American capitalists to establish a ship canal through Nicaragua. When a similar project had been formed a quarter of a century before, the United States, in what is known as the Clayton-Bulwer Treaty, agreed to certain conditions in regard to it. That canal having never been built, the United States has regarded itself free to act its pleasure as to any new canal scheme.

Arctic explorations engaged public attention about this time, but though they drew forth much heroism and sufferings, no great results were attained. The *Jeannette*, sent out from San Francisco at the expense of James Gordon Bennett, of the *New York Herald*, in 1879, to pass through Behring's Straits and follow the coasts of Asia and Europe to the Atlantic, was crushed in the ice in June, 1881; one boat was lost, the crews of the others reached land, but all who accompanied Captain De Long perished from cold and hunger before the two sent for relief could return to them. The Greely expedition sent to the North, west of Greenland, underwent terrible sufferings, and the survivors were rescued when death was staring them in the face.

The year 1883 was marked by the completion of an immense suspension bridge, uniting the cities of New York and Brooklyn. It has a span of fifteen hundred and ninety-five feet, the longest in the world, and is crossed by a hundred millions of people every year.

When the Republican nominating Convention met at Chicago in 1884, the great division in the party was still evident. James G.

Blaine, of Maine, was nominated for President, and John A. Logan for Vice-President; the Democrats in their Convention took up a new man, Grover Cleveland, who, from being Mayor of Buffalo, was elected Governor of the State of New York. Thomas A. Hendricks, of Indiana, was again put in nomination as Vice-President. Benjamin F. Butler, of Massachusetts, was also a candidate as the representative of the Greenback and Anti-Monopoly elements in the country. Those who wished a general prohibition of the sale of liquor also nominated Governor St. John, of Kansas, as a candidate, but the vote of the country was given mainly to the candidates of the two great parties. The election was warmly contested, but there were signs that the old parties were breaking up. Many Republican papers favored Cleveland, who received a considerable number of votes from the liberal members of that party; on the other hand, Cleveland was singularly distasteful to a large body of the Democrats in New York and elsewhere, who threw their votes for Blaine. The issue at last turned on New York, but when that State so far as the Democrats were concerned seemed lost, a sudden change enabled Mr. Cleveland to carry the State and secure his election.

CHAPTER XXIII.

GROVER CLEVELAND, TWENTY-SECOND PRESIDENT—1885.

His Cabinet—Gen. Grant put on the Retired List—His Death at Mt. McGregor—Massacre of Chinese in Wyoming—Recognition of the International Association of the Congo—The Rights of American Fishermen questioned by Canada—American Fishing Vessels seized—Death of Vice-President Hendricks.

GROVER CLEVELAND, the first Democratic candidate elected to the Presidency in nearly a quarter of a century, was duly inaugurated,

March 4, 1885, with Thomas A. Hendricks, of Indiana, as Vice-President.

Those who anticipated sweeping and partisan changes were disappointed. Mr. Cleveland pursued a just and temperate course. His Cabinet consisted of Thomas F. Bayard, of Delaware, Secretary of State; Daniel Manning, of New York, Secretary of the Treasury; William C. Endicott, of Massachusetts, Secretary of War; William C. Whitney, of New York, Secretary of the Navy; William F. Vilas, Postmaster-General; L. Q. C. Lamar, Secretary of the Interior; and Augustus H. Garland, of Arkansas, Attorney-General.

Two days after his inauguration Mr. Cleveland signed the commission of U. S. Grant as General on the retired list of the army. It was the last tribute of the government to the great soldier already yielding to the disease of which he died, on the 23d of July, 1885, at Mount McGregor, near Saratoga, New York. He was interred with the highest honors in Riverside Park, New York, at a spot overlooking the Hudson.

The hostility to the Chinese on the Pacific side of the country resulted in a terrible massacre in Wyoming, in which many Chinese were killed by the miners. In his message, President Cleveland urged Congress to pass adequate laws to regulate the immigration of natives of the Empire of China.

The International Association of the Congo was recognized by the United States, after which other powers followed our example. The Association was thus recognized as a government, and began its beneficial work in the heart of Africa.

On our frontier the rights of American fishermen were not respected by the Canadian authorities, and the danger of violence led

President Cleveland to call attention of Congress to the matter. Congress did not act on it, and in May, 1886, the Canadian government seized several American fishing vessels for purchasing bait in the ports of Nova Scotia.

When Congress met in December, President Cleveland in his message notified the members of both Houses that he had withdrawn from the Senate a treaty with Nicaragua and one with Spain, not regarding either as for the best interests of the United States. In the great question as to a canal or ship-railroad across Mexico or Central America, he favored the ship-railway by way of Tehuantepec, but insisted that the route must be neutral. He also advocated the negotiation of a new extradition treaty with England, the suspension of the large coinage of silver, and the reduction of the tariff.

In the disposal of the public lands millions of acres had been obtained by great railroad companies, who failed to meet their obligations. Other large tracts were obtained by speculators in Europe. To investigate and arrest this robbery of the public domain excited the care and vigilance of the President, who recommended strict regulations.

Early in the Twenty-second Administration Vice-President Hendricks was carried off by a brief illness, dying on the 25th November, 1885. His sudden decease deprived the Senate of its Constitutional presiding officer, and gave an additional proof of the necessity of providing by clear and definite provisions for the succession to the Presidency in case of death or inability.

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY
BERKELEY

Return to desk from which borrowed.
This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

FEB 25 1948

26May'60AE

IN STACKS

MAY 12 1960

REC'D LD
MAY 13 1960

UC INTERLIBRARY LOAN

NOV 15 1986

UNIV. OF CALIF., BERK.

LD 21-100m-9,'47(A5702s16)476

YE 07072

M297221

E178
S53